Yours Sincerely,

Leander M. Woods

THE

WOODS-McAFEE MEMORIAL

CONTAINING AN ACCOUNT OF

JOHN WOODS AND JAMES McAFEE

OF IRELAND

AND THEIR DESCENDANTS IN AMERICA

COPIOUSLY ILLUSTRATED WITH MAPS DRAWN EXPRESSLY FOR THIS WORK, AND EMBELLISHED WITH ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY HANDSOMELY ENGRAVED PORTRAITS, SCENES, ETC.

BY REV. NEANDER M. WOODS, D. D., LL. D.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY

HON. REUBEN T. DURRETT, A. M., LL. D., OF LOUISVILLE, KY.

PRESIDENT OF THE FILSON CLUB

IN WHICH, BESIDES CONSIDERABLE NEW MATTER BEARING ON VIRGINIA AND KENTUCKY HISTORY, WILL BE FOUND MENTION OF THE FAMILIES OF

AMS, ALEXANDER, ARMSTRONG, BEHRE, BENNETT, BIRKHEAD, BOONE, BORDEN, BOWYER, BRUCE, BUCHANAN, BUTLER, CAPERTON, CAMPBELL, CLARK, COATES, CRAWFORD, CURRY, DAINGERFIELD, DAVIESS, DEDMAN, DUNCAN, DUNN, DURRETT, FORSYTH, FOSTER, GACHET, GOOCH, GOODLOE, GOODWIN, GUTHRIE, HALE, HARRIS, HENDERSON, JOHNSTON, LAPSLEY, MACFARLANE, MACGOWAN, MAGOFFIN, McAFEE, McCOUN, McDOWELL, McKAMEY, PHILLIPS, REID, RICKENBAUGH, ROGERS, ROYSTER, SHELBY, SAMPSON, SPEED, SUDDARTH, TAYLOR, TODD, THOMPSON, VARNER, WADE, WALKER, WALLACE, WHITE, WILLIAMSON, WOOD, WOODS, WYLIE, YOUNG AND FIVE HUNDRED OTHERS, AS WILL BE SEEN BY CONSULTING THE INDEX.

LSO SOME HITHERTO UNPUBLISHED DOCUMENTS WHICH CONSTITUTE A VALUABLE CONTRIBUTION TO THE PIONEER HISTORY OF VIRGINIA AND KENTUCKY.

LOUISVILLE, KY.:
COURIER-JOURNAL JOB PRINTING CO.
1905

Gift
Author
(Parcel)
10 M[illegible]

PREFACE.

It should be noted at the outset that this work was undertaken with almost exclusive reference to certain branches of the Woodses and the McAfees. It is therefore mainly a family affair, and it unavoidably contains a good deal of matter which must possess small interest for the general reader.

At the same time it is claimed that this book has in it a great deal relating to the history of Virginia and Kentucky which is part and parcel of the story of these great Commonwealths, and suited to interest all who love to study their pioneer records. Some of the matters referred to have never before appeared in print. A careful perusal of the Table of Contents will enable the reader to determine what chapters are likely to deal with events which he would care to study.

The author has devoted a large part of his spare time for the last fifteen years to gathering up the facts and traditions to be found recorded herein, and the labor involved in his researches will never be fully understood, even by those who shall find the greatest satisfaction in the reading of this book. Court records, family Bibles, church registers, military rosters, private papers and moss-covered grave-stones have been made to yield their varied testimonies for entrance on these pages. The constant aim of the author has been to learn what was true, and to set it down faithfully. Positive assertions, in all cases where there seemed to be any need of it, have been supported by the citation of authorities. Where mere inferences or private opinions are given, qualifying language has been employed to indicate fairly the degree of certitude pertaining to each case. Part Three, which consists of Sketches of Patrons, is composed of matter for which the author is only in part responsible. These sketches have been prepared, as a rule, by friends of the subjects of the same. The author wrote only those of himself and his immediate family, and added a few sentences to a few others.

Nearly all of the one hundred and fifty-nine illustrations found herein have been engraved expressly for this work, and have never before been published. They are, very many of them, more than simple embellishments of the book. Some of them present scenes of great historic interest, and cost the author much personal effort.

For the homely appearance of the maps in this volume some apology is due. As to their mechanical execution they are unworthy of the book. When the author found that maps would be essential to a proper elucidation of the subject-matter, and he saw that the funds at his command would not admit of his employing a regular map draughtsman, he was forced to choose between having no maps, and making them himself. He yielded to the latter alternative. But let it be borne in mind that the cardinal virtue of a map is not its beautiful mechanical execution, but its topographical accuracy. This virtue is claimed for these homely maps. They are based upon the splendid large-scale maps of the U. S. Geological Survey, and are the result of prolonged and painstaking investigations by the author. In all essentials they are reliable.

The author, in gathering his materials for this work, has been compelled to depend much upon the kind assistance of numerous persons, and he is most grateful for the courtesy he has met with in

every quarter. His obligations to some individuals, however, are too large to admit of his debt being discharged by a mere general acknowledgment. A few of the gracious friends must be mentioned by name. To the Hon. Reuben T. Durrett, of Louisville, President of the Filson Club, and the writer of the Introduction to this volume, the author is most largely indebted. Possessing, as he probably does, the most magnificent private library in the South, containing a bibliography of Kentucky hardly surpassed anywhere in the world, he has never been too busy to help the author with the loan of books or a word of information and counsel, as needed. Without his aid this volume would lack some of its most valuable chapters. To the late Dr. John P. Hale, long-time President of the West Virginia Historical Society, who knew more, perhaps, than any man of his day in regard to the streams, mountains and trails of his native State (West Virginia), the author owes much. The voluminous correspondence which the author had with Dr. Hale only a few years before his death has greatly enriched this volume. The Rev. Edgar Woods, Ph. D., of Charlottesville, Va.; Col. Charles A. R. Woods, of Kansas City, Mo.; Mr. Julian Watson Woods, of Mississippi; Mrs. Genevieve Bennett Clark, of Bowling Green, Mo., wife of the Hon. Champ Clark, M. C., and a host of other friends have, in one way or another, aided the author so materially in bringing this publication to a successful conclusion that he desires in this public manner to thank them.

It would require considerable space to give even the names of all the books, pamphlets and unprinted manuscripts which the author has consulted in the preparation of this work; but a few of those from which he has derived the largest assistance should be mentioned. First of all stands the unprinted manuscript of the late General Robert B. McAfee, entitled his Autobiography and Family History, which he finished about the year 1846, not long before his death. To him we owe nearly all we know of a large part of the history of the McAfees. That manuscript volume has often been copied, and can be found in many of the great libraries on both sides of the sea. The journals severally kept by James and Robert McAfee, during the tour of the McAfee Company to Kentucky in 1773, are simply invaluable. They are given in full, with notes, in Appendix A of this volume. The two publications by the Rev. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Va., to wit: History of Albemarle County, Virginia; and History of One Branch of the Woodses furnish a great mass of reliable information in regard to the earlier Woodses and Wallaces. That fascinating little monograph on The Wilderness Road, by the late lamented Capt. Thomas Speed, has been a great help and a delight to the present writer. Historic Families of Kentucky, by the late Col. Thomas M. Green, has afforded most valuable items in regard to Magdalen Woods, the McDowells and the Bordens and the Bowyers. The History of Kentucky by the two Collinses—father and son—remains the grandest thesaurus of Kentucky records anywhere to be found, without which no man can write of Kentucky to good purpose. A recent History of South-Western Virginia, by the Hon. Lewis P. Summers, of the Abingdon Bar, has done for the region with which it deals what the Collinses have done for Kentucky, and no man who would know the genesis of that interesting section of our country can afford to be without it. We have derived much assistance also from Old Virginia and Her Neighbors, by the late Professor John Fiske; from the histories of Kentucky by Marshall, Butler, Shaler and Smith, respectively; from the histories of Tennessee, by Haywood and Ramsey, respectively; from Wheeler's North Carolina; from Foote's Sketches of Virginia, both series; from the local histories of Augusta County, Virginia, by Waddell and Peyton, respectively; and, last, but not least, from Dr. Hale's Trans-Alleghenv Pioneers, a book which possesses the charm of being in large part the narrative of the actual experiences of its author.

The Index appended hereto is full enough to enable the reader to find, without much difficulty,

nearly every person, place and event of real importance that is anywhere mentioned in this volume.

The preparation of this work has been to the author, from first to last, a labor of love. That it is much marred by blemishes and defects he doubts not, and hence he has no hope that it is going to please even all of those for whose benefit it has been written; but the author ventures to cherish the hope that many Woodses and McAfees yet unborn will think kindly of him who made it possible for them to know much about their worthy progenitors, and that perhaps a hundred years hence there may be found, here and there in this broad land, those who will fondly cherish as one of their most sacred family heirlooms a well-worn copy of The Woods-McAfee Memorial. This shall be our sufficient reward.

NEANDER M. WOODS.

Louisville, Ky., May, 1905.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PAGE

FRONTISPIECE—PORTRAIT OF THE AUTHOR

PREFACE—BY THE AUTHOR iii

LIST OF MAPS, WITH EXPLANATIONS vii

INTRODUCTION—BY R. T. DURRETT, A. M., L.L. D. ix

PART I—THE WOODS FAMILY

(Pages 1 to 150)

CHAPTER FIRST—THE WOODSES IN GREAT BRITAIN 1

CHAPTER SECOND—ELIZABETH WOODS AND THE WALLACES 3

CHAPTER THIRD—MICHAEL WOODS OF BLAIR PARK 9

CHAPTER FOURTH—WILLIAM WOODS OF NORTH CAROLINA 132

PART II THE McAFEE FAMILY

(Pages 151 to 218)

CHAPTER FIRST—THE MCAFEES IN GREAT BRITAIN 153

CHAPTER SECOND—JAMES MCAFEE, SR., IN AMERICA 157

CHAPTER THIRD—TOUR OF MCAFEE COMPANY TO KENTUCKY IN 1773 163

CHAPTER FOURTH—THE MIGRATION TO KENTUCKY IN 1779 175

CHAPTER FIFTH—THE SALT RIVER SETTLEMENT TO 1811 185

CHAPTER SIXTH—THE PIONEER MCAFEES AND THEIR CHILDREN 195

PART III—THE PATRONS OF THIS WORK

(Pages 219 to 421)

THERE WERE NINETY-THREE ORIGINAL PATRONS. THESE ARE DIVIDED INTO FOUR GROUPS, AND A SKETCH OF EACH PATRON IS GIVEN.

GROUP ONE—PATRONS NOT RELATED TO EITHER WOODSES OR MCAFEES. SIX SKETCHES, 1 TO 6, INCLUSIVE 221

GROUP TWO—PATRONS DESCENDED FROM THE MCAFEES ONLY. TWENTY-SEVEN SKETCHES, 7 TO 33, INCLUSIVE 234

GROUP THREE—PATRONS DESCENDED FROM WOODSES ONLY. FORTY-SEVEN SKETCHES, 34 TO 80, INCLUSIVE 278

GROUP FOUR—PATRONS DESCENDED FROM BOTH THE WOODSES AND THE MCAFEES. THIRTEEN SKETCHES, 81 TO 93, INCLUSIVE 367

PART IV THE APPENDICES

(Pages 423 to 486)

APPENDIX A—THE MCAFEE JOURNALS—1773, WITH NOTES 424

APPENDIX B—THREE GREAT PIONEER ROADS 454

(*a*) THE WILDERNESS ROAD 456

(*b*) LONG HUNTERS' ROAD 459

(*c*) BOONE'S TRACE 473

APPENDIX C—SOME ANCIENT DOCUMENTS OF INTEREST TO THE WOODSES, MORE ESPECIALLY . . . 479

INDEX 489

MAPS IN THIS VOLUME

(TO BE FOUND AT THE END OF THE BOOK.)

MAP No. 1—ALBEMARLE COUNTY, VIRGINIA—SHOWING THE LOCATIONS OF THE WOODSES AND WALLACES, 1734–1800.

MAP No. 2—SOUTH-WEST, VA., AND SOUTH-EAST, KY.—SHOWING, MAINLY, THE ROUTE OF THE McAFEE COMPANY IN 1773.

MAP No. 3—MERCER COUNTY, KY., AND ADJACENT REGION—MAINLY ILLUSTRATING THE TOUR OF THE McAFEES IN 1773.

MAP No. 4—VICINITY OF IRVINE ON KENTUCKY RIVER—MAINLY ILLUSTRATING THE McAFEE TOUR OF 1773.

MAP No. 5—PARTING OF THE WAYS—SHOWING THE NUMEROUS TRAILS CENTERING AT DRAPERS MEADOWS ON NEW RIVER, VA.

MAP No. 6—CENTRAL KENTUCKY.

MAP No. 7—THREE GREAT POINEER ROADS.

INTRODUCTION.

BY REUBEN T. DURRETT, A. M., LL. D., OF LOUISVILLE, KY.,
PRESIDENT OF THE FILSON CLUB.

The genealogy of the Woods and McAfee families, which follows this Introduction, has ample precedents both in ancient and modern times. It is the work of the Rev. Neander M. Woods, D. D., a distinguished member of both of the families whose pedigrees are traced in the book, and is an example of that love of ancestry which has given to the living of to-day the most acceptable knowledge of their progenitors who lived hundreds of years before their time.

Genealogy, which has become so popular of late, is a term derived from the Greek words *genea* and *logos*, and means the arranging of a pedigree, or the tracing of a family history. It was one of the first exercises that engaged the human mind, and is therefore as old as the human race. Primeval man, before civilization gave him the use of letters, could hardly have scratched upon the bark of trees or stamped upon clay the births and marriages and deaths of his progenitors and descendants, but he could have stored them in memory and held them in tradition until the scribes of the future transferred them to their record. Pedigrees may be oral or written, and those we have in our Bibles of the patriarchs of the infant world originated in tradition and ended in writing. To suppose that the patriarchs of the elder world recorded the pedigrees of those who lived in the ten generations from Adam to Noah and the ten from Noah to Abraham at the time, and in the order, in which they occurred is to attribute to them a knowledge of the art of writing which they could not have possessed at that time. Their lineage records were preserved in tradition until stamped upon clay or inscribed upon papyrus or some other early writing material.

Those patriarchs of the infant world were sufficiently imbued with the doctrine of primogeniture not to attempt anything in their genealogy except the pedigree of a single ancestor. Had they undertaken to remember or to record the names of all members of their families in the twenty generations from Adam to Abraham, they would have had much to remember and a bulky record. In the ascending line ancestors double in each generation so that at the end of the twentieth generation they would have had something like a million of names; and if the descending line were followed there is no telling how many they would number at the end of twenty generations. The final enumeration would depend upon the number of children each successor had, and would probably rise too high up in the millions to be remembered or recorded as the art of writing then existed.

We are greatly indebted to the Jews for the knowledge they have given us of the elder world. The pedigrees they kept in their temple give information of people and events farther back in the past than we can get as full and reliable from any other source. The impression has long prevailed that inspiration had something to do with these Bible pedigrees and that they were, therefore, reliable on that account. Whether this be true or not we would not on any account be without what they teach us of the first of our race and the first of all things that happened in the infant world.

The Jews, however, were not the only ancient people who paid attention to genealogy. Late discoveries among the ruins of buried cities, in the East, indicate that there were genealogists in other countries contemporaneous with the Jews, if not of earlier date. They had not the advantages

which supposed inspiration gave to the pedigrees of the Old Testament and the New, extending from Adam to Jesus through a period of forty generations, but standing upon their own merits they show that genealogy was an art in use among Egyptians, Babylonians, Assyrians and other ancient peoples before the Jewish records were made.

So far as discoveries have been made, Egypt stands oldest in uninspired genealogy. Recently there has been exhumed from the ruins of the ancient city of Abydos the golden bracelets of the Queen or King Zer which had been worn something like five thousand years before the Christian era. This discovery takes us back beyond the beginning of the world as once understood to be indicated by the pedigrees given in the Bible. The Egyptians were known to keep in their temples the pedigrees of their kings and priests and the records of important events. When Solon, one of the wise men of Greece, was in Egypt five hundred years before the Christian era in search of knowledge he was told by a priest that there was a record in his temple of the destruction of the island of Atlantis nine thousand years before that time. With this statement of the temple records it can not be surprising that pedigrees of Egyptian kings and queens have been found in the ruins of long-buried cities which date back to a period anterior to those of the Bible chronology.

Other ancient nations, and especially the Greeks and Romans, paid early attention to genealogy. Acusilaus, a Greek historian, wrote a book on genealogy about eight hundred years before the Christian era. Only fragments of this work have come down to our times, but these are sufficient to show how early the Greek mind was devoted to this subject. In such old histories as that of Herodotus, and such ancient poems as those of Homer, genealogical sketches are of frequent occurrence although genealogy was not the subject under consideration.

The pride of ancestry made the Roman genealogists date their origin from the time when Æneas wandered from Troy to Latium. Roman patricians vied with one another in the effort to trace their lineage back to one or the other of the three tribes of Ramnes, Titienses or Luceres whose consolidation formed the nation. Virgil in tracing Cæsar back to Æneas wrote one of the finest poems in the Latin language, and prominent families like the Cornelii, Gracchi, Marcelli, etc., had pedigrees dating back as near to the origin of Rome as possible, which were known and honored by plebeians as well as patricians.

Leaving the field of ancient genealogy and also passing by its early development in England, which probably concerns us more than any other country, but can not be noticed here for want of space, we find that when the Dark Ages were lifting their shadows from Europe, during the reign of Richard III, a college of heraldry was established in London for the purpose of taking charge of the whole subject of genealogy. Heralds were appointed to go over the country and collect such facts and records as could be had for preservation in the genealogical books of the college. By this means it was hoped that such fabulous pedigrees as had been traced from gods and demi-gods, would be discredited and real pedigrees substituted for them. Of late years it has been said of this college, however, that money sometimes had as much influence in securing the right to coats-of-arms as heroic deeds, but whether this be true or not, solid old England has the noblest nobility and the genteelest gentry of any country in the world.

After this college of heraldry was established in London in the sixteenth century, many learned works on genealogy were published in England and other countries. Before these publications genealogical data, when recorded at all, were generally in manuscripts and practically inaccessible to the general reader. An author by the name of Mills may be said to have led in publishing this kind of literature in a folio volume entitled "The British Peerage" which was issued in 1610. Among the many publications that followed may be mentioned Collins' Peerage of England, Burkes' Peerage And Baronetage, Debrett's Peerage And

Baronetage, Lodge's Peerage And Baronetage, Dodd's Peerage, Baronetage And Knightage, Dugdale's Baronetage, and Nicholas' History of Knighthood. With a college of heraldry in their midst and such books as these and others at hand, the English had the means of knowing with accuracy all about the lineage of families, either noble or common, they might wish to know.

In the United States we have not followed the English to the extent of establishing a college of heraldry to dignify the researches of genealogists and to clothe them with something of authority. Private enterprise, however, has done much for genealogy and the New England Historical and Genealogical Society alone has published more than a score of volumes on this subject. Holgate's American Genealogy, Webster's Genealogy and Thomas' Genealogical Notes may also be mentioned as individual enterprises in this line.

Of recent years, however, there has been a widespread activity in genealogical research in the United States, and Kentucky has shared largely in the movement. Many individuals have written and published the lineage of their families as they were able to gather their records from foreign countries, from the different States and from Kentucky. To attempt to enumerate all these works would be tedious and vain, but the following may be mentioned: The Prestons by John Mason Brown, The Russels by Mrs. des Cognets, The Garrards by the same author, The Irvines by Mrs. Boyd, The Clays by Z. F. Smith and Mrs. Clay, The Johnsons by Thomas L. Johnson, The Nourses by Mrs. Lyle, The Nortons by Rev. David Morton, The McKees by George Wilson McKee, The Quisenberrys by A. C. Quisenberry, The Speeds by Thomas Speed, The Henrys by John F. Henry, The Marshalls by W. M. Paxton, The Joneses by L. H. Jones, The Lewises by Wm. Terrill Lewis, The Johnstons by Wm. Preston Johnston, Historic Families by Thomas M. Green, Notable Families by Mrs. Watson and King William Families by Peyton M. Clarke. All these set forth the lineage of families now living in Kentucky, and there are many other works of the same kind.

The movement, however, which has done most for genealogy is that which organized such societies and associations as Daughters of America, Colonial Dames, Daughters of the American Revolution, Daughters of the Confederacy, and Sons of the American Revolution. All these societies hold meetings and gather information and make publications of one kind or another. The National society of the Daughters of the American Revolution have up to this time collected and published twenty volumes of matter relating to the ancestry of its members. In thus collecting genealogical matter in local societies scattered all over the country and grouping it in the work of the national society, an enormous amount of information must be gathered and preserved in a few years.

There is nothing strange, therefore, in the appearance at this time of this book, embracing the Woods and McAfee genealogy. It is in line with precedents reaching back to the remotest times. Such records began before letters were invented, when barbarous man scratched hieroglyphics on the bark and leaves of trees or stamped them upon plastic clay. A practice thus reaching back to the twilight of the world's beginning and continuing through all changes and conditions to the present time is the best evidence of the high regard in which genealogy has always been held and should continue to be held.

When Dr. Woods, in behalf of himself and his family, undertook to record the pedigrees of the Woods and McAfee families, he simply followed in the footsteps of others who desired to preserve the histories of their families. He thought the Woods and McAfee families had a history worthy of preservation and undertook to record it. He has done his work thoroughly and well. He has inserted in his book nothing that should have been omitted, and the many families mentioned owe him a debt of gratitude which it will not be easy to pay. The story, moreover, as he has told it not

only embraces family history, but includes historical facts in the pioneer period which will be found nowhere else.

In Chapters III and IV of Part Second will be found a better account of the first settlement of Kentucky than can be obtained from most of our histories. Members of the family are there shown about Harrodsburg clearing land and building houses for permanent occupancy while they heard the howl of ferocious animals and saw the gleam of the tomahawk and scalping-knife in the wild forest around. But dangers did not deter them and they kept right on with their work until a settlement was established in the country. There has always been a doubt about the route by which the McAfees left Kentucky and returned to their homes in Virginia in 1773. Dr. Woods studied this route until he had a clear idea of it and then made a map of it which shows it plainly from beginning to end. The map of this route is not the only one that adorns the work. There are others which throw much light upon early times and there are splendid landscapes which beautify the work and make us familiar with the country when it was new. These landscapes are fine specimens of the engraver's art and illustrate the historic text as finely as the superb half-tone likenesses, of which there are many, do the biographic sketches of the members of the families represented.

The McAfees were in Kentucky in 1773 before the white man had cleared an acre of ground or built a cabin upon it. The original forest with its infinite variety of noble trees covered the whole land except where the rivers and smaller streams severed it and cane-brakes and barrens usurped portions of it. There was nothing like a human habitation on all the land. Even the Indian, if ever he built his wigwam in the dark shadows of the dense forest, had long since abandoned it and sought another home. There were everywhere to be seen upon the river terraces and other places mounds which had been erected by human hands, but the builders had been gone so long that not even a tradition of them remained. The panther and the bear roamed in the dark forests and the buffalo and the deer fattened upon the cane. Herds having a thousand animals were sometimes seen at one of the Salt Springs. The McAfees, therefore, saw Kentucky when it was one of the grandest natural parks that ever existed. It was called by Boone and others the hunter's paradise, but the McAfees came not here to hunt. They came in search of homes for their families. And here, where the richest of land could be had for the asking, they selected their farms and built their houses and became citizens of the country they had thus practically discovered.

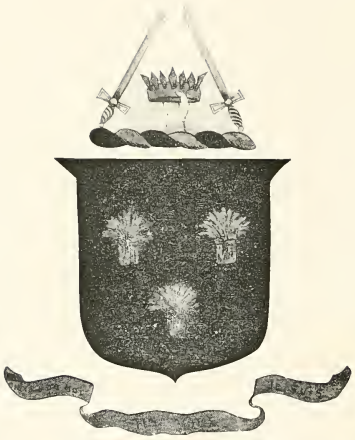
Dr. Woods, however, does not rest the claim of the Woodses and McAfees to genealogical notice upon their early migration from the old country to the new. They performed good deeds in the Colonial period, and when the Revolutionary War came on they shouldered their muskets and buckled on their broadswords and fought like heroes for the independence of their country. And when the victory of the Revolution left the country free of the original enemy but beset on its borders by bloodthirsty and merciless savages they fought these savages for the freedom of their adopted new State, until none of them were left to fight. Our country has had no war in which the progenitors and the descendants of the Woodses and McAfees did not take part. As soldiers, as statesmen, as physicians, as lawyers, as scholars, as clergymen, as mechanics, as manufacturers, as farmers, as merchants and as citizens of almost every class they performed well their part in the great drama of progress in the new State while it was a wilderness, and continued their good work after it became the home of civilization and the arts and sciences. By marriage they extended their relations to a host of families, most of whom appear in this book, and some of whom present the most distinguished names in the land. Gen. Lew Wallace, a soldier, a statesman and an author, who gave to the world Ben Hur, one of the most famous books ever written, was a Woods on the maternal side.

Gen. Robt. B. McAfee, another soldier, statesman and author, was in the Battle of the Thames and helped the Kentuckians to win their glorious victory there. When the war was over he wrote a history of it which was published in Lexington in 1816, and has always been accepted as authority.

Other distinguished names might be mentioned both among the Woodses and McAfees, but any necessity for designating them is superseded by an ample index at the end of the work in which nearly every important name is mentioned, with a reference to the page where it is to be found.

Dr. Woods's work, besides being known as the most elaborate and most thorough on family history yet produced in Kentucky, will also be regarded as the most valuable contribution to genealogy. And the printer, who sometimes gets his share of faint praise when he brings out a new work, will meet with nothing of this kind here. The beautiful paper, the clear typography, the tasteful arrangement, and the superb illustrations entitle the Courier-Journal Job Printing Co. to the highest praise.

R. T. Durrett.



WOODS COAT OF ARMS.

THE WOODS-McAFEE MEMORIAL.

PART FIRST—THE WOODS FAMILY.

CHAPTER I.

THE WOODSES IN GREAT BRITAIN.

Whilst the name Woods is undoubtedly English, derived from Anglo-Saxon (Wudu), not all of the people who bear it have come of pure English stock. Besides those families which have for centuries made their homes in England, and are descended from the true English, there are at least four other races of men, some of whose representatives are now called by this name. First, there are the Woodses whom we find to-day in Scotland, whose ancestors generations back were English, but who crossed the border to dwell among the Scotch, and became so thoroughly identified with them by marriage and long residence as to become indistinguishable from the dwellers to the north of the Tweed. Some of these Anglo-Scotch Woodses in after times migrated, along with the unmixed Scotch, to the North of Ireland; and then, later on, to America; and they would naturally come to be regarded as Scotch-Irish, their English blood being almost entirely lost sight of, even by themselves. Secondly, among the unhappy Huguenots who fled from France during the period of Catholic persecution, there were not a few families by the name of Du Bois (Dubose), some of whom, after their settlement in England, signalized their complete expatriation from the land of their birth by adopting the English equivalent (Woods) for the name they had formerly borne as Frenchmen. Thirdly, there are some Woodses now in America whose ancestors not far back were German, and who were formerly called by the name of Woltz, but who have seen fit to make their patronymic conform to their new place of residence amongst English-speaking people. Finally, there are the numerous Irish Woodses, whose ancestors formerly were known by the Gaelic name of O'Coillie, but who exchanged it for the English equivalent, Woods. These Woodses are, as a rule, pure Irish, and, almost without exception, Roman Catholics. Thousands of them are to be found in the United States at the present time.

The particular branch of the Woods family with which this volume is more especially concerned is of pure English, or else of Anglo-Scotch, blood. Whether the individual who was the founder of this branch migrated directly to Ireland from England, or belonged to those who resided some time in Scotland before migrating to the Emerald Isle, can not be positively affirmed, but the preponderance of evidence seems to be in favor of the first-named supposition.[1] That the Woodses were Protestants, and mainly Presbyterians, seems reasonably certain. And it seems to be equally certain that the Wallaces and Campbells, with whom the Woodses intermarried, were not only Presbyterians, but people of pure Scotch blood. Prior to 1650 the Woodses seem to have been connected with the English Established Church.

The persecutions visited upon the Dissenters of Ireland during the eighteenth century, largely as the result of the bigotry of English prelates, had two marked effects: they rendered life in Ireland unbearable to the liberty-loving Scotch-Irish, thereby driving tens of thousands of them to the American colonies; and they helped to fill the patriot army in after days with splendid soldiers, when the American Revolution began. The stream of emi-

gration from the North of Ireland began to flow as early as 1698, but it was checked for a season. Then in 1719 it recommenced, and continued for fifty years. In that notable movement[2] we find the Woodses and Wallaces with whom we have to do in this volume. In the year 1724 there came to Pennsylvania from the North of Ireland one Michael Woods, his brother William, and their widowed sister Elizabeth Wallace, and a number of their children.[3] It has been a current belief in the Woods family that Michael, William and Elizabeth had two brothers, James and Andrew, who migrated with them to America. At the date of the migration Michael Woods was forty years old, and William was about twenty-nine. Elizabeth was probably the eldest of the party, and about forty-two years old, and had with her at least six children by her husband, Peter Wallace, who was not long since deceased. Concerning James and Andrew Woods we have only the scantiest information. It is probable they accompanied their sister and brothers to Pennsylvania, but there is no positive evidence that they removed with them when, some ten years later, they migrated to Virginia. It is possible they were the ancestors of some of the numerous Protestant Woodses in Pennsylvania and Maryland. There was, however, in Virginia, about the outbreak of the Revolution, a James Woods living only a mile or two from Michael Woods's home, who may have been one of these brothers. He patented land on Stockton's Creek, in what is now Albemarle county, Virginia, in 1749, and in 1775 we find him opening his home to the patriots of the Revolution for a meeting of the District Committee. This individual may have been a younger brother of Michael and William.[4]

When we come to inquire about the parents of these individuals—Elizabeth, Michael, William, James and Andrew—we raise questions, not all of which can be answered as fully and positively as we could desire. Some facts, however, are fairly well established.[5] Without attempting to quote all that is given by the authorities mentioned in note 5, the following exhibit of the main facts is deemed sufficient, to-wit: 1, there came to Ireland a certain English trooper, who was in the Cromwellian army of invasion in 1649, by the name of Woods; 2, this trooper had a son, John Woods, who, about 1681, married a Miss Elizabeth Worsop[6]; 3, this Miss Worsop was born November 15, 1656, and it is assumed as probable that the John Woods whom she married was born about 1654, not long after his father had withdrawn from Cromwell's army and settled down to private life in Ireland; 4, it is probable that John Woods's father came from Yorkshire, England, and that he settled in one of the three counties of Fermanagh, Down or Meath; 5, it is most likely that the families of both John Woods and Elizabeth Worsop were Episcopalians, and of pure English stock; 6, there are good reasons for believing that the family of which John Woods was the head was the only one in Ireland of the Protestant faith; 7, Elizabeth Worsop was undoubtedly a lady of gentle birth, and directly descended from some families of the highest standing in England; and 8, her line is as follows: She was the daughter of Thomas Worsop and Elizabeth Parsons; and said Elizabeth Parsons was the daughter of Richard Parsons and his wife, Letitia Loftus; and the said Letitia was the daughter of Sir Adam Loftus, by his wife Jane Vaughn; and said Sir Adam was the son of Sir Dudley Loftus, of county Dublin, by his wife Anne Bagnall; and the said Sir Dudley was the son of Adam Loftus (Archbishop of Dublin, and Lord Chancellor of Ireland) by his wife Jane Purdon. The said Archbishop Loftus was born in Yorkshire, England, in 1534, and was the son of the Right Reverend Edward Loftus, of Levinshead. He was ordained in 1559; and having attracted the favorable notice of Queen Elizabeth during his examinations at Cambridge, he was rapidly promoted in the Church, being made Archbishop of Armagh when he was only twenty-seven years old, and later on Archbishop of Dublin, and Lord Chancellor of Ireland. The said John Woods and his wife Elizabeth had at least one daughter and four sons, to-wit: Eliza-

beth, Michael, William, James and Andrew, all of whom emigrated to North America in 1724, and had attained to their majority by that time, and several of them had considerable families. When and where John Woods and his wife died we have no means of knowing, but the probability is that both had passed away before 1724.

When we seek for the reasons compelling almost an entire family of people to forsake their native land and seek a home in a distant and sparsely settled colony, we are left to mere conjecture. The eldest one of the party (Elizabeth Wallace) was, as above stated, not far from forty-two years old when the migration was undertaken. The Woodses and Wallaces were probably people of culture and some little worldly goods, but they were Dissenters and Presbyterians, who had had to endure many disabilities and suffer many petty tyrannies at the hands of bigoted English ecclesiastics. The tide of population from Ireland to the American colonies was just then of tremendous volume, and thousands of the very best people of Ireland were seeking homes beyond the sea. It was a vast, popular movement, for which there existed the twofold motive of escape from persecution, and the making of a start in the new Land of Promise across the Atlantic. In America good land was abundant and cheap, and the promise of freedom and protection to all was inviting. So, in the year 1724, the Woodses and Wallaces set sail for America, and in a few weeks their destination was reached, and the colony of Pennsylvania became their home. They were done with Great Britain forever.

The John Woods Coat of Arms is thus described by Mr. O'Hart: "Arms Sa. three garbs or. Crest—out of clouds a hand erect, holding a crown between two swords in bend and bend sinister, points upward, all ppr. The shield is black, with three goid sheaves of wheat on it; out of gray clouds a flesh-colored hand, perpendicular, holding a gold crown, and all between two steel colored swords. The sheaves of wheat indicate that the bearer came from a wheat producing country; the crest implies a combat, a victory, and an unexpected reward."

The Mrs. Barrett referred to in Note 5 is personally acquainted with quite a number of Woodses now living in Ireland, who are descendants of John Woods and Elizabeth Worsop and who occupy positions of prominence and honor in the various walks of life. From this circumstance it is inferred that John and Elizabeth had one or more sons who did not migrate to America with the Woods-Wallace colony of 1724.

CHAPTER II.

ELIZABETH WOODS AND THE WALLACES.

Elizabeth, as was stated in the previous chapter, was probably the first child of John Woods and his wife Elizabeth Worsop. We know that her brother Michael (who came to be known in after times as Michael Woods of Blair Park) was born in Ireland in 1684, and there is good reason for believing that she was the elder of the two. We may assume, therefore, that she was born not later than about the year 1682. She was married to Peter Wallace probably about the year 1705. In 1724 she migrated to America with her brother Michael and his family, at which date she had been a widow for some time, and had at least six children living, who came with her to America. She resided in the colony of Pennsylvania for about ten or fifteen years. No less than four of her children—three sons and a daughter—married children of her brother Michael, their first cousins. When, in 1734, her brother Michael moved down into Virginia, at least two of her sons had married, each, a daughter of their uncle, and moved with him to what is now Albemarle county, Virginia. Elizabeth probably did not leave Pennsylvania for several years after her brother, possibly not till 1739, and when she did go she chose a home in the Valley of Virginia, Rockbridge county, just across the

Blue Ridge from where her brother and two of her sons resided. For those days the ride across the mountains was but a small matter, and the intercourse between the families was no doubt frequent and intimate. Whether she left any relatives in Pennsylvania—Woodses, or Wallaces—we can not say, but there is good reason for believing that not all the ties which bound these two families to their old Pennsylvania home were severed when the migration to Virginia occurred. It is next to certain that at least one of Elizabeth's grandsons left Virginia before or about the Revolutionary period, and made his home in Pennsylvania. Of the date of Elizabeth's death nothing positive is known, but we feel reasonably sure that her dust reposes in some one of the old Presbyterian church-yards of Rockbridge county, Virginia.

The Peter Wallace whom Elizabeth Woods married about 1705 was, according to the traditions of his descendants, a Scotch Highlander, who spent the latter part of his life in Ireland.[7] Very little is positively known concerning him. It is supposed that he was born about 1680, and it is confidently believed he died some years prior to the migration of the Woodses and Wallaces to America. Concerning his descendants, however, a great deal is known. They are scattered by thousands all over this Union, and a more reputable family can not be found in America. In Virginia, Kentucky, Indiana, Missouri, California and other states the Wallaces are numerous. The most distinguished persons who have borne this name are Judge Caleb Wallace, one of the first three judges of the Kentucky Court of Appeals, appointed in 1792, and Major-General Lew Wallace, the noted soldier, diplomat and author, who is now easily the first citizen of Indiana. There was another prominent family of this name in Virginia and Kentucky,[8] the American head of which was Michael Wallace, M. D., who was the son of a William Wallace, and was born in Scotland in 1719. This Dr. Michael Wallace migrated to Virginia, and spent the last years of his life at Elderslie, in King George county, Va., where he died in 1767. He had a son, William Brown Wallace, born in King George county, Va., in 1757, who moved to Kentucky, and there died in 1833. Eliza Brown Wallace (born in 1796, and died 1843) was a daughter of the before-mentioned William Brown Wallace and married Dr. Dixon G. Dedman, of Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, in 1818. It seems to have been the belief of the descendants of both Peter Wallace (who married Elizabeth Woods) and of William Wallace (whose son Michael settled in King George county, Virginia) that the great Scottish patriot, Sir William Wallace (1270-1305) was their ancestor; and the name Elderslie (or Ellerslie, as it is often spelled) which belonged to the old Wallace homestead in Renfrewshire, Scotland, seven centuries ago, is still revered and claimed by them. All of this, however, is only conjecture, based upon family traditions, and is given only for what it may be worth. The six children known to have been born to Peter Wallace and his wife Elizabeth Woods will now be mentioned in what is believed to be their proper chronological order, so far as can now be known.

A—WILLIAM WALLACE, son of Peter Wallace, Sr., by his wife Elizabeth Woods, was probably born in Ireland about the year 1706. In 1724 he came, with his widowed mother and his uncle Michael Woods, to America, and settled in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania. About the year 1730 he married his cousin Hannah Woods, who was his uncle Michael's daughter. The intermarriage of cousins was a common occurrence with the Woodses and Wallaces. When Michael Woods migrated to Virginia in 1734, William Wallace and his wife accompanied him and settled very close to him at the eastern foot of the Blue Ridge. The stations called Greenwood and Crozet, on the Chesapeake & Ohio Railroad, are in the midst of the charming region of Albemarle county which the Woodses and Wallaces settled. It was in early days known as Henderson's Quarter, and Mountain Plains. Dr. Foote informs us of the formation of this settlement in 1731[9] by Michael Woods, and adds this statement: "Three sons and three sons-

in-law came with him and settled near. One of the sons-in-law, William Wallace, took his residence on Mechum's river, in Albemarle." There he spent the remainder of his life. He seems to have been a great favorite with his father-in-law. His name is signed as a witness to a deed executed by his wife's father in 1743, a fac-simile of which appears in one of the illustrations contained in this volume. In 1761, when Michael Woods came to make his last will, he named William Wallace as one of his executors. His descendants have lived in Albemarle for more than a hundred and fifty years, and are among the most prominent and honored citizens of the county. He and his father-in-law, Michael Woods, were Scotch Presbyterians, and were the principal founders of the Mountain Plains Presbyterian Church, organized near their home about the middle of the eighteenth century, but long since dissolved. William Wallace and his wife Hannah Woods had born to them at least seven children, as follows: 1, MICHAEL, who commanded a military company in the Revolutionary army, who married Ann Allen, who in the year 1786 sold out his lands in Virginia and moved to Kentucky, and who left nine children, as appears from the Wallace chart found in this volume; 2, JOHN, whose home was near the present village of Greenwood, who married Mary ————, who in 1780 sold his lands and moved to Washington county, Virginia, and possibly a little later, to Kentucky; 3, JANE or JEAN, who married Robert Poage; 4, WILLIAM (the 2d), who married Mary Pillson, resided near Greenwood, and there died in 1809; 5, SARAH, of whom the editor could learn nothing; 6, HANNAH, who married a Michael Woods; and 7, JOSIAH, who married a Miss Wallace, not related to his family, whose Christian name Dr. Edgar Woods states was Hannah, but which is thought by a Miss Wallace now living in California, and who is a descendant of hers, to have been Susan.[10]

B—SUSANNAH WALLACE is believed to have been the second child, and first daughter, of Peter Wallace, Sr., by his wife Elizabeth Woods. That she was one of their children is positively asserted by reliable persons who are descended from her, and who are in a position to know the facts. She was probably born in Ireland about the year 1708, and in 1724 came to America with her mother and her uncle Michael Woods. After a residence of about ten years in Pennsylvania, she removed (in 1734) to Virginia, being then the wife of William Woods, her first cousin, whom she had probably married in 1732. Further particulars concerning her life will be given in the succeeding chapters, where her husband's career will be considered.

C—SAMUEL WALLACE was the son of Peter Wallace, Sr., by his wife Elizabeth Woods, and was probably born in Ireland in the year 1709. He migrated with the Wallaces and Woodses to Pennsylvania in 1724, where he seems to have lived about fifteen years. When the family migrated to Rockbridge county, Virginia, about 1739, he went with them, but he could not have resided but a short time in Rockbridge, for he married a Miss Esther Baker, of Cub Creek Settlement, in what is now Charlotte County, Virginia, in 1741. There he seems to have made his home till the year 1782, when he removed to Kentucky, where he died about the year 1800, in his ninety-first year. Samuel Wallace had four children born to him by his wife Esther Baker, as follows: 1, CALEB, who was born in 1742, who moved to Kentucky in 1782, who was a ruling elder of the Presbyterian Church and a distinguished lawyer, who was chosen to be one of the first three judges of the Kentucky Court of Appeals at its creation in 1792, and was one of the ablest and most honored jurists Kentucky ever had, and who died in 1814. For full particulars as to Judge Wallace and his parents the reader is referred to the volume devoted to the Wallace family of which the Rev. Dr. William H. Whitsitt is the author.[11] 2, ELIZABETH, who was born in 1745, who married Colonel Henry Pawling, and who died in 1814; 3, ANDREW, who was born in 1748, married Catharine Parks, moved to Kentucky with his father, and there died in 1829; and 4, SAMUEL, who, when a young man, started to Scotland, and was never again heard of.

D—ANDREW WALLACE, son of Peter Wallace, Sr., by his wife Elizabeth Woods, was probably born in Ireland about the year 1712, and migrated with his mother and uncle, Michael Woods, to America in 1724. He married Margaret Woods, his uncle Michael's daughter, about the year 1733, and probably went with him and his own brother William to Virginia in 1734, he (Andrew) being, as is confidently believed, one of the three sons-in-law of Michael Woods, who accompanied him to Virginia, according to Dr. Foote's account before referred to. Andrew Wallace's plantation, as is shown on the map of Albemarle county, Virginia, in this volume, was located at what is now Ivy Depot, and there he seems to have spent his days, his death occurring in 1785. Margaret, his wife, died at least twenty-six years, and possibly thirty, before Andrew; for her father Michael, in his will, written in 1761, refers to her as being then dead. There is reason to believe she died about 1756, at which date Andrew was about forty-four years old. Whether he married again, or continued a widower for the remaining twenty-nine years of his life is not known, but it is probable he remarried. If he did seek another wife it was when his older children were of the age at which the children of a family are most apt to resent a second marriage by either parent. His eldest son, Michael, was about twenty-two years old in 1756, and his second son, Samuel, about twenty, as may be reasonably supposed. If Andrew did remarry, and the step-mother he brought into his family was not acceptable to his eight children, it may be that such a state of domestic affairs was brought about as helps to account for the rather unusual circumstance which Dr. Edgar Woods certifies to in his History of Albemarle County, Virginia, namely, that all of his eight children, but one, emigrated from Albemarle county, scattering to various distant regions. The most of them went to Kentucky, and some to the regions now included in West Virginia, which, in it be noted, borders on Pennsylvania in part. The French and Indian War was concluded by the end of 1762; and if any one of the children of Andrew Wallace emigrated from Virginia before the movement to Kentucky (1782 and onward) fairly set in, it would almost certainly have been his eldest son, and he would have gone to one of the colonies to the north of Virginia. The Wallaces had come to Virginia from Pennsylvania, and, as remarked before, they had probably not entirely severed the ties which bound them to that colony, and if one of them abandoned Virginia anywhere from 1765 to 1775, Pennsylvania was, of all places in America, the one which we would expect him to choose. It is certainly known that there was a family of Wallaces living in Carlisle, Pennsylvania, in the year 1778, and that town is only about fifty miles from the Virginia border, and less than thirty miles from the edge of the Pennsylvania county (Lancaster) in which the Wallaces had lived for fifteen years prior to their migration to Virginia. Moreover, when this Andrew Wallace, of Carlisle, began to think of marrying he left Pennsylvania, and went down into old Virginia and sought the hand of a niece of the famous John Paul Jones, who in her young girlhood days was a special favorite of General Washington. This couple were the grandparents of Major-General Lew Wallace, of national fame. That Michael Wallace, who was the eldest son of Andrew, of Albemarle, and his wife Margaret Woods, was the father of Andrew, of Carlisle, and named his son for Andrew, of Albemarle, fits so exactly into all the known facts of the case, and agrees so fully with all the persistent traditions of the Wallaces and Woodses, that until some positive adverse testimony can be produced to overturn it, we are warranted in accepting it as substantially correct, and yet without asserting positively that all the deductions and inferences above presented are, in every particular, based on facts.

Andrew Wallace and Margaret Woods left the following children, to wit: 1, MICHAEL, who was probably born not far from the year 1734, who may have emigrated from Virginia to Pennsylvania about 1765, and who probably was the father of the Andrew Wallace that was born in Carlisle, Pennsylvania, in 1778; 2, SAMUEL, who was the second

child of his parents, and probably born about 1736, and who may possibly have migrated to Pennsylvania with his older brother Michael; 3, ELIZABETH, who married William Briscoe; 4, MARY, who married Alexander Henderson; 5, HANNAH, of whom nothing is known; 6, SUSAN, who married Thomas Collins; 7, MARGARET, who married William Ramsey, and was the only one of the children who did not emigrate from Albemarle; and 8, JEAN, who married a Mr. Wilson. For additional particulars the reader may consult Dr. Edgar Woods's work, referred to in Note 10.

E—ADAM WALLACE was probably born in Ireland about the year 1715, but almost nothing is known of him. He may have died early in life, or he may have migrated to the Carolinas, or back to Pennsylvania. By some writers of the history of the Wallaces he has been confounded with Adam Wallace, his gallant nephew, son of Peter Wallace, Jr., who perished while bravely fighting the British troopers at Waxhaw, S. C., in 1780.

F—PETER WALLACE, JUNIOR, was the last child of Peter Wallace, Sr., and his wife, Elizabeth Woods, and was almost certainly born in Ireland. The late J. A. R. Varner, of Lexington, Va., one of his lineal descendants and a gentleman well informed about the Wallaces and Woodses, and the source of much of the information contained in this volume, wrote the editor of this work in 1895 that Peter Wallace, Jr., was born in 1719, and that his wife, Martha Woods, was born in 1720. Peter, Jr., came from Ireland to Pennsylvania with his mother in 1724, and it is confidently believed he came with her to Rockbridge county, Va., about the year 1739. Like two of his brothers and one of his sisters, before him, he married his first cousin, one of his uncle Michael Woods's children. This probably took place about 1744. By her he had nine children, as follows:[11] 1, MALCOM, who was in the army under Morgan, at Boston, and died there, in service, in 1775; 2, SAMUEL, who was born in 1745, who married Rebekah Anderson, who died in 1786, and who was the great grandfather of the Mr. Varner alluded to above in the notice of Adam Wallace. Samuel Wallace was an officer in the Revolutionary Army, and commanded at Fort Young on the Virginia frontier during the French and Indian War. 3, JAMES, who was an ensign in the Third Virginia Regiment, and died of smallpox in Philadelphia in 1776; 4, ADAM, the captain of a Rockbridge Company in the Tenth Virginia Regiment, who was killed by Tarleton's troopers while bravely fighting against fearful odds at the Waxhaw, South Carolina, May 29, 1780, and whose sword, used on that bloody day, was in the possession of the Mr. John A. R. Varner, of Lexington, Va., already alluded to, a few years ago; 5, ANDREW, who was the captain of a company in the Eighth Virginia Regiment, and was killed at Guildford Court House in 1781.[12] He, like his brothers, James and Adam, seems never to have been married, and all three were young men at the time they died; 6, JOHN; 7, ELIZABETH, who married Col. John Gilmore, of Rockbridge county; 8, JANET; and 9, SUSANNAH. The home of Peter Wallace was only two miles southwest of Lexington, Va. He died in 1784, and his wife Martha in 1790. Two of his brothers-in-law were adjoining neighbors, namely: General John Bowyer, the third husband of Magdalen Woods; and Joseph Lapsley, the husband of Sarah Woods.

The sword which the above-mentioned Adam Wallace wielded with telling effect upon the British dragoons at Waxhaw, S. C., in 1780, deserves a moment's notice here. Adam was the captain of one of the companies of the Tenth Virginia Regiment of the Continental Line (regulars), commanded by Lieut.-Col. Abraham Buford. Wallace's company was composed of fifty Rockbridge men. Col. Buford's regiment (the Tenth Virginia) had been detached from the Northern Army, and ordered to go to the relief of our beleaguered garrison at Charleston, S. C. On their way they learned that Gen. Lincoln had capitulated, and Col. Buford was ordered to fall back again toward the north. Cornwallis, learning of Buford's retreat, sent his dashing, unscrupulous cavalry officer, Col. Tarlton, with 300 picked men, in pursuit; and after a forced

march of 100 miles, he overtook Buford at Waxhaw, S. C. Before Buford and his Virginians could prepare for the attack, the British cavalry were upon them from front and rear, and both flanks. The Virginians delivered their fire, but before they could reload Tarleton's cavalrymen were on them with their pistols and swords. Out of 400 men of Buford's command 300 were killed or wounded. The wounded were hacked to pieces in the most inhuman manner. It was in this terrible encounter that Captain Adam Wallace fell. He was a young man of twenty-five years, and stood six feet, two inches, in his stockings—the very picture of vigorous manhood. Col. Buford, seeing his men in confusion, fled early in the fight, but young Wallace disdained to fly; and, standing his ground, met steel with steel—his trusty sword was wielded with tremendous vigor, and he managed to kill a number of Tarlton's dragoons before he received the fatal blow which ended his noble young life. That very sword was, a few years ago, in the possession of Major J. A. R. Varner, of Lexington, Va., himself a descendant of the young hero's brother, Samuel Wallace. It was an infantry captain's sword, with a buck-horn handle, heavily mounted in silver. On the clasp nearest the handle is engraved, in clear letters, his name—"Adam Wallace." Four brothers, Malcolm, Adam, Andrew and James, sons of Peter Wallace, Jr., and Martha Woods, were sacrificed upon the altar of their country. This interesting story, which was published in the Lexington (Va.) paper, *The Rockbridge News*,[18] found its way to Scotland, and a Mr. William Cumming, of Shetlestown, Glasgow, Scotland, was moved to pen some stanzas in which the sword of Sir William Wallace, the great Scottish patriot, is joined with that of his supposed descendant, Adam Wallace, of Virginia. Some of these stanzas are given in the belief that they will prove of deep interest to many of the Wallaces and Woodses of America, in whose veins flows some of the same blood as that which this young hero poured out on the fatal field of Waxhaw in the year 1780. Adam Wallace was only twenty-eight at the time of his death.

"When Scotland's patriot hero led
The Scottish hosts at Stirling's fight,
Fierce gleamed among the English foe
His ponderous falchion bright.
Where'er the dreaded weapon flashed,
There was the deadliest of the fray;
And England's stoutest sons had fall'n,
When victory crown'd the day.
The centuries have passed since then;
But near our fortress of the North
The Wallace monument to-day
Looks out upon the Forth—
Looks over Scotland's proudest fields—
Stirling and Bannockburn, adored;
And treasures in its noble walls,
The time-worn Wallace sword.

* * *

Of Scotland's kin full many a one
In fair Virginia's old domain,
Had found the freedom, which, alas,
They sought at home in vain.
For on their land had fell, awhile,
The hated tyrant's evil power;
And thus they passed, on foreign shore,
Through Freedom's darkest hour.
But when the call to arms arose,
And Britain would her sons enslave,
She met, in those Virginian Scots,
A phalanx of the brave.
And one there was at Waxhaw's fight
Who to the tyrant would not yield;
Who bore the name of "Wallace wight":
He died upon the field.
He nobly faced the British foe,
Like the ancestor of his race;
And gave his life for Freedom's cause,
Nor sought, in flight, disgrace.
The sword he bore now lies with men,
Who well can prize the honored blade,
For they have marched to many a field
In "Stonewall's" old Brigade!
Old veterans of the Southern cause,
Descendants of our Wallace rare,
That same old blade links Stirling here
With Waxhaw over there.
And in thy honored roll of fame,
We'd twine our Wallace name with thee;
Blend Scottish with Virginian wreath—
Rockbridge and Elderslie."

In a speech said to have been delivered in the Virginia House of Delegates, by the late Governor James McDowell, occurs this sentence concerning the brave young soldier who owned that sword: "That dark and dismal page in the history of the Revolution—that carnival of cruel and unjustifiable slaughter—stamped with the name of Waxhaw, is illuminated only by the splendid heroism of a soldier from the valley of Virginia, whom I am proud to claim as my kinsman,[14] Captain Adam Wallace, of Rockbridge."

Of all the members of the Wallace-Woods clan none had a nobler record in the great struggle for American independence than did Peter Wallace, Jr., and his wife, Martha Woods. To that sacred cause they gave five brave sons: Samuel, Malcolm, Andrew, James and Adam, all but one of whom offered up his life upon the altar of freedom. These Scotch-Irish Presbyterians were of the class of men on whom Washington said he could rely in the dark hour of disaster.

CHAPTER III.

MICHAEL WOODS OF BLAIR PARK.

In the old family burial-ground of Michael Woods, on the plantation which he owned and occupied for about twenty-eight years in Albemarle county, Virginia, there is to be seen the grave in which Michael's body was laid to rest in the year 1762. Up to about the year 1861 this grave was marked by a rather rudely formed headstone, on which was an inscription showing that he was born in the year 1684, and died in 1762. Only a part of the headstone now remains, the upper portion having been broken off. Intelligent and trustworthy persons in the neighborhood have asserted that they had seen the stone and read the inscription before and after it was broken, and hence the date of Michael Woods's birth and death, and the precise place of his burial may be considered as settled for all time. That he was born in the Emerald Isle; that he was the second child of a certain John Woods, who was the son of an English trooper in the Cromwellian army of invasion, by his wife, Elizabeth Worsop; that he was a man of family prior to his migration from Ireland, and took with him, when he moved, his wife and several children; that he migrated to America in the year 1724, and that his first place of settlement in the New World was in the colony of Pennsylvania—all of these details have already been stated to be substantially correct on the strength of authorities cited in the first chapter of Part I, of this volume.[15] It is not claimed that each and all of the statements included in the foregoing sentence are true beyond all dispute, but that they seem to rest upon good evidence, and that nothing inconsistent with any one of them is known to the writer.

It is certainly known that the lady whom Michael Woods married, possibly nineteen years prior to his migration to America, was named Mary Campbell. It has been asserted by trustworthy writers, and has long been currently believed by the descendants of Michael and Mary, that she was of the house of the Duke of Argyle, and belonged to the famous Scotch clan—Campbell.[16] This fact, if we consider it as conclusively settled, would seem to indicate that Michael Woods may have gotten his wife in Scotland; and, if this be true, then it would seem quite possible that the Woodses may have resided in Scotland prior to their being in Ireland, which some persons well qualified to judge have not hesitated to assert was the case. The Woodses may, indeed, have been pure English stock, but they may have migrated to Scotland before coming to Ireland. And the writer confesses that there are several considerations which have tended to incline his own mind to this supposition. The fact that the father of John Woods (and grandfather of Michael) was in Cromwell's army, which invaded Ireland about 1649, does not require us to conclude that the Woodses had not left England before that time, and had not resided in Scotland. It would have been no difficult or unnatural thing for John Woods's father to have connected himself with Cromwell's army after it reached Ireland, if

his sympathies were with the invaders, and he was then a citizen of that country.

Concerning the stay which Michael and his family made in Pennsylvania, we have but little certain knowledge. It seems to have been agreed by all who have written on this subject that the Woodses and Wallaces settled in Lancaster county of that colony. The writer, however, has been unable, after some correspondence with the clerks of several of the Pennsylvania counties, to find a single record to indicate that Michael Woods ever purchased or sold any land in what was, in 1724 to 1734, Lancaster county. He may have resided there, however, without caring to make any investments in real estate, for we know he did not remain there but ten years, and then migrated to Virginia. The date of this migration is fixed in the year 1734 by Foote, Waddell, Peyton and Dr. Edgar Woods. And we happen to have a twofold explanation of this southward move of the Woodses and Wallaces. For one thing, by 1732, the original settlers of Pennsylvania, having grown jealous of the Scotch-Irish who had come into the colony by thousands, and by their frugality, industry and skill had grown prosperous, began to urge the Proprietary Government to enact restrictive measures aimed at these new-comers, and intended to harass them and discourage further additions of their kind to the population of the colony. Thus did the men who succeeded the liberty-loving and benevolent William Penn repudiate the very principles which at first had dominated the policy of that colony and rendered it attractive to the people of Ulster. The result of this ungenerous legislation, no doubt, was that many of the Scotch-Irish settlers were rendered uncomfortable and made ready to improve, with alacrity, any favorable openings for bettering their condition. The shrewd governor of the colony of Virginia, Sir William Gooch, was not slow to give special encouragement to settlers from Pennsylvania. Himself a Scotchman, he well knew the sturdy character of the Scotch-Irish, and was only too glad to see the Great Valley and all the as-yet-unsettled regions on both sides of the Blue Ridge occupied by that industrious, brave and God-fearing race. He was glad, also, to have the hardy Germans make the backwoods of Virginia their home.[17] The expansion of the colony by this means meant not only the general industrial prosperity of the country, but it provided a body of settlers on the colonial frontier, which would serve as a most valuable protection against the Indians to the older settlements in the central and tide-water portions of the colony. Gov. Gooch was a somewhat zealous partisan of the Established Church, and had no special admiration for the religious views and practices of Presbyterians and other Dissenters in the colony; but he was now more than willing to make concessions and hold out inducements to the Scotch-Irish and Germans of Pennsylvania. He offered fine lands to them upon liberal terms, and assured all new settlers of ample protection and welcome, provided they were law-abiding, and willing to uphold the Act of Toleration. Whilst the Scotch-Irish never had much use for that Act, despising, in their souls, the very idea that any decent, upright citizen should need to be "tolerated" instead of being left free to worship God as he saw best, and not compelled to pay taxes to support a form of religion which he disapproved, they were willing to accept the Governor's offer. So it came to pass that a vast tide of these brave people poured into the Great Valley, and through the gaps of the Blue Ridge over to the fertile and charming region which lay at its eastern base. Gov. Gooch was truly a shrewd statesman, but he builded much wiser than he knew; for that new element, which he thus helped to introduce into Virginia's life, ultimately effected a complete revolution in the whole spirit and character of her people and her laws. There were, indeed, some painful struggles, and no little friction as the years passed; but before the eighteenth century had run its course, the democratic ideas, which had their chief nursery in the Valley and Piedmont sections of Virginia, had come to dominate the whole of the State.[18] The common cause which all Virginians had to make against the tyrannies of the Mother

Country in the Revolutionary period brought them at last to see eye to eye, and to stand shoulder to shoulder; and when they emerged from that tremendous struggle, the old antagonisms had practically disappeared, and Virginians were one great people, living together in the most cordial friendship and mutual esteem. The bearing which these reflections have upon our narrative will be apparent as we proceed.

That famous range of the Appalachian system, called the Blue Ridge, enters Virginia from Maryland at Harper's Ferry on the Potomac, and extends clear across the State in a southwesterly direction, a distance of 250 miles, and passes on into North Carolina. On the western side of this range lies the Great Valley, which averages about thirty miles in width, and extends to the parallel range of the Alleghanies on the west. On the east side of the Blue Ridge lies a tier of counties composing what is known as the Piedmont Region of Virginia—the foot-of-the-mountain country, as its name implies. It was this Piedmont Region which Michael Woods chose as his home in 1734; and, so far as known, he was the first white man to settle in that part of the colony. It is usual to say that the romantic, not to say hilarious, expedition of Governor Spotswood, in 1716, marks the beginning of the exploration of the Valley, though several earlier tours to portions of its area are contended for by various writers.[19] The actual occupation of the Valley by permanent settlers, however, did not take place till 1732, about fourteen years after Gov. Spotswood's famous Knights of the Golden Horseshoe had uncorked and merrily emptied their numerous brandy and champagne bottles on the banks of the lovely Shenandoah.[20] A man from Pennsylvania named Joist Hite made, in 1732, what is generally considered the first permanent white settlement in the Valley about five miles south of where Winchester now stands. Hite had a warrant for 40,000 acres of land which John and Isaac Vanmeter had gotten from Gov. Gooch only two years before, and he proceeded to offer inducements to enterprising men at the North to come down into the splendid Valley and erect homes. The Piedmont Region, though closer to the older settlements of the colony, and lying on the eastern side of the mountains, was quite as slow in being settled as the Valley. Fiske tells us that in Spotswood's time (1710 to 1722) the very outposts of English civilization had not crept inland (westward) beyond the points at which the ocean tides ebbed and flowed. "A strip of forest fifty miles or more in breadth still intervened between the Virginia frontier and those blue peaks visible against the western sky."[21] This same state of things seems to have continued almost up to the time at which Michael Woods settled at the eastern base of the Blue Ridge in what is now Albemarle county, Virginia, just at the gap which thereafter took his name.[22] The western half of what is now Albemarle county seems to have had no settlers prior to the date at which Michael Woods fixed his habitation at the eastern base of the Blue Ridge. On the western side of the mountain, in the Valley, probably the only settlement then in existence, as far south as that of Woods, was the one made two years before (1732) by John Lewis, near where Staunton now is.[23] The territory now included in the county of Augusta was then a part of Orange county, and what is now Albemarle was then a part of Goochland. The frontier of the colony then extended along the eastern base of the Blue Ridge at least twenty miles back from it, and the whole of the Valley was a virgin wilderness, with a single settler in the whole of the territory now included in the counties of Rockingham, Page, Augusta, Rockbridge, and beyond, and the little colony of Joist Hite near the site of Winchester, about eighty miles to the north. It was into this practically uninhabited wilderness that Michael Woods penetrated in the year 1734,[24] there to live out the remaining days of his life. He was then fifty years of age, and had a large family of children—not less than eleven, as will be shown farther on—all of whom but one seem to have accompanied him in this migration. Of course, we are obliged to assume—though we have no positive evidence of the course

pursued in this particular case—that no sensible man would set out in that early day, upon a journey of more than two hundred miles, from Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, to the wilds of Virginia, with a lot of women and children and household effects, unless he had previously made a tour of investigation to the region in which he proposed to settle, and made some arrangements for the comfort and safety of his family. We may, therefore, feel pretty sure that several of the men of his family had visited Virginia some months in advance of the actual migration, fixed upon the exact location to be occupied, and perhaps erected a few rude cabins in the forest. The precise neighborhood selected we know with all reasonable certainty. It was in what is now Albemarle county (then Goochland), about fourteen miles west of the town of Charlottesville, and immediately at the foot of the Blue Ridge, at the gap which for several generations was called Woods's Gap, and is now known as Jarman's. The Chesapeake & Ohio Railway now traverses what was the plantation of Michael Woods, between the stations of Greenwood and Crozet. It is near the head branches of the stream called Lickinghole Creek, and in one of the most beautiful and desirable locations in Virginia. The reasons impelling Michael Woods to choose the eastern base of the Ridge for a home, instead of the Great Valley on its western side, we can only conjecture; but we can well believe that he felt he would be somewhat better shielded from Indian attacks on that side. John Lewis, the first settler in that portion of the Valley contiguous to the Woods settlement, had only been there two years; and whilst, as Waddell informs us,[25] the Valley began to fill up rapidly soon after Lewis came, it is not likely that many families had settled in that vicinity by the time Michael Woods had made up his mind to migrate.

No move could be made, by any prudent man, into the Virginia wilderness without taking account of the Indians. Whilst it seems reasonably certain that about this time (1732-5) the whites and savages were not at war with each other, it is known that the Indians at the north-west were constantly at war with other tribes at the South, and bands of warriors were frequently passing to and fro along the Valley, and through Woods's Gap, bent on mischief to each other. These warlike parties of savages could not be depended on to remain peaceable and harmless. They would steal any valuables they could lay hands on, and they were not at all averse to bloodshed, especially when meeting with parties of whites whom they greatly outnumbered. Of the Indian tribes whom the early settlers in the Valley had to deal with Mr. Waddell writes entertainingly, making free quotations from Withers's Border Warfare.[26] From his account we learn that the Delawares of the North, and the Catawbas of the South, were at war with each other about the time John Lewis and Michael Woods moved down into Virginia, and that this circumstance retarded the settlement of the country by the whites. Waddell gives it as his opinion that all of the earliest settlers of the Valley came from Pennsylvania, and came up the Shenandoah Valley. Whilst there were no roads then in existence in the Valley, there were Indian and Buffalo trails fairly well suited to packhorses.[27] According to Peyton, the war-path travelled by the Indians on their hostile expeditions against each other crossed the Blue Ridge at Woods's Gap (Jarman's) and Rockfish Gap, passed by the site of Staunton, and on down the Valley to the northward.[28] It was directly on this war-path that Michael Woods made his settlement. There is now a road leading through Woods's Gap from Albemarle over to the Valley, which reaches the South Fork of the Shenandoah river at Doom's, a small station on the Norfolk & Western R. R., and there can scarcely be a doubt that this was the precise route which Michael Woods came in 1734. The old Wilderness Road, which ran from Philadelphia to the Potomac river, and thence up the Valley to New River, and on down through Southwestern Virginia to Cumberland Gap and Kentucky, had, of course, not yet come into being for more than a small part of the distance; but no doubt the same

WOODS'S GAP.

NEAR VIEW—LOOKING TO THE SOUTHEAST.

Indian and buffalo trails, which it mainly followed, had probably been already marked out for centuries. That road passed through Lancaster, Pennsylvania, and Staunton, Virginia. The distance by that route from Lancaster to Woods's Gap was about 225 miles; and in traversing it with a miscellaneous company of women, children, cattle, and the usual array of household goods and supplies, the time occupied could hardly be less than two weeks, or longer.

Of the persons, chattels, etc., composing the little caravan of Michael Woods, we know something, but not a great deal. Still, the little we do know furnishes a basis for some most reasonable conjectures which it can do us no harm to consider for a moment. From Foote and others we learn that Michael had with him on this memorable journey several sons and sons-in-law. Dr. Foote does not give the names of any of the party, except that of Michael himself, and William Wallace, one of his sons-in-law. And he does not cite any authority for his assertion; but it is likely he knew, and had conversed with, some of old Michael's descendants in Albemarle, Augusta, or Rockbridge, between 1840 and 1850, who preserved the traditions of the family. As we know what children Michael had, and have the means of knowing about when most of his children were born, and know whom they married, and have good reasons for believing that every one of his eleven children, except his eldest (Magdalen), migrated with him to Virginia, we can make a very fair guess as to the size and composition of the company which journeyed in 1734 from Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, to Goochland county, Virginia, and came to a halt at the foot of the Blue Ridge under the shadow of the gap which came to bear the name of Woods. First of all, there were Michael and Mary, his wife. Then the three sons of Michael, whom Dr. Foote refers to, were probably—almost certainly—William, who had married Susannah Wallace; Michael, Jr., whose wife was Anne; and John, who married Susannah Anderson. The number of sons-in-law who accompanied Michael in this migration could hardly have been three, as Dr. Foote asserts, but only two. One of these was William Wallace (mentioned by Dr. Foote), who had married Hannah Woods; and another, most probably, was Andrew Wallace, brother of William, who married Margaret Woods. The only other daughter of Michael who was old enough to have been married by 1734 was Magdalen, his eldest child, whose first husband was John McDowell, and many who have written about her have positively asserted, or assumed, that she came to America with her father, and married John McDowell in Pennsylvania, and was living in Virginia as early as 1736. But each and all of these assumptions as to Magdalen are proved by the court records of Orange county, Virginia, to have been entirely mistaken. She married John McDowell in Great Britain, and did not come to America till 1737. Of this we shall have more to say when considering the number of Michael's children, further on. Dr. Foote had probably adopted the current belief that Magdalen came to America in 1724 with her parents, and he may have concluded, also, that she and her husband accompanied her father to Virginia in 1734, as they were known to have been in that colony shortly afterwards. In addition to the three married children in America, and Magdalen still in Ireland, Michael and Mary had three sons and two daughters, ranging in age from about eighteen down to ten years, all of whom we may safely assume came with their parents, namely: Richard, Martha, Andrew, Archibald and Sarah. Then, as in this company there were five young married couples, we may further assume there were not less than seven or eight little folks, most of whom were less than two years old. Then there were, in all probability, several indentured servants, belonging to members of the company. Thus there must have been from twenty-five to thirty persons, young and old, in this migration. Then these families, besides a great variety of supplies and household goods, must have brought along a number of cattle, pigs, sheep and domestic fowls, not to mention the inevitable assemblage of dogs, which could not

be left behind. For the women and children and miscellaneous chattels of so considerable a company as that a good many horses furnished with pack-saddles would be required—not less than fifteen or twenty—the grand aggregate constituting a somewhat pretentious caravan. The able-bodied men and older boys would walk, and each had, we can be sure, his flint-lock rifle, tomahawk, and hunting knife. The distance, as remarked above, from Lancaster, Pennsylvania, to Woods's Gap was 225 miles, and, as such a body could not average more than fifteen miles a day, the journey probably consumed about two weeks or longer. From Lancaster down to the Potomac—fully one-half of the distance—we would expect a pretty fair road for horses. When the company had once gotten into the Great Valley, the outposts of civilization were reached, and from thence on to their destination a sharp lookout for Indians was needful to be maintained. Before reaching the western base of the Blue Ridge, opposite the gap, soon to become known as Woods's, the decided depression in the mountain just in front became visible. At a distance of three to five miles to the west, and north-west, one easily recognizes the gap to-day. The gap-crest is 2,400 feet above sea-level, whilst the ridge-crest is, on the one side, 3,100 feet, and on the other, 3,000. The ascent from the South Fork of the Shenandoah at Doom's Station covers only about three miles, but the rise is 1,200 feet to the crest of the gap where the road passes through. Up this ascent the caravan slowly crept, following the old Indian war-path, and when the top was reached the scene to the south and south-east which met their gaze must have been enchanting, if these practical people were blessed at all with the esthetic sense. A lovelier, more impressive view it would be difficult to find anywhere in the world. Dr. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia, in his valuable History of Albemarle County, has given some interesting letters written by a Major Anbury, a British officer who was captured at Burgoyne's surrender in the fall of 1777, and who was confined for a couple of years in a prison camp at Charlottesville. It having been deemed prudent by the Americans to remove the British prisoners over into the Valley and up to Winchester, this Major Anbury, who was evidently a gentleman of culture, wrote to his friends in England an account of the trip from Charlottesville, through Woods's Gap to Winchester. In this letter, dated at Winchester Nov. 20, 1780, he says: "We crossed the Pignut Ridge, or more properly the Blue Mountains, at Woods's Gap, and though considerably loftier than those we crossed in Connecticut, we did not meet with so many difficulties; in short, you scarcely perceive, till you are upon the summit, that you are gaining an eminence, much less one that is of such prodigious height, owing to the judicious manner that the inhabitants have made the road, which by its windings renders the ascent extremely easy. After traveling near a mile through a thick wood before you gain the summit of these mountains, when you reach the top, you are suddenly surprised with an unbounded prospect that strikes you with amazement. At the foot of the mountain runs a beautiful river; beyond it is a very extensive plain, interspersed with a variety of objects to render the scene still more delightful; and about fifty miles distant are the lofty Alleghany Mountains, whose tops are buried in the skies." These, let it be noted, are the impressions of a captive British soldier in the fall of 1780—forty-six years after the Woodses and Wallaces reached the place—he being on his way to Winchester, some eighty miles to the north. Of course this gentleman was not describing the view towards which Michael Woods was now advancing, but the scenery is very charming in both directions.

It is no wonder Michael Woods was pleased with the charming country which lay spread out before him when he stood in the gap and looked toward the south and south-east. It is, of course, lovelier to-day than it was in 1734, as the whole region is under cultivation, and farm houses and villages dot the plains, and the marks of modern civilization greet the eye in every direction. Just here Michael Woods spent the remaining twenty-

WOODS'S GAP, ALBEMARLE CO., VA.

AS SEEN AT A DISTANCE OF THREE MILES, LOOKING NORTHWEST FROM SITE OF MICHAEL WOODS'S HOMESTEAD

eight years of his life, and here, in his own private burial-ground, his dust has reposed since 1762, beside that of his wife and some of his children and children's children.

The extremely exposed position occupied by the Woodses and Wallaces at the base of the Blue Ridge from the time of their settlement there in 1734, until the close of the French and Indian Wars in 1763—a period of nearly thirty years—must be borne in mind in order to understand aright the conditions in the midst of which they lived. In all those years they were in a frontier region, and constantly in danger of Indian outrages. Whilst, as was stated above, the Indians were not formally and avowedly at war with the whites for most of this period, but only with each other, yet they were constantly passing to and fro through the country, and now and then committed the most terrible deeds of blood. For instance, in December, 1742, only about eight years after Michael Woods settled at Woods's Gap, a band of Shawnees from north of the Ohio invaded the Valley, and John McDowell, the son-in-law of Michael Woods, with eight of his companions, was killed by them on James river, near Balcony Falls, in what is now Rockbridge county, where North river enters the James.[29] In 1755—Sunday, July 8—the very day before Braddock's defeat in Pennsylvania, occurred the noted massacre at Drapers Meadows, on New river, in what is now Montgomery county, Virginia. The next day—July 9, 1755—the defeat of the British and Virginians by the French and Indians at Fort Duquesne, and the death of General Braddock, their commander, soon sent a thrill of horror all through Virginia, and especially through the sparsely settled region in which the Woodses and Wallaces then lived. Thackeray, in "The Virginians," quoted by Waddell,[30] gives a graphic description of the speed with which the news of this fearful disaster reached all parts of the colony, and of the terror which seemed then to seize every heart. Of the 300 Virginia militia in the battle 90 per cent. were killed, only thirty escaping alive. The consternation of the inhabitants throughout the exposed regions near, and west of, the Blue Ridge was such as we can scarcely understand in these days of peace. Many settlers left their homes and fled, some even going down into North Carolina. The reason was that everybody fully expected that the Indians, emboldened by their notable victory, would in a few days, or weeks, at most, overrun the more exposed settlements, and murder the inhabitants and destroy everything they might be unable to carry away. Now, Michael Woods and his children were at this critical moment living in one of the most insecure localities in the colony, immediately on that very war-path from the north-west, which the savages would be expected to travel on their mission of blood and destruction. What sorrow, consternation and dread filled the hearts of the men and women of whom we now write, we can only imagine, for they have left us only the briefest records to inform us of their fearful experiences; but we know that the Woodses, Wallaces, McDowells, Lapsleys, etc., were there with their wives, their helpless little children and all their worldly possessions, and were in sore peril and distress, such as but few of their descendants have ever known. Michael Woods, therefore, spent the whole of the twenty-eight years which he lived in Virginia in the midst of the hardships and strenuous conditions of a frontier life, and in all our estimates of them we must keep these facts in mind if we would understand what manner of folk our ancestors were.

Whether Michael Woods purchased any land in Virginia at the time he migrated thither, we now have no means of determining; but Dr. Edgar Woods, who has given this question much careful study, seems to have concluded that Michael's first investment in Goochland county (now Albemarle) was made in 1737, three years after he settled in that region.[31] Certain it is, as official records show, Michael received three Crown Grants aggregating 1337 acres that year from King George II. The original patent for one of them, which is dated June 4, 1737—fourth year of George II—and signed by Sir William Gooch, the then Lieutenant-

Governor of the "Colony and Dominion of Virginia," is now in the possession of Hon. Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia, and a copy of the same is in the hands of the writer.[32] This 400-acre tract lay on Lickinghole creek and Mechums river. That same year he bought a tract of 2,000 acres on Ivy creek, not far away, from one Charles Hudson, which said Hudson had patented in 1735. Michael's son Archibald and his son-in-law, William Wallace, procured patents for Crown Grants the same year that Michael did, for about the same number of acres, each, and in the same neighborhood. Archibald had probably just reached his majority, having been born, as is supposed, in 1716. It is also asserted—upon what authority we know not—that, on that day, June 4, 1737, Michael received other grants of land aggregating 6,674 acres, and that three of his sons received grants for about 5,400 acres. Land was ridiculously cheap in that part of the country at that early pioneer period, the colonial authorities being only too glad to have sturdy settlers occupy the frontier and bear the brunt of developing the country in the face of the tremendous difficulties necessary to be encountered. Brawn, brain and nerve counted for more than cash at that particular time, and in that particular part of the colony; and it is very probable that our ancestors of that period had more of the former than of the last-named commodity. On no other theory can we explain their willingness to settle and live in that part of the world. By frugality and industry, however, they bettered their condition, and some of the children of Michael seem to have accumulated a considerable amount of property before passing away.

We do not know whether or not Michael Woods ever gave his main farm or plantation any distinctive name, but it has had at least two names since his death. In his will, dated in 1761, he makes no reference to his old home place whatever. The only land referred to in that document was a certain tract of 680 acres, lying on Ivy creek, which stream was, at its nearest point, six or seven miles to the east of the place on which Michael resided. It seems nearly certain that he had conveyed his home place, or at least that portion of it on which stood his dwelling house, to his son William, years before he died. Michael was seventy-eight years old at the time of his death, and he had probably been a widower for at least nineteen years; for in numerous conveyances he executed in 1743, his wife's name does not appear. But we know that William Woods sold part of the old place to one Thomas Adams about 1773; and that Adams, in making his will in 1788, left it to a Judge Blair, and spoke of it as "Mountain Plains." That was evidently the name the plantation had long been known by. After Judge Blair came into possession of it, however, it came to be called "Blair Park," a name it holds to this day. And because there were so many Woodses named Michael, in honor of the head of the family, one of whom was his own son, in order to distinguish the old patriarch from all the other Michaels he came to be known by all as "Michael Woods of Blair Park." The comparatively level stretch of country included within his plantation, and lying just at the foot of the Blue Ridge, and in close proximity to several considerable outlying peaks, made the name of Mountain Plains very appropriate, and it is to be regretted that this historic and suggestive appellation was ever dropped.

The first church of any faith, except that of the English Established Church, in Goochland county, belonged to Presbyterians, and was erected on or close to Michael Woods's place, and owed its existence mainly to the Woodses and Wallaces. This church was called the Mountain Plains Church, in honor of Michael Woods; and though the Presbyterians finally became so scarce in that vicinity in after years as to induce them to sell their house of worship to a sister denomination of Christians (the Baptists), the name of Mountain Plains still adheres to it, thereby affording another reason why Michael's old home place should never have been called by any other name than that which connected it so appropriately with the first man that ever came into that neighborhood to make a home.

Another change of names, fully as regrettable as this, is here suggested to the writer's mind, and that is, the one which was made in the name of the gap in the Blue Ridge which looks down upon the spot where Michael Woods lived, and which was for so many years known as Woods's Gap. In all the earlier published volumes this was the recognized name for that mountain pass. In 1757 the Virginia Colonial Assembly designated it in that way.[33] If ever there was a spot which had an appropriate name it was that gap, when called for Michael Woods. He was not only the first white man that settled anywhere within twenty miles of it, but he made his home right by it for twenty-eight years; and, above all, he was as worthy a citizen as ever resided in that part of the land, and reared there one of the most reputable families the county has ever produced. But this small honor the State of Virginia has allowed him to be deprived of. About eighty or ninety years ago, one Thomas Jarman purchased land on the crest of the Blue Ridge at that pass, and from that time on the name of Woods has been displaced by that of Jarman, and now all the maps have it "Jarman's Gap." To be sure, it is not a vital matter, or worth any contention; and yet it does seem hardly the handsome thing for Virginia to lend her countenance to a change so needless, and one which takes from one of her worthiest pioneers the only public recognition he ever had in the records of a colony and State to which he gave so many gallant defenders during the French and Indians Wars, and the Revolution. It is modestly suggested that it would not be amiss in the Virginia Legislature, at some time in the not distant future, to indulge in a little "poetic justice" by ordaining that said pass be hereafter recognized, in all the official acts of the State thereto relating, by its ancient and proper designation—"Woods's Gap." The worthy gentleman whose name became attached to this beautiful mountain pass—Mr. Jarman—could hardly oppose the change to the original designation, for his own beloved daughter, Miss Mary, showed a special liking for the name of Woods by marrying one of old Michael's grandsons.

The religious beliefs and denominational preferences of the Woodses were, as we have good reasons for believing, Presbyterian, in the main. That Michael Woods and his wife, Mary Campbell, and the Wallaces, and the McDowells, and the Lapsleys were Scotch Presbyterians there seems to be no cause to doubt. Some members of the next generation, however, became ardent Baptists. As the generations have come and gone since 1750, and intermarriages with members of various other faiths have occurred, the solidity of the Presbyterian "line" has been very considerably broken, and yet it is probably true that more of the descendants of the families named above can still be found in the Presbyterian fold than in any other one denomination of Christians.

The religious privileges of the settlers at Woods's Gap were probably never very abundant at any period in the eighteenth century; they were painfully meagre for the first ten or fifteen years of the Mountain Plains settlement. It is not likely there was anywhere within a reasonable distance of Woods's Gap a regular church of any kind prior to the year 1740. It was about that year, or a little later, that Presbyterian churches began to be organized throughout the Valley, and in the year 1745 the first steps were taken by the inhabitants at Woods's Gap to secure the regular ministrations of Gospel preachers. A travelling evangelist had occasionally passed that way, but no church had been organized, and no stated public religious meetings had been held. Those good people had, indeed, brought with them their Bibles, and Psalm books, and catechisms, and a few devotional volumes, and family religion was regularly maintained, we may feel sure; but there was, for many of these years in the wilderness, a sad dearth of the public ordinances of religion. It was truly a life of privation those "backwoods inhabitants" were obliged to live; and the struggle they had to maintain with the forces of nature in the as yet unsubdued wilderness, coupled with constant exposure to Indian

depredations, of necessity dulled very greatly their sense of spiritual things, and tended to make them careless about purely religious concerns. But their previous training in godly homes in Ireland and Scotland could not be wholly obliterated, and those hard conditions with which they had to deal must have often made them feel their need of help other than human, so that the fires on their family altars, and in their hearts, never quite died out. So we find that, in 1745, John Woods, one of old Michael's favorite sons, was sent to Donegal Presbytery, away up in Pennsylvania, to prosecute a call for the ministerial services of a Rev. John Hindman in behalf of the churches of Mountain Plains and Rockfish. This effort was not successful, however, but it was renewed two years later. In 1747 a call, signed by fifty-seven persons, was sent on to a Rev. Samuel Black to become the pastor of the scattered sheep of Christ's fold at Mountain Plains and Ivy Creek.[34] This gentleman accepted the call, and was the first Presbyterian minister that ever resided in Albemarle county. He was there by 1751, and remained about twenty years, though he probably did not serve the people at Woods's Gap very long, as the records of Hanover Presbytery for 1755 show that a petition was then before it from the people of that section asking for a preacher. In March, 1756, in response to that request, the famous Samuel Davies spent a few days preaching for them. He had a regular charge in Hanover county, and could only pay them a brief visit. But as the years passed the opportunities for the stated services of regular ministers increased. During the last third of the eighteenth century the Presbytery of Hanover met in that region of Albemarle at least a dozen times, and by the year 1800 the rural districts of that part of Virginia were fairly well supplied with Gospel privileges. But the first quarter of a century which the Woodses and Wallaces spent in Virginia were years of spiritual destitution, as well as physical hardship.

In the fall of 1761 Michael Woods, being then seventy-seven years old, and very ill, and realizing that the time was near when he should be gathered to his fathers, proceeded to make his last will. Born one year before the close of the reign of Charles II (1684), he lived through the brief reign of James II, through the stormy days of William and Mary, and was just thirty when the first of the Georges ascended the throne in 1714. He outlived George I and George II, and saw the first two years of George III. Coming to Virginia in 1734, then a man of fifty, when George Washington was but an infant of two years, he found Sir William Gooch at the helm in the colony. Outliving Gooch, he saw John Robinson, Lord Albemarle, Louis Burwell, Robert Dinwiddie, and John Blair come and go, each in his turn, as colonial governor, and witnessed also the first four years of the administration of Gov. Fauquier, and closed his life just as the French and Indian War was about at an end. He seems to have been a farmer all his life, and, so far as the writer is informed, he does not seem ever to have held any very important official position, or to have seen service as a soldier. The records of Albemarle show that at one time and another he acquired a good deal of landed property; but so far as can be discovered from his last will, it would be inferred by many that he had disposed of all but a single tract before writing that instrument. He makes reference to but a small amount of personal property in his will, and yet this fact does not necessarily imply that he did not possess a great deal besides, which he meant should descend according to the common law to his heirs. Even the names of the heirs, to whom he desired such unmentioned property to go, were not obliged to be referred to. He did not need, in fact, to make any will at all, except as he wished to make bequests to certain individuals in a manner different from that indicated by the law. The probability is, however, that he had long since distributed most of his property, and was living with his son William at the old home place. His will, on record at Charlottesville, reads as follows:

"In the name of God, amen! This twenty-fourth day of November, one thousand seven hun-

dred and sixty-one, I, Michael Woods, of the Colony of Virginia, and county of Albemarle, being very sick and weak in body, but of perfect mind and memory, thanks to God, therefore, calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament, that is to say, principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God that gave it, and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in decent Christian burial, and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, devise and dispose of in the following manner and form (and first) let all my debts be paid, (secondly) I give and bequeath to son Archibald Woods ten pounds. (Thirdly) I give and bequeath to son John Woods ten pounds. Fourthly, I give and bequeath to daughter Sarah ten pounds. Fifthly, I give and bequeath to daughter Hannah ten pounds. Sixthly, I give and bequeath my deceased daughter Margaret's children ten pounds. Seventhly, I give and bequeath to son Archibald and son John my 680 acres of land lying on Ivy Creek, and that the said land shall be sold and the money divided among son Archibald, John, and William Wallace's families, and that each grandchild now in being shall have an equal share. Eighthly, I give and bequeath to son William Woods twenty shillings, which shall be paid out of said land. Ninthly, I give to William's son Michael twenty shillings, which shall be paid out of said land. Tenthly, I give and bequeath to daughter Sarah one pistole which shall be of the ready money now by me. Eleventhly, I give and bequeath to son Archibald's son Michael my great coat. And I do hereby utterly revoke and disallow all and every other former testaments, wills, legacies, bequeaths and executions by me in any ways before named, willed and bequeathed, ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

"MICHAEL $_{\text{m.}}$ WOODS, (L. S.)

"Signed, sealed, published and pronounced and declared by the said Michael Woods as his last will and testament. In presence of the subscribers,

"MICHAEL WOODS, Minor,
"MICHAEL WALLACE.

"I do by these presents constitute and appoint son Archibald Woods, John Woods and William Wallace to be my sole executors, as witness my hand the year and day above written.

"MICHAEL $_{\text{m.}}$ WOODS, (L. S.)

"MICHAEL WOODS, Minor,
"MICHAEL WALLACE."

The following certificate from the clerk of the County Court of Albemarle is appended to the will, as follows:

"At a court held for Albemarle county the 11th day of June, 1762, this last will and testament of Michael Woods, deceased, was produced in court, Michael Woods, minor, and Michael Wallace, two of the devisees and legatees in the said will, relinquish all benefit they might claim by the said will, whereupon the same was proved by the oaths of the said Michael Woods, minor, and Michael Wallace, the witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. And on the motion of John Woods and William Wallace, two of the executors therein named, made oath according to law, certificate is granted them for obtaining a probate in due form giving security, whereupon they, with Arthur Hopkins and William Cabell Gent, their securities, entered into and acknowledged their bond accordingly.

"Test. JOHN NICHOLAS, Clk."

Of the funeral exercises held over the remains of Michael Woods we have no record. We only know that his family burial-ground was situated about three to five hundred yards south of his dwelling, and there he was laid to rest. His beloved wife, Mary Campbell, had probably been dead about twenty years, as her name does not appear in deeds he executed in 1743. In conveying to his son William a tract of 294 acres many years before his

death, which included the old homestead and the family burial-ground, Michael expressly reserved to himself and heirs forever the right to enter and care for said burial-ground, and prohibited any and all persons from cultivating or disturbing the same. In 1895, the date at which the photo was taken of this little "God's Acre," which was used in producing the engraving herewith given, there was a rail fence around the spot, and the entire enclosure was thickly set in cherry trees. Michael's grave is still visible, and is located in the extreme north-western corner of the plot, but the rude head and foot stones which were originally set there have fallen down, and the portion of the stone which contained the inscription was broken off about 1860, and its whereabouts are no longer known. The neglected and ragged condition of this burial-ground, in which many of the Woodses were interred, is a reproach to their descendants. Their living representatives owe it to their ancestors and to themselves to atone for this neglect by enclosing that plot with a neat and substantial iron fence, and erecting a marble shaft in honor of those yet sleeping there. If each one of the now living descendants of Michael Woods would contribute one dollar, this good work could easily be accomplished. Attention is called here to the peculiar manner in which Michael signed his name—he always wrote a small letter m between Michael and Woods, and a little below the line, as though it were the initial of a middle name. We do not understand it.[55]

Before proceeding to give some account of the children of Michael Woods and Mary Campbell, his wife, it is incumbent on us to settle how many children there were, and what names they bore. This is needful because most of those persons who have undertaken to write about Michael Woods have gone upon the supposition that the six children mentioned by him in his will were the only ones he had. As soon as the present writer began gathering material for this volume this question confronted him, and he saw it had to be settled in one way or another in order to be able to give a satisfactory account of the numerous branches of Woodses claiming kinship with Michael, of Blair Park. After making a pretty thorough investigation of the subject, and consulting every available source of information, he has reached the positive conclusion that Michael of Blair Park had a number of children in addition to the six mentioned in the will. That he had at least eleven children, which is five more than are named in his will, it shall now be ours to prove.

In the first place, a family of ten or a dozen children in those brave old days was not considered a specially large one. It is not unheard of even in our own times. The writer is himself the youngest of an even dozen children, all having the same father and mother. Certain it is that a family of only six children was, a hundred years ago, considered a small one.

The only reason the writer has ever heard anyone assign for denying that Michael and Mary had more than the six children mentioned in the will is the mere fact that only those six are referred to in that instrument. In other words, the only argument we have to meet is the old one of *ad ignorantiam*. The will names three sons and three daughters, to-wit: William, John and Archibald, and Hannah, Margaret and Sarah. But was Michael obliged to mention children who had long since gotten their portion of his estate? If a will purported to be a family history, then it would have been strange indeed to omit any one of them; but a will is intended solely to indicate the direction the testator wishes certain parts of his property to take, and what persons shall see to its distribution; and if he has several children for whom he has previously made all the provision he cares to make, why need he refer to them at all? The law does not require him to do so, and his failure so to do need not work any harm to any of his heirs. Hence he may or may not refer to them, as he thinks most convenient. It is a notorious fact that thousands of men of property, before reaching the advanced age of seventy-seven, make distribution of the bulk of their estates among their several heirs, or at

GROVE COVERING FAMILY BURIAL PLOT OF MICHAEL WOODS AT BLAIR PARK, VA.
THE GRAVE OF MICHAEL, OPENED IN 1762, IS AT RIGHT HAND END OF PLOT. PHOTO TAKEN IN 189[illegible]

least give some of the children their portions before making their wills, and hence in writing their wills have only some of the younger children to provide for. Now and then some of the children in a family marry fortunes, or by some other means acquire much larger estates than either their parents or their brothers and sisters ever possessed, in which cases the father would naturally want to provide for the less fortunate ones, and might give no part of his small estate to the wealthier children. And once in a great while we find a father who has children, who in some way have excited his sore displeasure and from whom he has become alienated. In all such cases it were nothing very surprising to find no mention of one or more of his children in his will.

But there is another class of cases, which are to be met with everywhere now and then, in which the testator not only omits all reference to one or more of his children, but likewise says not a word in his will concerning the larger part of his estate. He may own a dozen farms or city lots, and have hundreds of bonds and other investments, worth, in the aggregate, a million dollars; and, besides a wife, he may have several children for whom he cherishes the warmest natural affection. Such a man might, without the slightest irregularity, make a will consisting of a single provision only, to this effect: "I hereby bequeath to my wife, Mary, one hundred thousand dollars." What objection could anybody fairly make to his not mentioning his children and his various items of property? None at all. Such a will would simply mean that he wanted his wife, first of all, to be given the one hundred thousand dollars, and the residue of his estate to be distributed to his heirs, whoever they be, according to the law of the State in which he resided. This sort of a will can be met with in almost every State in the Union. It would not in the slightest degree imply that he had no children, nor that he had only the amount of money given to his wife. For all we know, Michael Woods may have had, when he made his will, several plantations, and a large number of slaves, and many horses, cattle, sheep, farming implements, and household goods, and silver plate and jewelry, worth altogether ten thousand pounds; and it may be that he had some special reasons for wanting to give the six children a little more than the others, and so charged his general estate with these particular bequests, intending that the residue of his property, remaining after satisfying these specific demands, should be equally divided, as the common law directed, between all the children. In this way the unnamed children would get all that Michael purposed they should have as certainly as if he had expressly mentioned them by name. And in favor of this supposition in this case is the almost demonstrated fact that Michael Woods was possessed of a good many items of property to which no allusion is made in his will. He speaks, in the will, of "the ready money now by me," in making his devise of "one pistole" to his daughter Sarah, to whom he had already given ten pounds without hinting what shape these pounds were then in, and who knows how many hundreds, or thousands of pounds, he may have had loaned out over the county to which he makes no allusion, and which he fully intended should be divided, according to law, among his various heirs? His own son-in-law, Joseph Lapsley, the husband of his daughter Sarah, above mentioned, did precisely this thing in writing his will. He mentioned only two of his children, Joseph, Jr., and John, when it is known he had another son and several daughters. Samuel Dedman, of Albemarle, who died a century ago, and who was the writer's great-grandfather, made no mention, in his will, of the son who bore his own name—Samuel Dedman, Jr.,—and yet the court records show that that son was alive when his father died. In view of these considerations, which we feel sure no good lawyer will set aside as mere baseless reasoning, we ought to dismiss from our minds the idea that a man can not have any children whom he omits to mention in his will. Of course we have not yet proved that Michael actually had children who were not referred to in the will, but we have at least, as we hope, removed some purely imaginary obstacles out of the way,

and we are now prepared for such positive proof of the justice of the writer's contentions as may be adduced.

The writer is of the opinion that Michael Woods of Blair Park had, in addition to the six children mentioned in his will, certainly four, and very probably five more. They are the following, to-wit: 1, Michael, whose wife was Anne, who resided for many years in Albemarle, and who late in life moved to Botetourt, and there died in 1777; 2, Magdalen, who married John McDowell, and later, Benjamin Borden, Jr., and still later, Col. John Bowyer, and who attained to an extraordinary age; 3, Martha, who was the wife of Peter Wallace, Jr., and died in 1790; 4, Andrew, who married a Miss Poage, and died in 1781; and 5, Richard. Besides these five there were one or two other Woodses in Albemarle who were, in all probability, either the sons or near kinsmen of Michael, namely, James and Samuel. As the evidence to be adduced for the correctness of our opinions is not exactly the same for any two of the five alleged children, it will be best to take up each one separately. And let it be observed that if we shall be able to make out our case for any one of the five we shall have succeeded in demonstrating the unsoundness of the position that mere non-mention of a person in a will necessarily implies that he or she could not be a child of the testator. Let it be also noted that not one particle of objection can be offered to the theory of more than six children except the mere supposed absence of proof of there having been more.

We will begin with Michael Woods, who, for convenience, is often spoken of as "Michael of Botetourt," to distinguish him from Michael of Blair Park. For one thing, all will surely agree that it would have been a natural and proper thing for Michael of Blair Park to have named one of his sons for himself; and if this man now under consideration was not the son of the Blair Park Michael, then, so far as we have information, the latter had no namesake at all among his own children. Secondly, it is absolutely certain that this Botetourt Michael lived in the same county, and parish and neighborhood as the other Michael for at least thirty years. Their farms were not over five miles apart. From a deed now on record in the court-house at Charlottesville, executed in 1743, we learn that the Blair Park Michael conveyed a tract of 200 acres of land to the other Michael, which tract Botetourt Michael sold in 1773, about eleven years after the Blair Park Michael had died, and a year or two after he himself had moved to the county of Botetourt to reside. This Botetourt Michael may have come to that neighborhood when Blair Park Michael did—as this writer is confident was the case—but he was certainly a near neighbor of Blair Park Michael from 1743 until the latter died. Right there in the nest of Woodses and Wallaces this Botetourt Michael spent thirty years, and possibly nearly forty years, of his life. What more natural than that in a frontier, backwoods region of the colony a father and his sons should live in the closest touch with each other? And we find that the Botetourt Michael did not leave Albemarle till the other Michael had been dead eight or ten years. We know he did not sell his farm in Albemarle for several years after he had settled in Botetourt. Thirdly, when we come to examine the deed above referred to, and note who were the witnesses to it, we get another significant intimation of the fact that the grantor and grantee were probably father and son. There are four witnesses to this deed of 1743, and we find three of them are the sons of Michael of Blair Park (the very ones mentioned in his will), and the other one was his son-in-law William Wallace. If the two Michaels were father and son we can see why the whole transaction would be exclusively a family affair, and all four witnesses as close to the grantee as to the grantor. But if the Botetourt Michael had been only a distant relative of the other Michael, or was merely a man of the same name who happened to be living in the neighborhood, it would have been more natural for the grantee to have had at least one of the four witnesses more closely connected with himself than with the

grantor. It is not at all usual for men in getting witnesses to important transactions to have all of them the sons of the one party and none of them very close to themselves, and that, too, when so many as four witnesses are secured. That would look like a decidedly one-sided affair. Examining the court records at Charlottesville a little more closely for 1743, we are struck with the fact that it seems to have been a year in which Michael of Blair Park was bent on distributing his landed estate among his children who were living close by him. In that one year we find he made conveyances of land to his son William, his son John, his son-in-law William, and to another individual. And who was this fourth individual who constitutes one of this quartet of grantees? It was none other than this Botetourt Michael, whom we feel certain was just as much the son of Blair Park Michael as William and John Woods were, and nearer to him than William Wallace. In 1743 Blair Park Michael was fifty-nine years old, and a widower; William was probably about thirty-six, Michael of Botetourt about thirty-five, and John thirty-one. William Wallace was probably the same age as William Woods. How natural and proper that at this time Michael of Blair Park should give his sons each a good farm? It is true that in each conveyance a money consideration is mentioned, but that does not signify that a single pound actually changed hands. The sums stated may have been put there merely to indicate the value of the portion given to each as a guide in determining, in after years, what would be an equitable arrangement for the respective heirs.

But we are not yet done with this deed of 1743, made to Michael of Botetourt. A certified copy of it lies before the writer, and its preamble will now be cited, just as it is: "This indenture made the third day of August, in the seventeenth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord George II by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King Defender of the Faith, etc., and in the year of Our Lord Christ MDCCXLIII., between Michael Woods, Sr., of the parish of Saint James and county of Goochland, farmer, of the one, and Michael Woods, Jun'r, of the same parish and county, of the other part, witnesseth," etc.

The point we want noted here is that in this conveyance alone, of all the four executed in 1743, Blair Park Michael designates himself as Michael Woods "Senior." In speaking of the grantee he designates him as Michael "Junior." This grantee could not possibly have been one of the numerous grandsons of old Michael bearing his name, for not one of them was then of sufficient age to take the title to real estate. And in none of the instruments executed prior to old Michael's death in which the grandsons named Michael Woods are referred to, or sign their names, does the suffix "Junior" occur so far as we have been able to discover. Why did Blair Park Michael describe the other Michael, the grantee, as "Junior?" Is that the likely way in which he would have discriminated a distant kinsman, or a man outside his family who happened to have that name and reside in Goochland? That explanatory appendix to a name is almost always the mark of sonship, and not of mere sameness of name. If any one should object that had the grantee been the elder Michael's son the relationship would have been recognized in that deed, it may be replied that in the deeds of that same year to two sons and a son-in-law there is no allusion whatever to the relationship of the parties to each other. A fac-simile reproduction of a part of the deed to John Woods of 1743 is given in Appendix F, and it will speak for itself. The reference to the grantee in this part of the deed is the same as that in the body of the instrument. That word "Junior" is certainly very suggestive. Whilst admitting that it could, without impropriety, be applied to the younger of two persons in the same community bearing the same name, it is but fair to contend that in nearly all cases it is used to discriminate a son from his father. Some other explanatory appendix is usually employed where the persons having the same name are not father and son. In the Woods family in Albemarle there were several individuals named William, but those not

related as father and son were discriminated as "Beaver Creek Billy Woods," and "Baptist Billy Woods." In the case in hand, if the younger Michael had not been the elder Michael's son he would most probably have been called "Ivy Creek Michael," after the stream on whose headwaters his farm lay, or by some other distinctive title.

There is something suggestive also in the prevalence of certain Christian names to be found in the families of these two Michaels, respectively. In those old days the descendants of the Scottish Highlanders were exceedingly clannish, and a man was far more likely then than now to adhere to the family names in naming his children. Blood relationship counted for much, and the old clan feeling was strong. The man who attempts to count and properly locate all the Michaels and Johns and Samuels and Williams in the Woods families from 1700 to 1800 will soon find himself hopelessly confused. On examining the names of the children of these two Michaels we find we have in each family a William, a Magdalen, a Sarah, a Martha, and a Margaret. If we could but know the names of all the little children that probably came into those two homes to abide only a few years and pass away, we should doubtless be able to illustrate the persistency of family names yet more strikingly. Christian names were not so exceedingly scarce in those days that each of these two men must needs employ the same ones for at least five of their children, respectively. It certainly does look as if these two Michaels were not merely near of kin, but father and son.

But we now come to deal with something more reliable and convincing than even the strong circumstantial evidence we have been considering. There is unimpeachable testimony of persons who were not only in the highest degree trustworthy, and thoroughly capable of judging as to the value and meaning of well-established family traditions, but who through a long course of years were in a position to learn the truth, and who had no motive imaginable for making false statements concerning this question.

It was the writer's good fortune, several years ago, to get into communication with Major J. A. R. Varner, of Lexington, Virginia, who has been dead since the fall of 1895. This gentleman was himself a descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his daughter Martha, who was the wife of Peter Wallace, Jr., and he made a great deal of research in the records of courts and families in Rockbridge county, Virginia, and learned a great deal about the Woodses and Wallaces, many of whom were citizens of that county from 1734 onward. Major Varner was a man of high character, well educated, and very intelligent. The present writer has now in his possession three letters written by Major Varner not long before his death, and from these letters liberal quotations will be made. Several of his statements concerning both Wallaces and Woodses will here be given which may seem at first glance to be not entirely relevant to the particular point now under consideration, but which will later on be seen to bear directly on it. Under date of July 21, 1893, Major Varner writes as follows: "Martha Woods, wife of Peter Wallace, was the daughter of Michael Woods, of Albemarle, and the mother of the said Peter Wallace was Elizabeth Woods, a sister of the aforesaid Michael Woods. Peter Wallace and his wife, Martha Woods, were first cousins. * * * Peter Wallace, Sr., father of the Peter Wallace, Jr., mentioned, is said to have been a Highland Scotchman, but he emigrated to the Province of Ulster and died there. It is said by some that he came over with his family to Pennsylvania and died in that province. His wife was named Elizabeth Woods, and she was a sister of Michael Woods of Blair Park. It is not known how many children were born to Peter Wallace and his wife Elizabeth Woods, but it is known beyond a reasonable doubt that five of their sons—five brothers—came from Pennsylvania between 1734 and 1740 to their uncle Michael Woods's home at Blair Park in one of the gaps in the Blue Ridge, in what is now known as Albemarle county, Virginia. The names of these five Wallace broth-

ers were: Peter, William, Adam, Samuel and Andrew. Three of these brothers married their first cousins, daughters of their uncle, Michael Woods. Peter Wallace married Martha Woods; William married Hannah Woods; Andrew married Margaret Woods.* * * Samuel Wallace, one of the five brothers, married Esther Baker, of Charlotte county, Virginia, and was the father of Judge Caleb Wallace, of the Supreme Court of Kentucky. I have so far been unable to get any information of Adam Wallace or his possible descendants. It is thought by some who have written on the subject that the author of that popular novel, "Ben Hur," is descended from Andrew Wallace and his wife Margaret Woods. In fact General Wallace, in a letter about the old sword, wrote me that such was his belief, he being descended from an Andrew Wallace. * * * I am fully satisfied that Michael Woods, of Botetourt, was a brother of Martha Woods, wife of Peter Wallace, and that he was a son of Michael Woods, who died in 1762, and I am also fully satisfied that Magdalen Woods, who married McDowell—Borden—Bowyer, was both the daughter of Michael Woods, of Albemarle, and sister of Michael Woods of Botetourt.

"And now for my reasons for the above statements: My mother's uncle, James Wallace—brother of Andrew Wallace, her father—was born in 1774 and died in 1846. He left a widow and a large family of children, among the latter, two daughters, Mrs. Elizabeth Wallace Ould, of Campbell county, Virginia (born in 1806), and Mrs. Magdalen Campbell Wallace Cummings (born in 1812), wife of Rev. Parry Cummings, a Methodist minister of the State of Indiana. Both of these ladies are now dead, having reached the ages of eighty-seven and eighty-one, respectively. They were both very intelligent women, had wonderful memories, and were in possession of their mental faculties to the last. At the death of their parents both had reached middle life, and that time of life when people of respectable parentage and intelligence take great interest in matters genealogical, especially when they know they come from good, honest folk. Their father was a man of intelligence; I know he wrote a good hand and an excellent letter; he was sixteen years old when his grandmother Martha (Woods) Wallace died, and ten when his grandfather Peter Wallace died. Mrs. Ould and Mrs. Cummings were young ladies twenty-four and eighteen years old, respectively, when Mrs. Magdalen Campbell died. Mrs. Campbell was intimately known to both of them—one of them was named for her. Mrs. Campbell was born in 1755 and died in 1830; she was a married woman when Peter and Martha Wallace died, and she never visited a house that she did not recount the deeds and the death of the Wallace Revolutionary soldier brothers. She was a young lady when they went to the wars. It would seem strange, after all that has been stated, with such favorable opportunities for acquiring family history, that Mrs. Ould and Mrs. Cummings did not know all about their father's people.

"Two or three years ago I wrote to Mrs. Cummings, of Indiana, for information in regard to family history, for reply to a letter from a distant relative in Kentucky. Under date of August 20, 1890, she wrote me; and from her letter I take the following extracts:

"'Our great-grandmother was named Martha Woods. She had six sons and three daughters—Malcomb, Samuel, James, Adam, Andrew, John, Elizabeth, Janet and Susannah.* * * Our great-grandmother had two sisters, they all lived on adjoining farms near Lexington—Magdalen and Sarah. Magdalen married General Bowyer and Sarah married Joseph Lapsley. Your mother (Sarah Lapsley Wallace) and sister Sally were named for her. * * * Old aunt Magdalen Campbell, as all us children who were kin to her called her, was a niece of great-grandmother.'

"The above extracts, I think, are conclusive, and prove everything: 1. Michael Woods, in his will, mentions his daughter Sarah (Lapsley); 2. Mrs. Cummings says that Sarah Lapsley was a sister of Magdalen McDowell—Borden—Bowyer, and Martha Wallace; and 3, that Mrs. Magdalen

Campbell, who was the daughter of Michael Woods of Botetourt, was a niece of Mrs. Martha Wallace, *i. e.*, that she was her brother's child and daughter."

It would seem idle to seek for further proof than the letters just quoted from contain. They not only make it plain that Michael Woods of Botetourt was one of the children of Michael of Blair Park, but that Magdalen, who married McDowell, and Martha, who married Peter Wallace, Jr., were likewise. Thus it seems to have been settled that old Michael of Blair Park had at least three children who are not named in his will—Michael, Jr., Magdalen, and Martha; and having established this fact, an effectual breach has been made in that line of reasoning which held that he had no children but the six expressly referred to in that instrument. When the writer became thoroughly satisfied of the soundness of the evidence adduced by Major Varner he wrote him to express his satisfaction. In reply to his letter Major Varner wrote back, under date of May 25, 1895, as follows: "I assure you I am glad to know that you are now fully convinced that the two Michael Woodses were father and son. I never entertained a doubt of that relationship from the time the matter was first brought to my attention, and I had investigated the question."

This was the conviction, also, of the late Michael Woods Wallace, who died at a ripe old age some years ago in Albemarle county, Virginia. This gentleman was a descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his daughter Hannah, who married William Wallace. He was an elder in the Presbyterian church, and spent his life, as the writer understands, within three miles of the old Blair Park homestead. He was a man of great intelligence and high character, and could have no motive for attributing to his ancestor any children he did not really have. He informed General Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, that he was satisfied Michael of Botetourt was a son of Blair Park Michael. It was the privilege of the writer to call on Mr. Wallace at his home near Blair Park in 1893, and to converse with him concerning the ancient Woodses and Wallaces, with the view of gathering information for this work.

It may not be amiss to mention here, also, the opinions and convictions of the late H. P. Cochran, of Charlottesville, Virginia. Concerning this gentleman, the late Major Varner, mentioned and quoted from on the foregoing pages of this volume, wrote to the present writer May 25, 1895. It appears that Mr. Cochran and the late Judge William McLaughlin, of Lexington, Virginia, had both been making investigations relative to the question now under consideration, and after considerable research they had both reached the conclusion that Michael Woods of Blair Park had a number of children who were not referred to in his will. In a letter dated March 1, 1892, Mr. Cochran wrote Judge McLaughlin as follows: "I thank you for your favor of 21st ulto., with enclosure. I think you are correct in what you say in regard to Magdalene Woods and her sisters. I believe Michael Woods, Senior, had three daughters to marry Wallaces. Michael Woods, Senior's, wife was named Mary Campbell, and it is remarkable how often in all the wills of his sons, sons-in-law and grandsons which I have been able to come across, we find the family names, William, Michael, Hannah, Sarah, etc.

"I have gotten Mr. Woods to confess that Michael Woods of Botetourt and Magdalene Woods were brother and sister. There is no doubt in my mind as to Michael of Botetourt being son of Michael of Albemarle. I still think Richard Woods, of Augusta, sheriff *circa* 1757, was Magdalene's brother. The only evidence, however, which I have is the name, that he was guardian for Samuel McDowell, and Samuel McDowell was security on his sheriff's bond. I hope yet to happen on further evidence. The above mentioned Richard had a son-in-law of the same name, as I found out from a deed in Augusta county clerk's office. I can not find the name Martha and Magdalene among any of the grandchildren of Michael Woods, Senior, except in one case each, namely: Martha Borden, and Magdalene (Woods) Camp-

bell, daughter of Michael Woods of Botetourt. May not Michael, Martha and Magdalene have been the oldest children and the first to marry and move away? I enclose you some mems. in pencil, which may probably interest you.

"Yours very truly,

"H. P. COCHRAN."

"Michael Woods's will, dated Nov. 24, 1761, proved June, 1762. He mentions in his will his sons Archibald, William, and John; his daughters Sarah, Hannah; his son-in-law William Wallace; his deceased daughter Margaret's children; his grandson Michael, son of William; and his grandson Michael, son of Archibald. Executors: Archibald Woods, John Woods, and William Wallace. Witnesses: Michael Woods, minor, and Michael Wallace.

"Did Michael Woods have other children than those mentioned in his will?

"I think he had several more, viz.: Michael, and probably Andrew and Richard, Magdalene and Martha.

"It appears from the records of Goochland county that Michael Woods, Senior, had large landed possessions on Ivy Creek and Meehum's river—one tract will be particularly noticed—2,000 acres from Charles Hudson by deed dated June 10, 1737. In 1743 Michael Woods deeded a tract of land to John Woods; one to Archibald Woods; one to William Woods. In 1743 Michael Woods, Sr., conveyed to Michael Woods, Jr., both of Albemarle, 200 acres of land, being part of 2,000 acres conveyed by Charles Hudson to Michael Woods, Sr., [by deed of June 10, 1737], and in 1773 Michael Woods, [Jr.], of Albemarle, and Anne, his wife, conveyed to Thomas Bird, of Caroline, 200 acres, a part of 2,000 acres granted to Charles Hudson by patent dated July 24, 1735. This, I think, shows that Michael Woods, of Albemarle, had a son Michael. The wife of Michael Woods of Botetourt was named Anne. Besides this we find from the will of Michael Woods of Botetourt that he had five children, to-wit: William, Magdalene Campbell, Martha, Sarah and Margaret, who had the same names as five of the children of Michael Woods, of Albemarle.

"I will add here in addition to a statement heretofore made, to-wit: That Magdalene Woods' three daughters, Sarah McDowell, Martha Borden, and Hannah Borden had the same Christian names as those of the daughters of Michael Woods, of Albemarle.

"I am satisfied that Michael Woods, of Albemarle, who died in 1762, had at least the following children:

"Archibald Woods, who married Isabella ———; Michael Woods, who married Anne ———; John Woods, who married Susannah Anderson; William Woods, who married ———; Magdalene Woods, who married McDowell—Borden—Bowyer; Sarah Woods, who married Joseph Lapsley; Hannah Woods, who married William Wallace; Margaret Woods, who married Andrew Wallace; Martha Woods, who married Peter Wallace, [Jr.]. As to Margaret, whom I put down as having married Andrew Wallace, I have this to say: In 1748 Michael Woods conveyed to Andrew Wallace 400 acres of land, 200 acres of which was in way of dowry with his daughter. In 1762 Margaret was dead. I have come across a will of one Andrew Wallace, who died in 1785, mentioning in his will his children Michael, Samuel, Elizabeth, Busco, Mary Henderson, Hannah Wallace, Susannah Collins, Margaret Wallace, Jean Wilson (in two other places Wallace). This Andrew may have been the son of the Andrew who married Margaret Woods, he may have been married a second time, or he may have been married long before 1748."

Concerning the Mr. Cochran, the author of the above quoted letter, Major Varner has this to say in his communication to the writer in May, 1895, above referred to: "The writer of the letter to Judge McLaughlin, the late Howe Peyton Cochran (I think that was his full name), who was a member of the 'ancient and honorable clan of Woodsmen,' was a lawyer, a man of ability, of high character and unspotted reputation." The opinions of such a man as Mr. Cochran, who was him-

self a descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and who gave the question now under consideration a very careful investigation, would, of themselves, almost settle the matter in a case like this in which there is not one particle of adverse testimony; but when taken in connection with much strong circumstantial evidence, the positive assertions of Mrs. Ould and Mrs. Cummings, and the concurrent opinions of various persons of high intelligence and reliability, they seem to render further argument useless. That Michael Woods of Blair Park had a number of sons and daughters whom he did not mention in his last will would seem to have been proven beyond all reasonable doubt; and unless some one shall hereafter be able to produce some very convincing proof to the contrary, it would seem to be but just that the contention of Major Varner, Mr. Michael W. Wallace, Mr. H. P. Cochran, the present writer, and various other persons who could be mentioned, has been fully established, certainly so far, at least, as concerns Michael Woods, Jr., Magdalen Woods, and Martha Woods.

The three persons just mentioned, however, are not the only ones not referred to in the last will of Michael of Blair Park who are, with good reason, believed to have been his children. The like claim is made for at least two more sons, namely: Andrew Woods and Richard Woods. The cases of the three children we have just considered were so intimately related to each other that the arguments adduced for any one of them being a child of old Michael of Blair Park bore with more or less force upon the cases of the other two. It is somewhat otherwise as respects Andrew and Richard Woods. Now that it has been proven that the mere failure of Michael's will to mention individuals does not in the slightest degree militate against their claim to be his children, we may feel the more confident that any reasonable evidence which can be presented in behalf of Andrew and Richard will at once command full and unprejudiced consideration.

Concerning Andrew Woods it may be affirmed, first of all, that not one particle of evidence adverse to his claim has ever been put forward, so far as we have ever been able to learn. There is absolutely nothing against his claim but the bare fact that the will does not mention his name. If his claim shall be substantiated, as we feel reasonably confident it will, that would only make Michael Woods of Blair Park to have had ten children; and all will concede that even a dozen children was nothing at all uncommon in that period—it is nothing very remarkable even in our own time.

In the next place, we find two gentlemen of high character and intelligence who, after very careful investigation of the whole subject, have reached the conclusion that Andrew Woods was a son of Michael of Blair Park. These gentlemen are the late H. P. Cochran, whose letter to Judge McLaughlin is given on a preceding page; and the Rev. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia. Mr. Cochran, as quoted above, says: "Did Michael Woods have other children than those mentioned in his will? I think he had several more, viz.: Michael, and probably, Andrew," etc. Let it be borne in mind that this is the opinion of a descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, a very intelligent and trustworthy gentleman, who was anxious to know the truth, and who, so far as appears, could not have had the remotest interest in misstating the relationship of Andrew to Michael Woods.

The Rev. Edgar Woods, above mentioned, is a lineal descendant of Andrew Woods, and he probably knows more of the history and connections of the Virginia Woodses than any man living. He has spent, probably, more time searching the court records for items about the family, and corresponding with the scattered descendants of the Virginia Woodses, than any other person of this generation. He is known to be a conscientious and impartial man, of judicial temperament, and one who measures his words with care. He is the author of a booklet giving the names and genealogical connections of hundreds of the Woodses, and of a history of the county of Albemarle, containing much reliable information in regard to all the Woodses in

Virginia and many other States. It is not believed that Dr. Woods could reap the slightest advantage, pecuniary or otherwise, from having proved that Andrew Woods was a son of Michael of Blair Park. And yet this gentleman, after much weighing of all the facts at his command, has reached the conclusion that, beyond reasonable doubt, Andrew was a son of Michael of Blair Park.

In the case of Andrew Woods, as in that of Michael Woods, Jr., there is the significant fact that for many years of his life he made his home within a very few miles of Michael, his alleged father. It is certainly known from the Albemarle county records that from the year 1750 to 1766—a period of sixteen years—Andrew Woods resided within three miles of the Blair Park homestead, nearer to Michael than any other of his children, with perhaps a single exception. His farm was within sight of what is now Greenwood Station, on the Chesapeake & Ohio R. R., just south of the old brick mansion long owned by Michael Wallace, who was a grandson of Michael Woods of Blair Park. This fact, it is conceded, would not, of itself, settle this question, but it is highly significant; and, taken in connection with other known circumstances of the case, goes a long way towards a conclusive demonstration. Men do not choose a home next door to other people merely because they happen to bear the same name. Michael Woods had a number of known sons and sons-in-law living around him in that community, and there was this man Andrew Woods living closer to his plantation than almost any of them. We insist that this is a very significant fact, though not necessarily conclusive.

Then, again, it is worth noting that Andrew Woods did not remove from Albemarle county until some time after old Michael had passed away. Michael died in 1762 and Andrew removed to Botetourt county in 1765 or 1766. Of course the sons in a family often move to a distance before the death of the father, but this is not the rule. The sons generally remain within reasonable distance of the head of the family till he is dead, especially when the father, as in this case, is a man of importance and considerable estate. So far as the records go it appears that not one of old Michael's sons removed from Albemarle during their father's lifetime. John lived all his life there; Andrew did not move, as we have seen, till 1765, or 1766; Michael, Jr., went about 1770; Archibald and William left about 1771. If Andrew was not a son of old Michael he certainly had a way of acting wonderfully like a son.

Then, when we come to consider the particular region in which the four several sons of old Michael chose homes on leaving Albemarle, we find them doing about what one would expect full brothers to do. We not only find all four getting away from Albemarle after their parents had died, but we see them settling near to each other. First, Andrew, in 1765 (then a man of about forty-five years of age), goes down across the James river into what was, a few years later, Botetourt county, and pitches his tent, so to speak, nine miles south of the site of the present town of Buchanan. Then, only a few years thereafter, Michael, Jr., pulls up his stakes and locates right on the south bank of the James, in Botetourt county, about five miles northeast of Buchanan, or about twelve miles, on an airline, from Andrew. About the same time Archibald (1771) buys a farm from the McAfees down on Catawba Creek, about twenty miles south-west of Andrew's place. William, we know, was in 1773 living somewhere in that region. Thus we see two sons whom Michael mentioned in his will (William and Archibald), and two whom he omitted to mention (Michael, Jr., and Andrew), whilst yielding to the adventurous spirit which prompts sturdy men to seek new homes in a frontier portion of the country, managing to keep within a few hours' ride of each other by choosing locations near together. If Andrew and Michael, Jr., had not been brothers to Archibald and William, as well as brothers to each other, we would have expected to find at least one pair of brothers going farther down into Southwestern Virginia, which was beginning to settle up rapidly by 1770, and which

presented many inducements to men of enterprise. Furthermore, when we inquire as to the names Andrew Woods gave to his children there is a very strong suggestion of his close kinship to old Michael. It is regarded as certain that Andrew had several children whose names are not known to us, and did we but know all of their names, we might be able to make out a stronger case than is now possible. Still, the names actually known to us are very significant. For instance, Andrew named one of his sons Archibald, which was the name of that son of old Michael who was mentioned in his father's will, and who moved down to Catawba Creek about 1771, a day's journey to the south-west of Andrew's last home. One of his daughters bore the name of Martha, as did one of the daughters of each of the Michaels. We know that Michael of Blair Park had a sister named Elizabeth, who married Peter Wallace, Sr. Three of her sons married daughters of her brother Michael, and one of her daughters married Michael's eldest son. She lived over in the Great Valley, near where the town of Lexington now stands—less than two days' ride on horseback from Blair Park—and the intercourse between the families of Michael and Elizabeth was very intimate. Now Andrew Woods named one of his girls Elizabeth—in honor of his worthy aunt, as we can hardly keep from believing. Then Andrew named a daughter Mary, and was not that the very name of his dear old Scotch mother, the wife of old Michael? Some may say all these little matters are only coincidences; but there must not be too many striking coincidences, lest they come to constitute that circumstantial evidence which now and then avails with courts and juries to secure verdicts of the most momentous kind. In other words, coincidences, when they become too numerous and striking in a particular case, only prove themselves to be no accidents at all but the natural and inevitable accompaniments of actual fact. If Andrew Woods was not, in deed and truth, a son of Michael of Blair Park, he certainly has displayed a most abnormal aptitude for doing exactly the things which a son of that worthy old gentleman would be expected to do.

But we have yet one or two additional reasons to present in support of our contention, and they are not mere coincidences or of the nature of circumstantial evidence, but reliable family tradition —testimony of a kind which usually convinces the average fair-minded person. Professor A. W. Williamson, of Rock Island, Illinois, is a descendant of Andrew Woods, and a gentleman of intelligence and high character, whose statements are entitled to great weight. This gentleman has (or recently had) an aunt ninety-odd years of age, who was perfectly familiar with the history of her family. She was born very early in the last century, probably in 1805. This lady distinctly recalled the fact that it was well understood in the family that Andrew Woods, whose home was for years in Botetourt county, Virginia, nine miles south of the town of Buchanan, had an own brother living near him. It is a fact that Michael Woods, Jr., whom we have proved to be a son of the Blair Park Michael, lived for some years only fifteen miles from Andrew, and Archibald Woods lived twenty miles from him. And we know of no other person in all that region at that period (1766 to 1781), besides Michael Woods, Jr., and Archibald Woods, who can fairly be regarded as meeting the requirements of the case. In line with this fact is the testimony of another lady, Mrs. Snidow, who is also a descendant of Andrew Woods. Mrs. Snidow resides at Pembroke, Giles county, West Virginia, and she communicated to the Rev. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia, the information about to be given. Mrs. Snidow (whose maiden name was Walker), distinctly recalled a journey she made in 1836 with her father, Mr. Henry Walker, through the region contiguous to Catawba Creek in what are now the counties of Botetourt and Roanoke. They spent the night with Joseph Woods on Catawba Creek. This Joseph Woods, long since deceased, was a son of Archibald Woods, one of the children of Michael of Blair Park referred to in his will. Mr. Walker's mother was a daughter of Andrew

Woods, and Joseph was a son of Archibald. And, of course, if Andrew and Archibald were brothers their children would be first cousins to each other. Mrs. Snidow says she remembers that in all their conversations together they addressed each other always as "cousin." The impression made upon Mrs. Snidow, then a young woman past thirty years of age, was that her great-grandfather, Andrew Woods, was the brother of Archibald Woods. There does not seem ever to have been any doubt of this in Mrs. Snidow's mind. That an intelligent lady above thirty years old could sit and listen to the conversations between her father and Joseph Woods, and then be all her life in utter ignorance of the relationship existing between these two men seems incredible. The fact that she was at a distance from her own home, and on a visit to her father's "cousin Joseph," renders it far more likely that she would clearly understand exactly what kin she was to Joseph Woods's family than if she had simply overheard a discussion in her own home about kinfolks at a distance. The very purpose to visit the distant home of a blood relation would sharpen all her thoughts about that family; and as they drew near to the home of Joseph Woods, and finally were ushered into his house and welcomed to its hospitality, and the usual salutations were exchanged, and the conversation turned upon the question of kinship, she would have had to be one of the most stupid of listeners not to have understood the situation fully. The impressions she received at that home in 1836, which have lingered in her memory through life, and which she communicated to Dr. Edgar Woods about ten years ago, constitute the most valuable of all items of family history next to written documents, and to deny their accuracy is to be unreasonable, and to cast doubts upon the larger part of all the family records now in existence in the world. The conclusion, therefore, seems irresistible that the Andrew Woods who lived in Albemarle many years, and later on moved to Botetourt, and there died in 1781, was just as really a child of Michael Woods of Blair Park as any of the six children whom he expressly named in his last will.

The only remaining person to be considered as being one of the children of Michael of Blair Park, though not referred to in his will, is one Richard Woods, who was once the sheriff of Augusta county, Virginia. Whilst we have not the same amount or kind of evidence in support of his claim that we have adduced in the case of several other individuals, there is enough to warrant us in believing that he was probably a son of Blair Park Michael. For him, as for the others, it can be affirmed that no adverse testimony has been offered, so far as we have heard. The only thing unfavorable to his claim is the silence of the will respecting him; and this, as we have seen, is a kind of evidence which yields to almost any positive proof whatever.

The Major J. A. R. Varner, late of Lexington, Virginia, from whose letters copious quotations have already been made, has this to say about Richard Woods, writing under date of August 10, 1893, to-wit: "That Richard Woods was a son of old Michael Woods of Albemarle I verily believe—everything that I can hear or find of him goes to prove this as certain. The farm of Richard Woods adjoined the plantations of General Bowyer [the third husband of Magdalen Woods], and Peter Wallace [the husband of Martha Woods]; the farm of Joseph Lapsley [the husband of Sarah Woods], adjoined that of General Bowyer. Here we have a little colony consisting of a brother and three sisters almost in sight of each other. The will of Richard Woods is dated June 2, 1777; he died several years later and was well-to-do, having a good farm, negroes and a couple of thousand pounds in Virginia money ($3.33 1-3 x 2,000), to give, devise and bequeath to his wife Jenny (Janet or Jean), and his sons Benjamin and Samuel. Samuel is named as executor in the will. When he qualified, General Bowyer, his uncle by marriage, and Colonel Samuel Wallace, his first cousin, were his bondsmen. The court appointed his two brothers-in-law, Joseph Lapsley and Peter Wallace, appraisers of the estate of Richard Woods. These

facts prove kinship beyond a doubt. Blood-kinship 'told' in those times. It was more than a gossamer scarlet thread; it was a chain that bound the clan together and stood any tension put upon it. In going over the old records [of Rockbridge county, Virginia], I was struck with the closeness with which these families were in touch with each other. If any of them required to give bond as administrators, executors, guardian, or as an official, you will find the names of Bowyer, McDowell, Woods, Lapsley or Wallace as bondsmen to the instrument. You will find the same names attached to deeds and wills as witnesses. All this shows a survival of the old clan touch and feeling. My nearest neighbor, Miss Betty Alexander, is a descendant of John McDowell, the first husband of Magdalen Woods (the fourth remove from her), and a niece of that great preacher and theologian, Archibald Alexander, of Princeton College. Her mother died since the close of our Civil War, and she says that her mother remembered her (*i. e.*, Mrs. Alexander's) grandmother, Magdalene Bowyer, well. Miss Alexander has this to say, that she heard her mother say that her (*i. e.*, Mrs. Alexander's) grandmother (Magdalene Bowyer), was with her brother, who lived but a short distance—a short walk—from her house, when he died. * * * Now, the brother could have been none other than Richard Woods, as his house was less than half a mile from the home of Magdalene Bowyer. No other Woods lived within less than twenty miles of her. This, I think, settles the question as to the degree of relationship of Richard Woods to Michael Woods, Sr."

The Mr. Cochran who has, like Major Varner, been so freely quoted on foregoing pages, was of the same opinion as Major Varner in regard to Richard Woods being a son of old Michael of Blair Park. He had no knowledge, doubtless, of the convincing evidence of that fact which has just been quoted from Major Varner's letter. Even without it, however, he considered it extremely probable that Richard was, along with Andrew and Michael, Jr.,a son of Blair Park Michael,and he so expressed himself in the letter he wrote Judge McLaughlin March 1, 1892.

There is some confusion created concerning this Richard Woods, however, by the account of a certain Richard Woods, of Albemarle, given by Dr. Edgar Woods in his History of Albemarle (pages 355 and 356). Dr. Edgar Woods says a Richard Woods lived in Albemarle, north of Taylor's Gap, and speaks as if there he died in 1801. If the two are one and the same, then he must have been eighty to eighty-five at death. The Richard Woods of Rockbridge County of whom Major Varner speaks made his will in 1777, and died there about two years thereafter. These two sets of statements could scarcely refer to one and the same man. Both Dr. Edgar Woods, in his History of Albemarle (page 356), and Mr. Waddell, in his Annals of Augusta County (page 117), speak of this Albemarle Richard Woods as having married a Miss Stuart, a sister of Col. John Stuart, of Greenbrier. Mr. Waddell gives her Christian name as "Betsy," whilst Dr. Edgar Woods gives it as "Eliza Ann." The "Eliza," however, may have been only an abbreviation of Elizabeth for which "Betsy" was a common alternative or pet-name. The children of Richard Woods, of Albemarle, as given by Dr. Edgar Woods, were William, Richard, George, Matthew and Elizabeth, whereas Major Varner speaks of but two children of the Rockbridge Richard, the one being Benjamin, and the other Samuel. The Albemarle Richard is designated by Waddell as Colonel Richard Woods, whilst Major Varner omits all title in referring to the Rockbridge Richard. Then still further complications arise from the fact that the Rockbridge Richard was sheriff of Augusta about 1757 (Rockbridge county was not carved out of Augusta and Botetourt until 1778), and from the further fact that, according to Waddell (page 132), a Richard Woods was made the first sheriff of Botetourt at its erection in 1770. The writer confesses that he is unable to disentangle these various Richards, and contents himself with saying that it is reasonable to believe that the one referred to by Major Varner was a son of

Michael Woods of Blair Park. As, according to Dr. Edgar Woods, the Albemarle Richard had a son named Richard, and court records often fail to distinguish two men of the same name from each other, it may be that the Richard, Jr., of Albemarle, has sometimes been confounded with either his father or with still another man of the same name. Another fact to be borne in mind is that the wife of the Rockbridge Richard Woods, according to Major Varner, was not Betsy or Elizabeth, but Jenny (Janet or Jean). But Betsy may have died and he may have married later a lady by the name of Jenny. These confusing details, however, do not in anywise affect the argument intended to prove that old Michael of Blair Park had a son Richard who lived for many years in Augusta (later on, Rockbridge). We feel pretty sure as to where this one came from, though we are unable to locate him throughout his entire career or to distinguish him from one or two other men of the same name. Hence, it is but fair to set down a Richard among the children of Michael Woods of Blair Park.

There are not wanting intelligent and well-informed persons who incline to the opinion that old Michael had several other sons besides all those already mentioned—Samuel, Nathan, James—but the writer knows of no satisfactory evidence of the truth of such surmises. There were, indeed, several men of the Woods name who lived very close to old Michael in Albemarle, and who were, no doubt, in some way related to him by blood, but so far as the writer has been able to learn nothing positive is known upon which we could fairly base an opinion. We must therefore limit the number of old Michael's children to eleven, six of whom he mentioned in his last will, and five as to whom he was silent when he penned that instrument, for reasons which to him seemed satisfactory and proper.

The following exhibit of the children of Michael Woods and his wife Mary (*nee* Campbell), is presented as the result of the writer's researches extending through the last ten years. The one aim has been to get at the truth, and then to state it fairly, regardless of the predilections and preferences of himself or others. The exact date of the birth and death of the several children is not known with any certainty in many instances. Where there exist doubts, and mere conjecture and inference have had to be resorted to, that fact is indicated by interrogation marks enclosed in parentheses. Only those dates which the writer considers to have been satisfactorily proved are left without such signs of doubt. That some errors should be found in any exhibit thus made up is inevitable. The writer has simply done his best to ascertain the facts, and is well aware that in many cases an inference or conjecture was all he had to build upon. He had to sift the few grains of truth oftentimes from a great mass of wild guesses and utterly self-contradictory speculations. If there is any person alive who possesses reliable data for a more accurate exhibit than that which is here presented, it is a thousand pities that the writer could not have had the privilege of availing himself of such information; but he does not now know of such a person.

EXHIBIT.

Children of Michael and Mary Campbell Woods.

A.—MAGDALEN ..... B. 1706 (?)
B.—WILLIAM ..... B. 1707 (?)
C.—MICHAEL, JR. ..... B. 1708 (?)
D.—HANNAH ..... B. 1710 (?)
E.—JOHN ..... B. 1712
F.—MARGARET ..... B. 1714 (?)
G.—RICHARD ..... B. 1715 (?)
H.—ARCHIBALD ..... B. 1716 (?)
J.—MARTHA ..... B. 1720
K.—ANDREW ..... B. 1722 (?)
L.—SARAH ..... B. 1724 (?)

M. McDOWELL-BORDEN-BOWYER D. 1810 (?)
M. SUSANNAH WALLACE ..... D.
M. ANNE ——— ..... D. 1777
M. WILLIAM WALLACE ..... D.
M. SUSANNAH ANDERSON ..... D. 1791
M. ANDREW WALLACE ..... D.
M. JENNY ——— ..... D. 1779
M. ISABELLA ——— ..... D. 1783
M. PETER WALLACE, JR. ..... D. 1790
M. MARTHA POAGE ..... D. 1781
M. JOSEPH LAPSLEY ..... D. 1792 (?)

Concerning each and all of the eleven children of Michael and Mary there is a great multitude of details we would gladly know if we could, but which it is now impossible to recover, and yet from various printed books, and court records, and ecclesiastical registers, and State papers, and ancient tomb-stones, and family traditions we are able to gather quite a number of interesting items of a trustworthy character. Such of these as the author has had the opportunity to discover will now be presented, many of which have never before been in print:

A—MAGDALEN WOODS, AND THE McDOWELLS, AND BORDENS, AND BOWYERS.

Of her early life next to nothing is positively known. That she was a child of Michael Woods by his wife Mary, *nee* Campbell, has been, as we believe, satisfactorily demonstrated. That she was born in Ireland about the year 1706, is the conviction of the author, based upon various well-ascertained facts. It seems equally probable that she was the first child of her parents. Her father, as is known, was born in 1684, and it is extremely likely he did not marry till he was twenty-one years old (say in 1705), and was not a father until 1706. It is also reasonably certain that her parents migrated to America in 1724, at which time she was about eighteen years of age; and it is certainly known that she did not leave Great Britain when her parents removed to the New World. It is positively certain—from the best of evidence, soon to be given—that she came to Virginia from Great Britain in 1737, at which time she was the wife of John McDowell, and the mother of at least one child, Samuel. When she came to Virginia she was about thirty-one years old, and there she spent (in Rockbridge county), the whole of the remainder of her extraordinarily long life, dying, as is believed, in 1810, at the great age of 104 years. She was a Presbyterian, and was probably a member of Timber Ridge Church from its first organization, not long after her arrival in the neighborhood, until her death—a period of at least seventy years. She must have been a woman of remarkable physical vigor, and of great strength of character.

She was three times married, and at the death of her second husband (Borden), became the wealthiest lady west of the Blue Ridge, Borden having fallen heir to a part of his father's vast landed estate of 500,000 acres in the Great Valley before his marriage with Magdalen. She was widely known throughout a wide circle of connections, and was frequently honored by having the children of relatives named for her.

The correct spelling of her name is a matter of no great moment, and yet it is one worthy of at least a passing notice. The author has adopted the orthography employed herein (Magdalen) because it seems that was the preference of the good lady herself, and is the one followed by some of her best informed kinsfolk. It is one of those names which is certain to be variously spelled even by the different members of the family connections to which the wearer of it belongs. We find Magdalena, Magdalene, Magdaline, besides Magdalen, used by different writers; but in the year 1753, during her second widowhood, we find her name signed to a call which the Timber Ridge Church extended to a Rev. John Brown, and she spelled her Christian name Magdalen, if we are to accept what we find in Dr. Foote's alleged copy of that document.[39] This ought to settle the matter, though even a lady may not be invariably consistent with herself, and this one may in some instances, or at different periods of her long life, have varied the orthography of her name.

Section One—The McDowells.

The earliest authentic account of John McDowell, Magdalen's first husband, consists of a brief record in the court house of Orange county, Virginia. It bears date February 28, 1739, and reads as follows: "John McDowell made oath that he imported himself, Magdalen his wife, Samuel McDowell his son, and John Rutter his servant, at his charge from Great Britain, in the

year 1737 to dwell in this colony." Let it be borne in mind that whilst the act of the Colonial Legislature for the creation of the county of Augusta by dividing Orange county was passed in 1738—one year before John McDowell took the oath just referred to—the county was not fully organized until 1745. This explains why the record above quoted was made at Orange court house. Furthermore, the records of the land office at Richmond show that on the 10th of November, 1742, McDowell secured a grant of 400 acres of land on account of the importation of himself and family into the colony at his own charges five years before.[37] This one sworn statement, recorded in Orange county, furnishes us a very definite and incontrovertible basis for a reliable account of both John McDowell and Magdalen Woods. It clears up several disputed questions, and it reveals the worthlessness of a good many speculations which have been written in regard to this couple. It shows that John McDowell and Magdalen did not reach Virginia until thirteen years after Magdalen's parents had left Ireland, and three years after the settlement of the Woodses in Virginia. It shows also that John McDowell and wife never were citizens of the colony of Pennsylvania, and that their son Samuel was not born there, but in Great Britain. Of course, John and family may have landed first on the Delaware, and may have passed through Pennsylvania on their way down to Virginia, but that colony was never their home. According to Waddell that was the route of all the earlier settlers going to the Great Valley.[38] For some reason none of them landed at a Virginia port and then came across westwardly to the Valley.

The date of John McDowell's birth has been given as 1714 by some, but this must be too late a date by at least ten or eleven years. He was almost certainly older than his wife, who was born about 1706. He died at the close of 1742, and, even if born in 1703, he was only thirty-nine at the time of his death. He was recognized as a surveyor in 1737, and all indications point to his having been born not later than about the year 1703. This would make him just about twenty-one when he married Magdalen Woods, thirty-four when he came to Virginia, and thirty-nine when he was commissioned captain of the militia company of which he was in command when killed by the Indians.

Whether Ephraim McDowell, John's father, came to America prior to 1737 is a matter which the records within reach of the present writer do not satisfactorily determine. If what we find in most of the books concerning the date of the migration of the father be as unreliable as some of the statements which are here seen touching that of the son, not much dependence can be placed upon it. But there are some reasons for believing that Ephraim and most of his family preceded John and family by at least a few years. Col. Green surmises that the McDowells and a goodly company of their kinsmen and co-religionists migrated from Ireland at one and the same time, and he inclines to the view that it may have been the year 1729.[39] This is certainly inexact so far as relates to John and family, but is probably true as to his father and the other members of the McDowell colony. Ephraim and his party seem to have settled first in Pennsylvania, and then later on to have moved on down into the Valley of Virginia. If this southward move occurred in 1737 John and family may have been in the company. The wife of Ephraim, who was his full first cousin, was Margaret Irvine. Col. Green infers that she was dead when the family left Ireland, because her daughter, Mrs. Greenlee, in her famous deposition, taken in 1806, when she was ninety-five years old, speaks as if her mother was not with the family at the time of the migration to America.[41] (The reader will please turn to note 41, and read it before going further.) Ephraim and wife were genuine Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, like the parents of the lady their son John married, and we may rest assured that John could recite the Shorter Catechism, proofs and all, before he was sixteen years old, and was familiar with his Bible and Psalm Book. One reason for surmising that Ephraim came to America some years prior

to 1737 is his known intimacy in Ireland with John Lewis, the man who, in 1732, settled what afterwards became Augusta county. Lewis had migrated to Pennsylvania, and then in 1732 settled in the Great Valley near where Staunton was afterwards built. Col. Green believes that Ephraim McDowell and John Lewis came to America together in the year 1729, and this seems quite likely, though it seems quite strange that Ephraim, who was then a man of fifty-seven, should make so serious a move as was involved in his migration to another continent beyond the sea, leaving behind him his eldest son, John, then a young man of about twenty-six years, who did not follow till eight years later. This certainly calls for some unusual explanation. The children of Ephraim McDowell and his wife Margaret, *nee* Irvine, were the following: 1, JOHN, who married Magdalen Woods; 2, JAMES, who is thought to have been the first member of the family to go to Virginia, having raised a crop of corn in Beverly Manor in the spring of 1737, who was a gallant soldier of the Virginia militia during the French and Indian Wars, who married a lady near Williamsburg, and who died without male issue; 3, MARY E., who was born in 1711, who married James Greenlee, who came into Borden's Grant in the fall of 1737, and who gave her famous deposition in the case of Borden vs. Cueton et al., in 1806 when ninety-five years old; and 4, MARGARETTA, who married James Mitchell, who moved to North Carolina and later to South Carolina, with her husband, and from whom was descended the late Mr. Thomas Mitchell, an honored banker of Danville, Kentucky, whose only daughter, Lomisa, is the wife of the Rev. Thomas Cleland, of Springfield, Mo.

What was known as Borden's Grant included a large part of the present counties of Augusta and Rockbridge. John Lewis, the old friend and kinsman of Ephraim McDowell, had settled in Augusta (or what afterwards came to be Augusta) in 1732, and about five years thereafter (1737) we find Ephraim McDowell and the Greenlees and John McDowell and family coming up the Valley from Pennsylvania (John and family having just arrived from Ireland) with the intention of settling close to John Lewis. When nearly at their destination the party accidentally fell in with one Ben Borden, Sr., of New Jersey, who had recently secured from Gov. Gooch a large grant of 500,000 acres on the Shenandoah and James rivers in parts of the territory now included in the counties of Augusta and Rockbridge. Producing his patents, he soon satisfied the McDowells that his claim was lawful and sound. He told the McDowells that he had located 10,000 acres in the Fork of James river, but was not able to make his way to the place, and he offered to give 1,000 acres to anyone who would direct him to the spot. John McDowell, who was an educated man and a practical surveyor, accepted the offer, and a written agreement was entered into between the parties. The next day the whole party reached the home of John Lewis. McDowell piloted Borden to the desired locality and the whole colony concluded to settle in Borden's Grant. When and how John acquired his knowledge of that region we can not even guess. Cabins were soon erected for Ephraim McDowell, the Greenlees, and John McDowell, near where Lexington, Virginia, now stands, and the men of the colony—one of the first in all that section of country after that of John Lewis—at once began writing to friends in Ireland and perhaps in Pennsylvania, to come and make homes in the beautiful Valley. The result was that in a few years the Woodses, Wallaces, Walkers, McClungs, Sawyerses, McCues, McCowns, Hayses, McElroys, McKees, McCauslands, McCampbells, McPheetersos, Campbells, Stuarts, Paxtons, Lyles, Irvines, Caldwells, Cloyds, etc., were induced to settle in that charming wilderness and become the pioneers in establishing one of the most prosperous and enlightened agricultural communities ever founded in the New World. Presbyterian churches soon began to be established in all that region, and for a long period they were the only churches of any kind in the Valley; and now, after the lapse of a century and a half, they are among the most pow-

erful and beneficent agencies for the intellectual and spiritual training of the inhabitants of the Great Valley. Ephraim McDowell lived to be more than a hundred years of age, outliving his son John more than a whole generation, and dying at the outbreak of the American Revolution, in which so many of his descendants were destined to play a prominent and honorable part.

John McDowell's career in Virginia was a brief one, and had a terrible ending. He lived but a little more than five years after settling in the Valley. In July, 1742, a petition was gotten up by his many friends and admirers, and addressed to Gov. Gooch, asking that he be appointed captain of the colonial militia for Augusta county, as a defence against the Indians who frequently visited the Valley, their main war-path from the north to the south passing right by the site of Staunton, and crossing the Blue Ridge at Woods's Gap. That petition, by the way, which is given in full by Waddell,[42] is one of the most remarkable examples of "stunning" orthography to be found in all literature. The wonder is that the educated men of the community, of whom there were not a few, should have allowed such a ridiculously illiterate document to be sent to Governor Gooch. The only way in which we can account for the presentation of such a paper to the colonial government is that it was written and mainly gotten up by some warm admirer of John McDowell, who, though destitute of education, may have been a man of excellent character and influence in the community, as we sometimes find illustrated in our own day; and for fear of giving him offence, the petition was allowed to go forward to Williamsburg as it was originally prepared. Perhaps only a few of the signers ever read it. But if we could have been near enough to the gallant captain-to-be we would have been tempted to suggest to him that as that paper would be read and discussed generations after, when he would not be at hand to make the necessary explanations, he would doubtless save some of his kinsmen and admirers down in the twentieth century considerable perplexity if he should in some way manage to have that petition recast. If any one feels enough interest in the matter to want to read it for himself, he can find it in full in Waddell's Annals (page 482). It would have made Josh Billings, Artemus Ward and Bill Nye feel very small. We can rest assured, however, that John McDowell was in no way responsible for the wording and spelling of the petition, for he was an educated man, and must have felt a little embarrassed by its make-up if he ever did read it, which is doubtful. It accomplished its purpose, however; it secured him his commission from the Governor, and he was made captain of the Augusta militia.

But, alas, how brief was the period for which he was to wear his honors and continue to serve his community! Late in December, 1742, tidings came to the settlement (on Christmas eve) that a band of blood-thirsty Shawnee Indians from beyond the Ohio were already prowling in the neighborhood, intent upon deeds of plunder and blood. At his call the men of his company quickly assembled at his home on Timber Ridge, and a council of war was held. Captain McDowell was a comparatively young man, and almost without experience in Indian warfare. He was not very familiar with the cunning tactics of his foe. But he was fearless and enterprising, and soon the company of militia under his lead started in pursuit of the savages. It was on Christmas day. When they had reached the point where the North river comes into the James at Balcony Falls, not much more than twenty miles from their homes, they marched all unconsciously into a deadly ambuscade, skilfully laid for them by the wily and murderous Shawnees; and the first intimation the whites had of the presence of the foe was a sudden volley from the rifles of the Indians which instantly laid Captain McDowell and eight of his men low in the dust. The savages at once broke and ran, as if themselves astonished at the fearful execution they had wrought, and dreading the wrath of the whites. The men of the

militia were so completely taken by surprise, and so shocked to see their brave leader and eight of their company prostrate upon the earth in the agonies of death, that they did not attempt to pursue the rapidly retreating foe, but tenderly gathered up the dead bodies of their comrades, placed them upon horses, and in sorrow and gloom began their march back to Timber Ridge, twenty miles distant, there to be compelled to witness the grief and distress now to fall upon so many stricken families. Magdalen McDowell had doubtless that Christmas morning kissed her beloved husband a tender farewell, and in prayer commended him and his companions to the care of God's gracious Providence only a few hours before. But what a fearful spectacle for Magdalen it must have been—that doleful company, slowly returning with nine bloody corpses dangling across the saddles of their horses, and one of them her own dear husband, whom she had seen go forth with such a brave heart only one day, or perhaps a few hours, before! Magdalen was now a widow, and her house the house of mourning, and her three little children fatherless. To her broken heart it must have been no small comfort to have near her many of the near kin of both herself and her departed husband. Her father's home was just across the Blue Ridge, about thirty-five miles to the northeastward.

Nine graves, side by side, were dug near Magdalen's now desolated home, and the bodies were prepared for burial. It was indeed a strange Christmas season. The dead were laid away with the solemnity of Christian rites, and their murderers escaped beyond the mountains towards their far northern homes beyond the Ohio. The burial-place of these nine men, whom Dr. Foote supposed to have been the first of the Saxon race ever committed to the dust in Rockbridge county, can be seen to-day near the Red House, or Maryland Tavern, on the west side of the road leading from Staunton to Lexington. As one enters the iron gate and turns a little to the left he will observe a low, unhewn limestone slab about two feet high, on which is a rude inscription reading thus:[43]

HEER LYES
THE BODY OF
JOHN MACK
DOWELL
DECED DECEMBE
1743

Magdalen Woods is known to have had at least three children by her first husband, John McDowell, namely; two sons, and a daughter.

(1) The first-born of their children, so far as existing records show, was named SAMUEL, and it is certainly known that he came over with his parents from Great Britain to Virginia in the year 1737. His age at the time of the migration is not referred to in the sworn statement of his father, previously mentioned as being on record at Orange Court House, Virginia; but Col. Green gives 1735 as the year of Samuel's birth. If he was the first child of his parents, then Magdalen and John had been married more than ten years before they had issue. They may, however, have had several children prior to Samuel's birth who died in infancy. His death occurred in Kentucky, in 1817; and if he was born in 1735, he was eighty-two years old when he died.

Samuel McDowell (whom we shall presently begin to refer to as Judge Samuel McDowell, in order to distinguish him from other persons of his name) was educated in what is now Rockbridge County, and in part by Archibald Alexander, the head of one of the most distinguished and scholarly families this country has ever produced. For companions he had the McClungs, Paxtons, Woodses, Wallaces, Lapsleys, Stuarts, Lyles, Reids, Moores, Campbells, etc. Left fatherless when perhaps only seven or eight years of age (December 25, 1742), his boyhood and much of his manhood were spent on the Virginia frontier, where Indian raids had constantly to be guarded against, and where the conditions of life were such as to train him to endure many hardships and play the part of a sturdy and adventurous man. Reared by a Scotch-Irish mother, and in the midst of a community almost

wholly of the Presbyterian faith, he early learned to fear God, and became imbued with those sound religious principles which characterized his subsequent career. From Henning's Statutes we learn that in 1758, when only about 23 years of age, he was a soldier of the colony against the French and Indians; and in 1775 a large tract of land was granted to him in Fayette County, Kentucky, for his military services. He commanded a company of the Augusta militia at the great battle with the Indians at Point Pleasant, Virginia, in October, 1774, and rendered valiant service. In the Revolution he commanded an Augusta regiment, and took part in various campaigns.

Samuel McDowell was also prominent in civil life, having served several terms as the representative of Augusta County in the Virginia House of Burgesses prior to the Revolution. There he took a bold stand against the aggressions of the Mother Country which Patrick Henry so eloquently opposed, and which led on to the gigantic struggle of 1775-81. In 1783, after American Independence had been won, we find him surveyor of public lands for Fayette County, Kentucky, and also a judge of the first District Court of Kentucky, which was held at Harrodsburg. In 1784, when he was a man nearly 50 years old, he removed his family to what was afterwards Mercer County, Kentucky. In 1786, he was chosen to be one of the presiding justices of the first County Court held in the District of Kentucky, and from that time on he was known as Judge McDowell. In the discussions and gatherings which finally paved the way for the separation of Kentucky from Virginia and its erection into a separate State in 1792, Judge McDowell took a leading part. He presided over all of the nine Conventions which met to discuss the separation of Kentucky from the parent State, and also over that of 1792, which framed Kentucky's first constitution. He was distinguished for his incorruptible integrity, strong common sense, and courageous adherence to what he deemed to be right. He died near Danville, Kentucky, in 1817, at the advanced age of eighty-two.

Judge McDowell had married, when scarcely nineteen years of age, Miss Mary McClung, of Virginia—January 17, 1754. The fruit of this union was a family of eleven children, as follows:

(a) JOHN, who was born in Virginia, in 1757, took an active part in the Revolutionary struggle; married Sarah McDowell, his first cousin, a daughter of his uncle James McDowell; after the death of his wife, Sarah McDowell, he married Lucy Le Grand; removed to Fayette County, Kentucky, in 1784; and was a major in the war of 1812. The children of Major John McDowell by his first wife Sarah, were the following: 1, James, who married Susan Shelby; 2, John (3d), who married Sarah McAlpine; 3, Samuel (2d) who married Betsy Chrisman; 4, Betsy, who married William McPheeters; and, 5, Mary, who married Major Thomas Hart Shelby. The children of Major John McDowell by his second wife, Lucy Le Grand, were the following: 1, Joseph Nashe, who married a Miss Drake; 2, Charles, who married a Miss Redd; 3, Betsy, who married Henderson Bell; 4, Sallie, who married James Allen; and, 5, Lucy, who married David M. Woodson.

(b) JAMES, second son of Judge Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung, was born in what is now Rockbridge County, Virginia, in 1760. James enlisted as a private soldier in the Continental Army when but sixteen years old, and continued in the service till victory crowned the American arms at Yorktown. While at home on furlough during the war, and when only nineteen years of age, he married Mary Paxton Lyle, daughter of Captain John Lyle. His sweetheart's parents were about to remove to North Carolina, and he wished to make sure of his prize and have her remain at the home of his own parents. The Lyles were of the Scotch-Irish, who had settled in Borden's Grant along with the earliest families. Col. Green gives it as his opinion that the several names Lyle, Lisle, and Lyell are, in reality, identical. The name is one of high repute in both Virginia and Kentucky. Captain John Lyle's wife was Isabella Paxton, daughter of John

Paxton and Martha Blair—most excellent Scotch-Irish parentage.

In 1784, James McDowell removed with his family to Fayette County, Kentucky, along with the mighty tide of Virginians who at that period poured into the fair wilderness to the west of the mountains. He chose a location in the very choicest portion of the Blue Grass, three miles out from Lexington on the Georgetown road. He devoted his energies to farming and stock raising. He was active, nevertheless, in the military movements of the period against the Indians, and was commissioned major by Gov. Shelby in 1792. When the war of 1812 broke out, he was past the age for enduring the usual hardships of military life, but his patriotic spirit was not to be hampered by that circumstance. He was at the time in command of a company of cavalry raised at Lexington, and this body soon developed into a battalion. He was made a major, and his command consolidated with that of Col. Simrall. He saw service under General Harrison, and distinguished himself in the hotly contested battle of the Mississinewa. When the war closed he held the rank of colonel. He removed to Mason County, Kentucky, where he spent the evening of his life, dying at a ripe old age. He was a man of splendid physique, and great force of character, and left a fine estate and an honorable name to his children.

Col. James McDowell and his wife, Mary Paxton Lyle, had seven children, as follows: 1, Isabella, who married Dr. John Poage Campbell; 2, Sallie, who married Oliver Keene, of Fayette County, Kentucky; 3, Samuel, who was a sergeant in Captain Trotter's company in the war of 1812, and married Polly Chrisman, of Jessamine County, Kentucky; 4, Juliet, who married a Dr. Dorsey, of Fleming County, Kentucky; 5, Hettie, who married John Andrews; 6, Captain John Lyle, who was a soldier in the war of 1812 along with his father, married Nancy Vance Scott, died in Frankfort, Kentucky, in 1878, at the age of eighty-four, and one of whose sons was the late Major Hervey McDowell, of Cynthiana, Kentucky, who raised and commanded in the late Civil War one of the companies composing Col. Roger W. Hanson's Second Kentucky Regiment of the Confederate Army; and, 7, Ephraim, of Mason County, Kentucky, who married, first, Ann Poage, and, secondly, Lucretia C. Feemster. This Ephraim McDowell was a physician and a nephew of the world-famed surgeon of the same name.

(c) The third son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife, Mary McClung, was named WILLIAM, who came to be known as Judge William McDowell. He was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, March 9, 1762. He was quite young when the Revolution opened, but he was in the Virginia militia for a time during the war. He is said to have been the most highly educated of all his father's children, and was an able lawyer. He came to Kentucky with his father in 1784, and settled near Danville. There he soon rose to prominence at the bar, and was the intimate associate of the ablest and most distinguished men of Kentucky. And let it be borne in mind that despite the distance of Danville from the cultured centers of influence in the older sections of the country at the East, there were, even at that early day, a considerable number of learned and brilliant men there who would have adorned the highest circles of Virginia. In 1787 Judge McDowell represented Mercer County in the Virginia Legislature. He was appointed to various official positions, and finally was made, by President Madison, United States District Judge for Kentucky, a position he filled with distinction for eight years. At Bowling Green, whither he had removed on account of his duties as judge, he died, full of honors.

Judge William McDowell married Margaretta Madison, whose father, John Madison, was an uncle of President Madison. The fruit of this union was a family of six children, as follows: 1, Samuel I. McDowell, who married Miss Nancy Rochester, and left issue; 2, Lucinda, who married Dennis Brashear; 3, Mary, who was the first wife of the late Major George C. Thompson, of Mercer County, Kentucky; 4, William McDowell, who married a

Miss Carthrae; 5, Agatha, who married James G. Birney; 6, Eliza, who married Nathaniel Rochester, of Bowling Green, Kentucky.

(d) The fourth son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife, Mary McClung, was named SAMUEL, who, in order to distinguish him from his father and nephews, was called Samuel McDowell, of Mercer County. He was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, March 8, 1764. He was, like all the McDowells, naturally inclined to a military life when the country needed soldiers; and though but twelve years old when the Declaration was published, he stole away from home in 1781, when only seventeen, and joined Lafayette in time to take part in the closing campaign at Yorktown. In 1784 he moved to Kentucky with the McDowells, settling in Mercer County, where he spent the remainder of his life. He served in various expeditions against the Indians after settling in Mercer, and Gen'l Washington appointed him the first United States Marshal for Kentucky, in 1792. That office he held under Washington, John Adams and Jefferson.

Samuel McDowell, of Mercer, married Anna Irvine, a kinswoman, the daughter of Abram Irvine, a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian, and to them were born eleven children, to wit: 1, John Adair McDowell, who was born in Mercer County, May 26, 1789, and married Lucy Todd Starling; 2, Abram Irvine McDowell, who was born April 24, 1793, and married Eliza Selden Lord; 3, William Adair McDowell, who was born in Mercer County, March 21, 1795, who married Maria Hawkins Harvey, his kinswoman, of Fincastle, Virginia, and a granddaughter of Martha Borden, the said Martha being a daughter of Magdalen Woods by her second husband, Ben Borden, Jr., and having run away and married Ben Hawkins. The said William Adair McDowell was educated in part at Lexington, Virginia, was for a time in the war of 1812, studied medicine for a time with his distinguished uncle, Dr. Ephraim McDowell, graduated from the Medical College of Philadelphia, practised for a time with his renowned uncle, Dr. Ephraim, at Danville, moved to Fincastle, Virginia, in 1819, where he lived till 1838, then afterwards practised in Louisville, Kentucky, and Evansville, Indiana. The children of Dr. McDowell and his wife, Maria Hawkins Harvey were: Sarah Shelby, who married Bland Ballard, a noted Louisville lawyer, Henry Clay, who married Annette Clay, daughter of Lt. Col. Henry Clay, who fell at Buena Vista; William Preston, who married Miss Kate Wright; Edward Irvine, who fell in battle during our late Civil War, he being at the time a captain of a company in the Fifteenth Kentucky (Federal) Regiment; 4, of whom no particulars are available, so far as the writer is aware; 5, Joseph, who married Anne Bush, and settled in Alabama, one of their daughters (Mary) marrying a Judge Clarke, of Mississippi, and the other (Bettie) marrying a Dr. Welch, who moved to Galveston, Texas; 6, Alexander Keith Marshall, who married, first, Priscilla McAfee, a daughter of General Robert B. McAfee, of Mercer County, Kentucky, and, later on, Anna Haupt; 7, Mary, who was born in Mercer County in 1787, and married William Starling; 8, Sallie, born in 1801, who married Jeremiah Minter.

(e) The fifth son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife, Mary McClung, was named JOSEPH, who was born September 13, 1768, and was but sixteen years old when his parents migrated to Kentucky. He was known in his mature years as Colonel Joseph McDowell. In Kentucky, after reaching a suitable age, he took an active part in the campaigns against the Indians. He was in Brown's company with Scott's expedition in 1791, and in both of the expeditions under Gen'l Hopkins in 1812. He attracted the favorable notice of Governor Shelby, who made him a member of his staff as adjutant-general, and he was with him at the battle of the Thames, in the fall of 1813, and for his services received special complimentary mention from Gen'l Harrison. Col. McDowell devoted his energies to farming. He was a devout Christian and an elder of the Presbyterian Church in Danville, Kentucky, where he died, June 27, 1856, at the ripe age of eighty-eight years.

Col. McDowell's wife was Sarah Irvine, a sister

of the wife of his brother, Samuel. Their children were as follows: 1, Samuel, who married, first, Amanda Ball, and, later on, Martha Hawkins; 2, Anna, who married Abram I. Caldwell; 3, Sarah, who married Michael Sullivant, of Columbus, Ohio; 4, Margaret Irvine, who married Joseph Sullivant, of Columbus, Ohio, a younger brother of her sister Sarah's husband; and, 5, Magdalen, who married Caleb Wallace, of Danville, Ky.

(f) EPHRAIM—the famous surgeon, and the most widely known member of his family—was the sixth son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife Mary McClung, and was born in what is now Rockbridge County, Virginia, November 11, 1771. In 1784, when only thirteen years old, he came with his parents through the great wilderness to Danville, Kentucky, where his early life was spent. He was educated there, and at Bardstown, Ky., and Lexington, Va. He studied medicine at Staunton, Virginia, under a Dr. Humphreys, a graduate of Edinburg University. Later, he spent two years studying medicine (1793-1794) at Edinburg, where he had as preceptor and friend the great surgeon, John Bell. On his return to America Dr. McDowell began practice at Danville, Ky. He rose to prominence and fame rapidly, patients seeking his services from all parts of the South and West. It was in the year 1809, when Dr. McDowell had been practising only twelve years, that he performed an operation upon the person of a Mrs. Crawford which marks a new epoch in surgery—the successful removal of an ovarian tumor. In this operation he blazed the way for the profession of all after years, for he was virtually without a guide or a precedent in this difficult and delicate undertaking. He employed no anæsthetics, and had no assistance, and yet his patient made a complete recovery, and lived nearly a third of a century thereafter. The British Cyclopædia (Ninth Edinburgh Edition, Volume XXII, page 690), which never displays any excess of zeal in praising the achievements of workers in the New World, in discussing abdominal surgery and the results gained by ovariotomy, has this to say: "In 1809, Ephraim McDowell, of Kentucky, inspired by the lectures of John Bell, his teacher in Edinburgh, performed ovariotomy, and continuing to operate with success established the possibility of surgical interference, and was followed in the United States by many others." Dr. McDowell operated thirteen times, and was successful eight times, as Johnston's Cyclopædia states. When, after some years' silence, he finally made a public report of his successes, the great surgeons of both America and Europe discredited his statements, considering such results impossible. He was assailed vigorously by Dr. James Johnson, the learned editor of the London Medico-Chirurgical Review, but Dr. Johnson "lived to ask pardon of God and Dr. McDowell for his uncharitableness," and in 1827 confessed that he was wrong. Of course, the subsequent discoveries in medicine and surgery, and the multiplication of all manner of facilities in handling such cases have greatly developed and improved the whole science of gynæcology, but the human race at large, and woman in particular, owes Dr. McDowell a debt which can never be fully paid. The celebrated American surgeon, Dr Gross, said: "Had McDowell lived in France, he would have been elected a member of the Royal Academy of Surgery, received from the King the Cross of the Legion of Honor, and obtained from the government a magnificent reward—as an acknowledgment of the services he rendered his country, his profession, and fellow-creatures." A handsome monument in his honor was erected over his grave in Danville by the medical profession of Kentucky. His death occurred in 1830. He was a man of commanding presence, six feet high, florid complexion, black eyes, and of great muscular power.

Dr. McDowell chose for his wife Sarah, a daughter of Governor Isaac Shelby, whom he married in 1802, and by whom he had the following children: 1, Caleb Wallace, who was named for the distinguished judge of that name, descended from Michael Woods's sister, Elizabeth, who was an aunt of Magdalen Woods. Said Caleb Wallace McDowell married a Miss Hall, of Shelby County,

Kentucky, and removed to Missouri, where he died; 2, Mary, who married a Mr. Young, of Shelbyville, Ky.; 3, a second daughter, whose name is not known to the writer, married a Mr. Deaderick, of Tennessee; 4, a third daughter married Major David C. Irvine, of Madison County; 5, a fourth married Major Anderson, of Boyle County, and moved to Missouri.

(g) CALEB WALLACE MCDOWELL was the seventh son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife Mary McClung, and was born April 17, 1774. He married a relative, Miss Elizabeth, the daughter of Colonel Joe McDowell, of North Carolina, by his wife, Margaret Moffett. 1. The only daughter of Caleb Wallace McDowell and his wife, Elizabeth (her name unknown to the writer), married a kinsman, Joseph Chrisman, Jr., of Jessamine County, Kentucky. The McDowells and Chrismans seemed to have intermarried for several generations after the first alliance was effected about the middle of the seventeenth century, and the result is an unusual combination of connections and relationships which might well confound any but the professional genealogist.

(h) and (j) SARAH and MAGDALEN, twin children of Judge Samuel McDowell by his wife, Mary McClung, were born October 9, 1755. Sarah became the (first) wife of the Caleb Wallace, who, in after years became one of the first three justices of the Kentucky Court of Appeals. Dr. Whitsitt believes that Caleb and Sarah were married in March, 1774. He was 13 years her senior. Caleb Wallace was then a candidate for the Presbyterian ministry, and in October of that year was ordained, and installed pastor of two churches in South Side, Virginia, one of which (Cub Creek) was in Charlotte County, and the other (Falling River) only a few miles distant. Sarah died in the early bloom of womanhood, and left no child. Her twin sister, Magdalen, married Andrew Reid, March 4, 1776, and remained in Virginia when her parents and the rest of the children moved to Kentucky some years later. Andrew Reid was of Scotch-Irish descent, and was born February 13, 1751. He died October, 1837. He was made clerk of Rockbridge County at the date of its organization in 1778, and held the position continuously for [illegible] years. His home was known as Mulberry Hill, an attractive place west of Lexington. Eleven children were born to Andrew and Magdalen. Two of the sons died in infancy. The eldest daughter, Sarah, married Andrew Moore. Another daughter married a Mr. McCampbell. Two other daughters married Venables. Yet another married Judge Abraham Smith. A fifth daughter of Andrew and Magdalen married Major John Alexander, of Lexington, Virginia, and their daughter, Agnes, married the late Rev. Dr. Beverly Tucker Lacey. The only son of Andrew and Magdalen who grew to manhood was Samuel McDowell Reid. He was the last to bear the name of his family owing to the early death of all three of his sons as well as both of his brothers. Mr. Reid was adjutant of the Fifth Virginia Militia in the war of 1812, commanded by Col. James McDowell. He succeeded his father as clerk of Rockbridge County and held the position for 25 years. He was also the clerk of the Circuit Court, colonel of the Virginia militia, and a member of the Virginia Legislature. February 22, 1821, he married Sarah Elizabeth Hare, built him a home in Lexington, which is still the treasured possession of his grandchildren, and died September 15, 1869, honored and respected by all who knew him.*

Samuel McDowell Reid was of Scotch-Irish blood, but Miss Hare, whom he married, was of Cavalier stock. Thus was brought about, in their offspring, that commingling of qualities which, according to Mr. John Fiske, the historian, produces such well-balanced characters. She was the daughter of Dr. William Bordley Hare, of King and Queen County, who served his State in both branches of the Virginia Legislature, in turn, and also in the Council of State. Dr. Hare's wife was Miss Elizabeth Cabell, daughter of Col. Nicholas Cabell and Hannah Carrington, of Nelson County. "Sallie Hare," as Mrs. Reid was called, was a woman of deep piety, and rare beauty and refinement; and she inherited all the musical talent of the

Cabells. It was when she came, a little motherless girl, to the Ann Smith Academy at Lexington, that she won the heart of young "McDowell Reid." She was born August 5, 1800, and died on her thirty-ninth birthday, August 5, 1839. Of the seven children born to Mr. and Mrs. Reid only two reached mature years, viz.: 1, Mary Louisa, who married James Jones White; and 2, Agnes.

(k) MARTHA was the third daughter of Judge Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung. She was born June 20, 1766, seventeen or eighteen years before her parents migrated to Kentucky. In October, 1788, several years after the migration, she was married to Colonel Abraham Buford, who was at the Battle of Point Pleasant, in October, 1774, as a lieutenant in the company of militia from Bedford County. During the Revolution he was the Lieut.-Colonel of the Tenth Regiment of Virginia Militia, and took part in the affair at Waxhaw, South Carolina, in May, 1780, where he lost three hundred of the four hundred men of his command at the hands of the British Dragoons under the blood-thirsty Tarleton. Col. Buford and his wife Martha McDowell had issue, as follows: 1, Charles S. Buford, who married, first, a daughter of Gov. John Adair, and, secondly, Lucy Duke, daughter of Dr. Basil Duke and Charlotte Marshall; 2, William S., who married a daughter of Hon. George Robertson; and, 3 Mary, who married James K. Duke, a brother to the second wife of her brother, Charles S. Buford.

(l) MARY or POLLY was the youngest daughter of Judge Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung, and was born in Rockbridge County Virginia, January 11, 1772. In 1784, she came through the wilderness to Kentucky with her parents. She was a woman of deep piety, marked amiability, and uncommon loveliness of person. In October, 1794, she married Alexander Keith Marshall, who was the sixth son of Colonel Thomas Marshall, of Revolutionary fame, and a nephew of Chief Justice Marshall. Col. Thomas Marshall's wife, by whom he had fifteen children, was Mary Randolph Keith.

The children of Alexander Keith Marshall and Mary (Polly) McDowell were the following: 1, Charles Thomas Marshall, who was born July 14, 1800, and who lived and died on his handsome patrimonial estate in Mason County, Kentucky, whose wife was Jane Luke, by whom he had four sons; 2, James K. Marshall, who married Catherine Calloway Hickman, daughter of John L. Hickman, of Bourbon County; 3, Maria Marshall, who was born in Mason County, Kentucky, July 20, 1795, and when only sixteen married her kinsman, James Alexander Paxton; 4, Lucy Marshall, who was born in 1796, and in 1818, married her cousin John Marshall, son of Captain Thomas Marshall; and 5, Jane Marshall, who was born in 1808, and in 1824 married William Starling Sullivant, of Columbus, Ohio.

(11) JAMES McDOWELL was the second child of Captain John McDowell and Magdalen Woods, and was born at the Red House, near Fairfield, Rockbridge County, Virginia, in 1739. He was the sheriff of his county; and in 1771, the year he died, he was on his way to Richmond on business connected with his office. Hence he lived to be only about thirty-two years old. He married Miss Elizabeth Cloyd, by whom he had six children. His wife lived until 1810. Their children were the following: (a) SARAH, who married her cousin, Major John McDowell, a son of her uncle, Judge Samuel McDowell. This couple had five children, who are mentioned where Major John McDowell's history is given, in brief, in its proper place. (See under the children of Judge Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung.) (b) ELIZABETH, who married David McGavock, and with him moved to Nashville, Tennessee. She became the maternal ancestor of a most extensive and influential family, whose representatives are to be found in Tennessee to this day occupying high social positions. (c) JAMES (2d) was the youngest son of James McDowell and Elizabeth Cloyd. He inherited the fine estate left by his father (1771) and there spent his whole life. He was a colonel in the American Army in 1812, and won honor and fame as might be expected of a McDowell. He married

Sarah Preston, the daughter of Colonel William Preston, who was the surveyor of Fincastle County, and who had as his assistants and deputies John Floyd, John Todd, Douglas, Hancock Taylor, Hancock Lee, and others who surveyed vast tracts of land in Kentucky for numerous settlers from 1773 to 1785. Colonel James McDowell and Sarah Preston had three children: 1, Susan, who married Col. William Taylor, a lawyer of Alexandria, Virginia; 2, Elizabeth, who became the wife of the Hon. Thomas H. Benton, so long known as the U. S. Senator from Missouri. Thomas H. Benton and Elizabeth McDowell had one daughter who married Gen'l John C. Fremont, and another, who married Col. Richard T. Jacob, of Kentucky. 3, James (3rd), the only son of James McDowell (2d) and Sarah Preston, was a member of the U. S. House of Representatives, then of the U. S. Senate, and lastly the beloved and distinguished chief executive of Virginia. Governor McDowell (James 3rd) was an eloquent orator, and also a cogent reasoner. The lady he married was a Miss Preston, his first cousin, and a daughter of General Francis Preston. Gen'l Preston's wife—the mother of Governor McDowell's wife—was a daughter of the Col. Wm. Campbell who commanded at the battle of King's Mountain. Sarah Preston, the wife of Gov. McDowell, was a sister of the wife of Rev. Dr. Robert J. Breckinridge, and of William C. Preston and Gen'l John S. Preston, of South Carolina.

(III) SARAH, the only daughter of Magdalen Woods by Captain John McDowell, her husband, married Colonel George Moffett, a soldier of great prominence in Virginia. Col. Green regards it as probable that this gentleman was a son of the Captain John Moffett who was among the Scotch-Irish settlers who at a very early day came into the Great Valley. Col. George Moffett's mother having become a widow married John Trimble, the grandfather of Allen Trimble, Governor of Ohio. George Moffett took an active part in the French and Indian wars and in many border encounters with the savages. In one of these conflicts his stepfather was slain, and several members of his family were carried off by the Indians. George Moffett promptly organized a company of men and pursued the savages; and having overtaken them at Kerr's Creek, he attacked and defeated them, and rescued the captives. Among the men thus released was James Trimble, the half brother of Moffett, and the father of Gov. Trimble of Ohio. The mother of Col. Moffett was Mary Christian, daughter of Robert Christian and Mary Richardson, of Ireland. Col. Moffett was an active participant in the Revolutionary struggle, and saw service as a colonel at King's Mountain, the Cowpens, and Guildford Court House. He was a friend and promoter of education, and was one of the founders of the academy at Lexington, which has grown to be Washington and Lee University.

Col. George Moffett and Sarah McDowell had eleven children, as follows: (a) MARGARETTA, who married her cousin, Col. Joseph McDowell, of North Carolina, who was a younger brother of the Gen'l Charles McDowell who was the second husband of Grizelle (or Grace) Greenlee. The father of Col. Joseph and Gen'l Charles McDowell was Joseph McDowell (senior), who was born in Ireland in 1715, and whose wife was Margaret O'Neil. The McDowells were Presbyterians, and the O'Neils were Catholics. Joseph McDowell, Sr., and his wife, Margaret O'Neil, migrated to America and settled in the Valley of Virginia, near Winchester, where Joist Hite had just made the first settlement west of the Blue Ridge. Here Col. Joe and Gen'l Charles McDowell were born, the former in 1743, and the latter in 1756. Joseph McDowell, Sr., had a brother known as "Hunting John" McDowell, who came with him to Virginia, but who later moved on down into North Carolina (after 1758) and settled on the Catawba, in a lovely spot which he named "Pleasant Garden." Not long after, Joseph McDowell Sr., followed him, and settled at a place called "Quaker Meadows." There his sons grew to manhood. The exact relationship existing between these two brothers and the Ephraim McDowell whose son John was slain at Bal-

cony Falls by Indians, in 1742, is not certainly ascertainable. It seems very likely they were close kin. These North Carolina McDowells were men of courage and patriotism, and bore an honorable part in the Revolutionary War. Joseph, Jr., (who later married Sarah McDowell) when only twenty years of age, was major of his brother Charles's regiment on the expedition against the Scotch Tories. Besides this campaign, he was in many others. At King's Mountain he commanded the regiment from Burke and Rutherford counties, North Carolina. Later on, he was prominent in civil affairs in his State, and also was a member of the U. S. Congress. He died at his home at Quaker Meadows in 1801.

Among the children of Col. Joseph and Margaretta the following may be mentioned, viz.: 1, Hugh Harvey, who moved to Missouri, and there died in 1859; 2, Joseph Jefferson, who moved to Ohio, and there became a member of the U. S. Congress, and whose wife was Sarah Allen McCue, daughter of the Rev. John McCue, an eminent Presbyterian minister once pastor of Tinkling Spring Church, Virginia; 3, Sarah, who married John Matthews and moved with him to Fayette County, Kentucky; 4, Margaret, who became the wife of her distant kinsman, Gov. Allen Trimble, of Ohio; 5 and 6, Celia, and Clarissa, both of whom married distant relatives, Chrismans, some of whose descendants are to be found to-day in Jessamine County, Kentucky. After the death of Col. Joseph McDowell at his home ("Quaker Meadows") his wife, Margaretta, removed to Virginia, and then, later, to Woodford County, Kentucky, where she died in 1815.

(b) MARY, second daughter of Sarah McDowell, by her husband Col. George Moffett, who—like so many of her relatives—married her distant kinsman, a Major Joseph McDowell, son of "Hunting John McDowell," of Pleasant Garden, North Carolina. This "Joe" was a first cousin of the other Joe who married Margaretta Moffett. The Joe who married Mary Moffett was born at Pleasant Garden, February 25, 1758, and, like all his kinsmen, took an active part in the conflicts of his day with the Indians and the British. He also became prominent in civil affairs. He died in 1795, leaving the following children: 1, Col. James McDowell, of Yancey County; 2, John McDowell, of Rutherford County; 3, a daughter, who married her cousin, Capt. Charles McDowell, of Burke County; 4, another daughter, who married her cousin Caleb McDowell, son of Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung. After the death of Major Joseph McDowell his widow (Mary Moffett) married Captain John Carson, the noted Indian fighter, by whom she had a number of children: 1, Hon. Samuel P. Carson, of Burke County, North Carolina, who, in a duel at Saluda Gap, in 1827, with a Dr. Robert P. Vance, inflicted upon the latter a wound from the effects of which Dr. Vance soon after died.

(c) MAGDALEN, the third daughter of Sarah McDowell by her husband Col. George Moffett, who married James Cochran. George M. Cochran, of Staunton, and James Cochran, of Charlottesville, were their sons.

(d) MARTHA, who married Captain Robert Kirk, of the U. S. Army.

(e) ELIZABETH, who married James Miller, the owner of a large iron works in Virginia.

(f) GEORGE, JR., who married a Miss Gilkerson, and moved to Kentucky.

(g) JAMES, who married Hannah Miller, a sister of the gentleman whom Elizabeth Moffett married. Col. Henry McDowell Moffett was a son of this couple.

SECTION TWO—THE BORDENS.

It is not certainly known how long Magdalen Woods McDowell remained a widow after the tragic death of her first husband (Captain John McDowell), in December, 1742, but it was probably about six or seven years. It is known that her second husband, Benjamin Borden, Jr., died in 1753, leaving two daughters whom Magdalen had borne to him. Concerning this second husband of

Magdalen we have considerable information,[47] the more pertinent items of which will here be presented, without attempting to indicate separately the precise authority for each. The reader will find ample warrant for what is given by consulting the authorities referred to in Note 47.

There is some difference of opinion as to the proper spelling of Magdalen's second husband's surname. Waddell thinks the correct spelling is Borden. The town in New Jersey which was named for a member of the family is spelled Bordentown. The Central Presbyterian for May 16, 1900, contained an interesting historical sketch of Timber Ridge Church (1746-1900) by the Rev. Dr. Henry Alexander White; and we know enough of that scholarly divine to feel sure that he used great care, in the preparation of his sketch, to give proper names exactly as the official records had them. In 1753, Timber Ridge made out a call for a pastor, and to that call, as it would seem, all the members of the church signed their names. Among the signatures we find this one: "Magdalen Borden (widow)." The orthography of that signature would seem to settle what that lady considered the proper spelling of her own Christian name, as well as that of her second husband's surname. She was, beyond all reasonable doubt, a communicant of Timber Ridge Church from its organization in 1746, to her death in 1810—a period of about sixty-six years—and even if some officer of the church made the copy of the call and list of signers (which is still on record) we may assume that the name of a woman of her prominence and long residence in the immediate vicinity would be generally and accurately understood.

Benjamin Borden, Sr., the father of the second husband of Magdalen, was the agent of Lord Fairfax; and in 1736 he came across the colony from Williamsburg to pay a visit to John Lewis in the Great Valley. Borden was, so Waddell thinks, a native of New Jersey. He was a rather extensive speculator in wild lands. He had procured, in October, 1734, a grant of a tract of land in Frederick County from Gov. Gooch, and this body of lands is known in history as Borden's Manor. He also got a promise of 100,000 acres of land on James River, to the west of the Blue Ridge, as soon as he should locate one hundred settlers on the tract. Peyton says Borden was an Englishman who settled in New Jersey and became a trader there, having come to America as an agent of Lord Fairfax. While on a visit to Williamsburg Borden met John Lewis, and made such a favorable impression on him that Lewis invited him to come over to the Valley and pay him a visit. Borden accepted the invitation, and spent several months at Lewis's home, occupying much of the time in hunting and fishing. While out on one of his excursions with the sons of Lewis, the party captured a buffalo calf, and when Borden returned to Williamsburg he took this calf and presented it to Gov. Gooch as something quite novel to his excellency. Borden was evidently enterprising and shrewd, and he made that buffalo calf do him much service. The Governor was so much pleased with Borden and his present that he ordered a patent to be made out authorizing Borden to locate 500,000 acres of land on the Sherando (Shenandoah) and James River west of the Blue Ridge. This large grant—known ever afterwards in history as "Borden's Grant"—covered a considerable part of what are now the counties of Rockbridge and Augusta. Beverly Manor, another famous grant, lay to the north of Borden's. The sole condition required of Borden in order to make his title good for this vast body of beautiful and fertile lands was, that he should, within the next ten years, settle not less than one hundred families on it. The date of this grant was about 1736. Borden immediately set to work to induce settlers from Great Britain, and probably from Pennsylvania and other northern colonies, to locate on his grant in the Valley. The zealous efforts of men like Hite and Lewis and Beverly and Borden to fill up the country with settlers on their respective tracts did more than anything else to hasten the opening up of the Great Valley of Virginia to civilization. Soon a vast tide of immigrants came pouring in, especially

from the North of Ireland, and Pennsylvania, and an overwhelming proportion of these early settlers were Scotch Irish Presbyterians.

The first acquaintance of Magdalen Woods McDowell with any of the Bordens was in the fall of 1737, when the McDowells and Greenlees were on their way to some locality on the South Fork of the Shenandoah River, intending to settle there. James McDowell, brother to Captain John, and son of Ephraim, had, in the spring of that year, raised a crop of corn on the South Fork of the Shenandoah near Woods's Gap. When the McDowell party had reached Lewis's Creek, and were just about making camp for the night, Benjamin Borden, Sr., came up and asked leave to spend the night there. Borden told the McDowells that he had a grant for a large body of land on the waters of James River, and exhibited documents which satisfied the McDowells he was telling the truth. He said he was at some loss to locate his lands exactly, and offered to give one thousand acres to any one who should conduct him to the right spot. Thereupon John McDowell—his wife Magdalen being present with the company—accepted his proposition, and a written agreement was drawn up. John McDowell was a surveyor, and of this fact he soon satisfied Borden, having his surveying instruments with him; and he and Borden went in search of the locality the latter was seeking, and they found it. It was soon agreed that the McDowells should all settle in Borden's Grant, and the region they selected was near to where Lexington now stands, and in between the North and South Rivers, which unite a few miles below Lexington and enter the James at Balcony Falls. John McDowell built his cabin at what is called the Red House near Fairfield. The McDowells and Greenlees were the first people to settle in that locality. Borden remained in the grant for about two years or more and secured the requisite one hundred settlers, and made good his claim to the land granted to him by Gov. Gooch. When Borden left the settlement about the fall of 1739, he committed his interests largely to John McDowell, who attended to them in his absence. He got his patent for his land November 8, 1739.

Later on, Benjamin Borden, Jr., came into the grant, and boarded for a time at John McDowell's house. He came as his father's representative to complete titles and make deeds. While there, of course, young Borden came to know the McDowells well. He returned to his father in New Jersey before John McDowell was killed. John McDowell, as already shown, was slain at Christmas, 1742, and at the close of 1743, the elder Borden died, leaving Benjamin Borden, Jr., his heir-at-law, besides two other sons, John and Joseph, and several daughters. Some time after the death of both John McDowell and the elder Borden the latter's son, Benjamin Borden, Jr., returned to the grant, he being then, more than ever before, deeply interested in the lands his father had owned. From old Mrs. Greenlee's account (found in her famous deposition) it would appear that the younger Borden had not made a favorable impression on the McDowells, especially on Magdalen. Mrs. Greenlee said he was not at all prepossessing, and that she considered him quite illiterate. But this estimate of the man was completely changed. He not only became popular, but such was his reputation for integrity that the saying "as good as Ben Borden's bill" passed into a proverb. It was not many years till he won the confidence and affections of Magdalen McDowell and made her his wife. Their marriage must have occurred about the year 1748. Magdalen was then about forty-two years old, and had with her John McDowell's three children, namely; Samuel, James, and Sarah, whose ages varied from fourteen to eight years. Magdalen continued to reside at the Red House. In 1753, her husband died of smallpox, leaving an estate which, in that day, was considered very large. His younger brother, Joseph, came into the grant after the death of Benjamin, Jr. Later on, he instituted the noted chancery suit (Borden vs. Bowyer) out of which grew other suits which have been pending in Augusta County courts for about a century. After the death of Borden, Jr., Magdalen, his widow, was

considered the wealthiest woman west of the Blue Ridge.

By her second husband Magdalen had two children.

(I) MARTHA BORDEN, first child of Benjamin Borden, Jr., and his wife Magdalen, was probably born at the Red House, Rockbridge County, Virginia, about the year 1750. Martha Borden became the wife of Benjamin Hawkins, by whom she had a number of children. (a) A daughter was born to Martha and Benjamin who married the John Todd who fell at the Battle of the Blue Licks in Kentucky. (b) A daughter, MAGDALENA, was born to them who married Matthew Harvey, and had Maria Hawkins Harvey, who married William A. McDowell. After the death of her first husband (Ben Hawkins) Martha Borden married Robert Harvey, an older brother of the Matthew Harvey who married her daughter Magdalena.

(II) Magdalen had a second daughter by her second husband, Benjamin Borden, Jr., whose name was HANNAH. This daughter seems to have died in childhood, and she was probably the last child her mother ever had. She was probably born about 1752. It is known her father died of the smallpox in 1753.

SECTION THREE—THE BOWYERS.

Concerning the third marriage of Magdalen (*nee* Woods) not much is known. How long she remained a widow after the death of Benjamin Borden, her second husband, is not known. It is known that Col. John Bowyer, who was her third husband, was a man of prominence in the Valley of Virginia. He was, as Col. Green asserts, twenty years younger than Magdalen. This last matrimonial venture of Magdalen's was probably not invested with a great deal of sentiment on either side, and may not have had much to recommend it. She was, for that day and community, a rich woman, and blessed with the most remarkable vitality, and with decided force of character. Col. Green mentions a "tradition," which may have only a slender foundation, to the effect that Magdalen had prudently made a marital settlement with Col. Bowyer before their marriage, but that he, by some means, managed to destroy it. Mrs. Greenlee, in her famous deposition, says that Bowyer settled Borden's business after the latter died in 1753. Bowyer, she states, laid claim to all the lands Borden had owned, and sold and gave away a great deal of it. But we must bear in mind that Mrs. Greenlee was the sister of Magdalen's deceased husband. Among the subscriptions to the salary of Rev. John Brown, pastor of Timber Ridge, in 1754, was that of a "Mr. Boyer" who gave twice as much as any other person named. It is extremely likely this subscriber was Col. John Bowyer. In 1763, we find him a captain of one of the companies of Col. Wm. Preston's regiment, raised to resist the Indians, some of whom had just devastated the Kerr's Creek neighborhood, and filled the whole Valley with alarm. In January, 1781, we find him leading a regiment of Rockbridge men to Richmond to resist the invasion which was led by Benedict Arnold. When Augusta County was divided, by cutting off from it the greater part of its territory to create the county of Botetourt (in 1769), we find him constituted one of its justices. Waddell, Annals of Augusta, Page 66, recites an entry from the Diary of Rev. Hugh McAden, dated July 13, 1755, which sets Col. Bowyer before us in most enviable and agreeable light. That he was not only an active and prominent citizen, and a Christian, but also a man who commanded the respect and good-will of the brothers and other relatives of Magdalen, his wife, seems practically certain, because he and the Woodses and Lapsleys were constantly associated together in going on each others' bonds, and in those acts of intimacy and good neighborhood which do not obtain where there is alienation and dislike. Magdalen's brother Richard was with Col. Bowyer on the first bench of gentlemen justices appointed for Botetourt County, and when his wife's brother, Michael Woods, Jr., came to write his last will in 1776, he names this brother-in-law one of his executors in terms which imply not only affec-

tionate regard, but perfect confidence. In view of all these facts it would seem but reasonable and charitable to withhold damaging criticism of Col. Bowyer's character and conduct and be willing to believe that any differences which may have arisen between him and his wife were only such as often exist between high spirited but honorable partners, and which do not argue either heartlessness or dishonesty. In truth, there is nothing certainly known concerning their relations to require us to believe that there ever was any difference or unpleasantness between Magdalen and her third husband.[48] They evidently had no children as the fruit of their union.

Magdalen Woods, the first child of Michael of Blair Park and Mary Campbell, lived till 1810, it is said, attaining the remarkable age of 104 years. She was one of the pioneers of the Valley of Virginia, and one of the founders of Timber Ridge Church. There are probably now living several thousand persons in whose veins her blood is coursing. Her ashes repose, almost certainly, in the Timber Ridge Church-Yard waiting for that last call which will summon the dead to rise to die no more. The sources of information concerning her character and life are so meager that only the dimmest outline of her picture can be discerned, but she has left her impress on some of the worthiest characters that have adorned the history of our common country, and we have good reasons for believing that she was a child of God, and that, as such, she has inherited the life everlasting.

B—WILLIAM WOODS (2d).

We have good reasons for believing that the second child (and first son) of Michael Woods by his wife, Mary Campbell, was their son William, who was probably born in Ireland in the year 1707. Concerning him the author has not been able to obtain many items of positive information. The few details which he has gathered together from sources deemed reliable will here be presented, but the reader is respectfully referred to the sketch of Colonel Charles A. R. Woods, one of William Woods's descendants, who has probably expended more labor in efforts to obtain full information concerning his Woods ancestors than any other person. In his sketch (to be found in Part III of this volume) the reader will find a number of interesting details which Col. Woods informs the writer he has gathered from various sources, and for the accuracy of which he vouches.

William Woods was a youth of about seventeen when his parents migrated to America, provided the author's calculations and conclusions relative to the dates of the more important events in the history of the remoter Woodses are substantially correct. It is assumed that he spent ten years of his life in the colony of Pennsylvania—1724 to 1734—and then came to Virginia. Before migrating to the latter colony, however, it is conjectured that he had married Susannah Wallace, his first cousin (his father's niece) say, about 1732, when he was about twenty-five, and she was about one year younger than himself. It would be most reasonable to suppose that William and his wife accompanied his parents when, in 1734, they came to Virginia, but some of his descendants believe that he did not leave Pennsylvania till March, 1744. When he did migrate he settled at the eastern base of the Blue Ridge near Woods's Gap, in what is now Albemarle County.

William Woods (2d), the first son of Michael and Mary, succeeded his father as the owner of the old Woods homestead, "Mountain Plains," afterwards called Blair Park.[49] The date of this change of ownership is unknown to the present writer. William (2d) was not very successful in the management of his estate, it would seem, as we find him mortgaging his property, first, to Thomas Walker, and again, to some men over in the Valley, among them being his brother-in-law Col. John Bowyer, and his nephew Samuel McDowell. The official records of the colony for the year 1758 show that he had been a lieutenant of the Albemarle Militia.[50] At least there was in Albemarle a William Woods who, in that year, received pay as a commissioned officer,

and we know of no other person of that name who at that date was old enough to be a soldier. William Woods (3d), often called "Beaver Creek Billy," was his son, but in 1758 he was only fourteen years old. In 1773 (or 1774) we find William Woods (2d) making sale of the old homestead (Mountain Plains), he being at that time a citizen of Fincastle County. In old Michael's last will, written in 1761, William is expressly mentioned, but we know of no certain means of determining whether or not he remained in Albemarle until after the death of old Michael, which occurred in 1762. The fac-simile of his receipt, given July 15, 1767, to be found in this volume, seems to prove he was then living in Albemarle. When William disposed of the old homestead in 1773 (or 1774) to Thomas Adams, of Augusta County, he took care to reserve the right of ingress and egress as to the old family burial-ground, and to prohibit any one from ever cultivating the ground within that enclosure. This secures the preservation of this sacred plot of ground, to some extent; but unless it shall, in the near future, be enclosed with a substantial iron fence and otherwise cared for, the probabilities are that the graves of the older Woodses will soon be utterly obliterated. For about a thousand dollars a suitable monument and iron railing could be provided, which would last for generations; and when we consider what a multitude of the descendants of Michael Woods of Blair Park are now living, and how many of them are blessed with a considerable share of worldly goods, it will be no small reproach to the "Woods Clan" if that sacred burial-plot is much longer allowed to remain in its present shabby and neglected condition.[51]

William Woods (2d) seems never to have had any other wife than Susannah Wallace, and by her he had ten children, as follows:[52]

(I) ADAM, who married Anna Kavenaugh;

(II) MICHAEL (3d), of whom little is known;

(III) PETER, who married Jael Kavenaugh;

(IV) JOHN (3d), who married Abigail Estill;

(V) ANDREW (3d), who married Hannah Reid;

(VI) ARCHIBALD (2d), who married Mourning Shelton;

(VII) WILLIAM (3d), known as "Beaver Creek Billy Woods";

(VIII) SARAH, who married a Mr. Shirkey;

(IX) SUSAN, of whom nothing is known; and

(X) MARY, who married George Davidson.

Dr. Edgar Woods states that all of the beforementioned children of William (2d) and Susannah, with the exception of William (3d), emigrated to Kentucky; and that from thence some of them went to Tennessee, and others to Missouri. Dr. Woods is also of the opinion that three of the sons were Baptist preachers, namely; Adam, Peter and Andrew (3d), though there may be some question as to whether this is correct as respects Adam.[53]

(I) ADAM WOODS, the first named of the ten children of William (2d) and his wife Susannah, was probably born in Albemarle County, and possibly about the year 1742. If he were the first born child of his parents, and his parents married about two years before the migration of the Woodses and Wallaces to Virginia, as has been conjectured, then William and Susannah had no children until about ten years after their marriage. It may be, however, that William did not marry till about 1740, when he was thirty-three years old; but we are left very largely to mere conjecture and guessing in respect to most of the details relating to his life. The inevitable result is that we find his lineal descendants of the present generation entertaining widely divergent theories in regard to some of the steps in his career. These, however, relate to matters about which differences of opinion do not impugn the general accuracy of the narrative.[54]

Whatever may have been the date of the marriage of his parents, or of their migration to Virginia, it is certain they had a son named Adam, who was probably born about 1742. Dr. Edgar Woods says he became a Baptist preacher, but Col. Chas. A. R.

Woods (in his sketch to be found in Part III of this work) speaks of him as soldier and a man of large landed estates, neither of which conditions are found to be true of the average preacher then or now. Adam migrated to Madison County, Kentucky, probably after the close of the Revolution, for it seems he acquired a farm there in December, 1781. He married Miss Anna Kavenaugh by whom he had a family of ten children, as follows: (a), WILLIAM (4th), who married Susan B. Clark; (b), PATRICK, who married, first, Rachel Cooper, and, second, Frances Dulaney; (c), ARCHIBALD (3d), who married his cousin, Mary Wallace; (d), MICHAEL (4th), who served in Col. Slaughter's regiment of Kentucky mounted men in the war of 1812, and was never married; (e), PETER, who moved from Kentucky to Clay County, Missouri, in 1815, and here reared a large family; (f), JOHN (3d), who migrated to California after the Mexican War, being a physician; (g), HANNAH, who married Colonel Barbe J. Collins, she being his second wife; and a cousin to his first wife; (h), ANNA, who married a Mr. Browne in Kentucky prior to the removal of the family to Missouri in 1815; (j), SUSAN, who married Colonel Mullins and moved to California; and, (k), SALLIE, who married Judge Austin Walden, of Missouri.

Adam Woods died in Howard County, Missouri, in 1826, at the age of eighty-four, while on a visit to his relatives, and was there buried. His wife had died many years before he passed away.

(II) MICHAEL WOODS (4th) was a son of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace. He is supposed to have been born in Albemarle County, Virginia, in 1746. It is thought he was a Revolutionary soldier, and that he migrated to Kentucky towards the close of the eighteenth century, and died there. Little seems to be known of him.

(III) PETER WOODS was a son of William (2d) and Susannah Wallace, and it is said he was born in Virginia in 1762, and died in Cooper County, Missouri, in 1825. In 1782, when only a little past twenty years of age, he married Jael Kavenaugh, sister to the wife of his brother Adam. He had probably settled in Kentucky before his marriage occurred. Born and reared a strict Presbyterian, he became a Baptist and entered the ministry of that Church. In 1808 he moved to Tennessee and in 1819 to Cooper County, Missouri. He was active in evangelistic work, and was prominent in the large denomination to which he went from the Church of his fathers. He was a useful and earnest servant of Christ, and is remembered, especially in Missouri, with admiration by all who know of his life and labors there. He left a large family, but unfortunately the author has not been able to procure their names.

(IV) JOHN WOODS (3d) was a son of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace, and was probably born in Albemarle County, Virginia, about 1751. There he resided till the migration of the family to Madison County, Kentucky. He married Abigail Estill, the daughter of Captain James Estill who built the fort in Madison County, Kentucky, which bore his name, and who was slain by the Indians. John Woods had taken an active part in the Revolutionary War prior to leaving Virginia, and had rendered gallant service against the Indians. In 1808, he, in company with three of his brothers (Archibald, Peter and Andrew Woods) moved to Tennessee. In that State he died in 1815. He left a family of children, but their names are not known to the writer.

(V) ANDREW WOODS (3d) was a son of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace, and was probably born about the year 1747, and in Albemarle County, Virginia. He married Miss Hannah Reid of the Valley of Virginia, a distant kinswoman, but his wife never bore him any children. He was reared, as all his father's family had been, a Presbyterian, but like his brother Peter he changed his views of the ordinance of baptism, and united with the Baptist Church, and became an active preacher of that denomination. He lived for some years in Madison County, Kentucky, and in 1808, along with his brothers Peter and John and

Archibald, moved to Tennessee where he died in 1815.

(VI) ARCHIBALD WOODS (2d) was the son of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace, and is said to have been born in Albemarle County, Virginia, January 29, 1749. This member of the family was one of its ablest representatives, and was for many years prominent in the early period of the history of Madison County, Kentucky. He was, it would seem, of a somewhat restless temperament, judging by the several moves he made. In 1774, he moved to Monroe County, Virginia. In the fall of 1776, we find him a captain of Virginia militia in an expedition against the Indians for the relief of Fort Watauga, in Tennessee. Col. Russell commanded this expedition. Captain Woods was constantly in service against the Indians and British till the surrender of Cornwallis in October, 1781. In December of that year he visited Kentucky, and in 1782 he brought his family to Madison County. In 1784, he purchased a farm on Dreaming Creek, and there he built Woods's Fort or Station, and made his home there for about twenty-five years. His first farm was on Pumpkin Run, a tract of one thousand acres of excellent land, for which he paid Captain Estill "one rifle gun," as he testified, in after years, under oath. It is needless to remark that there are no bargains exactly like that one now to be had near Richmond, Kentucky. When Madison County was organized in 1785 Captain Woods and nine other men were commissioned "Gentlemen Justices of the Peace" by Gov. Patrick Henry. He was a magistrate in 1798, when the removal of the county seat of Madison from Milford to Richmond was decided. He presided over the court when Richmond was named and made the county seat, was made one of its first trustees, and in 1801 was chosen to be the sheriff of his county. His life was greatly embittered by a long and vexatious law-suit which resulted in depriving him of his farm on Dreaming Creek where he had lived about a quarter of a century. This decision, which seems to have turned upon a mere technicality of the Kentucky Land Law, and which robbed him of the fruits of his labor, disgusted him with Kentucky for the time, and he thereupon migrated, in 1809, to Williamson County, Tennessee. There his wife died in 1817. Not long after her death he married a Miss Dorcas Henderson, and lived for a time in Franklin County, Tennessee. This second marriage proving a most unhappy one, a separation occurred, and in 1820 he returned to Madison County, Kentucky. In 1833, when eighty-four years old, feeble and about stripped of all his property, he sought a pension from the United States Government on account of his valuable services in the Revolution, and he was promptly pensioned at the rate of $480.00 a year, beginning with March, 1831. The affidavits he made in securing this pension furnish many of the facts now presented herein. He died December 13, 1836, in his eighty-eighth year, at the home of his son Archibald, and was buried in Madison County. Colonel Charles A. R. Woods, of Norborne, Missouri, who is a descendant of Archibald's brother Adam, paid a visit to Madison County last year (1903), and made diligent search for Archibald's grave. Several old burial-grounds were examined without success, but finally his grave was found at the old Goodloe place, about three and a quarter miles from Richmond. The tombstone was lying under six or eight inches of grass and soil, but the inscription was clear and complete. The County of Madison, with whose early history Archibald Woods was so intimately connected, and his numerous descendants, should see to it that his last resting place is properly marked and duly cared for, for he was one of Kentucky's worthiest pioneers. From him and Mourning Shelton has descended a long line of judges, statesmen, soldiers, lawyers, and financiers.

By his wife Mourning Shelton Captain Archibald Woods had a family of ten children. His wife died September 7, 1817. By his second marriage he seems to have had no issue.[55]

(a) LUCY, their eldest daughter, was born October 25, 1774, and married Colonel William Caperton December 13, 1790. She had by him the

following children, to wit: 1, Archibald; 2, Hugh; 3, Thomas Shelton; 4, William H., who married Eliza Estill; 5, Green; 6, John, the father of Dr. A. C. Caperton, a Baptist minister of Louisville, Kentucky; 7, Andrew; 8, Hulda, who married Andrew Woods, her cousin; 9, Susan, who married Wallace Wilson, and 10, Milton T., a Baptist minister of Austin, Texas, now living at the advanced age of ninety-three. Col. William Caperton with Lucy his wife migrated to Tennessee in 1812, and their descendants are mainly scattered through the South and South-west.

(b) WILLIAM (5th), their second child, was born March 22, 1776, and married Mary Harris January 13, 1802. He died July 8, 1840, and she died January 17, 1838. They left the following children, to wit: 1, Nancy, who was born January 21, 1803; 2, Archibald (4th), who was born February 20, 1804, and married Sallie G. Caperton; 3, Semiramis Shelton, who was born September 1, 1805, and married John M. Kavenaugh December 10, 1822; 4, Lucy, who was born February 22, 1807; 5, Mourning, who was born October 6, 1808; 6, Thomas Harris, who was born August 31, 1810, and married Appeline Miller; 7, Robert Harris, who was born May 29, 1812; 8, William Crawford, who was born April 1, 1814, and married Sarah Ann Boyce; 9, John Christopher, who was born February 8, 1817; 10, Mary Ann, who was born February 20, 1819, and married John M. Miller; and 11, James Goodloe, who was born February 2, 1823, and married Susan Jane Boyce.

(c) SUSANNAH, the third child of Archibald Woods (2d), was born June 13, 1778, and married William Goodloe February 23, 1796, and died October 2, 1851, leaving thirteen children.

(d) MARY, the fourth child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born July 31, 1780, married Barbee Collins June 25, 1795, and died July 23, 1822.

(e) SARAH, the fifth child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born January 31, 1783, and died April 21, 1785.

(f) ARCHIBALD (3d), the sixth child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born February 19, 1785, and married Elizabeth Shackleford October 10, 1810. He resided on a fine bluegrass farm two miles east of Richmond, Kentucky, and was one of the earliest practitioners of law at the Richmond bar. The only issue of this marriage was a daughter, Martha, who married James M. Estill, of Madison County, Kentucky, a grandson of the noted pioneer, Captain James Estill. In 1850, Archibald (3d) and his son-in-law James M. Estill went to California overland across the plains. Estill's wife, Martha, and their children, followed him in 1851, going by way of the Isthmus of Panama. In this arduous journey they were safely conducted by their faithful slave, Jordan, and the party crossed the Isthmus on mules. Estill rose to prominence in California, and was elected to the State Senate. A few years later both Archibald Woods (3d) and his son-in-law, Estill, died in California. Mr. Estill was a gentleman of brilliant gifts, and took a position in the best ranks of society. James M. Estill and Martha Woods left five daughters and a son, as follows: 1, Elizabeth, who married, in California, William R. Garrison (son of Commodore Garrison, a millionaire of New York City) and had three children. The first of these three children of William R. Garrison and Elizabeth Estill was Minnie, who married Gaston De Chandon, of France, and now resides at Nice; the second was Estill, who married Charles Ramsey (uncle to the present Earl of Dalhousie) and now resides in London; and the third was William Garrison, Jr., who married Catharine Condert (Pro Condare) daughter of Frederick R. Condert, the eminent lawyer of New York City, recently deceased. Mrs. Martha Woods Estill, only daughter of Archibald Woods (3d) and Elizabeth Shackelford, and widow of James M. Estill, is now living, at a very advanced age, in New York City with her daughters. The second child of James M. Estill and Martha Woods was Josephine; the third was Martha, who married W. W. Craig; the fourth was Rodes; the fifth was Florence; and the sixth was Maud, who married Dana Jones, of California.

(g) ANNA, the seventh child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born January 27, 1787, and married Thomas H. Miller July 29, 1806.

(h) THOMAS, the eighth child of Archibald Woods (2d) and his wife Mourning Shelton, was born May 5, 1789, and died October 29, 1806.

(j) ANN, the ninth child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born and died May 15, 1791.

(k) MOURNING, the tenth and last child of Archibald Woods (2d) and Mourning Shelton, was born April 2, 1792, married Garland Miller January 18, 1810, and died September 7, 1817.

(VII) WILLIAM WOODS (3d), son of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace—known for many of the later years of his life as "Beaver Creek William Woods The First"—was born (according to Col. Charles A. R. Woods) in Albemarle County, Virginia, December 25, 1744; but according to Mrs. McChesney Goodall he was born December 31, 1744, near the present town of West Chester, Pennsylvania, and brought to Albemarle County, Virginia, the March following.[56] The Rev. Dr. Edgar Woods, who resides in Charlottesville, Virginia, and has given very careful attention to these questions, positively states that William Woods (3d), long known as "Beaver Creek Billy," died in 1836, at the age of ninety-two, making the year of his birth 1744; but he gives no opinion as to the place of his birth, or the date of his coming to Virginia. The present writer has no documentary evidence at hand to warrant positive assertions on this point, but he decidedly inclines to the view that Beaver Creek William Woods was born in Albemarle, and that his parents came there in 1734, with Blair Park Michael.

The William Woodses came to be so numerous in Albemarle that something had to be done to conveniently distinguish them from one another. The William Woods, who was the son of William 2d and Susannah Wallace, gradually developed into a conspicuous personage in his county; and then several other William Woodses—grandsons and great-grandsons of Michael of Blair Park—came upon the stage, besides William the surveyor, called "Surveyor William Woods." The result was that the individual now under consideration, (who was the son of William 2d and Susannah Wallace), because his home was on Beaver Creek, came to be known as "Beaver Creek Billy." The relief, however, was but temporary and partial, for "Beaver Creek William Woods" was so unfortunate as to have named one of his own sons William; and as this son lived on Beaver Creek with his father, he, in the course of time, had to be dubbed "Beaver Creek William The Second." Then another grandson of old Michael, named William, came into prominence, thereby increasing the complications which already were enough to try the patience of the community. This last mentioned gentleman became a prominent minister of the Baptist Church, and a man of influence in Albemarle; and in sheer desperation his friends began calling him "Baptist William Woods." There still remained several other men of the same name in Albemarle, and contiguous counties, for whom no such familiar appellatives were invented, and to several of them we shall be compelled to refer in this narrative.

William Woods ("Beaver Creek Billy") (3d) was a zealous Presbyterian, and a leading member of the Mountain Plains Church. He was a man of fine sense, natural leadership, and excellent character. He displayed some little eccentricities of mind and manner which caused him to be well known in all the region round about. He took a special interest in his Church, and exercised over it a sort of paternal guardianship. He would not hesitate to utter his disapproval of what he conceived to be a pernicious sentiment from the lips of the preacher in the pulpit by giving audible dissent from his place in his pew. Many a time, when he thought the preacher was missing the mark in some of his statements before the assembled congregation, he would shake his head, and say, aloud,—"Not so, sir; not so." 'Tis said he was very tall and handsome, and of graceful manner; and in his latter years, he wore

his gray hair long, and combed straight back from his fine forehead. All in all, he must have been a most interesting and unique character in his day, and it seems a great pity that we have no portrait of him. To be able to gaze upon a good likeness of his face would carry us back to the Virginia of a century ago, with its charming social life long prior to the days of railroads and other modern inventions. He was, according to Dr. Edgar Woods, the only one of all the children of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace that remained in Albemarle, all the others having migrated to the West at the close of the Revolution. His home was on Beaver Creek, about a mile north of the present railway station called Crozet, and some of his descendants are living in that immediate vicinity to this day, and are among the best people of Albemarle.

William Woods (3d) was three times married. His first wife was his cousin, Sarah Wallace; his second was his cousin, Ann Reid; and his third was Mrs. Nancy Jones, *nee* Richardson. He took part in the Revolutionary struggle, and in 1776 was commissioned an ensign, and almost immediately thereafter a lieutenant, in the Virginia Line. It seems to be generally agreed that he had but one son, and to him he gave that extremely popular name WILLIAM, who was known in Albemarle as "Beaver Creek Billy the Second." The writer is not informed as to which of the three wives of William Woods (3d) was the mother of William Woods (4th). Nor does the writer know whether the latter had any sisters or half sisters. It seems likely that his father's first wife, Sarah Wallace, was his mother, and that he was the only child his father ever had born to him.

(a) WILLIAM WOODS ("Beaver Creek Second") the only son of William Woods (3d) married Mary Jarman, a daughter of William Jarman. Said William Jarman was a brother of the Thomas Jarman who purchased land on the crest of Woods's Gap, and for whom the name of that pass was transferred, from the man who first settled at its base (Michael Woods) and called Jarman's Gap. Thus the niece of the Jarman whose name supplanted that of Woods for the gap in question became a Mrs. Woods.[57] We knew nothing of the date of the birth of this William Woods (4th), but we know he died in 1829, leaving the following children: 1, James, who married Mildred Jones, lived on Beaver Creek, and died in 1868; 2, William, who married Nancy Jones, lived near Crozet, and died in 1850; 3, Peter A., who was a merchant in Charlottesville, and in Richmond, married Twymonia Wayt, and afterwards Mrs. Mary Poage Bourland, and died in 1870; 5, Thomas Dabney, who married Miss Hagan, lived near Pedlar Mills in Amherst County, and died in 1894; and 6, Sarah L., who married Jesse P. Key. The said James Woods, first child of William Woods (4th), who married Mildred Jones, a daughter of Captain William R. Jones, had several children, the eldest of which was William Price Woods, who married Sarah Ellen Jones, his cousin. Mr. William Price Woods lived at Crozet, Va., and there died August 8, 1900. Mrs. Goodall, who has a sketch of her family in Part III of this volume, is his granddaughter. (See her sketch.)[58]

(VIII) SARAH WOODS was a daughter of William Woods (2d) and his wife Susannah Wallace. Sarah (or Sallie, as some prefer to call her,) married a Col. Nicholas Shirky, of Botetourt County, as Col. Chas. A. R. Woods states in his sketch in Part III of this work. Col. Woods says she was born in 1761, and died in 1851. If she had any children the author has been unable to ascertain the fact.

(IX) SUSAN is mentioned by Dr. Edgar Woods in his history of Albemarle as one of the daughters of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace, but no details of her life are furnished.

(X) MARY is referred to by Dr. Edgar Woods as if she were the last of the children of William Woods (2d) and Susannah Wallace, but the only piece of information he gives concerning her is that she married one George Davidson.

Col. Charles A. R. Woods (see his sketch) makes no reference to either Susan or Mary in his list of

the children of William Woods (2d), and Susannah Wallace; but he does mention a Hannah Woods, who is said by some persons to have been one of their children, and to have married one William Kavenaugh and moved to Madison County, Kentucky. That there should be considerable uncertainty in regard to some of the children of William Woods (2d) is not at all surprising, for he himself seems to have disappeared from view entirely about the year 1773, when he was living in Fincastle County, Virginia. When we reflect that the short-lived county of Fincastle, which existed from 1772 to 1776, comprised a small empire within its bounds, viz.: all of Southwest Virginia; nearly all of what is now the State of West Virginia; and the whole of Kentucky—when we think what a vast area it included—we can understand how extremely vague is the statement that in 1773 this William Woods (2d) was "living in Fincastle County." In what part of it he resided we have no idea, except that it was probably near New River. Nor have we any means of knowing when, or where, or how either he or his wife died. We know that before the Revolution began he had left Albemarle, and that at the close of that great struggle all of his children except William had migrated to Kentucky. Beyond this his history is veiled from our view, and it is likely we can never know what the closing years of life were for him. Born in 1707, he is about sixty-six when he vanishes from our sight. Fortunately he has left many worthy descendants who have perpetuated his name among men, and not a few of them have made such names for themselves as reflect credit upon the whole Woods Clan, and reveal the excellence of the stock whence they sprang.

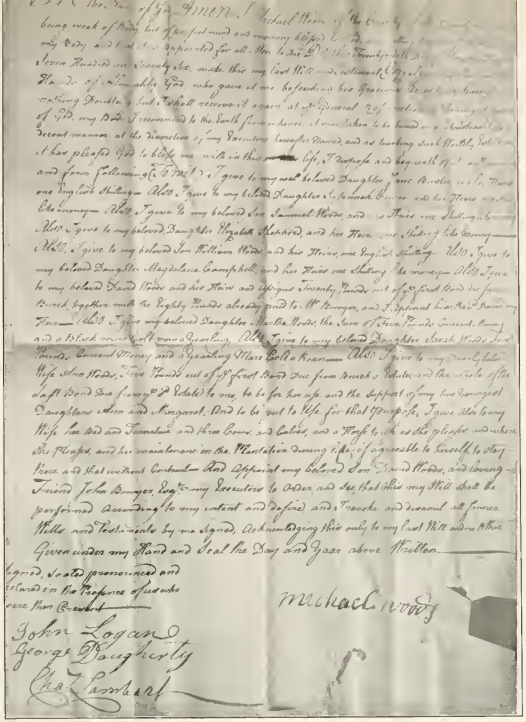
C—MICHAEL WOODS, JUNIOR.

The third child of Michael Woods of Blair Park and his wife Mary Campbell was named for his father, Michael; and, as was shown on a previous page, he was probably born in Ireland about the year 1708. We feel next to certain that he migrated to America with his parents and kinsfolk in 1724, tarrying ten years in the colony of Pennsylvania, and then going with the Woodses and some of the Wallaces to Virginia in 1734. As he was a man of twenty-six when he settled in Virginia, and only a youth of sixteen when he left Ireland, we might suppose that he married his wife, Anne, in Pennsylvania. We have no means of knowing what his wife's surname was, as the only mention we have of her is in the deeds of her husband and in his last will, in all which he calls her Anne. Hence the strain of which she was a representative must probably remain forever hidden from her descendants. Knowing what we do of the man she married, however, we may safely indulge the confident hope that she was a good Christian woman, and most probably a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian as was Michael, Junior, himself. General Micajah Woods thinks she was a cousin to Michael. We shall designate this member of the family as "Michael, Junior," because his father bore the name Michael, and described him as "Michael Junior" in a deed he executed in 1743. He is often referred to as Michael Woods of Botetourt, but his home was in Albemarle, at least thirty-five years, whilst in Botetourt he lived scarcely seven years. Besides, the name "Michael Junior" describes him with sufficient accuracy.

The first allusion to this son of Michael of Blair Park seems to be that which we find in the deed which his father executed to him August 3, 1743, conveying to him 200 acres of the Hudson tract. In this deed the grantor signs himself Michael Woods, Sr., and refers to the grantee as Michael Woods, Jr. At this time the father was 59 years old, and the son was about 36. Twelve years later (September 10, 1755) we find Michael, Jr., obtaining a Crown Grant for himself of 300 acres on Ivy Creek adjoining the 200 acres his father deeded to him in 1743. Assuming that Michael, Jr., made his home on this land for about 25 years of his life (which is practically certain), he resided near Ivy Depot, and only about six miles distant from his father's homestead at Blair Park. The date of the removal of Michael, Jr., to Botetourt County can not be cer-

tainly made out, but it was probably about the year 1769, or shortly thereafter. This is inferred from the known fact that in that year Michael, Jr., and Anne his wife deed to their son William the before-mentioned 300 acres of land, and in 1773 they conveyed another tract to one Thomas Berch. In 1769 Michael, Jr., was only about 61 years of age, and his undertaking to make a new start in life in another part of the colony some distance away, and in a frontier region, showed that his reason for disposing of his lands in Albemarle was not that he was feeble and considered his end near. He is said to have been a large man above six feet in height, and of unusual vigor of both body and mind. His removal to Botetourt, therefore, may be set down as having occurred somewhere between 1769 and 1773, but the earlier of the two dates seems to be the more probable one. His father's death, in 1762, had doubtless made him the more willing to leave the old home neighborhood, and his brothers Archibald, Andrew and William are known to have moved from Albemarle about the same period. Land to the southward was quite as fertile as in Albemarle, and cheaper, and there was a spirit of enterprise and adventure abroad in the older parts of the colony at the time which caused many to turn their eyes towards the Southwest with the view of making new investments in promising fields—of "going West to grow up with the country," as we would say in our day.

The location which Michael, Jr., chose for himself on James River in Botetourt County, was one well adapted to agricultural purposes, and was, besides, quite picturesque and interesting. The engraving giving a view of the river in front of his farm, (which will be found in this volume) shows how it appears to one standing on the north bank of the river at Indian Rock, a station of the Chesapeake & Ohio Railway. At that point the James sweeps around the farm in a graceful curve, forming an almost perfect letter U one or two miles in extent, the opening of the semi-circle being toward the South. The north bank of the river here is crowned with beautiful hills, coming close down to the water's edge, whilst the farm, which is on the opposite side, consists mainly of very gently undulating lowlands or meadow. Just here a little mountain stream, known as Jennings Creek, puts into the river from the south, its head springs being right at the northern base of the famous Peaks of Otter, a few miles south of the farm. Now and then, after heavy rains, when both river and creek are high, the swollen waters back up and overflow the low grounds, so as to make the place look like an island; and as a gentleman by the name of Shepherd long owned the place after the death of Michael, Jr., it came to be called "Shepherd's Island Farm." It also had the name of "Hollow Ford Farm," suggested, no doubt, by some peculiarity of the ford of the James on the north line of the place. The Peaks of Otter, eight miles to the south; the marvellous Natural Bridge, only seven miles to the northeast, and the grand water-gap of the James at Balcony Falls, twelve miles below; constitute a combination of attractions not often equalled in any part of the land. In Michael's day none of the noises and commotions of our modern life disturbed the peaceful valley in which he resided; but now either bank of the noble James boasts a great trunk-line—the Chesapeake & Ohio on one side, and the Norfolk & Western on the other—and the whistle of the locomotive and the roar of trains are constantly waking the echoes in the grand mountains and charming hills of that beautiful region. The farm consisted of about 400 acres when Michael owned it, and it now belongs to a Mr. Starkey Robinson, in whose hospitable home the present writer was kindly entertained in the summer of 1895, whilst in the neighborhood making observations and researches preparatory to the publication of this work. The present dwelling—a comfortable brick house—stands, as Mr. Robinson stated, on the exact site of the old Woods homestead of one hundred and thirty years ago. A few hundred yards to the east of the house is the private burial-ground of the farm covering a little knoll. The only graves there in 1895, marked with headstones having inscriptions were of recent date,



FAC-SIMILE OF LAST WILL OF MICHAEL WOODS, JR., WHO DIED IN 1777.

but there were many unmarked, sunken graves, in one of which we can scarcely doubt the body of Michael Woods, Jr., has been sleeping since 1777. In the morning of "the day without clouds," when the last trumpet echoes through those hills, the angels will know where to find the dust of those they seek.

After Michael's death this farm, as his will provided, became the property of his son David, and in 1779 he sold it to his brother-in-law, William Campbell, for three thousand five hundred pounds. A man by the name of Shepherd afterwards owned it, and he may have been the Dalertus Shepherd who married one of Michael's daughters. About thirty-three years ago Mr. Starkey Robinson, the present owner, came into possession of it. The exact location of this farm is indicated on the "Map of the Parting of the Ways" to be found in this volume. In 1769, the year Michael seems to have purchased this place, that region was yet a frontier settlement, and exposed to the depredations of Indians from the northwest. The savages continued to annoy the settlers in that part of the country well on down to the close of the eighteenth century. Indeed, Southwestern Virginia, and what is now the state of West Virginia, were exposed to troubles of this character longer than even Kentucky was. It must have been, therefore, no small comfort to Michael that his brother Andrew lived only about twelve or fourteen miles southwest of his home, and his brother Archibald still farther down in that direction on Catawba Creek. His brother William was also down below him somewhere in Fincastle County; and the McAfees, one of whose daughters became the (second) wife of his son David in after years, were also residing on Catawba Creek. All of these families were near enough to him for purposes of social intercourse, and also of mutual assistance in times of danger. Michael was, beyond all reasonable doubt, a devout Scotch-Irish Presbyterian; and as both Falling Spring and High Bridge (Presbyterian) Churches were in existence all the years he lived on James River—the one being sixteen miles distant, and the other only eight miles—it is extremely likely that he and his family held their membership in one of them, and probably attended both quite often. The four Bibles and four Catechisms and one copy of the Confession of Faith, listed by his executors after his death as among his personal effects, as well as the devout preface to his will, indicate pretty clearly that his was a home in which religion had a large place. It was not thirty miles from his home on the James to that "nest" of Woodses, McDowells, Lapsleys, Campbells, Bowyers, etc., up in Rockbridge County, and there are indications that he kept in close touch with these relatives and connections to the close of his life; and when he comes, a few months before his end, to write his last will, he names, as one of the executors of his estate "my loving friend, John Bowyer, Esq."—the man who was the third husband of his own sister Magdalen.

Michael Woods, Jr., wrote his will May 29, 1776, —just as the Revolutionary storm was beginning to rage—and it was proved in court March 11, 1777. He probably died very early in the year 1777. The original document is on file now in the clerk's office at Fincastle, Botetourt County, Virginia, and through the courtesy of the obliging clerk, Mr. Matheny, the writer was allowed to have it photographed expressly for this work. A faithful facsimile of the will, made from the photograph thus obtained, will be found in this volume. He made his son David his "heir," and one of the two executors of the will; and Col. Bowyer, his brother-in-law, was made the other executor. His wife Anne was living at the time, and is mentioned by name. It is known that she joined her sons David and Samuel, a few years later, in their migration to Kentucky, where she died not long after the removal. Three men signed as witnesses to the will, to wit: John Logan; George Dougherty; Charles Lambert. Of the first two the writer knows nothing whatever. Concerning the Charles Lambert, General Micajah Woods expresses the opinion, based on facts known to him, that the family to which this gentleman belonged was in some way closely related to the

Woodses; and he thinks a man of this name married either a sister or a daughter of Michael, Jr. It is hardly possible that Michael had a sister who married a Lambert. But he left two young lady daughters, Anne and Sarah, one of whom may have married this Mr. Lambert. General Lambert, once Mayor of Richmond, was, as General Woods believes, a descendant of one of the near kinswomen of Michael, Jr.—a sister, or daughter. The Charles Lambert, above mentioned, was evidently closely connected with him in some way; for, prior to 1770, he was a witness to various legal documents for Woodses in Albemarle County. It would therefore seem that he came to Botetourt County about the time Michael himself did, and it may be that he married either Anne, or Sarah, one of the younger daughters of Michael.

Michael Woods, Jr., must have failed in health very rapidly, and from some other cause than old age, after settling in Botetourt. If he had not been in very robust health in 1769—the date of his selling out in Albemarle preparatory to removing to Botetourt—he would hardly have gone down into the then frontier portion of the colony, one hundred miles distant from his old home, to begin life anew. It is only six or seven years subsequent to that migration that we find him writing his will, in which he speaks of himself as "weak in body"; and he was then only sixty-eight years old, and died only about nine months thereafter. His father had lived to be seventy-eight, and his sister Magdalen, who was born a couple of years before himself, outlived him about a third of a century. Our impression of those ancient Woodses is that they were, as a rule, an unusually hardy and vigorous race of people who attained to great age. Hence we infer that Michael, Jr., must have experienced some sudden and unlooked for shock to his bodily health which took him off at least ten years before the time he and his friends would have anticipated when he took leave of Albemarle. But if we may fairly draw inferences from the language men employ in making their last wills, it is reasonably certain that Michael, Jr., was not at all weak in his faith, however feeble he may have been in body. The preamble of that document reads as follows: "In the name of God, Amen. I, Michael Woods, of the County of Botetourt, in Virginia, being weak of body, but of perfect mind and memory, blessed be God, and calling to mind ye mortality of my body, and that it is appointed for all men once to die, do, this twenty-ninth day of May, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-six, make this my last will and testament, viz.: I give my soul into the hands of Almighty God, who gave it me, beseeching his gracious acceptance thereof, nothing doubting but I shall receive it again at ye General Resurrection by the mighty power of God. My body I recommend to the earth from whence it was taken, to be buried in a Christian-like and decent manner, &c, &c." As for his worldly property, whilst not a man of large wealth at the time of his decease, he was comfortably fixed, and left a good estate for a man who had no doubt previously made provision for eight or nine children.

Men often use some pious phrases in drawing up their last wills merely as a matter of form, but the man who dictated that preamble was, beyond all doubt, one who lived a truly devout life, and died in the faith of Jesus Christ. His descendants ought to know these things concerning him. The meagre outline of his life which remains for us leaves him almost wholly hidden from our gaze amidst the shadows of a somewhat remote past; but it should be a comfort, and also an inspiration, for us that the clearest light which falls upon his career illumines the most important phase of his character, and gives to us the reasonable assurance that he has a place in the Kingdom of Glory above where we also may hope, after a season, to meet him and share that joy and peace which have been his for one hundred and twenty-seven years.

In his will Michael, Jr., makes express mention of eleven children, and there is every reason for believing that he had no others living at that time. There is some reason, however, for supposing that he may have had two or three others who died in early life. An interesting question is: Are we to

accept the order in which Michael mentions his children in his will as indicating the order in which they were actually born? Of course we are obliged to answer this question not without some hesitation. Perhaps in most cases men, in having their wills drawn up, do mention their children with due regard to the matter of seniority, beginning with the eldest and ending with the youngest. But it is a fact that there is no very important reason for so doing. The will would be just as complete and valid, and the intentions of the testator just as clear, no matter what order he followed in naming the heirs: the only really important point is that all the heirs to whom he wishes to make specific bequests shall be mentioned somewhere in the will, and the portion of each clearly indicated. This question would not have been raised by the present writer but for the fact that, if we adopt the order of the names given in Michael's will as being the exact order of seniority for all the children, we raise some very serious difficulties which can not be explained away. There are many important details in regard to all of his children about which we possess no information whatever; in fact, we know scarcely anything at all about most of them beyond the bare fact that they once lived. But fortunately there are a few dates and facts which are known with certainty, and these enable us to know some other things; and when these are duly considered we believe it will be apparent that Michael mentioned several of his children without regard to their seniority. First, we know, with certainty, that Samuel was born in 1738; and if his sisters Jane and Susannah were born before he was, and were the first-born of all the eleven children, as one would infer from Michael's will—to which supposition we know of no objection—then we may fix the probable date of the marriage of Michael and Anne as 1734—the very year the Woodses and Wallaces moved to Virginia. As Michael was leaving Pennsylvania that year, it would have been the most natural thing in the world, if he had a sweetheart there, to want to have her go along and share his fortunes in the new home in the colony of Virginia. That Michael and Anne did marry about 1734, we feel confident. That he was then about twenty-six, and she about seventeen, or a little past, we have good reasons for believing. Secondly, we know that Magdalen, who married William Campbell, was born in 1755; and in that year her mother was about thirty-eight years old, if our estimates above given are sound. But Michael makes Magdalen sixth in his list and mentions five other children after her. It is extremely probable, when all the circumstances of the case are weighed, that if five children were born of Anne after the year 1755, the last of the five was born not less than ten or twelve years after Magdalen was. This would mean that Anne was a woman forty-eight to fifty years old when her last child was born. We do not hesitate to say that we think it extremely unlikely that there were five children born to Michael and his wife after 1755, she being about fifty years old at the birth of the last of her children. Thirdly, we find that among the children mentioned in the will after Magdalen is David. As Magdalen, we know, was born in 1755, then if David came after her we must fix the year 1757 as about the year of his birth; and as his father died early in 1777, David was not ten years old when that bereavement fell upon the home. Now this same son David is expressly named by Michael as one of his executors and his heir—a boy who was scarcely nine years old the day the will was penned. The absurdity of such a thing is only too apparent. David was surely born at least fifteen years before Magdalen was, though in the will he is named after her. He must have been a man at least twenty-five years of age, and of good promise as a capable business man, for his father to have put upon his shoulders such grave responsibilities. That this child, at least, could not have been named by Michael according to his priority seems certain. Looking at the list in the will we find four unmarried daughters: Martha, Sarah, Anne, and Margaret, and all of them are mentioned together at the end of the list. This does not mean that all four of them were born subsequent to Mag-

dalen's birth. Anne and Margaret were, for Michael expressly says they were his youngest children. We are confident that Martha and Sarah were older than Magdalen. Just why they are mentioned after her we can not positively affirm, but we suspect that their father just located the four single daughters in one place at the foot of the list without any special reason except that single daughters would not be so apt to be as prominently in mind when writing a will as the married ones with whom he had already had business transactions connected with settling upon them portions of his estate. The scheme which we have formulated, and which, whilst not claimed to be correct in all respects, rests upon reasonable deductions from known facts, is as follows:

CHILDREN OF MICHAEL WOODS, JR., AND ANNE.

I—JANE	BORN 1735 (?)	DIED ——
II—SUSANNAH	BORN 1736 (?)	DIED ——
III—SAMUEL	BORN 1738	DIED 1826
IV—DAVID	BORN 1740 (?)	DIED 1786
V—ELIZABETH	BORN 1742 (?)	DIED ——
VI—WILLIAM	BORN 1748	DIED 1819
VII—SARAH	BORN 1750 (?)	DIED ——
VIII—MARTHA	BORN 1753 (?)	DIED ——
IX—MAGDALEN	BORN 1755	DIED 1830
X—ANNE	BORN 1757 (?)	DIED ——
XI—MARGARET	BORN 1760 (?)	DIED ——

I—JANE was, beyond reasonable doubt, the first-born of the eleven children of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne. She was, in all probability, born in Goochland County (now Albemarle), Virginia, about 1735, the year after the Woodses settled in that colony. She married a Mr. Buster. His Christian name, some have said, was John. Of her and her husband and family we know nothing beyond the fact, stated to the writer by General Micajah Woods, that Mr. Charles Buster, recently clerk of Greenbrier, Virginia, County Court, is a descendant of theirs. Dr. Edgar Woods, in his history of Albemarle (page 158), tells a good deal of the Buster family.

II—SUSANNAH was the second child of Michael Woods, Jr., and Anne his wife. She was probably born in what is now Albemarle County, Virginia, about the year 1736. She married a Mr. Cowan. There was a John Cowan to whom lands were patented in what is now Albemarle County, prior to 1740. This gentleman's son may have been the person she married, or a near kinsman of his. Of Susannah's subsequent history we know absolutely nothing.

III—SAMUEL WOODS was the third child, and first son, of Michael, Jr., and Anne his wife. From sworn documents which he filed in the U. S. Pension Office in 1823, it is apparent he was born in the year 1738. Those documents bear date April, 1823, and in them he says he is "about eighty-five years of age." His parents had been residing in Goochland County, Virginia, only about four years when he was born. The entire region in the midst of which the Woodses then lived was a back-woods wilderness, and the Indians often passed along the old war-path which ran through Woods's Gap, in sight of the Woods and Wallace settlement near the Blue Ridge. As his parents did not migrate to Botetourt till 1769, or later, Samuel may have remained in Albemarle at least to that date, though this is by no means certain. Hence, we may say, that he was a citizen of Albemarle for a large part of his life. From Hening's Statutes (Volume 7, page 203) we learn that by an act of the Colonial Legislature in the year 1758, it was ordered that Michael Woods, Jr., and Samuel Woods be paid for services they had rendered as members of the Albemarle militia. In that year Michael, Jr., was about fifty years old, and Samuel his son was twenty. That was the period of the French and Indian Wars, and it was only three years subsequent to Braddock's defeat which filled the frontier regions of Virginia with the greatest alarm.

We have no means of knowing the date or place of Samuel's marriage. All we know of his wife is that her Christian name was Margaret, that she joined in various deeds and other instruments of writing which he executed, that she went with her

husband and son when they migrated to Kentucky, and that she was living there, in Harrodsburg, as late as 1823. The late Thomas C. Woods, of Lebanon, Ky., (died 1868) who was the writer's older brother, and who was born about the time Samuel died at Harrodsburg, wrote him in 1866 that he was positive Samuel and Margaret had but one son, and was almost as certain that they never had a daughter. Their son was Samuel, Jr. We have no certain means of determining the date of Samuel Junior's birth. We have reason to believe, however, that it was not far from the year 1763. His father was then twenty-five years old, and the war of Great Britain and her colonies with France and her Indian allies had just come to end, and the equally serious differences between the American Colonies and the Mother Country were soon to emerge and bring on the Revolution. In May, 1766, as the Botetourt County records show, we find Samuel, Sr., purchasing a little farm of 94 acres of land on the South Fork of the Roanoke River, in what is now Montgomery County, Virginia; and as he owned this farm for thirteen years, (he sold it in 1779) the presumption is not unreasonable that he lived on it several of those years. And as we find him buying another farm of 181 acres upon the James the very year he sold the one just mentioned (1779), this supposition is somewhat strengthened. The location on Roanoke River was, in that early day, one in which he would be occasionally exposed to Indian attacks. The savages had invaded that neighborhood only two years prior to 1766, killing one man, and carrying away several others and a woman, into captivity.[59] It was no doubt while residing there that the Revolution began; and as he entered the patriot army in the spring of 1776, and served for three years as a commissioned officer with the Virginia Regulars, resigning in 1779, it is hardly likely he left his wife and son alone on the Roanoke River farm. Where Margaret and her little son Samuel, Jr., stayed, and how they were cared for during all the years her husband was in the army, we have no means of knowing. He enlisted at the very beginning, in the spring of 1776, and was with the regulars three years, and then later on served in the militia, from time to time, to the close of the Revolution. This meant an absence of about five or six years from his home and family. In 1819, Congress having passed an act to provide pensions for the Revolutionary soldiers, and Samuel being then past four-score years, and very feeble, and without any means of support except that which his grandson, J. Harvey Woods, supplied, he made application for a pension. It was over four years before he actually began to enjoy the $20.00 a month which the U. S. Government allowed him as a lieutenant. The writer has in his possession certified copies of all the papers in this case, which he obtained from the Pension Office at Washington. These documents show that Samuel Woods enlisted in the spring of 1776, in the Twelfth Virginia Regiment, Continental Establishment, commanded by Colonel James Wood, and was a Lieutenant of one of its companies; served in that capacity for three years, when he resigned; was at first stationed at Fort Pitt, and later at the mouth of the Kanawha, and still later, marched to the South; after his resignation from the Regular Army he served as an officer in the Virginia Militia from time to time till the close of the Revolution; and participated in the Battle of Guilford Court House, March 15, 1781. At the date of making his affidavit (April, 1823) he was a man of eighty-five, and so feeble that he was unable to come before the Court, or even to write his name. He stated, in said affidavit, that his wife (Margaret) was then alive, and old and feeble like himself. He only lived a little over two years after his pension ($240.00 a year) was granted him, as his death occurred February 3, 1826. (See Note No. 60, for fuller details which are of more special interest to the descendants of Samuel Woods than to the general reader.)

Samuel Woods was one of that vast company of Virginians whose attention was turned to the Kentucky wilderness as soon as the Revolution was brought to a close. The surrender of Cornwallis in the fall of 1781 was the beginning of the end of the war, though the Treaty of Peace, at Paris, was not

signed till nearly two years thereafter. Still, it was generally understood at least a year before the formal withdrawal of Great Britain from America that there was to be no more fighting of consequence, and the tens of thousands of Revolutionary veterans began to lay their plans for the conquest of Kentucky, whose permanent occupation by white men had not yet been accepted by the Indians. Shaler, in his admirable little volume on Kentucky in the American Commonwealth series, says:[61] "At the close of the Revolutionary War, Virginia found herself with a large population that had been long separated from the ordinary pursuits of life. Their places had closed behind them; life in the Old Dominion was stagnant. The only chance open to her was in the broad fields of her great western domain. The conditions of a community at the close of a long and successful war are peculiarly favorable for the making of new colonies; and it is natural that at this time Virginia, no longer herself a colony but a State, where the best lands were much worn by a shiftless agriculture, should have been strongly affected by the colonizing spirit. These circumstances led to a very large exodus of her population to the westward. The recently founded settlements in Kentucky, begun ten years or so before, had gone far enough to prove that land in abundance and of excellent quality could be had for the trouble of possessing it. Every ambitious spirit, every man who had within him the sense of power necessary for the arduous work of facing the dangers of a wilderness where he would have to battle for everything, with nature and the savage, sought these new fields. It is to these conditions that the new settlements beyond the Alleghanies owed the most of the population that came to them in the year immediately following the Revolution. * * * By far the most important element of the Kentucky colonists came from the soldiers who were disbanded at the close of the war with Great Britain. The number of Revolutionary soldiers who emigrated to Kentucky may be judged from the fact that in 1840, nearly sixty years after the termination of that struggle, the pension returns showed that there were about nine hundred of these veterans still living in the State, their ages, according to the records, varying from seventy to one hundred and nine years. This, of course, was but a small part of the host who had found a dwelling place within the State. Probably at least ten times this number had gone to their graves. Such men were, by their native strength and their deeds, the natural leaders in the new settlements, both in peace and war. Thus the Kentucky spirit was the offspring of the Revolution. The combative spirit left by the Revolutionary War was elsewhere overwhelmed by the tide of commercial life; here it lived on, fed by tradition and by a nearly continuous combat down to the time of the Rebellion."

Samuel Woods was among the earliest of the sturdy Virginians who abandoned their homes in the Old Dominion and journeyed far across the western mountains to the Blue Grass Region of Kentucky. The precise date of his migration can not be fixed with entire certainty; but from all that we do know, it must have been either the fall of 1782, or early in the year 1783. Kentucky was not, in one sense, a particularly inviting place to settle in at this period. The year 1782 had been marked by the most extraordinary activity on the part of the Indians. The Battle of the Blue Licks, so disastrous to the Kentuckians, was fought that year, not to mention lesser encounters, and the careful estimate of a competent person was that during the seven years ending with 1783, no less than fifteen hundred whites had been massacred by the savages, and a vast deal of property destroyed and stolen.[62] But this fact did not deter the settlers from Virginia, Carolina, Maryland, and Pennsylvania; they came pouring into the country by thousands. The population of Kentucky in 1775 consisted of about one hundred and fifty men. By the fall of 1783, as Monette estimates, it had grown to be as much as 12,000. In 1784, the stream increased so rapidly that ere the year was gone there were 30,000 people in Kentucky. The hunger for land was so all-absorbing as to render

the settlers reckless in the face of dangers and hardships which would have utterly appalled men not made of the sternest stuff and already inured by long experience to the trying conditions of actual warfare.[63]

The records of the Land Office at Frankfort, Kentucky, contain a number of items which throw light on the date of the arrival of Samuel Woods. First, in Book 1, page 357, (Treasury Warrant 12,026) we find that under date of February 8, 1783, Samuel Woods, as assignee of David Woods (his brother), entered 1168 acres lying on the south side of Salt River, next to the land of James McConn. As no one would have thought of migrating with a family to that wilderness region in winter, we are almost bound to conclude that he must have come to Kentucky not later than the fall of 1782. Second, the book of entries in the library of Col. R. T. Durrett, of Louisville, copied from the records at Frankfort (page 254 of his private book) shows that on the 15th of January, 1783, Samuel Woods entered 800 acres lying on Benson Creek, "at the county line above the Trace, going to the Falls, beginning at the first large branch above the Trace." This "Trace" was the Buffalo path which led from Frankfort across the Kentucky River just below where that city now stands, and on north to Drennon's Lick, and then eastwardly towards where Covington now stands. This was under Treasury Warrant 7873. As was remarked on the first entry, above cited, he must have reached Kentucky the previous fall in order to make this entry in midwinter. Third, we find in Book 14, page 26, of the Land Office, where Samuel Woods entered 3765 acres of land on the head branches of Benson, Hammond and Indian Creeks (about on the present line between the counties of Franklin and Anderson). This tract was surveyed March 27, 1784; and it is extremely unlikely that he could have made the long journey from Virginia early enough in 1784 to be entering land at that date. This tract was originally entered December 2, 1782; the survey was made in March, 1784. This identical tract Samuel Woods conveyed to his son by deed of gift in November, 1791. Fourth, the records show (Book 2, page 91) that on April 16, 1784, he made two entries, as assignee of one Jacob Froman; one of 700 acres, and one of 575 acres, on the South Fork of Big Benson; and these tracts cornered on another tract of 3000 acres which he had previously entered there. From these official records it seems clear that Samuel Woods was living in Kentucky probably as early as the fall of 1782, and certainly not later than the fall of 1783. This places him among the earliest settlers and pioneers of Kentucky.

The exact locality in which he made his home is pretty well established as having been on the Shaker Fork of Shawnee Run, within sight of where the Shaker Village of Mercer County now stands, and close to Kentucky River below the mouth of Cedar Run. Here, as official records of Mercer County (hereinafter to be fully quoted) demonstrate, he settled and pre-empted 1400 acres of land, and had his home on it. He probably built a cabin there in the fall of 1782, and raised there a crop of corn in 1783. He may even have reached that spot early enough in the spring of 1782 to raise a crop that same season. In the records to be quoted farther on he refers to this tract as "1400 acres, my settlement and pre-emption on Shawany Run." Such language as this could not be properly used except with reference to land which he himself had acquired by actual settlement thereon. This is partly confirmed by an entry of one Gabriel Madison, made September 30, 1790, in which he describes his tract as including "all the vacant land lying between the line of Samuel Woods, John Jouett, Francis Meriwether, and Robert Poage." This indicates that Woods's tract was well known prior to 1790, and that it was probably occupied by him then as his home place. It is known that he gave this 1400 tract to his son Samuel, Jr., in 1791, and that James Harvey Woods, the son of Samuel, Jr., was born there in 1792. This 1400 acre tract included at least a portion of what has now long been known as Shakertown, and the land alone, not counting any improvements, would

bring perhaps one hundred thousand dollars. When he gave it to his son (in 1791) it was probably not worth four thousand dollars.

There were but two possible routes from Central Virginia to Central Kentucky in 1783. One was down the Kanawha to the Ohio, by pack-horses to a point below the most dangerous rapids and falls; and the rest of the way by canoes and batteaux; and then down the Ohio by the latter means alone. The other was one of the trails through Southwestern Virginia, down the Holston or the Clinch River to Powell's Valley, and thence through Cumberland Gap by Boone's Trace into the magnificent wilderness beyond. It is next to certain that Samuel Woods and his companions went by this last-named route; for it was impossible to transport provisions and household goods to a point on the Kanawha, from which it would be safe to embark in boats, without a journey of perhaps ten days with pack-horses; and it was impracticable to construct boats of sufficient size to accommodate the requisite number of horses. Emigrants from the Valley of Virginia could not make use of the water-route to Kentucky as did those from Pittsburg and other points on the upper Ohio—there was too much travelling with horses necessary to be done. Then there was another serious objection to the water-route, which was enough to deter prudent men who could possibly go down the trail to the southwest: the danger from Indian attacks along the Ohio was far greater than by the other way. No more defenceless mode of travel could be imagined than that which families in ordinary boats pursued. The savages had only to secrete themselves in the brush along the river's bank and await the coming of the boats, and then open fire when the most opportune moment arrived. The occupants of the boats could neither anticipate an attack, nor, in many cases, get a glimpse of the foe after the firing began. Confined to the river's course, the settlers in their canoes had no choice of position, whilst the savages could deliver their deadly fire, and then easily get away. It was in the early spring of 1782, that a party of one hundred and seven men under the command of Captain Laughery were descending the Ohio in boats on their way to settle in Kentucky, and just below the mouth of the Big Miami River (not far from Rising Sun, Indiana) they were attacked by Indians, and the whole party were killed or captured.[64] Thousands of the pioneers from Pennsylvania and Maryland did come that way, because it was, for them, practically the only route. But people from Botetourt County, Virginia, and other points in the Great Valley, could take the overland trail down to Cumberland Gap with far less trouble and risk, and this was, beyond all reasonable doubt, the choice of the Woodses. An interesting account of one of the most notable companies of emigrants from the Valley of Virginia to Kentucky in 1783 is given by Waddell.[65] This account will well repay a careful reading, for it presents a vivid picture of the perils and hardships our forefathers had to face in coming to Kentucky in that early day. This company, which consisted of a few dozen people when they left Staunton, Va., in September, 1783, (or 1784), was gradually augmented by additions in the upper (Southern) end of the Valley, in Southwestern Virginia, and at Beans Station near Clinch River in the edge of Tennessee, and numbered five hundred souls before reaching Cumberland Gap. General Knox, of Revolutionary fame, took command of this considerable caravan, which was composed of about one hundred and twenty-five men and three times that number of women and children. Sickness, Indian attacks, and the natural hardships of a journey through a wilderness were encountered; a number of valuable lives were sacrificed; but by the first of November, Crab Orchard, Ky., was reached. One lady in that company was a Mrs. Trimble, and in her arms she carried her baby boy, Allen, then but four years old. That boy in after years served the State of Ohio as its governor. Before the company reached Cumberland Gap eight men on horseback were sent forward as an advanced guard to look out for Indian signs; but when the procession arrived at a point near the Gap, they found the mutilated bodies of those eight men. Indians had

CUMBERLAND GAP.

TENNESSEE SIDE. LOOKING NORTH.

The Gap Height is 1,656 Feet Above Sea Level; Crest Heights, 2,500 and 2,300 Feet, Respectively.

Through this famous mountain pass came thousands of the pioneers to Kentucky.

waylaid and killed them, and then scalped them. The savages hung on their flanks for days. Passing through Cumberland Gap—at which point the most favorable opportunity imaginable would be afforded the Indians for firing into the party with perfect impunity from the overhanging cliffs—they were in constant terror; but the whites took every precaution, and for some reason the savages allowed them to pass through without making the expected attack. The three different beautiful pictures of this Gap to be found in this volume will give the reader a very correct idea of the character of the place. Along the very road shown in these pictures those pioneers travelled. The two views of Wasioto Gap (also given herein) which is near the present town of Pineville, Ky., and only fifteen miles from Cumberland Gap, present the same sort of conditions so favorable to murderous attacks from ambush. Those same rocky and precipitous mountain walls which afforded a safe retreat to the savage Indians a century and a quarter ago, were the hiding places of the equally cruel and murderous "bushwhackers" of the Civil War period. The present writer, who was camped at this spot while in the Confederate cavalry service in 1861, vividly recalls, after more than forty years interval, how deeply impressed he was, from time to time, as he would glance up at those steep, bold prominences in that mountain pass, how easy a thing it would be for a foe to take position just above our camp and deliver a deadly fire with Sharp's rifles to which we would be entirely powerless to respond. The very track our forefathers walked along in the years 1775 to 1800 by the banks of the Cumberland under the shadow of those same grand mountains is there today. One may plant his foot upon many a given spot in that road now, and say, with almost certain truth—"Within a few inches at most of where my foot now rests my ancestors walked with cautious tread, rifle in hand, watching with utmost vigilance for Indian signs." Samuel Woods and family and his companions in 1782, or 1783, passed this way as they slowly toiled along the road to Central Kentucky. For his descendants, as for the ten thousands of the descendants of other pioneers, that old "Wilderness Road" on "Boone's Trace" must, for all time, possess peculiar interest; and because the author of this volume believed this to be true, he has been at no small pains to secure several photographs of both the noted gaps referred to, and to have them reproduced in fine engravings expressly for this work. Those scenes constitute no inconsiderable part of the history of the settlement of Kentucky, for along through the two mountain passes which they illustrate not less than fifty thousand settlers came from Virginia and the Carolinas from 1775 to 1800.

As to the exact composition of the little company of which Samuel Woods was probably the leader, or at least a principal member, we can not state with certainty. But it is practically certain it contained the following persons, to-wit: Samuel Woods, his wife Margaret, his son Samuel, Jr., and his aged, widowed mother Ann Woods; his brother David Woods, David's (second) wife Mary (nee McAfee), David's son John by his first wife, and probably two young children by his second wife. That these few persons would not think of undertaking the hazardous journey without other company goes without saying. From the year 1779 onward the tide of emigration from Virginia to Kentucky steadily increased. It was numbered by thousands in 1782, and was nearly doubled in 1783. No doubt parties were made up every spring and fall, notice of which was spread abroad over all Virginia. The general store at Drapers Meadows (now Blacksburg) near New River was a famous point of departure, and supply depot. Here many a small company assembled to complete arrangements and help make up large parties bound for the lovely wilderness beyond the mountains. The Woodses had a goodly number of companions, we may rest assured. There was probably not a single wagon in the whole company, because for nearly the whole way from New River westward the road was simply a bridle-trail which, for the most part, was just wide enough for a single pack-horse to pass with ease. The incidents of the journey of the Woodses

to Kentucky we can not undertake to recite, for nothing is known beyond the bare fact that they migrated in 1782, or 1783. Just where it was they first halted in what is now Mercer County and began the erection of their rude cabins, we can not say. We only know that Samuel Woods made a settlement of 400 acres in Mercer County, in sight of where Shakertown now stands; and that he pre-empted 1000 acres additional next to that tract.[71] This tract, as we infer from an original written document now in the author's hands, and presently to be quoted in full, was his home-place up to 1791, though he had numerous other tracts of land, as has already been shown from the records of the Land Office in Frankfort. The fair inference is that he lived on his "settlement" till after his son's death in 1802.

The records of Mercer County show that Samuel Woods, on the 30th day of September, 1786, was a witness to the will of his brother David, made that day, which will was probated at Harrodsburg December 5, 1786. He was also made the guardian of David's children. That the Woodses were living in Mercer County, Kentucky, in September, 1786, is thus settled beyond all question. It is almost equally certain they arrived there three or four years prior to that date. In the fall of 1791, as we learn from the records of Mercer County, Samuel did what extremely few fathers do in our day: he gave the bulk of his property, or at least a very large part of it, to his only child Samuel, Jr., who by this time was evidently a married man; and trusted his son to care for his parents out of the considerable estate thus turned over to him. Samuel, Sr., makes a deed of gift to Samuel, Jr., of the following items of real and personal property, to-wit: 1400 acres of land on Shawany Run, Mercer County, described as his "pre-emption and settlement"; 3764 acres of land on the waters of Benson Creek about where the counties of Franklin and Anderson adjoin, some miles north of Lawrenceburg; 3000 acres of land located in the three forks of Kentucky River, which is described as being part of 10,000 acres he owned there, which was near where the town of Beattyville now stands; one negro woman named Jane; five heifers; fifteen cattle; six sheep; thirty hogs; two sets of plow irons; three feather beds; and a lot of furniture. At the same date the two Samuels, father and son, entered into a written agreement touching the deed of gift just mentioned, the original of which is now in the writer's possession, and which will here be given in full: "Articles of agreement made and concluded by and between Samuel Woods Senior and his son Samuel Woods Junior, both of the county of Mercer and District of Kentucky, viz: in consequence of a deed of gift made and acknowledged to me in Court of sundry tracts of land, horses, cattle and other things—the said Samuel Woods Junior do bind myself, my heirs, executors &c. in the sum of five hundred pounds lawful money of Virginia to make good the articles hereafter mentioned to my father Samuel Woods Senior and my mother Margaret Woods in consequence of their maintainance during life.

"Article the First: One hundred acres of land, at the north end of the land the said Samuel Woods Senior now lives on, tax free, with the benefit of the spring pasture and meadow ground, and the half of the cleared land that is under fence; Secondly, one negro wench named Jean, one breeding mare, three cows, two sows, three sheep, horses and plows to tend the land and to ride when wanted, them and their increase during life; Thirdly, the house and its furniture is to be under my father Samuel Woods Senior and my mother Margaret Woods their direction, their shoes to be made yearly, and three bushels of salt per year found; Fourthly, the said Samuel Woods Junior agrees to assist my father to discharge a debt due to Mr. Jacob Froman. Given under my hand and seal this 9th day of November one thousand seven hundred and ninety-one—1791."

"Sam'l. Woods,
"Samuel Woods Junr."

"Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us, "Saml. McKee,
"James McDowell."

WASIOTO GAP.

WHERE CUMBERLAND RIVER BREAKS THROUGH PINE MOUNTAIN AT PINEVILLE, KY.

The Gap Height is 1,000 Feet. The Crest Heights, 2,300 and 2,200 Feet, Respectively, Above Sea Level.

LOOKING SOUTH—LOG MOUNTAIN IN THE DISTANCE.

The above recited agreement was written in good clear character. The ink used in the body of it has hardly faded at all, but that employed by the witnesses has grown dim, and the paper is yellow with age. It was evidently not in the handwriting of any one of the four persons whose names are attached thereto. The chirography of Samuel Woods, Senior, if one may judge by a single signature, was poor, whilst that of his son is decidedly fair, and like that of a man accustomed to writing a good deal. The two witnesses used an ink different from that employed in the body of the agreement, and there is some uncertainty as to the signatures of each of them. The name of the first one seems to be McKee and that of the other to be McDowell, but in each case the last part of the surname is obscure, the original formation of the letters having been indefinite, and the ink having faded considerably. It is just possible the last one was McDaniells, but it was more probably McDowell. We know that the McDowells were blood-kin of the Woodses, and Samuel McDowell (afterwards Judge) was then living in Mercer County, having settled there in 1784. James McDowell, an older brother to Samuel, was also living in Kentucky then, having moved from Virginia in 1783, about the time Samuel Woods did. James McDowell and Samuel Woods may have been warm personal friends; for, besides being kinsmen, and having migrated to Central Kentucky about the same time, both had been Revolutionary soldiers from the Valley of Virginia. James might have been in Mercer at the time, visiting his brother Samuel McDowell, and may also have renewed at this time his acquaintance with his cousin and fellow soldier Samuel Woods. What has somewhat the appearance of a final s in his signature here may only have been a meaningless curl, such as many persons give to their signatures. But there is a dot or short stroke above the middle of the surname which looks as if meant to indicate the letter i. This witness was certainly a McDowell or a McDaniell. This apparently unimportant matter is dwelt upon because the signatures to all authentic ancient documents are, really, always important, and suggest ofttimes the most valuable historical facts. The deed of gift on which this agreement was based was signed by the same witnesses whose signatures are attached to the agreement itself with the addition of the name of one William Gordon. The present writer has never seen the original of the deed, but the copy made from it on the Mercer County records gives James McDowell (not McDaniell) as one of them. This would seem to indicate that the clerk at least understood the name to be McDowell. It was recorded January 24, 1792, a few months before Kentucky was admitted into the Union as a State.

Samuel Woods was bereaved of his son Samuel, Jr., in 1802, and nothing is known of him till 1819, when the records of Mercer County (Book 11, pages 337-8) show that he and one Gabriel Alexander were engaged in carrying on a tan-yard in Harrodsburg. It seems the firm owned four one-half acre "inn lots" in Harrodsburg (Nos. 68, 69, 72, and 82), having their homes on one part of the land and their tannery on another part. In 1823 Samuel Woods was pensioned by the U. S. Government for his services in the Revolutionary War, as has already been shown. He and Margaret his wife were then very old and feeble, and they were living with their grandson, James Harvey Woods, in Harrodsburg. There Samuel died Feb. 3, 1826, at the age of eighty-eight. Nothing is known by the writer as to the time of Margaret's death. Of their religious beliefs, professions and hopes the writer has no means of knowing anything beyond the fact that Samuel was reared in the family of a godly Presbyterian, Michael Woods, Jr.

Before proceeding to treat of Samuel's son (Samuel, Jr.) it will be proper to interpose some remarks concerning several other men by the name of Samuel Woods, who, either in Virginia or Kentucky, or in both States, were close to each other, so close, in fact, that now and then it has seemed very difficult to discriminate them from each other. Some of these Samuels we shall mention, giving what information we have been able to gather in regard to them. They may be named as follows:

(a) Samuel Woods of Augusta; (b) Samuel Woods of Albemarle; (c) Samuel Woods of Amherst; (d) Samuel Woods of Botetourt; (e) Samuel Woods of Rockbridge; and (f) Samuel Woods of Paint Lick, Kentucky. These six individuals do not by any means exhaust the supply of Samuel Woodses, but they are the only ones we need to consider in this connection.

(a) First, there was a Samuel Woods in Augusta County, Virginia, who, as the records of his county show, figured in some real estate transactions there at an early day. For instance, he and a William Woods conveyed to Peter Wallace a tract of 120 acres of land, February 24, 1751. This land was in the forks of James River, and adjoined that of Richard Woods and Joseph Lapsley, and is described as "a part of William Woods's land." Then March 5, 1753, Samuel and William convey a tract of 263 acres to Benjamin Borden, Gent. This land was on Woods's Creek, a tributary of the James, and adjoined Peter Wallace and Joseph Lapsley. In neither of the before mentioned conveyances is there any mention of either grantor having a wife, whence we infer they were unmarried men at the dates named. Now we are nearly certain that Richard Woods, whose land the first named tract adjoined, was a brother-in-law to both Peter Wallace and Joseph Lapsley, and a son of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and it is very likely that the Samuel and William Woods under consideration were near kinsmen of Richard Woods. As they were passing the title to real estate in the year 1751, they could not have been born later than the year 1730; and they could not both have been either sons or grandsons of Michael of Blair Park. We have no idea who they were, except that they lived in the midst of a "nest" of Woodses, no less than four of whose occupants were the children of Michael Woods of Blair Park, namely; Richard Woods, Mrs. Peter Wallace, Mrs. Joseph Lapsley, and Mrs. Magdalen McDowell-Borden-Bowyer. Could they have been sons of one of the three brothers of Michael of Blair Park who migrated with him to America in 1724, namely: James, William or Andrew?

(b) There was a Samuel Woods in Albemarle County, Virginia,[66] who was one of the original purchasers of lots in Charlottesville about 1763. He died in 1784. His daughter Barbara married George Martin; Margaret married Richard Netherland; Mary married Benjamin Harris; Jane married Joseph Montgomery; and Elizabeth married William B. Harris. His only son was John B. Woods, of whom the writer knows nothing. Dr. Edgar Woods thinks this Samuel Woods was a brother of a James and a Richard Woods who lived in Albemarle, and surmises that these men were close kin to Michael Woods of Blair Park.

(c) There was a Samuel Woods of Amherst County, Virginia, the only thing about whom we know is that the records at Staunton, Virginia, show that on the 19th of May, 1777, one Henry Watterson, of Botetourt County, Virginia, deeded to him 100 acres of land, lying in Augusta County, for twenty pounds. There was a family of Woodses there, but to what branch this particular individual belonged we have no knowledge. It may be that the records of Amherst County (erected out of Albemarle County in 1761) would reward the search of any who cares to investigate the matter. There was a James Woods living there in 1761, a farmer, who that year deeded 350 acres of land to one Samuel Woods, a storekeeper. Whether this Samuel was the one who is referred to in the preceding paragraph (b) as a citizen of Albemarle can hardly be made out. The record of this conveyance is in Albemarle, but as Amherst was carved out of Albemarle that year (1761) the citizenship of the parties may have been in either of those counties, so far as we can tell from the data now at hand.

(d) There was another Samuel Woods, who lived in Botetourt County, Virginia, whose wife was named Jean. All we know of him is that the records of that county show that he and his wife conveyed 340 acres of land lying on Purgatory Creek, a branch of James River, to one Thomas Crow, No-

vember 18, 1780. Were it not that we know that the wife of the Samuel Woods who migrated to Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1782, and died at his grandson's home in Harrodsburg in 1826, was named Margaret, we might have supposed that this man was he.

(e) A fifth Samuel Woods is known to have lived in Virginia, Rockbridge County. This one was a son of Richard Woods whose wife was named Jenny (Janet or Jane). Richard's will was made June 2, 1777, and he died in 1779. One of his two sons—the Samuel Woods now under consideration—was made his executor. To Samuel and the other son (Benjamin) Richard devised his home place in Rockbridge County. This place was near Lexington, and right in the neighborhood where five of the children of Michael Woods of Blair Park lived, namely; Mrs. Col. John Bowyer, Mrs. Joseph Lapsley, Mrs. Peter Wallace, Mrs. Andrew Wallace, and the testator himself, Richard Woods. In 1783 Samuel and Benjamin sold the home place which they had inherited from their father to Col. John Bowyer, their uncle-in-law; and the late Major Varner of Lexington, Va., stated, in a letter written to the author of this volume in August, 1893, that both Samuel and Benjamin probably migrated to Kentucky along with the vast company of Virginians of the Great Valley who about that period sought homes in that charming wilderness. He also believed that Richard Woods had other children besides the two sons just referred to. Of this Samuel Woods we can not affirm anything more with certainty, unless, indeed, he is to be identified as the man of that name next to be considered, which seems not at all unlikely. If Richard Woods, who died in 1779, was, as we believe, about sixty-five when he died, we could safely assume that his son Samuel was not less than thirty, and not more than fifty years old when, in 1783, he is supposed to have migrated to Kentucky. There were some entries of land made in Central Kentucky about 1783, and later on, by a Samuel Woods who could not possibly have been the one who lived in Mercer County, Kentucky, and died in Harrodsburg in 1826. The Land Office in Frankfort contains full accounts of those entries.[70]

(f) Finally there was a Samuel Woods who resided on Paint Lick Creek in what is now Madison County, Kentucky, who may possibly have been the same man as the Samuel Woods just considered. This man figured in several real estate transactions; one in May, 1783, as set forth in Note 70, which see; and others in July, 1796, as shown by the Madison County records. Garrard County was that same year carved out of portions of Lincoln, Madison and Mercer Counties. The stream called Paint Lick Creek is almost wholly within the county of Madison, but the village and the Presbyterian church of Paint Lick are located immediately on the Garrard and Madison line. This Samuel Woods was an elder in that church for at least fifteen years, or longer. He on several occasions represented the Paint Lick and Silver Creek Presbyterian churches, the first named of which was organized in 1784. March 30, 1785, a Conference of Presbyterian ministers and elders was held at the Cane Run Presbyterian Church, in Mercer County, a few miles east of Harrodsburg; and at this gathering Samuel Woods represented Paint Lick Church.[67] As a result of this Conference the Presbytery of Transylvania was organized in the fall of 1786. In October, 1789, when the Presbytery met at Cane Run Church, this same Samuel Woods was present as the elder from Paint Lick and Silver Creek. In October, 1794, he represented Paint Lick at the Presbytery which convened in his own church; and then in 1797, when it met at Stanford. In about the year 1800 he moved with his family to Williamson County, Tennessee. Mr. Le Grand M. Jones, of Trenton, Tennessee, published a little volume concerning the descendants of this Samuel Woods, Mrs. Jones, his wife, having been descended from him; and upon this book the author has drawn for a list of Samuel Woods's children, and for several other items of information.[68]

The author does not pretend to affirm positively that this Samuel Woods was identical with the one just considered, who was a son of Richard Woods,

of Rockbridge County, Virginia, and a grandson of Michael Woods of Blair Park. He does not hesitate, however, to say that he considers it very probable that the two Samuels are one and the same. The only thing opposed to this supposition, so far as the present writer is aware, is the assertion of Judge Gideon B. Black of Trenton, Tennessee, a grandson of the person now under consideration (quoted by Mr. Jones), to the effect that Samuel Woods migrated to Kentucky from North Carolina, he having come to that colony from Ireland. The writer is unable to gather from Mr. Jones's book whether this statement of Judge Black was merely his opinion, based upon uncertain tradition, or a piece of definite information, founded upon written family records or other unquestionable documentary evidence. If Mr. Jones had asserted that the latter was the case, the matter might well be considered as settled. But the writer has learned only too thoroughly, during the years in which he has been prosecuting his researches for this work, that thousands of the most intelligent and respectable people in this country are utterly unable to give much positive, reliable information concerning their grandparents. They do not know, with certainty, just where or when they were born, from whence they came, or in what part of America they first settled, etc., etc. And this, because thousands of our best families have either not taken care to preserve, in writing, the items of their history; or else what was written down has been unfortunately lost or destroyed. It can therefore do no harm to here set down the several considerations which incline the author of this work to regard it as very probable that Samuel Woods, of Paint Lick and Tennessee, was the same as Samuel, of Rockbridge County, Virginia. First, there is the statement of the late Major Varner, above cited, that Samuel Woods, the son of Richard, sold out his farm about the year 1783 and probably migrated to Kentucky as thousands of other Virginians did at that period. Of course, Samuel, son of Richard Woods, might have moved to North Carolina in 1783, and then in a few months, or a year, have gone to Kentucky. That would have been entirely feasible. Secondly, this Samuel Woods of Paint Lick could not possibly have acted more exactly as we should have expected a son of Richard to act, in deciding on a location for a home, than he actually did. With all of Central Kentucky to choose from he selected a spot which was about as complete a nest of the grandchildren of old Michael of Blair Park as he could have found in the world. The sons of not less than three of old Michael's sons were within five to twenty-five miles of where he settled, namely: two of those of Michael, Jr., across Dick's River; several of William's about where Richmond now stands; and some of John's in what is now Garrard County; and up near Crab Orchard, the Michael Woods whose wife, Hannah Wallace, about 1780, so bravely attacked an Indian who sought entrance to her home. It is probable that when Samuel of Paint Lick built his cabin in what is now Madison County there were within one to five hours' ride of him not less than a score of Woodses, the grandchildren and great-grandchildren of Michael of Blair Park. When men migrate to a distant frontier region full of danger it is natural to locate close to kinsmen, if there be any there; and when this Samuel halted at Paint Lick in 1783-4 he was surrounded by a goodly company of Woodses who (like himself, as we surmise) were grandsons of old Michael of Blair Park. Thirdly, we have a right to attach no little significance to the Christian names which a parent gives to his children; and a careful scrutiny of the names of the children of Samuel of Paint Lick reveals some facts not very easily explained except upon the theory that he was a grandson of Michael of Blair Park, and a son of Richard of Rockbridge. The mother of Samuel of Rockbridge was named Jane, and it were natural for him to name one of his girls for her; we find Samuel of Paint Lick named one of his daughters Jane, who married John Herron. It would also have been a very likely thing for Samuel of Rockbridge to name one of his girls Martha, in honor of his aunt who was Peter Wallace's wife, and who lived close to

his old home in Rockbridge; Samuel of Paint Lick named one of his girls Martha, who married John Dyzart. Then Samuel of Rockbridge had a distinguished uncle John—Colonel John Woods, of Albemarle—and it would have been a very proper thing to call one of the sons for that prominent kinsman. Samuel of Paint Lick named one of his sons John, who was born in 1774, and died in 1846. Samuel of Rockbridge knew that his father's Scotch mother was named Mary, and belonged to the famous Clan Campbell of which the Duke of Argyle was the chief, and how natural for him to name for her one of his daughters. Samuel of Paint Lick named one of his daughters Mary (often called Polly as a pet-name). Finally, Samuel of Rockbridge had a near kinsman, the son of his uncle Michael Woods, Jr. (of Botetourt County), who lived near by and whom he must have known intimately and for whom he may have cherished a special affection. This first cousin was named David Woods, and it would not have been at all remarkable if Samuel had honored this kinsman by calling one of his boys David in his honor. Samuel of Paint Lick not only named one of his boys David Woods, but when he came to Kentucky settled in what was then the same county, and only about twenty miles distant from this David Woods who came to Kentucky about the same time Samuel of Paint Lick did, and who, for aught we know, may have actually accompanied him to Kentucky when he migrated. Let it also be borne in mind that Samuel Woods, the Revolutionary veteran who settled near Kentucky River in Mercer County, and died in Harrodsburg in 1826, was, as already stated, living within twenty-five miles of the place this Samuel of Paint Lick located, and came to Kentucky most probably the very year the Mercer County Samuel and his brother David came.

Of course, we grant that we have not in these facts a complete demonstration of the truth of the supposition that Samuel of Paint Lick was the son of Richard Woods of Rockbridge; but it must be admitted that such an array of coincidences is not to be lightly ignored; and if Judge Black, in asserting that his grandfather Samuel of Paint Lick came to Kentucky from North Carolina, and had come to Carolina from Ireland, had no reliable written evidence of the accuracy of these assertions, but relied merely upon the somewhat uncertain traditions we so often hear repeated in families, then it would seem but reasonable to accept as most probable the theory which the writer has propounded. Here it may be observed that the information Mr. Jones got from Judge Black and others as to Samuel Woods and his children bears the marks of verbal traditions and not of being derived from written documents.[69]

The writer would add concerning Samuel of Paint Lick that for a time he was no little confused by the records of State and county offices concerning this worthy gentleman. He found that his name was not only Samuel, but that he had a son Samuel, that his wife was named Margaret, and that he had come to Kentucky about 1782-3. All these three things were true of the writer's great-grandfather, who lived in Mercer, and died there in 1826. When it was discovered, however, that Paint Lick Samuel had migrated to Tennessee about the year 1800, it was made clear that he was a different man from the Samuel of Mercer County. Then a closer examination of court records and other reliable sources of information made this conclusion to appear absolutely correct.

The lady who was the wife of Samuel Woods of Paint Lick while he was in Kentucky was, beyond question, his first wife. Her Christian name, as the Madison County records prove, was Margaret; and Judge Black positively states (quoted by Mr. Jones in his Reminiscences) that her surname was Holmes. Samuel had born to him ten children, all by his first wife, Margaret Holmes, as follows: (a) Oliver, who was born about 1764, and was killed by Indians; (b) Martha, who married John Dyzart, by whom she had two sons and two daughters, one of the sons being named John; (c) Jane, who married John Herron, and by whom she had one daughter and three sons, the daughter marrying John Dyzart her cousin, and the sons being

named John, William, and Frank, respectively; (d) Margaret, who married Thomas Black August 20, 1793, and by whom she had twelve children, the youngest of whom was Judge Gideon B. Black, born February 4, 1816; (e) John, who was born April 21, 1774, and died August 26, 1846; (f) Samuel, who married Ann Prevince; (g) David, who married a Miss McLaryo, by whom he had several sons who moved to Arkansas; (j) Daniel T., who married a Miss Reese, by whom he had several children, among whom was a son named Leroy, who was a distinguished Cumberland Presbyterian minister; (k) Oliver, named for the first son of this name who was killed by Indians, as stated above; and (l) Polly, (Mary) who married John Holmes, by whom she had several children, among whom were sons named John, William and Samuel, respectively.

As stated on a previous page, Samuel Woods, the Revolutionary soldier, who migrated from Botetourt County, Virginia, to Mercer County, Kentucky, about the year 1782-3, and died at Harrodsburg in 1826, had an only son, named for himself, whom we shall designate as Samuel Woods, Jr. The date of his birth could not have been far from 1761-3, and the place, beyond all reasonable doubt, was Albemarle County, Virginia, where his parents were living up to 1766, if not later. Born about the close of the French and Indian Wars, his boyhood covered a troublous period of American history; for no sooner had the contest of England and her colonies with the French and their Indian allies been settled, than there arose serious disagreements between the Mother Country and the American colonies which in the course of time culminated in the Revolution. From 1766 to 1776 his father had a farm on Roanoke River, and probably lived there. Thus the first twenty years of his life were lived in the midst of constant civil commotion. The attempt of England to compel the colonies to aid her in paying the debts she had created, the unjust Navigation Laws, and the famous Stamp Act of 1765 were the main causes of discontent and resentment on the part of the Colonies. Samuel Woods, Jr., was a little boy only about two to four years old when Patrick Henry delivered the eloquent and patriotic speech in the Virginia House of Delegates (May, 1765) which foretokened the coming storm. He was about ten or twelve years old when the citizens of Boston threw the tea from the English ships into the harbor, and about twelve or fourteen when Washington went to Cambridge to take formal command of "The American Army." In the spring of 1776 his father entered the Twelfth Virginia Regiment of the Continental Line, and was in the regular service for three years, and then served in the militia from time to time till the close of the Revolution; and as his mother had no other children besides himself, and he was only thirteen to fifteen when the war began, he doubtless remained at home and rendered little if any military service. He was about twenty to twenty-two years old when his parents and the other Woodses migrated to Kentucky. His home in Mercer County seems to have been near Shawnee Run, and within sight of the spot where Shakertown (Pleasant Hill) was afterwards built. In fact, that village occupied part of the 1,400 acre tract which his father conveyed to him by deed of gift in 1791, and the old Woods homestead was close to the turnpike which extends from Shakertown to Lexington, its exact location being indicated on the map of Mercer County to be found in this volume.

The marriage of Samuel Woods, Jr., (between 1786 and 1791) occasioned considerable discussion in the family, and by some of his friends was regarded as unwise. The grounds of their opposition have never been fully understood by the present writer, but there is no reason to suppose their objections were at all serious. The facts seem to have been as follows: Samuel Woods, Jr., had an uncle David Woods, who, about 1779, had married Mary McAfee, the daughter of James McAfee, Jr., afterwards known as James McAfee, the Pioneer of Kentucky. When David Woods married Mary he was a widower, and owned and lived at his father's old homestead on James River—the

Shepherd's Island Farm, whilst Mary's parents were living down on Catawba Creek in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia. The Woodses and McAfees were probably good friends, and it is just possible that Samuel Woods, Jr., had known and admired Mary before she became the wife of his uncle David in 1779, for a youth of sixteen does sometimes entertain tender sentiments towards a bright-eyed young lady, even though he may be a few years her junior, which was probably true in this instance. The Woodses migrated to Kentucky, as has been shown, about 1782 or 1783, the McAfees having preceded them by three or four years. Samuel, Jr., lived with his parents on Shawnee Run, and his uncle David and family were only a few miles away on Cane Run. That the two families should be on excellent terms, and see much of each other, were but natural. It came to pass, in the fall of 1786, that David Woods died, leaving Mary a widow with one stepson, and three little folks of her own which she had borne to David. Samuel Woods, Senior (father of Samuel, Jr.) became the guardian of David's children. What passed in the years following we know not, except that somewhere after 1786, and prior to 1791, Samuel Woods, Jr., married his uncle David's widow. She was his aunt-in-law, and her three children were, by blood and marriage, his first cousins. Most probably she was a few years older than Samuel. It is known that this marriage created a stir in the family at the time, as might reasonably be expected; but there was, of course, nothing inherently improper in such a match. She was not of his blood-kin, and there was no more impropriety in a man's marrying an aunt-in-law than there is now in marrying a sister-in-law. The fact that she was a widow with several children, and possibly a few years his senior, was a matter of mere taste. No doubt Samuel considered Mary such a valuable prize that he was perfectly willing to have her in spite of sentiment and the *impedimenta* she brought along with her. Certain it is, that they were married, and so far as we can learn, it was a happy match which nobody seems to have regretted. Four children—two sons, and two daughters—were the fruit of this marriage. The children will be referred to presently.

It may appear strange that the present writer, (who is a grandson of this Samuel Woods, Jr.,) should have to confess that he knows exceedingly little about him; but it will not seem so very strange, after all, when it is noted that the writer's father died early in 1860, when the writer was only fifteen, and that Samuel Woods, Jr., died in 1802, when his son (James Harvey Woods, the writer's father) was not ten years old. Under such circumstances, unless pretty complete written records had been kept in the family—which seems not to have been done—the writer could not be expected to know a great deal about his ancestors.

The Mercer County records contain a number of items which throw some little light on the career of Samuel Woods, Jr., and Mary his wife, which will here be presented for the benefit of their descendants, quite a number of whom have been among the most liberal and enthusiastic promoters of the efforts which have resulted in the publication of this volume. It has already been shown that Samuel Woods, Jr., received from his father, by deed of gift, in November, 1791, a considerable estate, consisting of a good deal of personal property besides three tracts of land aggregating above 8000 acres in extent. Much of this land was of the finest quality to be found in Kentucky, and the whole would sell to-day for nearly a quarter of a million dollars without a fence or house upon it. One of those tracts included two and a third square miles of the land at Shakertown, and another included about six square miles of the land just north of where Lawrenceburg, Ky., now stands. It is next to certain he and David Woods's widow had been married only a few months when he received this handsome setting up. The widow he married was the mother of several children, and he certainly had need of some property, even though Mary and her children had inherited a comfortable estate from David Woods, deceased. The father of the young man saw that his son had

now a great deal larger family at the beginning of his married life than many a man has ten years after marrying, and Samuel, the elder, had only his wife and himself to support. Hence this unusually liberal provision for the son was timely as it was generous. From various allusions in the records of Mercer County it is clear that Samuel, Jr., was a farmer, and probably occupied part of his time in taking stock, hides and produce in flat-boats down the Kentucky and Ohio and Mississippi rivers to New Orleans, to exchange for Spanish doubloons. There is a reference to his having been at Natchez, Mississippi, and to the fact that some man there owed him money in 1802. In one transaction of July 5, 1801, he is called "Captain Samuel Woods, Jr.," and among his effects after his death in 1802, we find a sword and a regimental uniform, whence we infer he was the captain of a company of militia. His father had been a soldier in the Revolution, and his son James Harvey Woods was in the War of 1812, and we should expect him to be not wholly devoid of military ardor, especially as during the first ten years of his life in Kentucky Indian raids were common, and every man able to bear arms was needed for military service. We find he conveyed away a good deal of his real estate from time to time, but so far as the records indicate he must have been the owner of most of the 8000 acres when he died. April 26, 1802, he sold to one Charles Brown, for 200 pounds (about $666.00) a tract of 100 acres on Shawnee and Cedar Run, being a part of the 1400 acres his father gave him in 1791. He had a great many business and financial transactions with one Jacob Frohman, and this "Jacob" evidently had heavy claims on the estate when Woods died. Frohman was made the administrator of the estate of Woods after he died. Frohman was most probably a Jew, who was a money-lender and land-speculator, and there was also an Abraham Frohman concerned in some of the same transactions. Frohman did not make his final settlement in court, as administrator, till May, 1816. A number of transactions in which Samuel signs deeds as the husband of Mary show that his wife and her first husband's children had inherited a considerable quantity of land from David Woods. April 20, 1802, a singular transaction in land was made, and the Mercer County records mention it. John Sheely, Jr., gets a deed for 230 acres of the land of Samuel Woods, Jr., and yet Samuel never signed the deed. The witnesses, Galey and Munday, swore that Samuel meant to sign it, but did not. The consideration was 200 pounds or about $666.00, which was about three dollars an acre for the land. There are indications that Samuel took an extensive trip "down the river"—as one document states—probably to New Orleans, in the spring of 1802; and there are some reasons for thinking that he either died while on that trip, or contracted then his last illness. Abraham Frohman, in a document dated February 22, 1805, swears that he applied to one Jeremiah Ruth at Natchez, Miss., for some money which was due to Samuel Woods, Jr., deceased. The exact month of his death is not known. Certain it is that at the Court held in Harrodsburg in August, 1802, Jacob Frohman was appointed his administrator, and at the Court held in November, 1802, an inventory of his effects was filed by George Hankins, Benjamin Galey, and Charles Brown, and the aforesaid Jacob Frohman was then referred to as administrator, and a creditor of Woods's estate. The manner in which the land of Samuel Woods, Jr.—especially the magnificent tract on Shawnee Run—was disposed of excited much comment among his descendants in after days, and it was the opinion of his grandson, the late Thomas C. Woods, Attorney-at-Law, of Lebanon, Ky., that there had been somewhere and somehow some bad management, if not something worse; and that the only thing which prevented the recovery of much of said land in an action at law was a single missing link in the evidence. Suit was actually begun in the Mercer Circuit Court fifty years ago, and the records to-day contain the pleadings. Where or how Samuel Woods, Jr., died the writer knows not.

Mary McAfee, who was David Woods's widow when she married Samuel, Jr., was the first child

of James McAfee, Jr., by his wife Agnes Clark. She was most probably born about 1760 on Catawba Creek, in what is now Roanoke Co., Va. The Woodses and McAfees must have been intimate friends. Michael Woods, Jr., Andrew Woods, and Archibald Woods—three sons of Michael of Blair Park—lived near the McAfee settlement. Archibald Woods purchased the old McAfee homestead (Indian Camp Farm) on the Catawba in 1771, and James McAfee, Sr., and his sons and daughters lived close to Indian Camp. From 1771 onward until the McAfees migrated to Kentucky (1779) the home of James McAfee, Sr., was very close to what is now known as the Roanoke Red Sulphur Springs. Andrew Woods lived only about two hours' ride to the northward from James McAfee, and Michael Woods, Jr., lived on James River about three hours' ride to the northeast of Andrew's place. In a sparsely settled country in a frontier region people living that near each other were considered close neighbors. When the McAfees migrated to Kentucky in 1779, Mary did not accompany them. She had probably just recently married David Woods, the well-to-do widower on James River. But it was only a very few years after that the Woodses moved to Kentucky and settled within but a few miles of the McAfee Settlement. David Woods chose the "Cane Run Neighborhood" for his home, and there Mary seems to have resided till after David's death. The exact year in which she married Samuel Woods, Jr., is not certainly known. Her first husband died in the fall of 1786, and we know she was the wife of Samuel Woods, Jr., by 1791, and possibly a little earlier. We know her first child by Samuel Woods was born in 1792. By her first husband she had three children, to wit: William, Elizabeth and Nancy, of whom we shall have more to say when we come to consider David Woods, son of Michael Woods, Jr., who was Mary McAfee's first husband. In all the deeds and wills examined by the writer in which Mary is referred to she is called "Polly," the common pet-name for Mary. Of the time, place and manner of her death nothing is known beyond the fact that in a deed made October 4, 1813, and recorded in Mercer County, conveying to one Richard Holman 190 acres of land on Salt River, which is signed by all the living heirs of both David Woods and Samuel Woods, Jr., (except, possibly, Martha, the daughter of the latter, who married Van Sheley), she is referred to as being already dead, but no intimation is given as to when her death occurred. If born in 1760, and dead by 1813, she only lived fifty-three years. It is just possible she was born as early as 1758, but this is not likely. Her father was only twenty-two years old in 1758. She was probably buried alongside of her parents in their burial-plot a few hundred yards to the south of the present New Providence Cemetery. Her father, James McAfee, became the guardian of her minor children after her death.

The children of Samuel Woods, Jr., by his wife Mary (*nee* McAfee) were certainly four in number, and it is barely possible there was one more, to wit: (a) James Harvey Woods, who was born September 12, 1792, who married Miss Sarah Everett Dedman of Versailles, Kentucky, in 1818, and had by her twelve children, and died in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, February 3, 1860. A fuller account of him will be given in the sketch of Rev. Neander M. Woods, his son, in Part III of this work. (b) Anne, or Anna, who was probably born about the year 1794, and married George Bohon. She had nine children, as follows: James, Abram, Mary, Catherine, Clarke, Nancy, Joseph, Isaac G., and George Ann. (c) Possibly one named Sally, who may have been born about the year 1796. Of her the writer knows nothing beyond the fact that a person of this name is mentioned in a deed of October 4, 1813, which appears to be signed by all of the heirs of Mary (Polly) Woods, deceased, conveying 190 acres of land on Salt River to one Richard Holman. This deed is signed by the two sons of David Woods; the two daughters of David Woods, and their husbands; and four of the children of Samuel Woods, Jr., namely; Anne, Sally, Harvey, and Woodford, all of whom are described as heirs of Mary Woods. It is evident that Anne,

Sally and Woodford were minors in October, 1813, and unmarried. But see further on the writer's conclusion as to Sally, namely; that by Sally is meant Patsy. (d) Woodford, who was probably born about 1798. This son, the writer has been informed, died early in life. (e) Martha Woods, who was born in 1800, at the old Woods home near Shakertown, and married Mr. Van Sheley March 1, 1825, is not mentioned in the deed above referred to. That deed purports to have the signatures of all of Mary Woods's heirs. Martha (usually called Patsy) was about thirteen years old when that deed was executed. The omission of her name raises some doubt as to there having been a child of Samuel and Mary bearing this name. This doubt is considerably strengthened by the fact that in the list of the children of this couple, given by General R. B. McAfee, in his autobiography, mention is made of but four children, the same four whose names are signed to the deed just referred to, and makes no allusion to any child by the name of Martha. This state of facts seems, on its face, to settle it that Samuel and Mary had no daughter named Martha, and that the lady whom Mr. Van Sheley married in 1825, then a woman twenty-five years old, may have been the daughter of some other Woods. But, on the other hand, Mrs. Nathaniel D. Woods (now deceased), who knew a great deal about the Woodses of a century ago, wrote to the author of this volume November 6, 1893, in regard to the children of the couple now under consideration, and she positively declared that Samuel and Mary did have a daughter Patsy (the pet-name for Martha) who married a Sheley who went to Missouri to live. Her affirmation is so positive that the writer can not ignore it. She says this Patsy Sheley was the own sister of James Harvey Woods (the writer's father). Now, how may this apparent contradiction be reconciled? The writer has a solution to offer, which is at least worth considering. Among the four children named in both the deed mentioned and Gen'l McAfee's list is one called Sally; but nobody seems ever to have heard of that couple having a daughter of that name. Nobody knows anything about her beyond the presence of her name in the two lists quoted. Could that name "Sally" have been a clerical error of the clerk in the County Court Office at Harrodsburg in mistaking Patsy for Sally? Mrs. Sheley was known all her younger days as "Patsy," and the writer is convinced she was a sister of his father, and therefore a daughter of Samuel, Jr., and Mary. Might not the clerk, in transcribing that deed in 1813, have mistaken the carelessly written name "Patsy" for Sally? If he did, and if Gen'l McAfee got his list by copying that one in the office of the County Clerk, as is most likely, the solution is easy. The writer believes that Sally is a myth, and that Patsy (or Martha) who married Sheley is the real person intended. Mrs. Nathaniel Woods was too reliable a lady, and too well informed in regard to the writer's family, to assert positively, as she does, that his father had a sister Patsy who married a Sheley and lived in Missouri, if such were not the case, and Mrs. Nathaniel Woods knew nothing of a Sally Woods whatsoever. The date given for the birth of Martha (Patsy) Woods Sheley by Mrs. John Jay Sheley, of New Bloomfield, Missouri, whose husband is a son of the Mr. Van Sheley who married Martha in 1825, is just about the date one would reasonably expect for Samuel's last child. Mrs. John Jay Sheley gives the year 1800 as the date of Martha Woods's birth, but she does not write as if quoting from an exact written record, and does not give day or month. The strong probability is that, as Mrs. John Jay Sheley says, Martha was born about 1800—possibly a year earlier or later. Martha's father was dead before August, 1802.

Mr. Van Sheley who married Patsy (Martha) Woods was of German extraction, and was born in Virginia, November 6, 1797. The following children were born to Mr. and Mrs. Sheley: (a) Woodford Woods Sheley, who was born April 19, 1826. The very name of this son is in part a vindication of the writer's conclusion that Martha was a daughter of Samuel Woods, Jr., and Mary

(*nee* McAfee). The first child she had was named for her own brother—Woodford Woods. (b) The second child of Van Sheley and his wife Martha Woods was named Ann Mary Sheley, who was born August 16, 1827. (c) The third child of Van and Martha was a son, named John Jay Sheley, who was born May 3, 1831, and married Miss C. America Morgan. The following children have been born to Mr. and Mrs. John Jay Sheley, namely; 1, Woodford Woods Sheley; 2, James Van Sheley; 3, Edmund Lee Sheley, and 4, Ann Martha Sheley. Two of their children have died, to wit; Charles, and Emma Virginia. Mr. Van Sheley who married Martha Woods died March 28, 1863. Martha was a member of the Disciples' Church, and died August 28, 1852. The religious faith of her husband is not known to the writer.

IV—DAVID WOODS. The fourth child of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne was a son named David who, as we have good reasons for believing, was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, about the year 1740. Of his early life we have no knowledge. The first mention we have of him is in 1776 when his father, then living in Botetourt County, made his last will. In that document he is not only mentioned but is made the heir to his father's farm and homestead on James River, five miles below the town of Buchanan, and constituted one of the executors of the will. He was evidently not only a favorite with his father, but was living at or very close to his father's home place. He was twice married. Of his first wife we know nothing, except that she left two children; a daughter named Anne, and a son named John. How long David remained a widower we know not. We only know that his second wife was Mary McAfee, daughter of James McAfee, Jr., and that his marriage to her took place not later than the late summer of 1779. His father died in 1777, leaving him the heir to his homestead. August 11, 1779, he conveyed the home place to his brother-in-law William Campbell for 3500 pounds. We have now no means of knowing whether or not he was in the Revolutionary army. In 1782-3 he and his brother Samuel migrated to Central Kentucky. With him went his wife Mary, his son John by his first wife, perhaps two little children Mary had already borne to him, and his aged widowed mother Anne. He had a daughter named Anne, child of his first wife, who did not accompany him. It is not very likely that she ever lived in Kentucky, but David remembered her in his last will. Much of what is common to him and his brother Samuel has already been said in the preceding pages when dealing with that brother's record, and it need not be repeated here. David on going to Kentucky made choice of one of the most desirable spots in what is now Mercer County. He selected land for his homestead in what has for more than a century been known as the Cane Run Neighborhood, a few miles east of the town of Harrodsburg. His career in Kentucky was very brief. His last will was written September 30, 1786, and was entered for probate December 5, 1786, indicating that his will was made in the prospect of an early death, and only a few weeks or months before it occurred. He was only about forty-six years old when he died. The witnesses to his will were Bernard Noel, John Smith, and his brother Samuel Woods. The executors whom he named in his will were Captain Samuel McAfee (his wife's uncle) and Capt. John Gilmore. In the will he mentions the following persons, to wit: 1, Anne, his aged mother; 2, Mary, his "beloved wife"; 3, Ann Jennings, wife of Jonathan Jennings; 4, John, his son by his first marriage; and 5, Nancy; 6, William, and 7, Elizabeth, the three children whom his second wife had borne to him. He was a well-to-do man for that day, we should suppose. Of his character, his religious hopes, and the circumstances attending his death we have no knowledge.

(a) ANNE was probably the first child of David Woods by his first wife. We know but little of her beyond the fact that she became the wife of a Jonathan Jennings, and was remembered by her father when he made his will in 1786. If her father married when he was about twenty-three she may have been born about the year 1764, and

in Albemarle County, Virginia. As has already been stated, she does not seem to have migrated with the Woodses to Kentucky. When her father married his second wife in 1779 he brought into the home a step-mother who was only four or five years older than herself. Her marriage to Mr. Jennings doubtless took place not long before the Woodses moved West. The writer knows nothing further concerning her, or of any children she may have had.

(b) JOHN was probably the second and last child of David Woods by his first wife, and his birth probably occurred in Albemarle County, about the year 1766. He was a great pet of his aunt Magdalen Campbell (the sister of David Woods, his father), and when she died, in 1830, (when John was a man far advanced in life), she devised one-half of her estate to him. Mrs. Campbell was, at the time of her death, a widow with no children, and living in Lexington, Virginia. John Woods was about seventeen when he moved with his father to Kentucky, and the rest of his life, or at least a great part of it was spent at his father's home-place on Cane Run, Mercer County, Kentucky. It would seem that when his mother remarried after his father's death she moved over to the Samuel Woods place near where the present village of Shakertown stands, and John retained his father's home on Cane Run. He married a Miss Nancy Moseby, as the late Mrs. Nathaniel D. Woods supposed. This Miss Moseby had a sister named Magdalen who married a Mr. Bright, and in her old age while a widow was an occasional visitor at the home of the writer's parents in Harrodsburg.

John Woods and his wife Nancy had a considerable family of children, to wit: 1, Sidney, of whom the writer knows nothing; 2, Rhodes, who for a time practised dentistry in Harrodsburg; 3, David, who was a somewhat eccentric character, who visited Europe, and who removed to St. Louis, Missouri; 4, Margaret, who married Mr. James M. Jones, a well-to-do farmer, whose second wife was Elizabeth Hannah Woods, a sister of the present writer. The only child of Margaret Woods and James M. Jones was a son, John Sanford Jones, born about 1844, who died of some disease during the Civil War in a Federal Military Prison at Alton, Illinois; 5, Eliza, who married a Mr. Bradley; 6, Patsy, who married a Mr. Porter, and had a son named James; 7, Burch, who married a Mr. Marshal; 8, Nannie, who married a Mr. Willis Vivian; and 9, a daughter who married a Mr. Garnet, and had a son named George.

(c) NANCY was the third child of David Woods, but the first by his second wife Mary McAfee. She was probably born about the year 1780 at the old Woods homestead (Shepherd Island Farm) on the James in Botetourt County, Virginia. She was but a babe in arms when, in 1782-3, the Woodses made the long and perilous journey through the wilderness to Kentucky. When about twenty years old she married Harry Munday, of Mercer County, Kentucky. His Christian name in several papers is written as if it were Henry, but Harry seems to have been his real name. She and her husband joined in a deed in 1813, which was signed by all of the heirs of Mary, her mother. This deed is on record at Harrodsburg. (See Deed Book 9, pages 17-19.) All of her children seem to have migrated to Indiana, and in that State, at the home of one of her children, she died in 1865, at the age of eighty-five, or thereabout. In 1857 she was a widow and living with her son James Munday near Shakertown, Kentucky, and was a member of the Shawnee Run Baptist Church. Her children were the following: 1, Woodson, who married a Mrs. Samuels, a widow; 2, George, who married Miss Lucy Gordon, and was the father of Mrs. David Walter of Harrodsburg, through whose courtesy much of the information here given in regard to Nancy Woods has been obtained; 3, Harvey, who married Caroline Coghill; 4, James, who married Almeda Thacker, of Anderson County, Kentucky; 5, Katherine, who married John Hays; 6, Elizabeth, who married Solomon Hays; 7, Mary, who married Living Graves; and Patty, who married James Smart.

(d) William was probably the fourth child of David Woods, and the second by Mary McAfee, his second wife. It is likely he was born either shortly before or shortly after the migration of his parents to Kentucky, say, about 1781-3. His family seem always to have called him "Billy," and so he was generally designated by his acquaintances. Very little of his career is known to the writer. He was a child of about three to five years of age when his father died. When his mother married Samuel Woods, Jr., he doubtless went to live with her and him at the old Samuel Woods homestead on Shawnee Run; and probably he and his two sisters (Nancy and Elizabeth) knew a great deal more of their step-father than of their own father, for Samuel, Jr., did not die until 1802. The lady whom William Woods married was named Catherine. Her surname is not known. He may have married her in Woodford County, for his home was certainly there in 1813, at which time he was just about twenty-one years old. Woodford adjoins Mercer County, being separated from it by the Kentucky River. His half brother, James Harvey Woods, went to the same county to get a wife in 1818. The very name Woodford seemed, in this family, to be much admired; for Samuel Woods, Jr., named his second son Woodford, and his daughter Patsy Sheley did the same, and Patsy's son John Jay Sheley followed suit. His name and that of Catherine, his wife, are signed to a deed made May 22, 1821, and recorded at Harrodsburg (Book 12, page 241). His half brother, John Woods, and wife Nancy; his sister, Elizabeth, and husband Ben Galey; and his sister Nancy, and husband Harry Munday, all joined in said deed. The records of Franklin County, Kentucky, show (Book F, page 409) that on the 17th day of June, 1816, he conveyed 50 acres of land to the ubiquitous and enterprising Jacob Frohman (who seems to have kept in close touch with the Woodses) for one hundred pounds. The records of the same county (Franklin) show a conveyance, made November 3, 1818, by a William Woods whose wife was named Rachel, and whose place of residence was Scott County, Kentucky. Whilst we do not believe this man to have been the same as William, the son of David Woods, of Mercer, it is not safe to assume that a man never remarries, or that he never changes his place of residence. The names of the children of Betty Woods, as furnished to the writer by Mrs. Nathaniel D. Woods, deceased, are as follows: Coleman; James Henry; Sarah Ann Rumsey; and Eudora.

(e) Elizabeth Woods was the last child of Mary McAfee Woods by her first husband David. Of her the writer has been able to learn but little. She was most probably born at her father's place on Cane Run about 1785. She married Benjamin Galey. In the deed already repeatedly referred to as recorded in the clerk's office at Harrodsburg, Kentucky, in 1813, she and her husband (Benjamin Galey) appear as two of the grantors. They were then living in Shelby County, Kentucky. The writer knows nothing of any children they may have had, or of their history subsequent to 1813.

V—ELIZABETH was the fifth child of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne. The date of her birth was not far from the year 1742, and the place was no doubt her father's old home in Albemarle County, Virginia. We have surmised that she was the fifth child of her parents. About all we know concerning her is that she became the wife of one Dalertus Shepherd. This couple had a daughter—Magdalen Shepherd—who, in 1791, married John Gilmore, and became the progenitor of a prominent family in Rockbridge County, Virginia, of that name. The Gilmores, Varners, etc., now there are of her line. The writer much regrets that he knows so little of this member of the Woods clan and of her descendants, some of whom it was once his pleasure to meet. The old homestead of Michael Woods, Jr., on James River may have come into the possession of Mr. Shepherd as it took the name of "Shepherd's Island Farm." It is known that he lived at that point. The farm, which descended by devise to David Woods, was by him sold to William Campbell, and Shepherd may have purchased it from Campbell, who was his brother-in-law. The

writer presumes there are representatives of the Shepherd family yet living who bear the name of Elizabeth's husband, but does not know such to be the case. Any one concerned to obtain further information on this subject could doubtless readily secure it by consulting the court records of Rockbridge County, and some of the older citizens of that part of Virginia.

VI—WILLIAM WOODS, The Seventh, whom we conclude to have been the sixth child of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne, was born about the year 1748, at the old home of his parents in Albemarle County, Virginia. Though reared in a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian family, he became, in early manhood, an enthusiastic Baptist, with which denomination he was prominently identified for much the larger part of his life. He was a man of very considerable property in lands and slaves. He married a Miss Joanna Shepherd, who may have been a sister of his sister Elizabeth's husband, Dalertus Shepherd. As there were many other William Woodses in Albemarle, all or the most of whom were no doubt Presbyterians, he came to be known in his county as Baptist Billy Woods. He was about twenty-seven years old when the Revolutionary war began. He became a minister of the Baptist Church and in 1780 was called to the pastorate of the first church of that faith ever founded in Piedmont, Virginia. He was a man of handsome figure and face, and took pride in keeping a fine saddle horse. He had a body servant named Ben who usually accompanied him in his trips about the country. He was evidently a man of decided ability and of a jovial disposition. He was much in demand when couples wished to be united in marriage. He was possessed of rare conversational powers and made an agreeable companion. He was an intimate friend of Thomas Jefferson, who much admired the democratic polity of the Baptist churches. He once remarked that the Baptist Church was a model for a republic. In 1798, at the solicitation of Mr. Jefferson, he resigned his pastoral charge and was elected a member of the Virginia Legislature for Albemarle. Mr. Woods took part in the great debates of that body on the famous Resolutions of 1798-9. He stood for re-election in 1809, but was defeated. The next year (1810) he migrated to Livingston County, Kentucky, where the remaining years of his life were spent. There he died in 1819, and he and his wife were buried in the family burial ground near Salem in what is now Crittenden County, Kentucky. His will is of record there now. Why he did not accompany his parents and the rest of the family when, about 1769, they removed to Botetourt County, we do not know. Perhaps he had recently married (he was then just twenty-one) and was disposed to live near his wife's people. All except the last nine years of his life he spent in Albemarle. Some of his brethren in the Baptist Church thought he was too liberal as to some of his theological views, and not careful enough in his use of liquor, and the authorities of his church made some official inquiries into these matters. It is evident that his divergences in faith and practice were not regarded as fatally serious, but his intimacy with Mr. Jefferson was considered as having exerted an unwholesome influence upon his work as a minister of the Gospel. He left five children, three sons and two daughters.

(a) MICAJAH WOODS, who was the first child of William Woods, the Seventh, and his wife Joanna, was born in Albemarle County, Va., in 1776. On the 13th of August, 1795, he married Lucy Walker. After her death he married Mrs. Sarah Harris Davenport, the widow of William Davenport, whose maiden name was Rodes, September 22, 1808. He attained great prominence in Albemarle County, and was regarded as one of the most influential men in that section of Virginia. In 1815 he was selected to be one of the Gentlemen Justices of the County Court, in which capacity he served for twenty-one years (till 1836), when under the law, being the oldest Justice in service he became High Sheriff of the county. He died after holding that office only about one year—March 23, 1837. His homestead was the well-known place near Ivy Depot called Holkham, at which he died. He owned

nearly 2000 acres of land on Ivy Creek, and during his lifetime his home was a Mecca for his numerous kindred of Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee. Among his guests at times was a first cousin of his wife, the Hon. William H. Crawford, of Georgia, who was a member of the U. S. Senate and had been Secretary of State and Governor of Georgia, and a prominent candidate for the Presidency. By his will, now on record in Albemarle, he devised the greater part of his Albemarle estate to his son John R. Woods.

By his first wife, Lucy Walker, he had three daughters and one son, to wit: 1, Martha, who married General John Wilson, and moved to California; 2, Mary, who married James Garth and whose descendants reside in Kentucky and Ohio; 3, Elizabeth, who married Capt. John Humphreys, and settled with him in Indiana; and 4, Henry, who died young.

By his second wife, Mrs. Sarah Harris Davenport, (*nee* Rodes) he had three children, all sons, to wit: 1, William S., who died in his twenty-fifth year of his age at Helena, Arkansas. William S. Woods is said to have been one of the most accomplished young men ever reared in Virginia, gifted with rare talents and every grace of manner and person. He was a great friend of Henry Clay, and to him Mr. Clay wrote a letter, still preserved in the family, giving the secret history of the Missouri Compromise of 1819. 2, the last child of Micajah Woods and his wife Sarah Harris Davenport (*nee* Rodes) was John Rodes Woods, of whom more extended mention will be made in Part III of this volume in the sketch of his son General Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, Va. 3, The last child of Micajah Woods by his second wife was Robert Harris Woods, who died in his twenty-first year.

(b) The second child of William Woods, the Seventh, and his wife Joanna Shepherd, was a son, David Woods, the Second, who was probably born in Albemarle County, Virginia, about the year 1778, and died in Livingston Co., Ky., in 1825. He married Miss Sallie Neal, who is said to have resided, prior to her marriage, in Bourbon County, Kentucky. He removed to Livingston County, Kentucky, either with his parents (in 1810) or about three years later. By his wife Sallie (or Sarah) Neal he had four sons and two daughters, as follows: 1, Tavner; 2, Henry Williams; 3, David, the Third; 4, John N.; 5, Kitty; and 6, Mariah. Of the first, Tavner; and the third, David the Third; we know nothing. Kitty married one Richard Miles; and Mariah married one Peyton Gray. Of Henry Williams Woods, the father of David Woods the Fourth, who now resides at Marion, Ky., we shall speak again when the sketch of David the Fourth is presented in Part III of this volume. The fourth child, John N. Woods, was born at Salem, Livingston County, Kentucky, June 15, 1815. His father dying when John N. was ten years old, he lived with his widowed mother till he was eighteen, when he was apprenticed to learn the trade of a tanner. After serving his apprenticeship, he opened a tannery. Not long after, he formed a partnership with a Mr. Watts to carry on mercantile business. In 1846, he moved to Marion, Ky., and entered into mercantile business there with Mr. S. Marble. In 1850 he returned to Salem to live. Two years later he moved to Princeton, Indiana, and sold goods for a while; and again moved back to Marion, Ky., where he continued to sell goods till, owing to the infirmities of age, he retired from active business. He was elected a member of the Kentucky Legislature in 1871. He was married to Mrs. Mary A. Marble, of Madison, Indiana, in 1848, with whom he lived happily till his death, December 27, 1896, at his home in Marion. Perhaps no man ever lived in Marion who, after a long career, left such a good name as he did for sterling honesty of character. His reputation for fair and upright dealing, charity and generosity, was one to which but few men in any community attain. He seems not to have had any children.

(c) The third child of William Woods, The Seventh, and his wife Joanna, was John Woods, who died unmarried.

(d) The fourth child of William and Joanna

was MARY, who married a Mr. Campbell, and whose descendants reside near Nashville, Tennessee.

(c) The fifth and last child of William and Joanna was SUSANNAH, who married a Mr. Henry Williams, and settled near her parents in Livingston County, Ky. Her descendants reside in that vicinity to this day. It was, as we feel confident, in honor of her husband that her brother David named his son—Henry Williams Woods.

VII—SARAH WOODS was, as we are disposed to believe, the seventh child of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne, and she was probably born in Albemarle County, Virginia, about the year 1750. Beyond the fact that she was expressly named by her father in his last will in 1776 we know nothing of her. It is barely possible she married a Mr. Charles Lambert, and that from her was descended General Lambert, formerly Mayor of Richmond. We know that a Charles Lambert was one of the witnesses to the will of Michael Woods, Jr., in 1776, at which time Sarah was about 26 years of age.

VIII—MARTHA WOODS, who, we incline to believe, was the eighth child of Michael, Jr., and his wife Anne, was most probably born about the year 1753. She, like all of the eleven children of this couple, was expressly referred to in her father's will. In the court records of Botetourt County, Virginia, it is shown that a Martha Woods married one Thomas Moore June 10, 1795. If our calculations be correct our Martha was then about forty-two years old, and we believe she is the woman whom Thomas Moore married. Such is the opinion of those best qualified to judge—so thinks General Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, Va. Of her history we know nothing further.

IX—MAGDALEN WOODS, The Second, was, as we believe, the ninth child of Michael, Jr., and Anne. She was named for her father's sister who married McDowell, etc. Her tombstone in the old Methodist cemetery at Lexington, Va., shows that she was born in 1755. She died in Lexington, Va., in 1830, aged seventy-five years. When her father made his will in 1776 he referred to her in that document as Magdalen Campbell. We know that her husband was one William Campbell, so that she probably married before she was twenty-one years of age. Mr. Campbell was probably a citizen of Rockbridge County. The Woodses of Botetourt had numerous kinsfolk in Rockbridge; Woodses, Wallaces, McDowells, Lapsleys, etc., and we can well believe that the children of Michael Woods on the James would often visit their uncles, aunts and cousins up in the vicinity of Lexington, Va. William Campbell must have resided some years, however, in Botetourt, for in 1779 he purchased the old Woods homestead on James River from his wife's brother, David, for 3500 pounds. We have good reason for believing that the latter part of his life, at least, was spent in or near to Lexington, Va. Mrs. Campbell is said to have been one of the most remarkable women west of the Blue Ridge. Governor McDowell, of Virginia, used to say that she was a walking encyclopaedia as to all the traditions, settlements and families in the Valley of Virginia. She could repeat, from memory, a large part of the Bible, and when a text of Scripture would be read to her she could generally give the book, chapter and verse in which it was located. She spent a good deal of her time at the home of her brother William's son, Micajah Woods, of Albemarle County. She seems never to have had any children, and her husband probably died many years before she did. Her will was dated June 1, 1824. Her estate at her death in 1830 consisted almost wholly of money and bonds, and was appraised at $4410.10. One-half of her estate she gave to her nephew John Woods, of Mercer County, Kentucky, (her brother David's son). One-fourth went to the children of her sister Mrs. Margaret (Woods) Gray, then in Kentucky; and the remaining fourth to her niece Margaret (Shepherd) Gilmore, who was the daughter of Elizabeth Woods and Dalertus Shepherd. Mrs. Campbell was a devout Christian, and was connected with the Methodist Church. She was a lovely old lady, who always received a cordial welcome in the homes she visited. She seems to have outlived all of her father's children.

X—ANNE WOODS was as we think reasonably certain, the tenth child of Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne. She is mentioned by her father in his will as being one of the two younger children. She was unmarried when her father wrote his will, and probably about nineteen years old. She was born about the year 1757. Concerning her history nothing is known. Either she or her sister Sarah probably married a Mr. Lambert—either the one (Charles) whose name was appended as a witness to her father's will, or possibly a kinsman of his; for, as was noted when treating of her sister Sarah, we have reason for believing, according to General Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, that a Lambert did marry one of Michael's daughters, and she and Sarah and Margaret were the only ones not married when their father wrote his will, and the last named daughter, of whom we shall now speak, married a Mr. Gray.

XI—MARGARET WOODS, the youngest of the children of Michael, Jr., and Anne, was probably born in the year 1760, and in Albemarle County, Virginia. When her father died, in 1777, she was about seventeen. She became the wife of a David Gray, of Rockbridge County, who removed to Kentucky among the earliest pioneers[72]. Mr. Gray was a Presbyterian, and seems to have been one of the elders of the Presbytery of Transylvania which met at Danville, Kentucky, in the fall of 1786. The children of David Gray and his wife Margaret Woods, as given in the Wylie Genealogy (see Note 72) were the following: (a) DAVID; (b) WILLIAM, who married Kittie Bird Winn, of Clark County, Kentucky, in 1812, settled in Glasgow, Kentucky, and later removed to Greensburg, Kentucky. Dr. William Gray, by his wife, Kittie B. Winn, had the following children, to wit: 1, Versailles; 2, John Courts; 3, Theresa D., who married a Mr. Vaughn in Greensburg, Ky., and by him had three children, and, he dying, she married Frank Hatcher; 4, Samuel Marshall; 5, Elizabeth Catherine Ophelia, born February 23, 1823, married Rev. George K. Perkins, a Presbyterian minister, and had by him seven children. The children of Elizabeth C. O. Gray by Rev. Mr. Perkins were the following: Havana; China; John; Bertha; Campbell; Mollie; and Fanny. Havana Perkins, the first born of this family of seven children, is the wife of Mr. David Woods of Marion, Crittenden County, Kentucky, one of the original subscribers of this volume. A sketch of Mr. Woods will be found in Part III of this work. It thus appears that the children of this David Woods and his wife Havana Perkins are descended from Michael Woods, Jr., both through his son William, and his daughter Margaret.

D—HANNAH WOODS was, as we have reason for supposing, the fourth child of Michael Woods by his wife Mary Campbell. She was probably born about the year 1710, in Ireland, and came to North America with the Woodses and Wallaces in 1724, when she was a girl of fourteen. Some time prior to 1734, while the two families were living in Pennsylvania, she was married to William Wallace who was her full first cousin, he being the son of her aunt Elizabeth. The frequency of intermarriages of this character among the members of these two families was somewhat unusual. Four of the children of Peter Wallace and Elizabeth Woods married children of Michael Woods and Mary Campbell; and in the next generation this custom was continued to a considerable extent. William Wallace was a favorite with his father-in-law, and seems to have lived almost within sight of his home till Michael Woods died. Chapter Second of the First Part of this volume being devoted to the Wallaces, the little we know of this couple is given there, to which the reader is referred. We do not know the date of Hannah's death. Not a few of her kinsfolk named children in her honor, from whence we infer that she must have been a lovable and popular woman.

E—JOHN WOODS was, as we have good reason for conjecturing, the fifth-born of the children of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and his wife, Mary Campbell. His body lies in the old family burial plot at Blair Park; and the writer, on the occasion

of his last visit to the spot (1895), took pains to copy the inscriptions on the grave-stones of John Woods and other members of the family there buried. He is the only one of all the eleven children of Michael and Mary the exact dates of whose birth and death are known with perfect certainty. He was a man of methodical turn himself, and his children seem to have inherited enough of this trait to have a complete and distinct inscription placed upon the rude stone marking his grave which, for considerably more than a century, has remained to tell his posterity when he came into this world, and when he left it. It gives February 19, 1712, (old style) as the date of his birth, and October 14, 1791 (new style) as the date of his death. It also records the names of both his parents, for which the present writer would gladly extend his thanks to the thoughtful persons who supervised the preparation of that headstone. If those who shall peruse the numerous dates given in this volume could know what endless research it has cost the writer to obtain them, and how many a weary search for definite data has never been rewarded with success, they would hesitate long before undertaking such a task. Many a tombstone he has inspected had on it no inscription whatever, and this one over the grave of Colonel John Woods at Blair Park, has, for this reason, been peculiarly gratifying, especially as it carries us back nearly two hundred years with entire certainty. We shall, from this point onward, speak of him as "Colonel John Woods," because he received that title by regular commission from two different Colonial governors of Virginia in the year 1770. He was called, in various original documents now in the hands of the present writer, "Captain" John Woods, from 1759 to 1766. In the latter year Governor Fauquier made him a Major, and for four years or more he was known as "Major" John Woods. When, in 1770, he was commissioned Lieutenant Colonel by Governor Nelson, and later by Lord Botetourt, he began to be addressed as "Colonel John Woods," a title he held ever after. The three original commissions thus conferred upon him are in the writer's possession, having been kindly placed at his disposal, while this volume was in preparation by the owner, Mr. J. Watson Woods, of Mississippi, who is a lineal descendant of Colonel Woods. These documents will be given in Appendix F.

That Colonel Woods migrated from Ireland to Pennsylvania with his parents in 1724, and then to Virginia, ten years later, scarcely admits of a doubt. The date of the migration of the Woodses from Ireland to Pennsylvania has been fixed in the year 1724, largely because it has been a definite and unvarying tradition in the family of Colonel Woods and his descendants, for a century, that he was a boy twelve years old when the voyage to the New World was made; and as the year of his birth was 1712, it seemed entirely reasonable to accept the date 1724 for the coming of this family to America, especially as we know of nothing to militate against such a supposition. Of his life of ten years in Pennsylvania we know absolutely nothing. When he reached Virginia he was just about twenty-two years of age. The first mention we have of him is in the fall of the year 1743, when his father deeded to him a tract of land containing 350 acres, on Mechum's River, in Albemarle County. (A facsimile of part of this deed will be found in this volume, Appendix F.) In that year his father, Michael, gave land to four or five of his children, evidently by way of setting them up in life. John was then about thirty-one years old, and had been married about a year, as we suppose. The next notice of him we find in the year 1745, when he was sent as a commissioner from the two Presbyterian churches of Mountain Plains and Rockfish all the way to Pennsylvania to prosecute a call before the Presbytery of Donegal for the pastoral services of the Rev. John Hindman. As he had married in Pennsylvania only three years before, such a trip doubtless was pleasant on that account. Colonel Woods was no doubt an active and prominent member of the Mountain Plains Church, which was situated on a part of his father's plantation, or at least in sight of it, and which the Woodses and Wal-

laces had founded only a short time before this visit to Donegal Presbytery in search of a pastor. The farm Colonel Woods owned and lived on was on Mechum's River near the present station of the Chesapeake & Ohio Railway bearing the name Mechum's Depot.

The exact date of the marriage of Colonel Woods cannot be fixed with entire certainty; but as we know exactly when he was born, and when he died; and know the years in which several of his children were born; and are also in possession of numerous pertinent collateral facts, we feel warranted in concluding that he must have married about the year 1742, when he was about thirty years old. No one pretends to be able to decide this question with entire certainty, but we are not without some very reasonable grounds for fixing on the time named. There is a pretty little romance, however, which has been currently accepted among Colonel Woods's descendants in regard to his marriage, one feature of which we shall be compelled to relegate to the region of myths; and that is, the one which makes John Woods meet and love a sweet little girl of eight summers on the ship in which he crossed the Atlantic in 1724, and then, in after years, marry her. That the lady whom he actually did marry was named Susannah Anderson, as that legend has it, admits of no doubt whatever; but the trouble comes of saying she was a child eight years old in 1724—the year the Woodses migrated to America. The truth is, Susannah was probably not even born till 1725. John Woods and Susannah had eight or more children, the last of whom (named Susannah for her mother) was not born till 1768; but if Susannah Anderson was eight years old in 1724, she was fifty-two when her last child was born. We shall therefore be constrained to modify this pleasing romance so far as relates to the childish love affair on the ship, as being hardly suited to the probabilities of the case. It may have been true, however, that Susannah's father, the Rev. James Anderson, was a neighbor, and perhaps the pastor, of the Woodses in Pennsylvania; and that 'ere John Woods left that colony for Virginia (in 1734) she was a winsome little child of nine summers whom John Woods had come to admire as a child of unusual loveliness. And it may also be that the ties which bound the Woodses to Pennsylvania being still strong, John Woods had ample opportunity to renew his acquaintance with the Andersons. Visits may perhaps have been exchanged: John may have taken journeys to Pennsylvania, or parson Anderson's daughter may have visited the Woodses; and the little girl of 1734, now an attractive maiden of seventeen, may have touched a yet deeper chord in his heart than had been reached by the little girl of nine. Some such explanation of John Woods's marriage falls in pretty well with the persistent tradition so long current in the family, and we believe that it is in its main outlines correct. James, the son of Colonel John Woods and his wife, Susannah, is thought to have been born in 1748, according to Dr. Edgar Woods.[35] In any case we have excellent reasons for believing that this son, whenever born, was their first child. We feel safe in saying, however, that it was as early as 1742 that John Woods went up to Pennsylvania and stole a wife from the home of the Rev. James Anderson; and that they went to housekeeping the next year on the farm on Mechum's River which his father gave him at that time—1743. As to this matter more will be said a little farther on.

Whether Colonel Woods saw military service during the French and Indian wars, which closed about 1763, we cannot say; but from what we know of the man, we feel reasonably certain that he did. It was probably because of such services that Governor Francis Fauquier appointed him Major of the Albemarle Militia November 27, 1766. The original commission which he then received is now in the writer's possession. In less than four years from the date of this appointment Lord Botetourt His Majesty's Lieutenant, and Governor-General, and Commander-in-Chief of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, issued to him a commission as Lieutenant-Colonel of the Militia of Albemarle, Thomas Jefferson being the Colonel thereof. This

document bears date June 11, 1770. Then Governor Nelson issued to him a like commission December 10, 1770. These three documents, which are all about a century and a third old, are perfectly distinct, and the signature of Lord Botetourt, appended to the commission he issued, is to-day as clear as any writing of the present year. (See Appendix F.) Colonel Woods lived in Albemarle about fifty-seven years—1734 to 1791—and died at his home in the eightieth year of his age. His wife survived him several years, but of the time of her death we know nothing. He made his will September 12, 1791, and died October 14, 1791. The witnesses to the will are Menan Mills, William H. Shelton, and James Kinsolving. He mentions his wife Susannah, and his six living children, two children having died in infancy. He names his sons James and Michael executors of his will. He was evidently a well-to-do man, and left a good estate to his family. His body, as above stated, lies in the old family burial ground at Blair Park, a good view of which place is given by the engraving to be found in this volume. The writer had a photo of the spot taken in 1895, from which the engraving was made. Colonel Woods was a man of high character, and it is a reproach to his descendants that his grave and that of his father lie so sadly neglected. The little cemetery is forever reserved from sale or cultivation, and the right of ingress and egress guaranteed; and it would be a simple matter to enclose the ground in a neat iron railing, set the place in grass and erect there a sightly monument which would perpetuate the memory of a worthy family who helped to make Piedmont, Virginia what it is. One thousand dollars would be amply sufficient. In any feasible attempt which may hereafter be made by the Woodses to act upon the suggestion just offered, the writer of these lines will be glad to co-operate to the extent of his ability; and after he himself shall have passed away he hopes that his descendants will stand prepared to redeem his pledge.

Without pretending to absolute accuracy either as to all the dates given, or the precise order of birth in each case, the following exhibit presents what seems to the writer to be the most rational and probable scheme our present means of information will admit of. Let it be noted that where certainty does not seem warranted as to any given date, that fact is indicated by a blank space or by interrogation marks in parentheses.

I.—JAMES WOODS—Born 1743 (?). Died 1823.

II.—MARY WOODS—Born 1744 (?). Died ——.

III.—MICHAEL WOODS—Born 1746 (?). Died 1826 (?).

IV.—SUITA WOODS—Born 1752 (?). Died ——.

V.—SARAH WOODS—Born 1757. Died 1770.

VI.—ANNA WOODS—Born 1760 (?). Died ——.

VII.—JOHN WOODS, JR.—Born 1763. Died 1764.

VIII.—SUSANNAH WOODS—Born 1768. Died 1832.

We cannot affirm that John and Susannah had no other children than the eight above mentioned. It is not at all unlikely that there may have been one or two others who died in early infancy, but whose graves cannot now be identified. Two of the eight given in the above list would never have been known of by the writer had he not found their graves in the Blair Park burial-plot, with stones distinctly marked. Six of the eight were living in 1791, and are expressly named in Colonel Woods's will, and there is every reason for believing that he mentioned every one of his living children, unlike his father Michael of Blair Park. There can scarcely be a doubt that a diligent search through the Will Books and Deed Books of the several counties in which the married children of Colonel Woods lived and died would be rewarded with much information, not obtained by the author of this volume. He accomplished a good deal in

this line, but he was unable to give more time to it than he has done.

I—JAMES WOODS was probably the first-born of the children of Colonel John Woods and Susannah his wife. The exact date of his birth can not be given with entire certainty, but the writer believes it was about the year 1743. The Rev. Dr. Edgar Woods gives 1748 as the year of James Woods's birth, but we feel there are some good reasons for believing that the figure 8 in that date should give place to a figure 3, which it so closely resembles, and for which it is often mistaken by copyists in clerk's offices and elsewhere.[75] The principal reason for so believing is that James Woods and his sister Mary attached their signatures to certain documents in 1767—the originals of which are now in the writer's possession—the style of which signatures indicates that the writers of them were persons of somewhat mature age, and accustomed to writing. (See Appendix F.) If Colonel John Woods did not marry till 1747, and his son James was not born till 1748, and his daughter Mary not before 1749, then James and Mary were only nineteen and eighteen years old, respectively, when the signatures referred to were written. James and Mary signed their names a half a dozen times each in 1767, as the originals in the author's possession show. (See fac-similes in Appendix F), and he believes that the majority of intelligent people would say that those were not the signatures of persons who were less than twenty-five years of age and unaccustomed to writing a good deal. There is not one man or woman in ten, under thirty years of age, who writes his or her name with more marked uniformity than did these two persons on the occasions referred to. There are variations, we admit, but only such as are common with the people of any age. That the Mary Woods who did the signing in 1767 was James's sister and not Mary, his wife, is demonstrated by the fact that James did not marry Mary Garland till 1779, and by the further fact that in one of the cases she states that the receipt she signs is for money she had received as her share of the estate of her grandfather, Michael Woods, under his will. (See Appendix F.) We believe that a careful inspection of the signatures of James and Mary Woods, executed in 1767, would convince the majority of persons that the writers of those signatures were very probably over twenty years of age. A second consideration in favor of the earlier date (1743) for the birth of James Woods is that it places his father's marriage at about his thirtieth year, whereas the later date (1748) would make John Woods to have been full thirty-five years old when he married a young woman for whose heart and hand he had, according to the family tradition, been waiting for perhaps five to ten weary years. If he married the charming Susannah in 1742, when she was about seventeen—as early a date, perhaps, as her parents were willing to accede to—that would be about what we would have expected. But it looks far less reasonable to suppose that he delayed till he himself was thirty-five, and she was twenty-two. Then, thirdly, there is at least some significance in the fact that Michael Woods, John's father, chose the year 1743 for giving his son a good farm—350 acres on Mechum's River. If John did marry Susannah in 1742, as we incline to think he did, and if their first child, James, was born in 1743, as we feel reasonably sure of, we can see the eminent propriety of giving the young folks a farm just then, and letting them go off to themselves. Then, lastly, the date 1743, if its final figure, 3, were carelessly written, might easily have been mistaken for 1748. Clerks and others in copying legal documents often make just such mistakes as this would have been, and such an inaccuracy may have been perpetrated in this particular case. On this theory Susannah was about seventeen when she married, and about forty-three when her last child (Susannah) was born. If the writer may be pardoned the personal allusion—his own mother was married five months before she became seventeen, and he himself, her last child, was born four months before she became forty-three. Hence, the theory advanced and the conclusions reached in this case have nothing novel or strained about them, and

they fall in with various known conditions of the problem in hand. Let it be added here that the year 1768, which is assigned for the birth of Susannah, the last child of John and Susannah, was gotten by the writer from a pamphlet written by Mr. W. H. Miller, of Richmond, Ky., who speaks as if he were in possession of very complete written family records.[1] He is a descendant of Susannah Woods by her husband Daniel Miller. (Fac-similes of the original signatures of both Susannah and Daniel can be found in Appendix F, which see.)

When Colonel John Woods wrote his will a few weeks before his death (1791) he named his sons James and Michael as his executors. He mentions James first; and this fact would, as a rule, indicate that he was the older of the two brothers. It is certain, however, that James migrated from Albemarle to Kentucky a few years after his father died, and before the estate was fully settled up. The receipts from legatees of Colonel Woods for payments of their respective shares of his estate taken in 1792 and 1793 began thus: "Received of James Woods and Michael Woods, executors," or in words to that effect; but in 1796 and 1797 we find several of these receipts of the legatees mention Michael and omit all allusion to James as executor. Of course, as James was, in law, one of the executors even after he had migrated to Kentucky, there would have been no impropriety, in receipting for a legacy, to mention him as one of the executors from whom the money came; but the absence of James would no doubt cause many persons to make their receipts read "from Michael Woods," as he was the only one of the two executors then in Virginia. Besides, James, after settling in Kentucky, doubtless paid one or more visits to his old Virginia home while his father's estate was being settled up, and while in Virginia on these visits may have receipted in person for legacies paid out by himself and Michael.

According to various authorities James married Mary Garland, a daughter of James Garland, of North Garden, Albemarle County, Virginia. She is said to have been born October 13, 1760, and to have married James Woods February 25, 1779. At that date James was about thirty-six years of age, and Mary was not nineteen. In the year 1795, or 1796, James Woods moved to what is now Garrard County, Kentucky. Of the thirteen children born to this couple it is next to certain that all but the last three or four were born in Albemarle County, Virginia. Mary, wife of James Woods, died in Garrard County, Kentucky, in 1835, and was buried near what is called the "Hanging Rock" in that county. James Woods was, according to Dr. Edgar Woods and other reliable authorities, an officer in the Revolutionary Army; but the rank he held and the command he served with are unknown to the writer. Some of his descendants have positively stated that he was Colonel of the Twelfth Virginia Regiment, but this is unquestionably a mistake. The commander of that regiment was a Colonel James Woods (his surname having no s in it), who was afterwards Governor of Virginia. The writer speaks positively on this point because his great grandfather (who was an officer in that regiment), when, in 1818, he applied for a pension, had his claim delayed several years because he thoughtlessly added the letter s to the name of his Colonel, making it "Woods," instead of Wood. This was all stated under oath, and the official records of the case (case of Samuel Woods of Mercer County, Kentucky, who was pensioned in 1823, and died in 1826) are on file in the Pension Office at Washington, and can be obtained for a small payment by any one who cares to have them. When James moved to Kentucky he was a man of about fifty-three and the father of nine or ten children, the eldest of whom was about fifteen years of age. This was a Presbyterian family, and all of the thirteen children were baptized in infancy. James Woods's death occurred in 1823, twelve years prior to that of his wife. Herewith a list of their children is given, as kindly furnished to the author of this work by Mrs. Jane Harris Rogers, of Lexington, Kentucky, who is their great granddaughter:

(a) The first child of James and Mary Woods

was JOHN, who was born February 25, 1780. Of his history the writer knows nothing.

(b) The second child of James and Mary was MARY, who was born January 6, 1782.

(c) The third child of James and Mary was JAMES GARLAND, who was born April 23, 1783. Allusion to this son is made in an old letter dated at Columbia, South Carolina, January 25, 1825, signed by his younger brother, Nathaniel Woods, and addressed to Michael Woods (then living in Nelson County, Virginia), the brother of James and son of Colonel John Woods. In this letter the said Nathaniel Woods speaks of "brother James Woods," for whom a sum of money had been left in the hands of Michael Woods, and the letter in question is an order to Michael to send it to Nathaniel either by "Cousin John Miller" or one Samuel Blain. February 25, 1825, Samuel Blain writes a receipt to Michael Woods for $530.50 which one John Murrel of Kentucky had deposited with said Michael for either James Garland Woods, or Nathaniel Woods. Of Nathaniel, who was the youngest child of James and Mary, we shall speak presently.

James Garland Woods was made an Elder of Paint Lick Church in 1820, and his son, Rice Garland Woods, in 1855. Mr. Rice G. Woods died a few years ago. The writer understands that it was a daughter of his who married Mr. Ed Walker, of Paint Lick.

(d) The fourth child of James and Mary was WILLIAM, who was born May 9, 1784, of whom we know nothing more.

(e) The fifth child of James and Mary was named SARAH, and all we know of her is the date of her birth, January 1, 1786.

(f) The sixth child of James and Mary was named ANDERSON, born January 18, 1788. He was baptized in Albemarle County, Virginia, by the Rev. William Irvine, pastor of the Presbyterian Church, to which the Woodses belonged. He removed to Kentucky with his parents in 1796. In 1823, he moved to Boone County, Missouri. He died at Paris, Missouri, October 22, 1841. He married Elizabeth Harris May 4, 1809, the ceremony being performed in Madison County, Kentucky, by the Rev. Peter Woods, his cousin. She died October 13, 1868, aged seventy-seven years. Anderson and Elizabeth had a son named James Harris Woods, born in Madison County, Kentucky, January 24, 1810; baptized August, 1837; and died in Columbia, Missouri, January 11, 1845. His wife was Miss Martha Jane Stone, who was born in Madison County, Kentucky, August 7, 1815. Their marriage occurred May 28, 1835, in Boone County, Missouri. She died in Nebraska City, Nebraska, March 17, 1868. She was baptized in August, 1837. William Stone Woods, who is now (1904) a banker in Kansas City, Missouri, is the son of James Harris Woods and Martha Jane Stone. (See sketch of William Stone Woods in Part III of this volume.)

(g) The seventh child of James and Mary was named SUSANNAH. Her father's mother's maiden name was Susannah Anderson, and her father's youngest sister, who married Daniel Miller, was named Susannah. She was born September 1, 1789.

(h) The eighth child of James and Mary was named RICE, and was born November 6, 1790. It is said that Rice Woods (son of James and Mary) died early in life.

(j) The ninth child of James and Mary was MICHAEL, who was born January 5, 1792. The number of Woodses who bore this name is so great that it would be bewildering to attempt to enumerate and distinguish them, and show how they were related. Like his brother Anderson, he is said to have moved to Missouri.

(k) The tenth child of James and Mary was named MARY RICE, who was born September 24, 1795, in Albemarle County. She was probably the last of the children born prior to the migration of the family to Kentucky, as that move took place not later than the summer of 1796. She was married to Overton Harris in Garrard County, Kentucky, December 1, 1814. In the fall of 1817 she moved with her husband to Missouri, where she spent the remainder of her long and useful life. Her hus-

band died in 1844, and she survived him thirty-two years, dying August 31, 1876, when she had nearly completed her eighty-first year. She left seven children, as follows: 1, John Woods Harris, who married Ann Mary McClure; 2, James Harris, who married Sabra Jackson; 3, Martha Ryland Harris, who married John Mills Maupin; 4, William Anderson Harris, who married Elizabeth Robnett; 5, Sarah Elizabeth Harris, who married George Hunt; 6, Mary Frances Harris, who married Thomas Berry Harris; and, 7, Overton Michael Harris, who married Amanda Wood. (For fuller account of Mary Rice Woods and Overton Harris, and other connections and descendants, the reader is referred to the sketches of Mrs. Jane H. Rogers, and Mrs. Mary F. Harris in Part III of this volume.)

(l) The eleventh child of James and Mary was named ELIZABETH, who was born in Garrard County, Kentucky, beyond reasonable doubt, June 7, 1798.

(m) The twelfth child of James and Mary was named FRANCES, who was born in Garrard County, Kentucky, April 26, 1800. She was married to William Slavin October 14, 1817, and moved with him to Missouri, settling in 1823 in what is known as the Bonne Femme neighborhood in Boone County. She bore to her husband six daughters and a son, and died February 11, 1836. (For additional particulars in regard to this branch of the Woods's the reader is referred to the sketch of Mrs. George B. Macfarlane in Part III of this volume.)

(n) The thirteenth and last child of James Woods and his wife, Mary Garland, was named NATHANIEL, who was born August 27, 1803. The only incident in his life known to the writer is the one referred to on a previous page in dealing with the life of his older brother, James Garland Woods, to wit: his being in Columbia, South Carolina, early in the year 1825. An order which he penned at that time was addressed to his uncle, Michael Woods, of Nelson County, Virginia, for a sum of money to be paid either to himself or his brother James, and which was to be conveyed to him by his cousin John Miller. This cousin was the distinguished General John Miller of the Federal Army, who fell, mortally wounded, at the Battle of Richmond, Kentucky, in August, 1862. Nothing else is known of him by the writer. Nathaniel was probably in South Carolina selling mules and purchasing negroes, one or both, as was commonly done in those days. The old pioneers' road from Central Kentucky to Tennessee and the Carolinas by way of Cumberland Gap had been put in fair condition by the State of Kentucky, and was the great highway between the regions referred to. Nathaniel was only twenty-two years of age when he made the trip to Carolina. There were several families of Woodses then living in both the Carolinas, bloodkin of the Kentucky Woodses, and he may have been visiting them.

James Woods, son of Colonel John Woods, as stated before, died in Garrard County, Kentucky, in 1823, at the ripe age of eighty, if the author's contention as to the date of his birth (1743) be granted; or seventy-five, if the year 1748 be correct. He and his children and their descendants have for three-quarters of a century been a tower of strength in Garrard County, and especially as respects the Paint Lick Presbyterian Church. They are among its main supporters to this day, and the community which they have had so much to do with developing and adorning is one of the most attractive and intelligent in all the Blue Grass region.

II.—According to the author's calculations and surmises, based upon what he considers reasonable grounds, the second child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson was MARY WOODS. The exact year of her birth is not certainly known, but it is believed to have been about the year 1744. The writer has fully presented, in the sections devoted to her brother James, and her father Colonel John Woods, the reasons which constrain him to assign a date for the marriage of her parents five years earlier than that which some of the chroniclers of her family have fixed upon—1742, instead of 1747—and the discussion of that question need not be here repeated. Of Mary's life we know but little. Her father, Colonel John Woods, as the prin-

cipal executor of his father, often called upon her and her brother James to witness to receipts he took from the legatees of his father's estate, and other persons. Fac-similes of her signature are given in Appendix F as she wrote it one hundred and thirty-seven years ago, for the entertainment of all who care to see just what sort of a scribe Miss Mary was. We know that she was not content to be Miss Woods always, and that she finally married a John Reid. Under date of "November ye 26, 1793," John Reid gives a receipt to the executors of Colonel John Woods for the amount left his wife Mary by her father. Just how long she had been the wife of John Reid at that date the writer has no means of knowing, but she was then a woman of about forty-nine years. The writer regrets that he has no further information in regard to her or any children she may have had.

III.—MICHAEL WOODS, The Third, son of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson, was born, as we have good reasons for believing, about the year 1746, in Albemarle County, Virginia. His wife was a Miss Esther Caruthers, of Rockbridge County, Virginia. She is by some called "Hettie," which was, no doubt, a sort of pet-name for Esther. He lived on Ivy Creek, Albemarle County, till about the year 1800, when he moved southward into that portion of Albemarle which, in the year 1807, was made the County of Nelson. Here he spent the last twenty-five years of his life. In 1791 his father died, and he and his brother James were made his executors. The greater part of the transactions connected with the settlement of his father's estate seems to have fallen to him, as his brother James migrated to Kentucky in the fall of 1795, or the spring of 1796. He made his will the 22nd of February, 1825. In it he mentioned the following persons, to wit: 1, his son John Woods; 2, his son James Woods; 3, his son Samuel Woods; 4, his son William Woods; 5, his son Michael Woods; 6, his daughter Susan Massie; 7, his daughter Mary Barclay; 8, his daughter Jane Woods; 9, his wife Esther Woods; 10, his friend and son-in-law Nathaniel Massie to be the guardian of his son Michael. He made the said Massie, and his sons James and John Woods executors, and his wife executrix. The witnesses to his will were Sp. Garland, James Boyd, and James Reid. Michael seems to have died the year after his will was made. He was evidently a successful business man, and left a good estate to his family. He was a Presbyterian; and he believed in giving his children good educations. He left five sons and three daughters. They will be mentioned here in the order in which they are given by Mr. Julian Watson Woods, of Mississippi, who is well informed in regard to this branch of the Woodses. We copy from his list of the children of Michael Woods and his wife Esther Caruthers, as follows:

(a) James Michael, who married his cousin Margaret Carnthers, of Rockbridge County, Virginia, and died in 1850 or 1851 near Liberty, Bedford County, Va., leaving the following children: 1, Susan Elizabeth, who married James W. Clark, of Virginia, and died young, leaving one daughter who is now living in Fluvanna County, Va.; 2, Michael James, born in 1839, who, after serving in the Confederate Army, settled in North Mississippi, where he married a Mrs. Hibler, and, later, a Miss Mary Butts, who bore him a son and daughter. He died years ago in East Las Vegas, Mexico, where his widow and children still reside; 3, John William, born about 1841, who never married, and settled in Hernando, Miss., where he was killed in a negro riot in 1876.

(b) John Caruthers, who married a Miss Davis, of Virginia, moved to Missouri in 1839, leaving the following children: 1, William, who lives in Kansas City, Mo.; and 2, a daughter, Mrs. N. B. Langsford, of Waxahatchie, Texas.

(c) Samuel Caruthers, who married Sarah Rhodes of Nelson County, Va., moved to Missouri in 1839, and there died in 1866 or 1867. He left a son, M. Woods, who resides at Eldorado Springs, Cedar County, Mo.

(d) William Moffett, who was born March 27, 1808, and died May 25, 1862. His wife was Louisa

Elizabeth Dabney, whom he married October 4, 1837. She died June 29, 1843. They had the following children: 1, Senoria Dabney Woods, born August 2, 1838, and died April 5, 1866; 2, Juliaa Watson Woods, who was born May 15, 1849. William Moffett Woods after the death of his first wife (in 1843) married Martha J. Scott, who was born April 20, 1814, and died March 7, 1872, leaving six children as follows: 3, Mary Louisa, born February 16, 1849, and died February 20, 1860; 4, Daniel Scott, born April 25, 1850, and died April 5, 1860; 5, Fannie Langhorn, born September 18, 1851, and died June 30, 1888; 6, Nannie Scott, born January 23, 1853, married C. L. Wagnon November 24, 1886; 7, William Moffett, Jr., born June 8, 1856, and died January 10, 1888; 8, Susan Massie, born March 16, 1859, and died August 16, 1892. William Moffett Woods, the father of the children just enumerated, resided at his father's old home in Nelson County until 1854, when he moved to Buckingham County, Va., where he died in May, 1862, aged fifty-four years.

(e) Michael Woods, Jr., son of Michael and Esther, died when about twenty-one years old.

(f) Susan Woods, daughter of Michael and Esther, married Nathan Massie of Nelson County, Va. She died young, leaving four children: 1, Nathaniel Hardin, who is a prominent lawyer of Charlottesville, Va., born about 1826, who has been twice married, and has three sons and a daughter by his last wife, Miss Eliza Nelson; 2, James Woods, who was a lawyer in Lexington, Va., and left one son; 3, Mary, who married J. Bailey Moon, and left a son, the Hon. John B. Moon, of Charlottesville, Va.; 4, Esther, who married Colonel William Patrick, of Augusta County, Va.

(g) Mary Woods, who married Hugh Barclay, of Lexington, Va., and died in 1855, leaving four sons, to wit: 1, John W. Barclay, Lexington, Va.; 2, Dr. Michael W. Barclay, who moved to Kentucky, and married his cousin Susan Miller, a daughter of General John Miller, and died in 1858, leaving several children.

(h) Jane Woods, daughter of Michael and Esther, married William Hardy, and settled in Missouri. She died young, leaving two daughters, both of whom died unmarried.

IV.—SUITA WOODS was, as we suppose, the fourth child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson, and we believe she was born about the year 1752. She is mentioned in her father's will, where her name is "Suta," but in one place in an original document she spells her name Suit Woods (in 1792), and we conclude that her full name was Suita. She was unmarried on the 19th of September, 1792, but May 13, 1797, we find Samuel Reid (whom she had married) giving a receipt to her brother Michael for the amount of her legacy from her father Colonel John Woods, deceased, and in this receipt Samuel Reid refers to her as "Sute, my wife." So it seems her relatives varied her name as they deemed most *suitable*. Samuel and Suita moved to Kentucky and were the progenitors of a large connection in Garrard and Lincoln Counties.

V.—SARAH WOODS, whom we have concluded to have been the fifth child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson, was born 1757 and died in 1770. Of this daughter the writer knows nothing beyond the dates of her birth and death, which he copied from her tombstone in the Blair Park burial ground some years ago.

VI.—ANNA WOODS was, as we believe, the sixth child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson, and she was probably born about the year 1760. Her Christian name is spelled by some persons "Ann," and by some others "Anne," but her father, in his will, gives it "Anna." She married John N. Reid some time prior to August, 1796, as we find him receipting to her father's executors at that date for money he had received for her. She survived her husband, and some time after his death she married one of the numberless William Woodses, who was her cousin. Of her further history the writer knows nothing whatever. It seems the Reids were in high favor with the Woods girls, for three of Colonel John Woods's daughters married a Reid—Mary marrying John, Suita marrying

Samuel, and Anna marrying John N. These men were probably not residents of Albemarle County, Va., as Dr. Edgar Woods, in his History of Albemarle County, fails to refer to them as such.

VII.—JOHN WOODS, JR., was probably the seventh child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson. All we know of him has been gotten from his tombstone at Blair Park, which shows he was born in 1763, and died the year following.

VIII.—SUSANNAH WOODS was probably the eighth and certainly the last child of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson. The date of her birth is given as September 21, 1768, by Mr. W. H. Miller, of Richmond, Kentucky, one of her grandsons. From the manner in which Colonel Woods provided for Susannah in his will we infer that she was a great favorite with him. Her name is found appended to a number of receipts in 1792 and 1793, she being single, but other receipts of 1797 show that she had by that time become the wife of Daniel Miller (see fac-simile in Appendix F, showing her signature). Mr. W. H. Miller, her grandson, gives Nelson County, Va., as the place of her birth, but that county had no existence until 1807, and Nelson was carved out of Amherst County, which was carved out of Albemarle in 1761. We know of no reason for supposing her widowed mother ever moved from Albemarle. Susannah's brother Michael moved to what is now Nelson County, but not until years after his sister Susannah had married Daniel Miller and moved to Madison County, Kentucky. Susannah was married to Daniel Miller—according to the statement of Mr. W. H. Miller, of Richmond, Ky., November 28, 1792; but the writer has in his possession an original receipt which she signed November 26, 1793, and in which she wrote her name "Susannah Woods." Her marriage occurred only a day or two, perhaps, after that receipt was given, however. Daniel Miller, according to his grandson above mentioned, was one of nine children. His brothers were John and Thomas, and his sisters were Annie, Betsy, Jennie, Susannah, Polly and Sallie. He was born in Albemarle County, Va., May 28, 1764. A few years after his marriage to Susannah Woods he moved to Kentucky, and settled on Drowning Creek in Madison County. The last receipt of his given in the old account book now in the writer's possession bears date October 5, 1797, and he was then, most probably, in Albemarle County, Virginia, whether as a visitor or a resident we cannot affirm. Susannah died at the Miller home on Drowning Creek August 13, 1832, in her sixty-fourth year. Her husband survived her nearly nine years, dying April 23, 1841. The bodies of both Daniel and Susannah were at first buried on the old Miller place, but now repose in the beautiful Richmond (Kentucky) Cemetery, their graves being marked by tombstones.

Daniel Miller and Susannah Woods left ten children, a list of whom, with many particulars, the author has here copied from the pamphlet of Mr. W. H. Miller, of Richmond, Kentucky.

(a) POLLY MILLER, first child of Daniel and Susannah, was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, October 19, 1794. She was taken ill while her parents were traveling to Kentucky and died on the way. The date of her death is given by Mr. W. H. Miller as May 24, 1795. Of course Daniel Miller may have been in Albemarle merely on a visit when he gave the receipt previously mentioned as bearing date October 5, 1797, but it would hardly seem likely that he would make that long and tedious journey in 1797 if he had just come out West in 1795. But Mr. W. H. Miller gives his dates as if he were copying from family records, and we accept them, not, however, without some fear lest copyists may have made some unintentional mistakes in the figures.

(b) ROBERT MILLER, second child of Daniel and Susannah, was born June 22, 1796. In 1822 he married Sarah Murrel, by whom he had five children: 1, Susan, who married Frank Lee; 2, Lizzie, who married Frank Lee; 3, Maggie, who married George Griffin; 4, George; and 5, Robert. His second wife was Mary Craig; and his third wife was Mrs. Betsy Griffin, a widow. He died of cholera in 1873.

(c) JOHN MILLER, the third child of Daniel and

Susannah, was born in Madison County, Ky., June 30, 1798. His wife was Elizabeth Goodloe, by whom he had ten children: 1, Susan G., who married Mike Barclay; 2, Sarah W., who married David Goodloe; 3, Margaret S., who married Edmund H. Burnham; 4 and 5, William G. and Daniel, who were twins, the former dying of cholera in 1849, and the latter in early infancy; 6, Bettie, who married William Henton; 7, Mary, who married Charles Stephens; 8, John; 9, Lucy, and 10, Octavia. John Miller rose to prominence in Kentucky and early in the Civil War was made a Brigadier General by the Federal Government. At the Battle of Richmond, Kentucky, while endeavoring to rally his disordered columns (August 31, 1862) he received a fatal wound near Mount Zion Church, from the effect of which he died September 6, 1862. His remains repose in the cemetery at Richmond, Kentucky, and a monument marks his grave.

(d) James Miller, who was the fourth child of Daniel and Susannah, was born in Madison County, Ky., August 3, 1800. He married Frances Harris, and died May 2, 1869. Nine children were born to James and Frances, to wit: 1, Christopher; 2, Daniel; 3, Margaret Susan, who married Dr. Wm. Pettus; 4, Malinda, who married a Mr. Butler, and then, after his death, a Mr. Leo Haden; 5, John H., who married a Mrs. Angeline Brown Harris; 6, Fannie; 7, James, who married Gertrude Pettus, and then, after her death, Miss Susan Chenault; 8, Bettie, who married Dudley Portwood; and 9, William Harris, who married Kate Partman.

(e) Elizabeth Miller, the fifth child of Daniel and Susannah, was born in Madison County, Ky., March 28, 1802, and lived only about seventeen months.

(f) Susannah Miller, who was the sixth child of Daniel and Susannah, was born in Madison County, Ky., March 26, 1804. She married Stanton Hume the 30th day of October, 1821, by whom she had five children, to wit: 1, Julia Anderson, who married Thomas Stanhope Ellis; 2, Margaret Miller Hume, who died in December, 1829; 3, Susan Jane, who married John H. Embry; 4, William Stanton, who married Eugenia Burnham; and 5, Mary Louise, who married Thomas McRoberts. Mr. Hume died February 13, 1853, and Susannah married Rev. Allen Embry, a Baptist minister. She died November 11, 1871.

(g) Margaret Miller, who was the seventh child of Daniel and Susannah, was born December 29, 1805. On the 9th of February, 1826, she was married to Edmund L. Shackelford, by whom she had eight children, to wit: 1, Martha Hockaday; 2, Mary Juliette; 3, Susan Frances, who married Sidney V. Rowland; 4, William Henry; 5, a son, whose name is unknown; 6, Edmund Lyne; 7, Margaret, who married Robert Hann; and 8, Juliette Malinda.

(h) Malinda Miller, the eighth child of Daniel and Susannah, was born January 15, 1808. She was married to John H. Shackelford December 16, 1830, by whom she had two sons, to wit: 1, George Daniel, who married Ruth Warfield, and, after her death, Lizzie Sweeney. In August, 1870, he was elected clerk of the Madison County Court, which office he held until his death in 1874; 2, James Shackelford, second child of John H. and Malinda, married Mary Bates, and later on, she dying, he married Miss Mary Keene. He is now a leading and prosperous hardware merchant in Richmond, Kentucky.

(j) Thomas Woods Miller, the ninth son of Daniel and Susannah, was born in Madison County, Ky., December 3, 1811. He married Mary Jane Hocker June 1, 1841. But one child was born of this couple, namely, Malinda, who married John Samuel Owsley. In 1882 Mr. Thomas W. Miller was residing in Stanford, Ky., and was the only surviving child of Daniel and Susannah Miller, and in his seventy-first year.

(k) Christopher Irvine Miller, the tenth and last child of Daniel and Susannah, was born December 20, 1813, at the home of his parents in Madison County, Ky. He married Miss Talitha Harris September 1, 1836, and died October 14, 1878. His wife survived him about three years. Eleven chil-

dren were the fruit of this union, namely: 1, Sarah Wallace, who was born June 7, 1837, and married Stanton Hume Thorpe, by whom she had ten children; 2, Robert David, who was born March 4, 1839, served in the Confederate Army, and married Susan J. Barnett, by whom he has had seven children; 3, James Christopher, who was born September 3, 1841, joined the Confederate Army in 1862, and married Mrs. Elizabeth S. Rayburn, by whom he had four children; 4, John Thomas, who was born August 19, 1844, and married Anice Elkin, by whom he has had four children; 5, a son who was born October 20, 1844, and lived only a few weeks; 6, Christopher Irvine, who was born April 18, 1848, and was for several years a merchant at Richmond, Ky.; 7, Susan Woods, who was born August 2, 1850, and married Thomas Richard Hume, by whom she has had four children; 8, William Harris (the author of the valuable little pamphlet published in 1882, from which most of the information in this work concerning the Millers was obtained), who was born October 22, 1852, who has held various important offices in Madison County, Ky., for a long series of years, and who, whilst taking much commendable interest in the history of the numerous branches of the Miller family, does not seem to have had a wife and family of his own up to the time he became the chronicler of the Millers; 9, Mary Eliza, who was born January 29, 1855; 10, Mike Woods, who was born February 13, 1857; and 11, Elizabeth Frances, who was born July 15, 1864, and who married Junius Burnham Park May 8, 1882.

From the foregoing sketches it will be seen that Colonel John Woods of Albemarle County, Va., contributed no little to the development of Kentucky, three of his children having migrated thither more than a century ago: his son James, who settled in Garrard County; his daughter Suita (wife of Samuel Reid) whose children lived in Garrard and Lincoln; and his daughter Susannah, wife of Daniel Miller, who settled in Madison County. The same is true as respects several of his brothers and sisters. Of the notable part played by Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his grandchildren and great grandchildren, in the early settlement and development of the Kentucky Commonwealth we shall have occasion to speak at the close of this chapter. It is, in fact, a wonderful story, and one of which the descendants of Michael Woods may justly feel proud.

F—MARGARET WOODS.

The sixth child of Michael of Blair Park and his wife Mary Campbell is believed to have been Margaret, and she was probably born in Ireland about the year 1714. If so, she was a little girl of ten summers when the Woodses and Wallaces migrated to North America. Her Aunt Elizabeth, as we have already seen, was the widow of Peter Wallace, and brought along with her to America the six children she had borne to her husband ere he passed away. Among the six Wallace children was a son named Andrew, who was probably twelve years old at the time of this migration. It seems most probable that Andrew Wallace married Margaret Woods (his first cousin), shortly before the Woodses moved down into Virginia—say, in 1733—and accompanied his father-in-law to the eastern foot of the Blue Ridge and settled near him in what was then the County of Goochland (now Albemarle). We know that Andrew Wallace lived near what is now Ivy Depot, on part of the 2,000 acre tract which Michael Woods purchased of Charles Hudson in 1737, the original deed for which is now in the possession of the present writer. We also know that she bore to her husband eight children. Her death may have occurred about 1754, when she was forty years old. If she died about that time her children's ages probably ranged from two years up to twenty years. Andrew Wallace was probably a man of forty-two when left a widower with a house full of children, not more than one or two, if any, of them being then married. We know not whether Andrew remarried after Margaret's death, but we do know that but a single one of his eight children remained in Albemarle. Dr. Edgar Woods says the children went West.

We incline to the opinion that one of the sons (Michael) moved to Pennsylvania, where his parents had lived for ten years (from 1724 to 1734), and that he settled about Carlisle, and that from him the distinguished soldier and man of letters, Major-General Lew Wallace, has descended. For further particulars see Chapter Second of Part I. of this volume which is devoted to the Wallaces. (See Note 75 for an item in regard to Andrew Wallace.) Andrew Wallace died in Albemarle in 1785.

G—RICHARD WOODS.

Believing, as we do, that Richard was one of the sons of Michael Woods of Blair Park, we have reckoned that he was born in Ireland about the year 1715, and hence was a boy nine years old when the family came to Pennsylvania, and nineteen when the Woodses moved to Virginia. When Richard came to full maturity—say about 1740 to 1750—he had a goodly number of near kinsfolk living in the Great Valley, not far away, in what is now Rockbridge County (then Augusta County). The McDowells, Wallaces and Lapsleys were his blood relations. Three of his own dear sisters were there. This, and the fact that the region in which they lived was itself an inviting one, was a rational inducement. Possibly he found a sweetheart over there while visiting his kinsfolk. Of Richard's wife Jean (or Jenny, or Janet) we find mention in his will, made in 1777. We have no means of knowing her surname. She probably survived him, for she was alive when he wrote his will. Botetourt County, when created in 1769, embraced the region in which he lived, and he was that county's first High Sheriff. He died in 1779, leaving two children: a son named Samuel, and another named Benjamin. There was a Richard Woods, a man of importance, who resided for many years in Augusta County, and then moved to Albemarle. His second wife was Elizabeth Ann Stuart (or Betsy Stuart), a sister to Col. John Stuart of Greenbrier County. He had four children, William, George Matthews, Richard (Jr.), and a daughter named Elizabeth, who married one James Brooks. This Richard Woods died in 1801, and could not have been the son of Michael Woods. His son, Richard, Jr., having the name of his father, and also of Michael Woods's son Richard, has doubtless often been confounded in the minds of many persons with one or the other Richard Woodses mentioned. Richard Woods (died 1779) had a daughter who married a Richard Woods, possibly this Richard, Jr. The William Woods just mentioned, who was the son of the elder Albemarle Richard, was a surveyor by profession, and he was known as "Surveyor Billy Woods" in order to distinguish him from the multitudinous William Woodses in Albemarle. In the lengthy discussion on preceding pages of this Chapter Third, devoted to settling how many children Michael Woods of Blair Park really had, a good deal has been said about his son Richard which need not now be repeated. The discussion on a previous page relating to the identity of the Samuel Woods who lived at Paint Lick Church, Garrard County, Kentucky, up to about 1800, and then moved to Tennessee, with the son of Richard Woods of Rockbridge County, of the same name, may also be consulted by any one who wishes to consider that question. Richard Woods, who was the son of Michael of Blair Park, and the brother of Magdalen McDowell, Sarah Lapsley and Martha Wallace, died at his home near Lexington, Virginia, in 1779, and left a considerable estate to his wife, Jean and his two sons, Benjamin and Samuel. In his will he did not mention the daughter who had married a man of his own name, which man may have been a son of the elder Richard Woods of Albemarle. Those sons, we know, sold their lands in 1783; and, according to the opinion of the late Major Varner of Lexington, Va., they moved to Kentucky. If the Samuel Woods who lived at Paint Lick, Ky., from about 1783 to 1800, was not identical with Richard Woods's son of that name, then we have no idea what became of this last mentioned Samuel Woods, of Rockbridge.

H—ARCHIBALD WOODS.

According to our best judgment Archibald was the eighth child of Michael of Blair Park and Mary

Campbell, and was probably born in Ireland about the year 1716. One of his descendants, Judge John W. Woods, of Roanoke, Virginia, in a letter to the writer dated March, 1900, gave it as his opinion that Archibald Woods (son of Michael of Blair Park) "was born about 1710, or 1714." The slightly later date (1716) seems to fit somewhat better into the known conditions of the case. Archibald was one of the children of Michael of Blair Park, about whose precise relation to the latter there has never been any question, for Michael expressly refers to him as his son in his will made in 1761.

The first mention we have of Archibald is found in a deed dated July 30, 1743, by which his father conveyed to him 400 acres of land on the heads of Ivy Creek and other branches of North River, which land had been patented by Michael June 10, 1737. Archibald was then, according to our calculation, twenty-seven years old, and had probably just been married. This year 1743, be it noted, was the one in which Michael conveyed a farm to each one of five of his children, namely: William, Michael, Jr., John, Archibald, and William Wallace (the husband of his daughter Hannah). Of his wife we only know that her Christian name was Isabella, and that she bore her husband a considerable family of children. There is good reason for believing that she was born about the year 1723, and that she married Archibald in 1743, when she was twenty years old and he was twenty-seven. When Michael of Blair Park made his will in November, 1761, he referred to "son Archibald's son Michael" and honors this namesake by bequeathing to him his "great-coat." He also further alludes to Archibald in such manner as to make the impression that he was the father of a considerable family. The truth is, as we believe, Archibald and Isabella probably had eight or nine children when Michael made his will. From certain allusions to be found in receipts, which several of the legatees of old Michael gave to his executors (James and John Woods) during the years in which his estate was being settled up, it is clear that Archibald Woods had had a son to die, and that there was much uncertainty in the minds of all concerned as to whether the share of the estate to which that deceased grandson of old Michael would have been entitled, had he lived, should be treated as not having descended to him, or as the lawful property of that deceased grandson and subject to distribution among his lawful heirs. (See fac-similes, and copies of the Colonel John Woods papers in Appendix F.) The probability is that this grandson was alive when Michael made his will, but died before his grandfather did. This will be better understood by examining the copy of old Michael's will, to be seen on a foregoing page, and nothing what he says about "each grandchild now in being."

In 1767, Archibald Woods, as appears from the Albemarle records, sold the farm which his father had conveyed to him twenty-four years before, but he does not seem to have at once renounced his citizenship in Albemarle, for we find him mentioned in a deed made in Botetourt County and dated November 12, 1771, as "of Albemarle County." This deed (on record at Fincastle) was from James, George and Robert McAfee, of Botetourt County, and conveyed to Archibald a plantation of four hundred acres of land lying on Catawba Creek (in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia). The place was known, and still is, as "Indian Camp." There the McAfees (who constitute the subject of Part Second of this volume) had lived since 1748; and when they sold this plantation to Archibald Woods they remained in the neighborhood, James McAfee, Sr., (the father of the five sons who helped to settle Kentucky, 1773-1779), moving down Catawba Creek a few miles to a plantation within a mile of what is known as Roanoke Red Sulphur Springs. This Indian Camp place was the home of Archibald Woods until his death in 1783. It was right on the famous "Wilderness Road" which came up the Valley from the Potomac by Winchester, Staunton and Botetourt Court House, on to New River at Ingle's Ferry, and down through Southwest Virginia to Cumberland Gap and into Kentucky. John Filson (1784), the first historian of Kentucky, (in

the order of time) in his list of the stations of the Wilderness Road,[76] commencing at Philadelphia and ending at the Falls of the Ohio, gives as part of the list, these items, to wit:

"To Staunton, 15 [miles].
"To North Fork James River, 37 miles.
"To Botetourt C. H., 12 miles.
"To Woods on Catawba, 21 miles.
"To Paterson's on Roanoke, 9 miles.
"To Allegheny Mountain, 8 miles.
"To New River, 12 miles."

This shows that the old McAfee—Woods place on the Catawba—McAfee's from 1748 to 1771, and Woods's from 1771 to 1783—was directly on that well-known highway, and that it was a favorite stopping place for travellers passing to and fro between the settlements in Pennsylvania, Maryland and Central Virginia on the one hand, and Southwestern Virginia, the Carolinas, Tennessee and Kentucky on the other. No doubt Daniel Boone and other famous hunters, explorers and pioneers often found shelter and hospitable entertainment at "Indian Camp" during the last half of the eighteenth century. That historic old place seems never to have passed from the possession of Archibald Woods's family, for it is today owned and occupied by his descendants, and two of them who are of the original promoters of this publication (Judge John W. Woods and Hon James P. Woods, of Roanoke City, Va.) were born there. There are but few old homesteads in America which have been in the possession of a single family without a break for a century and a third. The present writer hopes he will be pardoned for cherishing a tender feeling towards "Indian Camp," not only because of its close connection with his Woods kin; but also because, for nearly a quarter of a century before they owned it, his McAfee ancestors made their home there, they having bought it when New River—only twenty odd miles distant—was the extreme Southwestern boundary of civilization. At this old home on the Catawba Archibald Woods died in 1783, the records at Fincastle showing that his personal effects were appraised December 26, 1783. He died intestate.

When we come to give a complete list of the children of Archibald Woods and his wife Isabella we are obliged to speak with some hesitation so far as concerns several of them; but so far as the researches of the author of this work have extended the conclusion which seems to be warranted is that they certainly had seven children, and most probably three more, making ten in all. It is not pretended that the dates given in the following list and the order of the children's births are anything more than reasonable guesses, in the main.

I.—WILLIAM WOODS—Born 1744 (?). Died ——.

II.—MRS. BRAZEAL—Born 1745 (?). Died ——.

III.—ISABELLA WOODS—Born 1747 (?). Died ——.

IV.—JOHN WOODS—Born 1748 (?). Died 1840 (?).

V.—MRS. COWAN—Born 1750 (?). Died ——.

VI.—MRS. TRIMBLE—Born 1752 (?). Died ——.

VII.—JAMES WOODS—Born 1755 (?). Died 1797 (?).

VIII.—ARCHIBALD WOODS, JR.—Born 1757 (?). Died ——.

IX.—ANDREW WOODS—Born 1760 (?). Died ——.

X.—JOSEPH WOODS.—Born 1763 (?). Died 1832.

I.—The first child of Archibald Woods and his wife Isabella we shall mention, and who may have been their first-born, was WILLIAM WOODS. The date of his birth we incline to believe was about the year 1744. The first and only mention of him is found in a certain bond dated July 2, 1768, which his brother John Woods, then of Granville County, South Carolina, executed to his uncle, Colonel John Woods, executor of the estate of Michael Woods of Blair Park, on receiving from him the legacies of William and Isabella Woods, son and daughter, respectively, of Archibald Woods. In said bond William Woods and Isabella Woods are

said to be "of South Carolina." A copy of the whole of this bond will be found in Appendix F, and also a fac-simile of a portion of it. We have no means of knowing when he and his sister went to South Carolina, or what the inducement was, or whether either of them was ever married, or when or where they died. The bond, whilst expressly stating that John Woods, one of the makers thereof, lived in Greenville County, South Carolina, gives no hint as to what part of that colony William and Isabella lived in, but simply states they are "of South Carolina." The presumption, however, would naturally be that they resided in the same county he did. The county of Granville long since ceased to exist in South Carolina. In 1775, it constituted one of the twelve military districts which had been organized in that colony for purposes of defense in the quarrel with England; and it covered the territory now included in the two counties of Beaufort and Hampton.[77] The adjoining colony on the north —North Carolina—also had a county called Granville, which had been formed in 1746 out of Edgecombe County, and named in honor of Sir George Carteret (Lord Granville). North Carolina, however, still has its Granville County, though its area has again and again been diminished by taking of its territory in order to form new counties. In 1751 Orange County, North Carolina, was carved, in part, out of Granville, and here William Woods, of Ireland, the brother of Michael of Blair Park, and Elizabeth Wallace had settled. Whether he was ever a citizen of Virginia is uncertain. This William Woods, son of Archibald, was the great nephew of William of Ireland; and his migrating from Albemarle County, Virginia, to a region far to the south of his childhood home could be much more satisfactorily explained if it was Granville County, *North* Carolina, and not the county of that name in the southern colony, to which he and these other children of Archibald Woods went. There is something surprising and entirely inexplicable in their having gone away down on the South Carolina coast close to the Georgia line. They had never lived in a low, swampy country like that, and we can imagine no reason for such a move. But if it was the Granville county of the northern colony, we could understand it; for there they would not only have found a rolling country, a salubrious climate like that of Albemarle, and almost the identical agricultural conditions and products they had been familiar with, but would have settled in a community in which many of their near blood-kin were living. Could it be possible that it was not the South Carolina we know to-day, but the South Carolina of loose, popular speech which once was known in the early days of the Carolinas? The question is: Was there ever a time when the region now embraced in the counties of Orange and Granville, in North Carolina, could have been properly spoken of as a part of what is now South Carolina.?[78] Was there ever a period in the early days of Carolina when the Northern Province or Colony was not generally understood to include the backwoods regions two hundred miles inland? We know that as late as 1700, and probably much later, nothing was understood to be meant by the "Northern Province" except the strip of coast settlement which lay to the *northeast* of Cape Fear. The very term "North Carolina," was unheard of, apparently, prior to 1691.[79] The neighborhood in which William Woods of Ireland settled was fully one hundred miles to the west of the territory which the Lords Proprietors of Carolina described as "our colony northeast of Cape Fear." It was probably Granville county when William Woods of Ireland went there first, but since 1751 it has been Orange county. If there was a time when the Northern Province did not include any territory which was not northeast of Cape Fear—and this no man can question—to what province or colony did the region where William of Ireland lived belong? Certainly not to *North* Carolina. Of course there came a time when North Carolina became a well-defined colony as to its precise boundaries, and when what is now Granville county was recognized by everybody as part of its territory. But the question is: Might not a plain

farmer, in writing a document in the year 1768, have spoken of the region which is now a part of North Carolina, under the name of South Carolina, without laying himself open to the charge of unheard-of ignorance? These thoughts are presented merely to suggest a possible solution of a very puzzling question. The only other possible explanation is that John Woods, or the man who wrote the bond for him to sign, wholly through inadvertence, wrote the word "South" when he would have written "North" had he been thinking of what he was doing. The present writer can think of several good reasons why Archibald Woods's children might have settled in what is now Granville County, North Carolina, but of none whatever for their going down into the malarial lowlands of the extreme southeast corner of South Carolina. But that William Woods and his sister Isabella and his father John did live for a time in one of the Carolinas is as certain as unimpeachable written documents can make it. It is extremely probable, also, that these three children of Archibald Woods had three married sisters who did the same thing, but of them we shall have occasion to speak a little farther on.

II—MRS. WILLIS BRAZEAL was, as we are inclined to believe, a daughter of Archibald Woods and his wife Isabella. Our only reason for this belief is that in a receipt which John Woods, the son of Archibald, gave to Col. John Woods (son and executor of Michael Woods of Blair Park) July 18, 1768, she is spoken of as one of the granddaughters of Michael Woods of Blair Park and as entitled to a legacy under his will. She and a Mrs. James Cowan and a Mrs. John Trimble are all joined in the same receipt. John Woods, who received a receipt for their legacies, states in the receipt that he acted by virtue of the letters of attorney which the husbands of those three women had given him. The question is: What child of Michael Woods of Blair Park was the father or mother of these three women? We have never read or heard of any granddaughter of old Michael who married a man having either of these names. That they were at the time (1768) living in Carolina seems almost certain, for John Woods, who got their legacies for them, was then a citizen of Granville county, South Carolina, and had letters of attorney for receiving their legacies from their grandfather's estate. It is reasonably certain that these three women, whose Christian names are unknown to us, were daughters of Archibald Woods and Isabella, and sisters to William Woods and Isabella Woods of South Carolina. Thus it would appear that no less than six of the children of Archibald Woods had gone down into one of the Carolinas to live prior to the year 1768, namely: William, John, Isabella, Mrs. Brazeal, Mrs. Cowan and Mrs. Trimble. Further than this we have no information in regard to them. We feel reasonably confident, however, that when their brother John returned to Virginia to reside and settled at his father's place on Catawba Creek (in what is now Roanoke county) some, if not all, of this little colony of Woodses came with them.

III—One of the children of Archibald Woods and Isabella was a daughter, ISABELLA WOODS, named for her mother. What has just been said concerning her brother William applies largely to her also. But for the information gathered from the old Col. John Woods papers we might never have known such a woman had lived. We incline to the belief that the year of her birth was about 1747. In 1768, when her brother John came up to Albemarle to get her legacy from her grandfather's estate, she was about twenty-one years old and unmarried. What became of her we have no means of knowing.

IV—A fourth child of Archibald Woods and his wife Isabella was JOHN WOODS, named, we doubt not, for his father's brother, Col. John Woods. One of his descendants, Judge John W. Woods, of Roanoke, Virginia, says he died in 1840 at the age of seventy-two. This would fix his birth in 1768, which of course is a mistake, for we give a fac-simile of a document he signed in 1768 when he was at least twenty years old. We fix the date of his birth at not later than 1748, and if he died

in 1840 he attained the ripe age of 92, and if a copyist wrote 92 carelessly, or read the figures hurriedly, it would have been an easy thing to have 72 taken for 92.

The residence of this son of Archibald in Carolina has already been discussed when speaking of his older brother William. That he was Archibald's son we argue because no other John Woods could have possibly met the requirements of the case. The only sons of old Michael of Blair Park (leaving Archibald out of the account) who had sons named John were William and John. This man who was a citizen of South Carolina in 1768 could scarcely have been the son of William Woods (the eldest son of Michael of Blair Park), because William's son John was not born till 1751, and hence was only 17 years old in 1768, and hence hardly mature enough to send on a journey of several hundred miles through a frontier region to collect and convey money. Then William's son John migrated to Kentucky about 1780, and there married a Miss Estell, and moved to Tennessee in 1808, and died there in 1815. In no particular does this John Woods meet the requirements of the case except that he was a grandson of old Michael, and named John. As for Col. John Woods's son John, we know he died in early infancy. We are therefore shut up to the conclusion that John Woods, of Granville county, South Carolina, was the son of Archibald Woods, and grandson of old Michael. There is not an argument to be urged against this view, so far as we know.

The receipts he gave, and the bond he and Andrew Wallace conjointly executed in July, 1768, (fac-similes or copies of which are given in Appendix F of this volume) will prove of interest to his descendants, more especially.

John Woods, son of Archibald and Isabella, married Miss Elizabeth Smith by whom he had eight children. The date and place of birth of these children is unknown to the writer. That John Woods did not long continue to reside in Carolina after 1768 seems certain, for it is known he spent a large part of his life at his father's plantation (Indian Camp) on Catawba Creek, where he died in 1840. If the Granville County in which he resided in 1768 was in South Carolina, on the coast near the Georgia line, we can readily understand how a man born and reared in Piedmont, Virginia, would soon want to get away from the rice fields and malarial regions of the low country and once more enjoy the mountain air and scenery which are nowhere more attractive than in the section in which his father settled in 1771. If, on the other hand, the Granville County in which he made his home in 1768 was in what is now called North Carolina, we find a very potent reason for getting out of that country in the confusion and bloodshed which prevailed in what is now Granville and Orange counties, North Carolina. The scenes of disorder in that region in 1765-1771, growing out of the oppressions of the colonial authorities and the insurrection of the Regulators, were quite enough to cause peaceably-disposed men to desire another place than that in which to live and rear a family. The original protest of the Regulators was published in Granville county, and at Alamance in 1771, near by, was fought that bloody battle between the Regulators and Governor Tryon's forces in which two hundred of the citizens of that region were slain. The year 1771, when these disorders culminated, was the same in which Archibald Woods (John's father) purchased the Indian Camp farm on Catawba Creek. It is more than likely that John moved back to Virginia about that time. It may be that part of his business in coming to Virginia in 1768 was to look around for a home in the Old Dominion. The road from Albemarle to Carolina led right past the Indian Camp place, and probably both John and his father made some examination of the country with the view to a settlement before John went back to Carolina. But whatever his motives, and whatever the date of his return, John Woods got back into Virginia, and spent the latter years of his life on the Catawba in what is now the county of Roanoke, one of the most picturesque regions in America.

The following is believed to be a correct list of the children of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith:

(a) Their first child was JAMES WOODS. The date and place of his birth, and the name of the lady he married are unknown to the writer. His death occurred November 15, 1856. He left the following children: 1, John, who removed to Illinois, and died there about six years ago, leaving three children, *Mary Woods Hatfield*, *Addie Woods Boston*, and *William;* 2, George Washington, who moved to Illinois and then to Nevada, did missionary work for a time in San Francisco, and left one daughter, *Virginia Lee Woods*, whose home is at Los Angeles, California; 3, Gabriel, who moved to Missouri; 4, Joseph.

(b) The second child of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith was ABSALOM WOODS, who was born in 1801, and died in 1871. He was thwarted in a love affair, and never married. He accumulated considerable property, was a man of iron will and acknowledged courage.

(c) The third child of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith was named ARCHIBALD. He died in Craig county, Virginia, in 1875. He left four children, as follows: 1, John T.; 2, Absalom; 3, Oliver D.; and 4, Alice, who married a Mr. Beard.

(d) The fourth child of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith was named SARAH L. She married William Doosing. His death occurred before hers. She died in 1870, leaving the following children: 1, Eliza, who married a Huffman; 2, John W.; 3, a daughter, who married Charles Thomas; 4, Martha; 5, Ann; and 6, Adline. All of these, except Mrs. Thomas, lived in Catawba Valley. Mrs. Thomas lived at Portland, Oregon.

(e) The fifth child of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith was named JOSEPH WOODS, concerning whom we have no information.

(f) The sixth child of John Woods and Elizabeth Smith was named WILLIAM WOODS, who was born in 1817, and died in 1882. His home throughout his life was at the old Indian Camp plantation on the Catawba, which his grandfather, Archibald Woods, bought from the McAfees in 1771, and which is now owned and occupied by one of William's sons. He was married twice, his first wife being Miss Harriet Painter; and his second, Miss Sarah Jane Edington. By each wife he had six children.

1. The first child of William Woods by his wife Harriet Painter was named Mary, who married John W. Thomas, and moved to Oregon, where she died. 2. The second child of William and Harriet was named Sarah, who married George W. Lewis, of Catawba, Virginia, and is now dead. 3. The third child of William and Harriet was named Archibald, who lives at Vine Grove, Kentucky. 4. The fourth child of William and Harriet was named Caroline, who married Major M. P. Spessard, of Craig County, Virginia. Her husband died some years ago and she resides still in Craig County. 5. The fifth child of William and Harriet was named Susan C., who married G. W. Wallace. Her husband's home was in Catawba Valley. She and he both died some years ago. 6. The last child of William by his first wife, Harriet, was named John, and died in infancy.

William Woods's second wife, as above stated, was Miss Sarah Jane Edington, and she bore him six children also. 7. William Woods's seventh child (his first by his second wife) was named John W., who now lives in Roanoke, Virginia, and a sketch of whose life will be found in Part III of this volume. 8. William Woods's eighth child (the second by his second wife) was named Amine E., who died in 1884. 9. William Woods's ninth child (the third by his second wife) was named Joseph R., who owns, and lives on, the old Indian Camp homestead. 10. The tenth child of William Woods (the fourth by his second wife) was named Anna L., who lives at Catawba, Virginia. 11. The eleventh child of William Woods (the fifth by second wife) was James Pleasants Woods, who now resides in Roanoke, Virginia, and a sketch of whom will be found in Part III of this volume. 12. The twelfth and last child of William Woods (the sixth and last by his second wife, Sarah Jane Edington) was named Oscar W., who

is a surgeon in the United States Army, and is now stationed in the Philippine Islands.

It is said that John Woods and Elizabeth Smith had, besides those enumerated, two sons, both of whom were named John for their father, and both of whom died in early infancy.

V—MRS. JAMES COWAN was, as we incline to believe, one of the children of Archibald Woods and his wife Isabella. Our reasons for this belief have already been stated in a foregoing paragraph treating of her brothers William and John, to which the reader is referred. Of the date of her birth, or marriage, her migration to Carolina, etc., we know nothing whatever. That she was a granddaughter of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and received a legacy from his estate in 1768, there is not a shadow of doubt. That she was the daughter of Archibald Woods seems almost certain. That her home in 1768 was in Carolina is extremely probable.

VI—MRS. JOHN TRIMBLE was, as we incline to believe, one of Archibald Woods's children. Her case is precisely like that of the Mrs. Brazeal and the Mrs. Cowan above considered. She was, beyond all question, a grandchild of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and in 1768 received her legacy, as such, from his estate. See above what is said of her brothers William and John.

VII—JAMES WOODS, one of the sons of Archibald and Isabella, was born about the year 1755, in Albemarle county, Virginia, and died in Kentucky (probably in Mercer county, or, possibly, in Fayette county) about the year 1797. He was the progenitor of a large number of Woodses, many of whom lived in Mercer county, Kentucky, and some of whom are there at this time. His wife's Christian name was Jane. That he migrated to Kentucky some time prior to 1787 is certain, but just how long before that date we cannot say. The records of Fayette and Mercer counties might throw light on this point, and the land office records at Frankfort would also be likely to furnish some information concerning him, especially if he entered lands anywhere in Kentucky. If he moved west in 1785 he was then a man of about thirty years, and most likely several of his children had been born in Botetourt county, Virginia, and were carried on pack-horses through the Great Wilderness to Kentucky. The records of Botetourt county, Virginia, and Mercer county, Kentucky, furnish some information concerning James and his wife Jane, and their seven children. From these records, and from Judge John W. Woods, of Roanoke, Virginia (who is a grandson of a brother of this James Woods) all the information of the present writer has been obtained. James seems to have been a citizen of Fayette county, Kentucky, June 6, 1787, for at that time he gave a certain power of attorney to his brothers in Virginia; but it is next to certain that he very soon after moved over into the adjoining county of Mercer, for the records in both Kentucky and Virginia show that by September 24, 1799, he was dead, and his widow, Jane, with his seven children, were living in Mercer county. A suit of some kind (friendly, perhaps) had been brought by four of James's brothers, (John, Andrew, Archibald and Joseph) to compel the infant heirs of James and Jane to convey to them the old Indian Camp plantation on Catawba Creek, Virginia. In this suit Jane appears as the guardian of her children. James probably died in the spring or summer of the year 1799, and in Mercer county. He left seven children.

(a) One of the children of James Woods and Jane was named PEGGY, who was probably born in Botetourt county, Virginia. She was a minor in September, 1799, and may have been born about 1780. She is the first one of the children mentioned in the suit brought by her father's brothers in 1799, though she may not have been her parent's first child. We have no knowledge of her subsequent history. Margaret was no doubt her real name, of which Peggy was a sort of pet-name.

(b) JOSEPH WOODS was another child of James and Jane, and was probably born not far from 1784. He was in Mercer county with his widowed mother in September, 1799, and under twenty-one years of age. We do not know whom

he married. It is reasonably certain that this man was the father of the late Harvey Woods, a farmer, who died a few years ago, and whose home was on the west side of the turnpike between Harrodsburg and McAfee, Kentucky. The writer called to see him in the summer of 1895, and he was then perhaps seventy-five years old. That he was descended from Archibald Woods and Isabella through their son James Woods seems extremely probable. Joseph Woods, the son of James, was about thirty-five or forty years old when this Mr. Harvey Woods was born.

(c) ARCHIBALD WOODS was the name of another of the sons of James and Jane and went to Kentucky with his parents some time prior to 1787, when he was a small child. He must have made the long and dangerous journey through the Wilderness on a pack-saddle, as did thousands of little folks in the pioneer period. Archibald Woods (son of James), as we believe, reached his maturity about the year 1800, and married a Miss Anna Adams. This lady, we strongly incline to believe, was either the daughter or niece of that gallant young Samuel Adams (son of William Adams) who was one of the five sturdy men who composed the famous "McAfee Company" which explored Kentucky in 1773. He was then a young man of about nineteen years, the youngest in the party. He was probably a married man by 1778 (the year before the McAfees, Adamses, McCouns, etc., moved their families to the Salt River Settlement in Kentucky.) If the Miss Anna Adams who became the wife of James Woods's son Archibald was Samuel Adams's first child, she probably was born about the summer of 1779, came to Kentucky with the associated McAfee, Adams, Woods and McCoun families in the fall of 1799, and married Archibald Woods about the year 1800. A son of Archibald Woods married a Miss Cleveland and she has a son, Mr. Henry Cleveland Wood (he spells the name without the final s), who is prominent in literary circles, and resides at Harrodsburg, Ky. Many of the details here suggested are, of course, presented merely as reasonable conjectures, and not as authentic history. It is barely possible that Archibald, the son of James Woods, is not the man who went to Mercer county, Kentucky, and became the husband of Anna Adams—it may have been his uncle Archibald, the brother of James, instead of his son. Of him we shall now have occasion to speak.

VIII.—ARCHIBALD WOODS, JR., was, as we incline to believe, the eighth child of Archibald and Isabella—one of the numberless Archibald Woodses that give the genealogist of this family no small trouble. The year we have fixed upon as the probable one for his birth is 1757. We know next to nothing of his life. If he is the man who settled in Mercer county, Kentucky, and was the progenitor of the Mr. Henry Cleveland Wood of Harrodsburg, then, of course, we should be obliged to revise some of our calculations given in the preceding section devoted to James Woods. But whilst this Archibald Woods, Jr., may have gone to Kentucky late in the eighteenth century, we do not think he was the one who married Miss Adams, unless he was at least twenty-five years her senior.

IX.—ANDREW WOODS was another son of Archibald and Isabella, and was probably born about the year 1760. In a previous part of this chapter, when discussing the number of children Michael Woods of Blair Park had, we mentioned various coincidences going to show that the Andrew Woods (1722-1781) who lived close to Michael's Blair Park home, and afterwards settled about eight miles southwest of Buchanan, Virginia, was a son of old Michael and a brother to Archibald of Indian Camp. We are reminded of one other coincidence in the fact that Andrew Woods (1722-1781) named one of his sons Archibald, and that Archibald of Indian Camp named one of his sons Andrew. This is just what we find nearly all the brothers in this family doing—they perpetuated family names by naming their children for their parents, uncles, aunts, brothers and sisters. Of this Andrew, son of Archibald and Isabella, we know but little. Judge Woods, of Roanoke, Va., says Andrew went to Kentucky, but knows nothing further.

X.—JOSEPH WOODS we regard as the last of the children of Archibald and Isabella, and he was probably born about the year 1763. He spent his whole life on the Indian Camp homestead in the Catawba Valley, dying there in 1832. He was twice married, but no children were born to him. In his will he devised the sum of $3,000.00 to Montgomery Presbytery. That devise has been known ever since as the "Woods Legacy"; and despite all the commotions and ruin of our Civil War, it remains intact to this day, the interest on it constituting an annual contribution to the cause of Christ when the pious donor has now been in his grave for more than seventy years.

J.—MARTHA WOODS was, as we incline to believe, the ninth child of Michael of Blair Park and Mary Campbell, and was probably born in Ireland in 1720, only four years before the migration of her parents to the American colonies. Martha was a girl of fourteen when her father settled at the eastern foot of the Blue Ridge in what was then Goochland County (now Albemarle). Her eldest brother, William, had married Susannah Wallace; her sister Hannah had married William Wallace; and her sister Margaret had married Andrew Wallace; so that intermarriages with first cousins had become fashionable in the two families when the time came for her to give her cousin, Peter Wallace, Jr., an answer to his proposal. She simply fell into line, so to speak, and married him. From that time (1744) forward her home was near where Lexington, Virginia, now stands. There she reared a large family of children, and there, in 1790, she died, her husband having preceded her six years. In the previous chapter, which is devoted to the Wallaces, additional items can be seen bearing on her history where her husband's career is treated of.

K.—ANDREW WOODS was, as we believe, the tenth child of Michael of Blair Park, and Mary Campbell, and was probably born about 1722, two years before his parents migrated to America. It can scarcely be questioned that Andrew Woods accompanied his parents in 1734, when they went up the Great Valley, and ascended the Blue Ridge at the gap afterwards called Woods's Gap, and came to a halt at its eastern base in what was then Goochland County. Andrew was then a boy of about twelve years. In about the year 1750, when he was about twenty-eight years old, he married Martha Poage, daughter of Robert Poage, of Augusta County. His plantation in Albemarle was very close to the old Blair Park homestead. He owned five hundred acres of land in one place, and nine hundred acres in another, in Albemarle. In 1765, about three years after the death of his father (Michael of Blair Park) he moved away from Albemarle, and settled in Botetourt County near Mill Creek Church, about nine miles southwest of Buchanan, Virginia. He was one of the first magistrates appointed for Botetourt County, and was made its sheriff in 1777. His death occurred in 1781. That he was a son of Michael of Blair Park has been amply proven, as we believe, in the earlier part of the present chapter of this volume, and that question may be considered as settled until some one can produce positive and reliable evidence to the contrary. He and his wife Martha Poage left eight children, who will be mentioned in the order in which they are presented by the Rev. Dr. Edgar Woods of Charlottesville, Virginia, in a pamphlet he published in July, 1894. That pamphlet contains a vast array of definite information concerning Andrew and Martha, and their descendants, of incalculable interest to all who desire to be informed about this important branch of the Woods family. That publication is a model of its kind, revealing in its author the utmost thoroughness of research, and conscientious care. To Dr. Woods we are indebted for nearly everything we know of the Andrew Woods branch. A part of the results he secured will now be given.

CHILDREN OF ANDREW WOODS (1722-1781) AND MARTHA POAGE (1728-1818.)

I.—JAMES WOODS. BORN —— DIED 1817.

II.—ELIZABETH WOODS. Born ——. Died 1797.

III.—REBECCA WOODS. Born ——. Died ——.

IV.—ROBERT WOODS. Born ——. Died ——

V.—ANDREW WOODS, JR. Born 1759. Died 1831.

VI.—ARCHIBALD WOODS. Born 1764. Died 1846.

VII.—MARY WOODS. Born 1766. Died 1830.

VIII.—MARTHA WOODS. Born ——. Died 1834.

I.—JAMES WOODS, first child of Andrew and Martha, married Nancy Rayburn December 26, 1776, resided in Montgomery County, Virginia, and died January 27, 1817. Several of his sons and daughters migrated to Nashville at an early day, and that city has never been blessed with a higher type of Christian citizenship than his descendants have exhibited to the world. To this couple were born the following nine children:

(a) Andrew Woods, who was born September 19, 1777. The name of the lady he married is unknown. His home was in St. Charles, Missouri. He left four children, to wit: 1, Andrew Woods, who lived in Louisiana, married Elizabeth ——— and left three children; 2, Adine Woods, who married a Mr. Courtney, and left three children; 3, Robert Woods; 4, Emily Woods, who married a Mr. Whitman, and left four children.

(b) Joseph Woods was the second child of James and Nancy. He was born June 22, 1779, and died April 20, 1859. He made his home at Nashville, Tenn.

(c) Margaret Woods was the third child of James and Nancy, and was born September 12, 1781. She married John Moore Walker, of Lyon County, Ky. She left eight children: 1, James Walker; 2, Catharine Rutherford Walker, who married Rev. Robert A. Lapsley, and by him had seven children, one of whom was the late Judge James Woods Lapsley, of Anniston, Ala., whose wife was Sarah E. Pratt, and of whom a sketch will be found in Part III of this work; 3, Agnes Walker, who married Joseph Norvell; 4, Mary Jane Walker, who married Dr. John D. Kelly; 5, Joseph W. Walker; 6, Robert W. Walker, who married Lelia Taylor, and whose son, Mr. Creed Walker, of Little Rock, Ark., is the father of Mrs. Alfred D. Mason, of Memphis, Tenn., of whom a sketch is given in Part III of this work; 7, John M. Walker; and 8, Elsie Walker, who married Reuben Kay.

(d) Robert Woods was the fourth child of James and Nancy, born Dec. 25, 1786, and lived in Nashville, Tenn. He married Sarah West and left seven children: 1, James Woods, the second, who married Elizabeth Campbell; 2, Josephine, who married John Branch; 3, Robert F., who married Marina Cheatham; 4, Joseph, who married Frances Foster, and left three children; 5, Theora Woods, who married a Mr. Handy; 6, Robina Woods, who lived in Nashville, married William Armistead, and left six children; and 7, Julia Woods, who lived in Memphis, Tennessee, married R. C. Foster, and left seven children. Mr. Edward Foster, a prominent and honored merchant of Nashville, Tenn., was their fourth child, a sketch of whom is given in Part III.

(e) The fifth child of James and Nancy was named Martha Woods, who was born October 4, 1790, and resided in Montgomery County, Virginia. She married Alexander H. Robertson, by whom she had the following four children, to wit: 1, James W. Robertson, who married a Miss Graham, and lived at Dover, Tenn.; 2, Robert Robertson; 3, Joseph Robertson; and 4, Alexander H. Robertson, Jr.

(f) The sixth child of James and Nancy was named James Woods, Jr., who was born December 10, 1793, and lived in Nashville, Tennessee. He married Elizabeth A. Kay, by whom he had eight children, to wit: 1, Robert K. Woods, who married Susan Berry, resided in St. Louis, and left four children, namely: Susan, married Givens Campbell; Margaret, who married a Mr. Greenleaf; Anne Lee, who married a Mr. Bliss; and Robert K., Jr.; 2, Margaret Woods, who married a Mr. Handy; 3, Anna Woods, who married R. B. Castleman, lived in Nashville, and left a daugh-

ter (*Elizabeth*), and a son (*James W.*); 4, Joseph Woods; 5, James, who married Adeline Milam, and left one son, *Mark M. Woods*; 6, Andrew, who lived in Nashville, married Miss Love Washington, and left a son and a daughter, *James and Mary*; 7, Elizabeth, who married Samuel Kirkman, lived in Nashville, and left two daughters, *Elizabeth and Susan;* 8, Susan, who married Mr. G. G. O'Bryan, of Nashville, Tennessee, by whom she had two daughters, *Susan and Barsha.*

(g) The seventh child of James and Nancy was named ELSIE WOODS, who was born May 10, 1795, and lived in Nashville, Tenn.

(h) The eighth child of James and Nancy was named ARCHIBALD WOODS, who was born May 29, 1787. He resided in Nashville, Tennessee.

(j) The ninth child of James and Nancy was named AGNES GREEN WOODS, who married Charles C. Trabue, and resided in Ralls County, Missouri. By him Agnes had eight children, as follows: 1, Joseph Trabue; 2, Robert Trabue, who married Mary Bibb; 3, Anthony Trabue, who resided at Hannibal, Missouri, and married Christina Manley; 4, Charles C. Trabue, Jr.; 5, Sarah Trabue, who married, first, John B. Stevens, and, later, William Shivers; 6, George Trabue, who married Ellen Dunn; 7, Jane Trabue, who married J. H. Reynolds; and 8, Martha Trabue, who married George Thompson, and lived in Nashville, Tennessee. This lovely Christian lady it was the writer's privilege to meet a year or two before her death, and she impressed him as one of the worthiest representatives of Andrew Woods's branch of the family. George Thompson and Martha Trabue had eight children, as follows: *Agnes,* who married G. G. O'Bryan, of Nashville, and had a daughter, *Agnes O'Bryan; Elizabeth,* who married John P. W. Brown; *Charles,* who married Elizabeth Weeks; *Martha; Frances; John Hill,* who married Agnes Ricketts; *Jane,* who married Alfred Howell, and had by him three children; and *Catharine,* who married Joseph L. Weakley.

II.—ELIZABETH WOODS, the second child of Andrew Woods and Martha Poage lived in Rockbridge County, Virginia, and died in January, 1797. Her husband was David Cloyd, by whom she had nine children. He was possibly a brother or near relative of the James Cloyd who married Jean Lapsley, daughter of Joseph, Sr.

(a) The first child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named MARTHA, who married Matthew Houston, and lived at Natural Bridge, Virginia. Their children were the following: 1, Sophia; 2, Emily; 3, Andrew; 4, David; 5, Matthew Hale, who had a son, the *Rev. Dr. Matthew Hale Houston,* now of Waynesboro, Virginia, who is a consecrated and learned minister of the Gospel, and 6, Cynthia.

(b) The second child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named DAVID, JR.

(c) The third child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named MARGARET, who married Rev. Matthew Houston, and lived at Lebanon, Ohio. They had two sons, to wit: 1, Andrew C.; and 2, Romaine F., who married and left three children.

(d) The fourth child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named MARY, who married a McClung.

(e) The fifth child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named ANDREW.

(f) The sixth child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named JAMES.

(f) The seventh child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named ELIZABETH.

(g) The eighth child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth was named JOSEPH.

(h) The ninth and last child of David Cloyd and Elizabeth (according to the order in which she is mentioned by the Rev. Dr. Edgar Woods) was named CYNTHIA.

III.—REBECCA WOODS was the third child of Andrew Woods (1722-1781) and Martha Poage. She lived in Ohio County, West Virginia. Her husband was Isaac Kelly, by whom she had nine children.

(a) The first child of Isaac Kelly and his wife Rebecca Woods was named ISAAC KELLY, JR., who married a Miss Gad, and left four children, to wit: 1, Hamilton; 2, Simeon; 3, Wesley; and 4, Benjamin.

(b) The second child of Isaac and Rebecca (not, however, the pair mentioned in Genesis) was named JOHN KELLY, who was born in 1784, and died in 1820. He married Elizabeth Wilson, and lived in Ohio County, West Virginia, leaving seven children, to wit: 1, Jane, who married William Miller; 2, Isaac; 3, A. Wilson; 4, Aaron; 5, Sarah; 6, Rebecca; 7, Rev. John Kelly.

(c) The third child of Isaac and Rebecca was named JAMES KELLY, who was twice married. His first wife was Jane Robinson, and his second was Eliza Gooding. Dr. Edgar Woods gives the names of seven of James's children, but does not state which wife was the mother of any of them, as follows: 1, Isaac; 2, Samuel; 3, Joseph; 4, David; 5, Alexander; 6, Otis; and 7, Eliza.

(d) The fourth child of Isaac Kelly and Rebecca was named BENJAMIN, who married Charlotte Cross, by whom he had two children, to wit: 1, Isaac; and 2, Eliza J.

(e) The fifth child of Isaac Kelly and Rebecca was NANCY, who married Robert Poage, and by him had four children, to wit: 1, Rebecca; 2, Isaac K.; 3, Gabriel; and 4, Elijah.

(f) The sixth child of Isaac and Rebecca was MARTHA, who married Alexander Mitchell, by whom she had six children, in the naming of which the reputation of this family for adhering to scriptural appellatives was very well maintained, as follows: 1, Nancy; 2, Samuel; 3, Isaac; 4, Jane; 5, Elizabeth; and 6, Zachariah.

(g) The seventh child of Isaac and Rebecca was REBECCA, who married John Mays and lived at West Alexander, Pa.

(h) The eighth child of Isaac and Rebecca was SIMEON.

(j) The ninth and last child of Isaac and Rebecca was NARCISSA, who married Jonathan McCulloch.

IV.—ROBERT WOODS was the fourth child of Andrew and Martha, whose home was in Ohio County, West Virginia. He married, first, a Miss Lovely Caldwell; and, next, a Miss Elizabeth Eoff. He had three children.

(a) The first child of Robert Woods (by which wife, the writer is not informed) was named ROBERT C., who married Margaret A. Quarrier, and lived in Wheeling, West Virginia, leaving six children, as follows: 1, Emily, who married Thomas G. Black, and had six children; 2, Mary, who married Alexander Q. Whittaker, and left eight children; 3, Harriet, who married Beverly M. Eoff, and left eight children; 4, Helen, who married William Tallant, and left six children; 5, Margaret, who married Robert A. McCabe, and left three children; and 6, Alexander, who married Josaphine McCabe, and left three children.

(b) The second child of Robert Woods was named ANDREW P.

(c) The third child of Robert Woods was named ELIZA JANE.

V.—ANDREW WOODS, JR., was the fifth child of Andrew and Martha, and was born in 1759, and died February 19, 1831. He married Miss Mary Mitchell McCulloch. His home was in Wheeling, West Virginia. To this pair seven children were born.

(a) The first child of Andrew, Jr., and Mary Mitchell McCulloch was named JANE, who became the wife of Rev. James Hoge of Columbus, Ohio, to whom she bore seven children, to wit: 1, Elizabeth, who married the Rev. Robert Nall, of Tuskegee, Alabama, and left seven children, among whom were the well-known Presbyterian ministers, Rev. Dr. James Nall, and the Rev. Dr. Robert Nall; 2, Mary M., who married Robert Neil, of Columbus, Ohio, and left seven children; 3, Susanna P., who married the Rev. M. A. Sackett, of Cleveland, Ohio, and left three children; 4, Rev. Moses A. Hoge, who married, first, Mary B. Miller, and later Elizabeth Wills, and left two children; 5, John J. Hoge, who married, first, Ann L. Wilson, and, later, Mary Calhoun, leaving four children; 6, Margaret J. Hoge, who married J. William Baldwin; and 7, Martha A. Hoge, who married Alfred Thomas, and left four children.

(b) The second child of Andrew Woods, Jr., and Mary M. McCulloch was named ANDREW, who mar-

ried Miss Rebecca Brison and by her had eight children; 1, James Brison Woods, who is a prominent business man in New Orleans, La., a sketch of whose family will be found in Part III of this work; 2, Oliver B. Woods, who married Ann M. Anderson; 3, Luther T. Woods, who married, first, Mary E. Niel, and later, Mary Hopkins; 4, John Woods, who married Marilla Hale; 5, Archibald Woods, who married Mary Matthews; 6, Alfred Woods, who married Jane Railey; 7, Rev. Henry Woods, who married Mary Ewing; and 8, Rev. Francis M. Woods, D. D., now a prominent minister of the Presbyterian Church, and in charge of a church at Martinsburg, West Virginia. Rev. Dr. F. M. Woods married Julia Junkin, by whom he has the following children, to wit: Rev. *David J. Woods,* now of Blacksburg, Virginia; *Mitchell Woods; Andrew H. Woods; Janet Woods; Mary Woods;* and *Rebecca Woods.*

(c) The third child of Andrew Woods, Jr., and his wife Mary M. McCulloch, was named SAMUEL, who resides at Woodbridge, California. He married Elizabeth Leffler, by whom he had eight children, as follows: 1, Andrew, who married Jane E. Leffler, and had seven children; 2, Mary Jane, who married William L. Manly; 3, Margaret T., who married J. Henderson, of Stockton, California, and had three children; 4, Jacob, who married Elizabeth V. Ward, and has one son, Edwin; 5, Hugh M.; 6, Rebecca; 7, Samuel, who married Arlona Ellis, and had four children; and 7, Susan E., who married Lafayette Creech, and left seven children.

(d) The fourth child of Andrew Woods, Jr., and Mary M. McCulloch was ROBERT M., who married Rebecca Vause, and lived at Urbana, Ohio. By her he had six children, to wit: 1, Rachel; 2, Alfred A.; 3, Mary M., who married J. W. Ogden, and left one daughter, *Anne W.*; 4, William N., who married Ann McPherson, and left two daughters; 5, Jane H. who married Griffith Ellis, and left six children; and 6, Robert T.

(e) The fifth child of Andrew J. and Mary Mitchell (McCulloch) Woods was named MARGARET, who married Martin L. Todd, and lived at Bellaire, Ohio. She left a daughter, Jane.

(f) The sixth child of Andrew, Jr., and Mary Mitchell (McCulloch) Woods was named MARY ANN, who married Archibald Todd.

(g) The seventh and last child of Andrew Woods, Jr., and his wife Mary Mitchell (McCulloch) was named ALFRED, who married Elizabeth Sims and lived at Bellaire, Ohio. He left twelve children, as follows: 1, Margaret T., who married Joseph S. Mellor, and left six children; 2, Louisa, who married S. Colin Baker, of St. Louis, Mo., and had by him ten children; 3, Isabel; 4, T. Sims, who married Mary Pancoast, and left three children; 5, Robert; 6, William A., who married Emma Zinn, and left two children; 7, Launcelot, who married Charlotte Teagarten; 8, Elizabeth, who married John W. Carrall; 9, Mary Ann, who married Henry Basel, of St. Louis, and by him had ten children; 10, Martha N., who married Richard Ritey, and had four children; 11, Alfred, who married Esther Vogel, and left two children; and 12, Edgar, who married Louisa James, and resided in St. Louis.

VI.—ARCHIBALD WOODS was the fifth child of Andrew Woods and Martha Poage. He was born November 14, 1764, and died October 26, 1846. His home was in Ohio County, West Virginia. His wife was Ann Poage, by whom he had a dozen children.

(a) ELIZABETH WOODS was the first child of Archibald and Ann. She married George Paull of St. Clairsville, Ohio, by whom she had three children, as follows: 1, Rev. Alfred Paull, who married Mary Weed, by whom he had six children.

(b) The second child of Archibald and Ann was THOMAS, who married Mary Brison, and lived in Wheeling, West Virginia. Thomas and Mary had six children, to wit: 1, Ann Eliza, who married James S. Polhemus; 2, Sarah M.; 3, Theodore; 4, Archibald; 5, Rev. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Va., the author of the pamphlet from which the present writer has derived nearly all of the information he possesses concerning the Andrew

Woods branch of the Woods clan. A sketch of Dr. Edgar Woods will be found in Part III of this volume. Thomas and Mary also had, 6, a daughter named Lydia. In the list as given by Dr. Woods, himself, 7, a John Henry McKee is also set down as one of the children of Thomas Woods, and it appears that he married a Miss Tabler, by whom he had two children. Possibly he was an adopted son. Dr. Edgar Woods (the fifth child) married Miss Maria C. Baker, and has by her seven children, of whom further notice will be made in Dr. Woods's sketch in Part III.

(c) Martha Woods was the third child of Archibald and Ann, who married Charles D. Knox, of Wheeling, W. Va., and by whom she had the following children, to wit: 1, Franklin W. Knox, who married Ruth Stewart; 2, Stewart Knox; and 3, Robert Knox.

(d) Franklin Woods was the fourth child of Archibald and Ann.

(e) Nancy Woods was the fifth child of Archibald and Ann.

(f) Mary Woods was the sixth child of Archibald and Ann.

(g) George W. Woods was the seventh child of Archibald and Ann, and married Mary Cresap Smith.

(h) William Woods was the eighth child of Archibald and Ann. He probably died when a babe, as another child in this family received this name.

(j) John Woods was the ninth child of Archibald and Ann, and married Ruth Jacob, by whom he had six children, as follows: 1, Archibald; 2, Joseph J.; 3, George W.; 4, Hamilton; 5, Anne M.; and 6, Martha V.

(k) Emily Woods was the tenth child of Archibald and Ann.

(l) William Woods—the second of this name in this family—was the eleventh child of Archibald and Ann.

(m) Hamilton Woods was the twelfth and last child of Archibald Woods and his wife Ann Poage.

VII.—MARY WOODS was the seventh child of Andrew Woods and his wife Martha Poage. She was born February 19, 1766, and died May 25, 1830. She married James Poage, and lived at Ripley, Ohio. She had by him thirteen children.

(a) Martha Poage was the first child of James Poage and Mary Woods, and married a gentleman of her own name—Mr. George Poage.

(b) John C. Poage was the second child of James and Mary.

(c) Rev. Andrew W. Poage was the third child of James and Mary, and lived at Yellow Springs, Ohio. He married Jane Gay, by whom he had six children, as follows: 1, Nancy M. Poage, who married Thomas H. Reynolds; 2, James Poage; 3, John G. Poage, who married Sarah J. Jones; 4, Andrew Poage, who lived at Pomona, California, and married Mary B. Kline, by whom he had three children; 5, Mary Jane Poage; and 6, Margaretta E. Poage.

(d) Mary Poage was the fourth child of James and Mary.

(e) James Poage (Jr.) was the fifth child of James and Mary.

(f) Robert Poage was the sixth child of James and Mary, and lived at Ripley, Ohio. He married Sarah Kirker, by whom he had nine children, as follows: 1, Rev. James S. Poage, who married Ann Voris, and after her death, Susan L. Evans, leaving eight children; 2, Thomas K. Poage, who married Sarah J. Henry, and, after her death, Jane Brickell, and left ten children; 3, John N. Poage, who married Eliza Ann McMillan, by whom he had one child, *Alice E.;* 4, Sarah E.; 5, Alfred B., who married Esther A. Work, by whom he had four children; 6, William C.; 7, Joseph C.; 8, Mary Jane; and 9, Ann E., who married, first, William W. Wafer, by whom she had three children, and, later, Andrew Hunter, by whom she had nine children.

(g) Elizabeth Poage was the seventh child of James and Mary, who lived at Ripley, Ohio. She married the Rev. Isaac Shephend, and left a son, 1, James Hoge Shephend.

(h) ANN POAGE was the eighth child of James and Mary. She lived at Ripley, Ohio. She married Alexander Mooney, and had by him six children, as follows: 1, John; 2, James; 3, Elizabeth; 4, Sophia; 5, Thomas; and 6, Sarah Ann.

(j) REBECCA POAGE was the ninth child of James and Mary. She married John B. Knaw, and lived at Yellow Springs, Ohio.

(k) MARGARET POAGE was the tenth child of James and Mary. She married the Rev. Thomas S. Williamson, and lived at St. Peter, Minnesota. She had ten children, as follows: 1, William B. Williamson; 2, Mary P.; 3, James G.; 4, Elizabeth P., who married Andrew Hunter and had by him a daughter, *Elizabeth*, and a son *John K.* Elizabeth Hunter married the Rev. E. J. Lindsay; 5, Rev. John P. Williamson, who married Sarah A. Vannice, and had by her eight children; 6, Professor Andrew W. Williamson, of Rock Island, Illinois, who is one of the original promoters of this publication, a sketch of whom will be found in Part III of this work; 7, Nancy J.; 8, Smith B.; 9, Martha, who married William Stout, of Great Falls, Montana, and had by him two sons, *Thomas* and *Alfred J.*; and 10, Henry M., who married Helen M. Ely, by whom he had two sons, *Sumner* and *William*.

(l) SARAH POAGE was the eleventh child of James and Mary. She married the Rev. Gideon Pond, and by him she had seven children, as follows: 1, Ruth; 2, Edward; 3, Sarah; 4, George; 5, Mary; 6, Elizabeth, and 7, Ellen.

(m) THOMAS H. POAGE was the twelfth child of James and Mary.

(n) REV. GEORGE C. POAGE was the thirteenth and last child of James and Mary. He married Jane Riggs, by whom he had five children, to wit: 1, James; 2, Stephen Woods; 3, Mary Ann; 4, George; and 5, Arabella.

VIII.—MARTHA WOODS was the eighth and last child of Andrew Woods and Martha Poage. She died December 14, 1834. Her home was in Botetourt County, Virginia. She married Henry Walker, and by him had nine children.

(a) ANDREW W. WALKER was the first child of Henry Walker and Martha Woods. Andrew's home was at Pott's Creek, Virginia. He married Elizabeth Handly, and by her had a family of fourteen children, to wit: 1, Henry, who married Maria Shawver, and had by her ten children; 2, John, who married Miss Nutten; 3, Archibald; 4, Margaret, who married Thomas Harvey and had by him three children; 5, Martha, who married Joseph Harvey, and by him had five children; 6, Emily, who married Israel Morris, and by him had six children; 7, Mary, who married George Dondermilk, and had by him eight children; 8, Elizabeth, who married Andrew Elmore, and by him had seven children; 9, Jane, who married John Ferrier; 10, Malvina, who married James Richardson; 11, Andrew; 12, Floyd; 13, Newton, who married Julia Rapp, and by her had four children—*Euphemia, Beirne, Morris, and Samuel;* and 14, Cynthia.

(b) WILLIAM WALKER was the second child of Henry and Martha. His home was in Warren County, Kentucky. He was twice married. His first wife was Eleanor Moore, and his second was Sarah Lapsley. He left six children, as follows: 1, Robert; 2, Henry; 3, Martha; 4, John L.; 5, Catharine; and 6, Adeline, who married W. J. Landrum.

(c) ROBERT WALKER was the third child of Henry and Martha. His home was at Gap Mills, West Virginia. He married Jane Allen, by whom he had five children, as follows: 1, Ann Eliza; 2, Henry, who married Agnes Johnson; 3, Robert, who married a Miss Robertson; 4, Martha, who married Jackson Clark; and 5, Lydia.

(d) JAMES WALKER was the fourth child of Henry and Martha. He lived in McDonough County, Illinois. He married Margaret Bailey, by whom he had four children, to wit: 1, William S. B., who married Elizabeth Head; 2, Martha Woods, who married James M. Wilson; 3, Henry M., who married Isabel Head; and 4, James W., who married Julia Head.

(e) HENRY WALKER was the fifth child of Henry and Martha. His home was in Mercer County, West Virginia. He married Mary Snidow, by

whom he had nine children, as follows: 1, Martha, who married George Snidow, and by him had five children; 2, William H.; 3, Christian; 4, Mary; 5, James; 6, Eliza; 7, Lewis, who married Jane Carr, and by her had three children; 8, Sarah; and 9, Elvira.

(f) ARCHIBALD WALKER was the sixth child of Henry and Martha.

(g) JOSEPH WALKER was the seventh child of Henry and Martha. His home was in Braxton County, West Virginia. He married Maria Gray, and by her he had four children, as follows: 1, Lucretia; 2, Martha; 3, Robert; and 4, Henry.

(h) GEORGE WALKER was the eighth child of Henry and Martha. His home was in Giles County, Virginia. He married Susan Eakin, and by her had seven children, as follows: 1, Edwin; 2, Leander; 3, John A.; and 4, Avaninta, who married Cyrus Reynolds, and had three children.

(j) MARY WALKER was the ninth and last child of Henry and Martha. She married Tilghman Snodgrass, by whom she had ten children, as follows: 1, Robert L.; 2, Henry W.; 3, Newton; 4, James Woods; 5, Cyrus; 6, Charles E.; 7, T. Thomas; 8, Lewis A.; 9, Jane; and 10, Mary M.

This brings us to the end of the lists of so many of the families of children descended from Andrew Woods and Martha Poage as it was deemed advisable to give in this volume. The more recent descendants are given pretty fully by Dr. Edgar Woods in the pamphlet several times mentioned, and to that publication those who desire further details are referred. In studying these tables the writer has been impressed with the unusually large number of ministers of the Gospel to be found among the descendants of Andrew Woods of Botetourt. None of his brothers or sisters can make such a creditable showing. Andrew's branch might well be called the "Preacher's Branch."

L.—SARAH WOODS was, as we incline to believe, the eleventh and last child of Michael of Blair Park and Mary Campbell, and may have been born in Ireland about the year 1724. In that case she was probably a babe in her mother's arms when the Woodses crossed the Atlantic that year. Concerning her early life we know scarcely anything whatever. We met her name first in 1761, when her father mentions her by name in his will as "my daughter Sarah," and leaves her a small sum of money. She must have been married long prior to 1761, and yet her father does not refer in any way to that fact. And in the papers of Col. John Woods, executor of the estate of his and Sarah's father, we find no receipts to show that Sarah or any of her children ever got the money devised to them by Michael's will. In fact, the same is partly true as to her brother Archibald—some of his children drew their legacies, but he himself did not, so far as the receipts now in the writer's possession show. It is likely, however, that the executors of Michael's estate kept another receipt book, beside the one now extant, which has long since been lost. That Sarah Woods did marry a Mr. Joseph Lapsley is absolutely certain, but the date of their marriage is unknown. We find her husband buying a farm from Benjamin Borden July 6, 1742, near where Lexington, Virginia, now stands, and we are compelled to assume that he was then at least twenty-one years of age. Sarah was then about eighteen. The probability is that Joseph and Sarah were then but recently married, and were about setting up housekeeping for the first time. That was only about six months prior to the Indian raid into the Valley which resulted in the cruel death of John McDowell, who was the husband of Magdalen (Woods) McDowell, Sarah's own sister. We do not know the date of Sarah's death, but we know that she was alive in 1791 when her son Joseph made his will, for he gives to her a life interest in his whole estate in remainder to his brothers and sisters. Her husband had been dead several years, as seems certain. According to our guess as to the date of her birth (1724) she was about sixty-seven in 1791. Her son John, who was born, as we know, in 1753, and who was probably ten or more years younger than his brother Joseph, sold his farm and moved from Virginia to Kentucky, about 1793-1795, and it is more than likely

that Sarah (his mother) had died before he moved West. A woman of about seventy years would hardly venture on such a journey as was necessarily involved in that undertaking in that early day, and her son would hardly have left her behind. A ride of four hundred miles through a wilderness with its attendant hardships and dangers was something to test the strength of even the hardiest frame. We therefore conclude that Sarah, the wife of Joseph Lapsley, never saw Kentucky, but died somewhere about the years 1792-1794 in Rockbridge County, Virginia, and her dust no doubt reposes in one of the old churchyards near Lexington, or perhaps in the private burial-plot of the old homestead which her husband purchased of Ben Borden in 1742, when that region was a virgin wilderness. There is good reason for thinking that her son Joseph also died about the same time she did.

The late Judge James Woods Lapsley, of Anniston, Alabama, who was a distinguished great-grandson of Joseph, stated that Joseph came from the North of Ireland to Virginia by way of Pennsylvania, reaching Virginia about 1734. That is the year in which the Woodses and Wallaces came to Virginia from Pennsylvania, and the Lapsleys may have been of the same party. At that date (1734) Joseph was probably not much over fourteen years of age. Of his parents we know nothing, except that it is said he was of Huguenot extraction. When, in 1742, he bought a farm of three hundred and thirty-eight acres (as the Rockbridge County records show) from Ben Borden, the Valley was but a splendid wilderness, and the Indians were constantly passing to and fro along their regular war-path, and now and then committing bloody depredations on the scattered inhabitants of the Valley. Their war-path, as has been several times before mentioned in this volume, led up the Valley from the Potomac to about where Staunton now is, then turned easterly to the Blue Ridge, crossed the Ridge at Woods's Gap, and led on down to Carolina, etc. Even when the savages were nominally at peace with the whites they were frequently coming and going, and their presence must have been a cause of uneasiness, no matter what their mission professedly was. In 1752, ten years after his first purchase, Joseph Lapsley bought another tract of four hundred acres, this time from Sarah's nephew, James McDowell, her sister Magdalen's son. The Lapsleys were no doubt prominent people in Rockbridge from the earliest days—good, reliable, Scotch-Irish folk, who in any time or place make sturdy citizens and good neighbors. There is a little creek near Lexington now which, for generations, has been called "Sarah Lapsley's Run." The late Major J. A. R. Varner, of Lexington, a descendant of Sarah's sister Martha who married Peter Wallace, Jr., writing to Judge J. W. Lapsley a few years ago, says: "When I was five or six summers old, there was an apple tree standing on the edge of the lane leading to the spring on the farm bought by my grandfather (Andrew Wallace) from his uncle (by marriage) Joseph Lapsley. It was called 'Aunt Sarah Lapsley's tree.' Its fruit was large, red and sweet; and it is now represented by a lusty descendant near the same spot where stood the knarled old tree of my childhood. And in the yard, near the lombardy poplar, was a large white rose, known as the 'Lapsley rose.'"

Joseph Lapsley's home was visited in June, 1755, by the Rev. Hugh McAden, one of the pioneer Presbyterian missionaries of Virginia and North Carolina. Mr. McAden kept a diary, which is quoted from Foote's sketches of North Carolina by Waddell in his Annals of Augusta County (page 66). Mr. McAden started up the Valley from the Potomac June 19, passing the sites of Winchester and Staunton. On Sunday, the 29th, he preached at the North Mountain, and at the same place on the next Sabbath. On Friday, July 11, Mr. McAden preached at Timber Ridge Church for the pastor, Rev. John Brown. The next day, Saturday, July 12, he reached the home of a Mr. Bowyer (who, the writer suspects, was the gentleman who became, and possibly then was, the third husband of Sarah Lapsley's sister, Magdalen Woods). Here Mr. McAden spent a day or two; and he speaks, in his

diary, of Mr. Bowyer as "a very kind and discreet gentleman who used me exceedingly kindly, and accompanied me to the Forks, twelve miles, where I preached the second Sabbath of July, to a considerable large congregation. Rode home with Joseph Lapsley, two miles from meeting, where I tarried till Wednesday morning (16th). Here it was I received the most melancholy news of the entire defeat of our army by the French at Ohio, the general killed, numbers of inferior officers, and the whole artillery taken. This, together with the frequent accounts of fresh murders being daily committed upon the frontiers, struck terror to every heart. A cold shuddering possessed every breast, and paleness covered almost every face. In short, the whole inhabitants were put into an universal confusion. Scarcely any man durst sleep in his own house, but all met in companies with their wives and children, and set about building little fortifications to defend themselves from such barbarians and inhuman enemies, whom they concluded would be let loose upon them at pleasure. I was so shocked upon my first reading Colonel Innes's letter that I knew not well what to do." This, of course, was Braddock's defeat, which occurred July 9th, and the news of which spread all over the colony in less than two weeks. This brief narrative by a reliable eye-witness gives us a very vivid picture of the hardships and perils to which the Woodses, Lapsleys, Wallaces, McDowells, etc., were exposed in those far-off days, in what was then called the "Backwoods of Virginia." Yet we should do injustice to our kith and kin of that period by inferring that they had no schools or churches of culture. Those Presbyterians had gone to school in the old country, and they brought educated ministers with them to the new settlements, and began founding churches and schools without delay. We must remember that what we now know as Washington and Lee University had its beginning almost in sight of the homes of the Lapsleys, Wallaces, Woodses and McDowells (and, almost certainly, with their active assistance) six years before this visit of Mr. McAden. Augusta Academy was its first name, and it was begun in 1749, near Lexington. In 1782 it was chartered as Liberty Hall Academy; and in 1796, Washington gave it its first endowment. From that time on it was Washington Academy, till 1813, when it became Washington College; and in recent years (since 1870) it has been called Washington and Lee University. Those earliest Presbyterian preachers believed in classical and Christian education, and the schoolhouse was a necessary adjunct of the church. Hence, we doubt not that Joseph Lapsley and his neighbors sent their boys and girls to good schools where they studied the humanities along with the Westminster Shorter Catechism and the Bible—a plan which not a few sensible Christian people in this day and generation consider most wise and desirable.

Joseph Lapsley's will was made November 29, 1787, but the writer does not own a copy of it, and does not know just when it was entered in court for probate. Whilst we are unable to state the exact year of his death, it must certainly have occurred prior to 1791, when his son, Joseph Lapsley, Jr., made his will, wherein he provides for his mother exactly as if she were then a widow. When we attempt to give the number and names of all the children of Joseph and Sarah we encounter difficulty. In his will (1787) Joseph mentions only two children, to wit: Joseph, Jr., and John; but it is certain he had at least a third son and several daughters. This we learn from various sources. In the first place, Joseph Lapsley, Jr., when he made his will, in 1791—four years after his father made his —expressly referred to his "brothers and sisters." Secondly, the late Major Varner, (already often quoted) in a letter addressed to the present writer in August, 1893, stated that when Joseph Lapsley, Sr., made his will in 1787, he had at least one son and several daughters whom he did not refer to in that document. His father-in-law, Michael Woods of Blair Park, had done the same sort of thing when he made his will in 1761, as has already been fully considered in the earlier portion of this Chapter. Then, thirdly, the court records

of Rockbridge County, Va., as quoted by the late Judge Lapsley, of Anniston, Ala., show that John Lapsley, son of Joseph, Sr., and Sarah, who was the executor of both his deceased father and his deceased brother Joseph, was, in October, 1795, a citizen of Lincoln County, Ky., and that, as such, he sold the old Lapsley homestead in Rockbridge. In this conveyance he states that he acts not only for himself and his wife Mary, but for four other couples, to wit: James Lapsley and Mary, his wife; James Cloyd, and Jean Cloyd, his wife; John Hall, and Mary Hall, his wife; and John Templin, and Martha Templin, his wife. That James Lapsley and the wives of Cloyd, Hall and Templin—Jean, Mary and Martha—were children of Joseph Lapsley, Sr., and Sarah, scarcely admits of a doubt. As for that third son, whom Joseph Lapsley, Jr., had in mind when he made his will in 1791 we can hardly doubt he was this James Lapsley whose wife was named Mary, and who was in Lincoln County, Ky., in 1795. These facts and considerations, therefore, seem clearly to warrant us in saying that Joseph and Sarah had at least three sons and three daughters living in 1787, though our information in regard to the majority of them is extremely scanty.

CHILDREN OF JOSEPH AND SARAH LAPSLEY.

(Purely Tentative Exhibit as to Dates and Seniority.)

I.—JOSEPH LAPSLEY, JR. BORN 1743 (?). DIED 1792 (?).

II.—JEAN LAPSLEY. BORN 1748 (?). DIED ——.

III.—MARY LAPSLEY. BORN 1750 (?). DIED ——.

IV.—JOHN LAPSLEY. BORN 1753. DIED ——.

V.—MARTHA LAPSLEY. BORN 1756 (?). DIED ——.

VI.—JAMES LAPSLEY. BORN 1760 (?). DIED ——.

I.—JOSEPH LAPSLEY, JUNIOR, was one of the children of Joseph and Sarah, and was probably born at the Lapsley homestead near Lexington, Va. We have guessed that he was born about the year 1743, the year after his parents are supposed to have married; but we have only slender support for this precise date, and it is only our opinion that he was the first child of this family. Our surmises, however, are believed to be not entirely groundless.

The first certain information we have in regard to Joseph, Jr., is found in the mention of him which his father makes in his will November 29, 1787. Therein he is named as one of his father's three executors, his mother and his brother John being the other two. In less than four years after his father's will was made we find Joseph, Jr., making his own—December 23, 1791. He was probably a bachelor. He was a soldier in the Revolutionary Army, when and where we know not. He left his whole estate to his mother, in remainder to his brothers and sisters. Further than this we know nothing of his career, but we believe he died prior to 1795, and possibly soon after making his will.

II.—JEAN LAPSLEY was, as we believe, a daughter of Joseph and Sarah, who married a James Cloyd, moved to Lincoln County, Kentucky, prior to October, 1795, and for whom her brother John, as executor of her father and of her brother Joseph, conveyed by deed her interest in her father's lands in Virginia, October 17, 1795. We know nothing further of her career, but the records of Lincoln County, Kentucky, may contain some information concerning her husband and her children, if she had any.

III.—MARY LAPSLEY was, as we believe, another one of the children of Joseph and Sarah. She married a John Hall, moved to Lincoln County, Kentucky, prior to October 17, 1795, at which date her brother John, who was then living in Lincoln County, Kentucky, conveyed for her and her sisters, as the executor of their father, and their brother Joseph, the lands of Joseph Lapsley, Sr., to one Zachariah Johnson, in Virginia. Beyond this one fact we know nothing of her.

IV.—JOHN LAPSLEY was a son of Joseph and Sarah, and was born December 29, 1753. He was about twenty-two when the Revolution began, and enlisted in the command known as "Morgan's Mounted Men." He was in the Battle of Brandy-

wine, September 11, 1777, where he was wounded while carrying orders across the battle-field. These facts are on record in the Government Archives at Washington City. December 22, 1778, he married a Miss Mary Armstrong. In 1795, or possibly one or two years earlier, he migrated to Kentucky (Lincoln County). He was the executor of both his father and his brother Joseph; and, as such, on the seventeenth of October, 1795, he conveyed, for himself and others, four hundred and sixty acres of land to one Zachariah Johnson, three hundred acres having been previously conveyed to Andrew Wallace. He had a large family, as follows:

(a) Joseph B. Lapsley was the first child of John and Mary, and was born October 5, 1779. He attended Washington College (Lexington, Virginia) and graduated from that institution in 1800, and entered the ministry of the Presbyterian Church. He preached in Kentucky and Tennessee. He was twice married. His first wife was Rebecca Aylett, whom he married September 27, 1804. His second wife was his cousin, Sallie Lapsley. He had five children in all.

By his first wife (Rebecca) Joseph B. Lapsley had the following children: 1, John W., who was a lawyer in Selma, Alabama, and died in 1889; 2, William Fairfax, who lived in Alabama, and died there, without issue; 3, Joseph M., who died in Selma, Alabama, and left two children: *George H.,* and *Emma Baker,* who live in Kansas City, Missouri.

By his second wife (Sallie) he had the following children: 4, Margaret, who married a Taylor; and 5, Samuel, who married Mary Bronough, who survived him, and who now lives in Pleasant Hill, Missouri.

(b) Priscilla Catharine Lapsley, who was born June 23, 1781, was the second child of John and Mary. She was no doubt born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, and went with her parents through the wilderness to Central Kentucky about 1793-1795. She married Col. John Yantis, of Garrard County, Kentucky, a Revolutionary soldier of German birth. The name originally was Yandes. Col. Yantis commanded a regiment in the War of 1812, and for many years he represented Garrard County in the Kentucky Legislature. His father was Jacob Yantis (or Yandes). He lived on his plantation near Lancaster, Kentucky, until 1832, when he moved to Lafayette County, Missouri. There he ran for Congress, in 1834, on the Whig ticket, but failed of election, and died in that county in 1837. The only one of the children of Col. John Yantis and Priscilla Catherine Lapsley of whom the writer has any information was their eldest son, the Rev. John Lapsley Yantis, D. D., who married Eliza Ann Montgomery, by whom he had a large family of children. Of him and his children a somewhat extended account will be found in the sketch of J. Yantis Lapsley in Part III of this volume.

(c) John A. Lapsley, who was born September 5, 1783, in Rockbridge County, Virginia, was the third child of John and Mary, and no doubt accompanied the family in their migration to Kentucky in 1795 (some say it was two years earlier). He married Mary (Polly) Wear McKee (born November 20, 1783) the tenth day of August, 1805. Mary (or "Polly," as she was often called) was the daughter of a William McKee, who was a commissioned officer (some say a Captain, others say a Colonel) in the Revolutionary Army. The said McKee came to America from Ireland in 1725, when a babe of one year, moved to Virginia in 1745, and to Kentucky in 1793. He died in Kentucky October 8, 1816, at the advanced age of ninety-two. His wife was a Miss Miriam Wear. According to the late Judge Lapsley of Anniston, Alabama, John A. and Mary Wear Lapsley had eleven children, to wit: 1, Mary Jane; 2, Miriam, who married Warner Wallace; 3, Amanda, who married Robert A. McKee, and whose granddaughter (Mrs. John M. Wood, of St. Louis) has a sketch in Part III of this work; 4, Priscilla, who married Robert Robertson; 5, Joseph; 6, William M., who married a Miss Baron, of Perry County, Alabama, and left one child, *Mary;* 7, John; 8, Samuel; 9, Robert, who migrated to Aus-

tralia; 10, James; and 11, David Nelson, who was born April 16, 1830, and married Margaret Jane Jenkins, and who was the father of Dr. Robert McKee Lapsley of Keokuk, Iowa, a sketch of whom will be found in Part III of this volume.

(d) James F. Lapsley, the fourth child of John and Mary, was born in Virginia January 7, 1786. He married Charlotte Cleland, by whom he had four children, to wit: 1, Eliza, who married Lanta Armstrong; 2, Sarah G., who married a Mr. Robertson; 3, John P., who married, first, Eliza Johnston, and, later, a Mrs. Jennie ———; and 4, James T., who married, first, Fannie Ewing, and, later, Elizabeth Bosemond.

(e) Samuel Lapsley, the fifth child of John and Mary, was born September 22, 1789, and married Sallie Stevens.

(f) Sarah W. Lapsley, the sixth child of John and Mary, was born February 1, 1791, and married William Walker, by whom she had the following children, to wit: 1, Catharine, who is unmarried; 2, Adeline, who married General W. J. Landrum, a Brigadier in the Federal Army, lived at Lancaster, Kentucky, and by him has a large family of children.

(g) William Lapsley, the seventh child of John and Mary, was born September 28, 1793. It is said that he married, had a family, and lived somewhere in Tennessee.

(h) Mary C. Lapsley, the eighth child of John and Mary, was born February 26, 1796. She married James McKee, by whom she had the following children, to wit: 1, Miriam, who married a Mr. Kelsey, and moved to Denver, Colorado; 2, Mary Charlotte, who married William Dodd, of Kosciusko, Mississippi, and had, among other children, *John L.* and *Joseph C. Dodd,* who are now (1904) prominent lawyers of Louisville, Kentucky; 3, Margaret, who married a Mr. Henning, by whom she had a daughter who married a Mr. Johnston of Yazoo City, Mississippi; 4, John Lapsley, who married Sarah Speake, and by him had six children; and 5, Samuel, who married Sallie Campbell, and was in the Federal Army as Colonel of the First Kentucky Regiment, and was killed at Murfreesboro, Tennessee; and 6, James Finley, who married Margaret Speake.

(j) Robert Armstrong Lapsley, the ninth child of John and Mary, was born January 11, 1798. He married Catharine Rutherford Walker. This lady's father was John Moore Walker, who married a Miss Margaret Woods, and Margaret was the daughter of James Woods and Nancy Rayburn, and said James was the son of Andrew Woods and Martha Poage, and said Andrew was a son of Michael Woods of Blair Park and Mary Campbell. Thus it appears that Robert A. Lapsley and his wife, Catharine Rutherford Walker, were cousins, and their eleven children were lineal descendants of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through both his son Andrew and his daughter Sarah. The children of Robert A. Lapsley and Catharine were the following: 1, Joseph W., who died unmarried; 2, John D., who died unmarried; 3, Norvell A., who died unmarried; 4, Robert, who was born February 10, 1833, married, first, Alberti Pratt, and, second, Mary Willie Pettus, by whom he had *Robert Kay, John Pettus, Edmund Winston,* and *William Weeden;* 5, James Woods, who was one of the original subscribers to this work, a sketch of whom will be found in Part III of this volume; 6, Margaret, who was born June 4, 1838, and married, first, Dr. James W. Moore, and, later, James H. Franklin; 7, Samuel Rutherford, who was born June 25, 1842, was in the Confederate Army, and received a fatal wound at the Battle of Shiloh, in 1862, while bearing the colors of his regiment; and 8, Samuel McKee, who was a soldier in the Federal Army, and died in 1862. Robert A. Lapsley, after the death of his (first) wife, Catharine Rutherford Walker, married Mrs. Alethea Allen; and, she dying, he took a third wife, Mrs. Mary Richardson, who survived him. He died in 1872. She died some years later in New Albany, Indiana.

(k) Harvey Lapsley, the tenth child of John and Mary, was born April 1, 1800, and died unmarried.

(1) MARGARET LAPSLEY, the eleventh and last child of John Lapsley and Mary Armstrong, was born February 17, 1802. She married Moses Jarvis, by whom she had two children, to wit: 1, Mary Jane, who married a Mr. Sharp, and left no issue; and 2, John L., who married a Miss Sharp, and left five children.

V.—MARTHA LAPSLEY was, as we feel confident, one of the six children of Joseph Lapsley and Sarah Woods. She may have been born about the year 1756. Her husband—if we are correct in our calculations—was one John Templin, who was in Lincoln County, Kentucky, in the fall of 1795, and was one of the heirs of Joseph Lapsley, Senior, mentioned by John Lapsley, executor of the estates of Joseph Lapsley, Senior, and Joseph Lapsley, Junior, in a conveyance to one Zachariah Johnson executed at that time. Further than this we know nothing concerning her.

VI.—JAMES LAPSLEY was, as we confidently believe, one of the sons of Joseph and Sarah. He may have been born about 1760. Like his three married sisters (Mrs. Cloyd, Mrs. Hall, and Mrs. Templin) the only glimpses we get of him are, first, the vague allusion in the will of his brother Joseph, in 1791, where he speaks of his "brothers," clearly showing there was in the family at least one other son besides himself and John; and, secondly, in the conveyance of John Lapsley, executor, in 1795, in which, along with himself and wife, and three married women and their husbands, he joins a "James Lapsley and his wife Mary." No persons except children of Joseph Lapsley, Senior, could need to join in that conveyance which transferred the old Lapsley homestead in Rockbridge County, Virginia, to the Zachariah Johnson mentioned. Of course, it would not have been utterly impossible for persons in no way related to Joseph Lapsley, Senior, to have acquired, by some means, such an interest in his old home in Rockbridge as to render the signature of all them essential to the making of a perfect title to the grantee; but this possibility is so extremely remote in itself, and the circumstantial evidence in favor of our supposition is so strong, that, in the total absence of all contrary evidence, we do not hesitate to affirm that the James Lapsley and the three married women who joined (along with their partners) in the conveyance of October, 1795, were the children of Joseph Lapsley and his wife Sarah Woods, who had migrated to Kentucky a few years before.

CHAPTER IV.

WILLIAM WOODS OF NORTH CAROLINA.

Such information as we have been able to obtain in regard to the Woodses in Great Britain will be found mainly in Chapter First of Part I of this volume. That the William Woods who settled in what is now Orange County, North Carolina, somewhere between 1730 and 1740, and six of whose descendants are among the original promoters of this publication, was a son of John Woods and Elizabeth Worsop, and migrated from Ireland about 1724 along with his sister Elizabeth Wallace and his brother Michael Woods, has been shown in said chapter. According to the best information at our command this William Woods was born in Ireland in 1695, and was probably a married man twenty-nine years old, and the father of several children, when he migrated to the American Colonies with the Woodses and Wallaces. According to the belief of those best qualified to judge, William Woods, unlike his sister and brother (Elizabeth and Michael), never made Virginia his home. It is not at all certain that he made a lengthy stay in Pennsylvania, though he, as well as his sister and brother, probably lingered there for a time after their coming to the American Colonies. Ac-

cording to the Hon. John D. Woods, of Hickory Valley, Tennessee (one of his descendants), he did not settle in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, as his sister and his brother Michael seem to have done; but made his home for some years near the Pennsylvania and Maryland border, not far north of the site of the present city of Frederick, Maryland. Some time after settling there—we know not when—he moved down into the colony of North Carolina, and settled on the Hycotee River in what is now Orange County, North Carolina, not far from the town of Hillsboro. The precise date of this last move can not be certainly ascertained, but we know enough of the development of that region to feel warranted in venturing the conjecture that it could hardly have been earlier than the year 1730, and may have been five to ten years later. In his sketches of North Carolina Dr. Foote states that Presbyterians from the North of Ireland did not begin to settle in Virginia and North Carolina until after the year 1730, except in scattered families, or some small neighborhoods on the Chesapeake Bay.[80] Dr. Foote also mentions a colony of Ulster Presbyterians who, in the year 1736, settled in what is now Duplin County, North Carolina, about one hundred miles southeast of the locality in which William Woods made his home; and by 1740 there were scattered families of Presbyterians on the Hycotee, the Eno, and the Haw River. That William Woods was the head of one of these "scattered families" is extremely probable, for all that we know of his career is in exact line with this supposition. Dr. Foote tells us, positively, that Scotch-Irish Presbyterians began to settle on the Eno and the Haw rivers about 1738-9, and that in that early day they were visited by a Rev. Mr. Robinson, a Presbyterian minister from Pennsylvania. (Page 224.) In 1761, a Presbyterian church was organized by Rev. John White in Orange County, called Little River for the stream of that name near it,[81] and William Woods was one of the first elders that church had. Joseph Allison was made an elder at the same time. This historic old church stands between the North and South Forks of Little River, in Orange County, about eight miles northeast of Hillsboro. Mr. Doak Woods, a worthy descendant of William Woods of Ireland, recently lived at the old Woods Homestead, only three miles west of this church. The building stands on a divide near the head streams of Little River and Eno River, which run southeasterly to form the Neuse River; and also of the Hycotee, which runs in the opposite direction to join the Dan River. For a hundred and fifty years, and longer, that has been a neighborhood of sturdy Presbyterians, and the Woodses have ever been among its best citizens. The noted pioneer missionary of Carolina, the Rev. Hugh McAden, who travelled from Pennsylvania to Orange County, North Carolina, in the summer of 1755, on a preaching tour, and who kept a daily journal of his work, spent several days at the home of Joseph Lapsley, in Rockbridge County, Virginia, (whose wife, Sarah, was William Woods's niece) in July of that year. We can well believe that Sarah did not fail to advertise Mr. McAden that her uncle William Woods was living down in the region he was soon to visit. He left the Lapsley place on Wednesday, July 16, 1755, going on down towards Carolina; and on Tuesday, July 29th, he lodged with one Solomon Debow, on Hycotee River, not far from the Woods settlement. This man Debow was an emigrant from Pennsylvania. At Debow's he preached Sunday, August 3. Up to this date there were no doubt some plain church buildings in use by Presbyterians, but very few if any regularly organized congregations. Mr. McAden tells how gladly these "scattered sheep" welcomed him and thanked him for his visit. At Eno (near Little River) he preached August 10th, "to a set of pretty regular Presbyterians," and there was evidently a chapel in which the services were held. We feel reasonably sure that William Woods and his children were of those "pretty regular Presbyterians" who on that occasion heard Mr. McAden and were made glad by the Gospel he preached.[82]

The spot which William Woods chose for a home belonged to Craven County from 1729 to

1733; to Edgecombe County from 1733 up to 1746; to Granville County from 1746 up to the year 1751; and to Orange County from 1751 to the present time. The region as pictured by one of its prominent citizens, the Hon. Francis Nash, of Hillsboro, in a valuable historical pamphlet he has recently issued,[83] must be one of the most attractive in the Old North State. Of course, when William Woods settled there (1730 to 1740) the magnificent forests were untouched by man, the streams were clear and undefiled, and the soil possessed its virgin richness. In 1729, when the Lords Proprietors ceased to govern the colony (or province) there were but three counties in North Carolina, and the total population of the whole was not over ten thousand. The growth of the colony, however, was remarkably rapid, for by 1752—the year after Orange County was organized—the population was nearly a half a million. The town of Hillsboro had only about twenty families in 1767, but the country around was already thickly settled. As the Indians were in full possession of the country far to the east of Hillsboro in 1712, and later, it is easy to imagine the vigor with which the whites must have cleared the land. In the year just mentioned the savages made their stand for a battle with the whites at a spot only eighteen miles west of Newbern, showing that the white settlements at that time were confined to the sea coast. The disturbances incident to the French and Indian Wars, (1754-1763) whilst not so serious in the southern colonies as in those further north, were the occasion of constant alarm to the people of North Carolina, owing to the presence of hostile and war-like tribes in the western end of their territory. Then, as soon as that long series of contests came to an end, the War of the Regulators, with its internal disorders and bloodshed, was developed; and for some years (about 1768-71) there was a condition of things bordering on civil war in the very region in which William Woods lived. The battle of Alamance was fought May 16, 1771, only a few hours' ride from the home of William Woods, and the casualties, according to recent conservative accounts, numbered twenty-nine killed, and two hundred and sixty-one wounded. What side the Woodses were on we do not know; but in any case the state of affairs in that whole region in those days of civil commotion must have been extremely alarming and distressful. There were good and bad men on both sides; tyranny and oppression and misgovernment mainly marked the conduct of one party; and lawlessness, rashness and practical anarchy were frequently illustrated by the other. But whichever side the Woodses took, and whatever the part they played, it must have been a trying time and place in which they had to live, with their families constantly liable to rude annoyances if not grave perils. Some of the most exciting trials incident to the Regulation period were held in Hillsboro, and many of the citizens of Orange County were arrayed on opposite sides.

As soon as the Regulators subsided the distant mutterings of a yet more general and disastrous storm began to be heard—the Revolution began. The people of Orange County were not by any means all of one mind in regard to the struggle of the colonies against the British Crown. In 1775, as Mr. Nash informs us (see pamphlet above referred to) there were many Tories in Orange County at the beginning of 1775, and Regulators in the outlying districts, and Scotch and English merchants in Hillsboro. Then there were many neutrals—men whose minds were not yet clear, or who were naturally averse to war. The first Provincial Congress (the Third Convention) was held in Hillsboro in August, 1775. For six or eight years longer the whole population lived in the midst of warlike scenes. William Woods was an old man of eighty when the Revolution began, and even his sons were rather too old to enlist as soldiers, the eldest having been born in 1720. He served Little River Presbyterian Church as elder from 1761 (the date of its organization) until his death, which occurred in 1785, when he had reached his ninetieth year. He was buried in the Little River

Church burial-ground, and by his side sleep many of his descendants awaiting the last trumpet-call which shall awake the dead. The name of his wife is not known.

CHILDREN OF WILLIAM WOODS OF NORTH CAROLINA.

A—JOHN WOODS,	Born 1720; Died 1813.
B—WILLIAM WOODS,	Born ——; Died ——.
C—SAMUEL WOODS,	Born ——; Died ——.
D—ELIZABETH WOODS,	Born ——; Died ——.
E—MARY WOODS,	Born ——; Died ——.

A—JOHN WOODS, the first child of William Woods of North Carolina, was born in 1720, and, most probably, in Ireland. He was, therefore, a boy of four years when his father migrated to America. He was at least ten, and possibly twenty, years old when his father settled on the Hycotee River in what was afterwards Orange County, North Carolina. In 1750, when a man of thirty years, he married Miss Ann Louey Mebane. His wife, who was of Scotch ancestry, was born in 1730, and died in February, 1821. John and his wife were both members of the Little River Presbyterian Church, he being a ruling elder of that church from a short time after its organization (in 1761) until his death in 1813. During the Regulator troubles (1768-1772) he resided at the very focus of the disturbances, but we do not know on which side of the controversy his sympathies lay, or how he and his family fared during that period of disorder and violence. Wheeler, in his History of North Carolina, mentions one "John Wood," who, being the sheriff of Orange County in 1768, was bitterly assailed by the Regulators in the Courts; but the name is spelled without the final s, and it is likely he was an entirely different man from the sturdy Scotch-Irish Presbyterian elder who was the son of William Woods. The Regulators cordially hated nearly every official who represented the Colonial Government and was disposed to be loyal to Gov. Tryon; and as there were many men of the most lawless character in that faction (as well as many men of the opposite stamp), it would not have been at all strange if some of the godliest people in the country should have fallen under the displeasure of the Regulators, in case they sided with Gov. Tryon.

The plantation which he purchased considerably more than a century and a half ago, and on which he spent nearly all of his long life, has remained in the hands of his descendants through all these years, and one of his great-grandsons (Mr. William Doak Woods) now owns it, or did, a few years ago.

John Woods and his wife Ann L. Mebane had six sons. We do not know whether they had any other children.

I.—WILLIAM WOODS was the first child of John and Ann. The date of his birth is unknown to the author. His wife was Nellie Lindsey, by whom he had one son, named Lindsey. William served in the American Army in the Revolutionary War. He was a ruling elder of the Little River Presbyterian Church, as were his father and grandfather before him. Of his only son, Lindsey, we only know that he married Margaret A. Woods, daughter of his uncle Samuel Woods, and reared a family in Orange County, and that, like his father, grandfather, and great-grandfather, he was an elder of the Little River Church. Lindsey and Margaret had a son, William Doak Woods, who, like his ancestors for several generations before him, was an elder in the Little River Church and the owner of the old John Woods plantation on Little River. According to the unsolicited testimony of the Hon. Francis Nash, of Hillsboro, N. C., who was the co-temporary of Mr. William Doak Woods for many years, he was "one of the best of men." The author much regrets his inability to furnish additional particulars in regard to this and other worthy members of the North Carolina Clan of Woodses.

II.—JOHN WOODS, JUNIOR, was the second son of John and Ann L. All we know of him is that he married and settled near Knoxville, Tennessee, leaving one son, (a) JOSEPH.

III.—DAVID WOODS was the third son of John and Ann L. He settled at Fulton, Kentucky. He

married, and left three sons, to wit: (a) JOHN; (b) DAVID; (c) and WILLIAM.

IV.—THOMAS WOODS, the fourth child of John and Ann L., was born in Orange County, North Carolina, November 25, 1775. About the year 1805 he married Susannah Baldridge, daughter of James and Jane (White) Baldridge, of Orange County, North Carolina, by whom he had eleven children. About the year 1807 Thomas and his little family moved to Murfreesboro, Tennessee, where he worked at his trade (blacksmithing) until 1827, when he moved with all his household except his three eldest children (James, John and Jane) to Fulton County, Kentucky. There Thomas and his wife remained during the rest of their lives, he dying there March 31, 1837, and she dying December 18, 1849. Their bodies were buried at Palestine Church, near Fulton, Kentucky, and their son William M. had neat tombstones erected to mark their graves.

(a) JAMES B. WOODS, the first child of Thomas and Susannah, married Margaret Finger in Rutherford County, Tennessee, where he lived for many years. Later on they moved to Izard County, Arkansas. They had a son and two daughters, as follows: 1, William H. Woods, who still resides in Izard County; 2, Susannah M., who married a Mr. Russell, and is now a widow; 3, A. Texas, who married Wm. P. Garner, and still resides in Izard County; and a number of other sons and daughters, now dead, many of whose descendants are to be found in Izard County, and Fulton County, bearing the names of Rector, Sanders, Freeman, Sublett, Stroud, Campbell, Fowler, Clem, Parker, and Copeland, in addition to those having the name of Woods.

(b) JOHN WOODS, the second child of Thomas and Susannah, lived to be eighty-seven years old. He was twice married, but never had any children. He resided in Murfreesboro, Tennessee, in which community he was a prominent figure. He was in public life for a long period, being for a great while County Clerk, part of the time Chairman of the County Court, and a member of the State Senate for one or more terms. He was a popular man, and by the outbreak of the Civil War (1861) had grown to be comparatively wealthy. The disasters incident to a four years' war, and losses incurred, to the extent of many thousands of dollars, in going security for his friends, effected the ruin of his estate. However, he finally managed to so far recover himself as to discharge all of his obligations and be in comfortable circumstances when he died.

(c) JANE W. WOODS, the third child of Thomas and Susannah, married Handy Snell, and lived to be eighty years old. Her life was spent in Rutherford County, Tennessee. Her descendants live in that part of the country now, though some of them moved to Texas.

(d) ANN A. C. WOODS, the fourth child of Thomas and Susannah, married Harvey Brown in Fulton County, Kentucky, and after living there many years she moved with her husband to Izard County, Arkansas, where both she and her husband lived to a ripe age. Among her children was, 1, a son, Thomas A., who became a minister of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. This son is a bachelor and resides in Izard County. Ann (Woods) Brown has numerous other descendants in Izard and Fulton Counties bearing the names Mann, Lawyers, Oliver, Chadwick, and Moore.

(e) THOMAS C. WOODS, the fifth child of Thomas and Susannah, was never married. He died July 17, 1841, near Alexandria, La.

(f) MALCOM WOODS, the sixth child of Thomas and Susannah, died in infancy.

(g) SUSANNAH M. WOODS, the seventh child of Thomas and Susannah, married a Mr. Simmons, by whom she had one daughter, namely: 1, Susannah E., who married John W. Jacobs, by whom she had children who are themselves married and have children bearing the names of Jacobs, Luckett and Call. Susannah died early in her married life.

(h) WILLIAM MITCHELL WOODS was the eighth child of Thomas and Susannah, and December 16, 1847, he married Elizabeth E. Brown, daughter of Archibald and Sarah (Culton) Brown in Fulton

County, Kentucky. They made their first home in Obion County, Tennessee, on the Kentucky and Tennessee line, in what is called "The Black Swamp." In the fall of 1855 they sold this farm for $7.00 per acre, but soon afterwards it was held at $30.00 per acre. During the following winter William visited his brother James B. in Izard County, Arkansas, and bought a farm on Sandy Bayou which is now in Izard County. He made a crop the next season, and in the fall of 1856 brought his family to his new home. In 1868 he sold the part of the farm he had at first occupied, and erected a house a mile further down the creek. Here William died September 19, 1896, and his wife followed him March 15, 1899. William M. Woods was a member of the Church of Christ, and his wife was a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. They were both intelligent, industrious and good people who commanded the confidence and respect of their neighbors. They were buried in Spring Hill Cemetery within a quarter of a mile of their last place of residence. They had the following children, to wit: 1, John Harvey Woods, born March 27, 1849; 2, Thomas James, born August 15, 1850; 3, William Archibald, born April 12, 1852; 4, Johnson Pierce, born October 12, 1853; 5, Sarah Annabel, born October 16, 1855; 6, Stephen Washington, born December 9, 1857; 7, Benjamin Franklin, born February 21, 1867; and 8, Owen Shelley, born February 27, 1870. All of these children except two that died in infancy, were fairly well educated at La Crosse Academy, La Crosse, Arkansas. More extended accounts of John Harvey, Thomas James, and Stephen Washington will be found in Part III of this volume, to which the reader is referred.

(j) Mary E. Woods was the ninth child of Thomas and Susannah. She married Bright Snell, and lived in Rutherford County, Tennessee. They have many descendants now living in that county.

(k) Stephen H. Woods, the tenth child of Thomas and Susannah, has been married three times, and has numerous descendants by each marriage, the most of whom live in Rutherford County, Tennessee, though some reside in Texas. Stephen H. is a physician of eminence in Rutherford County, where he has been long in practice.

(l) Abigail R. Woods, the eleventh and last child of Thomas and Susannah, was twice married. Her first husband was a Mr. Simmons, and her last was William Brown. By both husbands she has descendants in Western Kentucky and Texas.

V.—ALEXANDER WOODS was the fifth son of John and Ann L. and died without ever having married.

VI.—SAMUEL WOODS was the sixth and last son of John and Ann L. He was born March 14, 1769. He was married twice; first to Jennie Allison, January 6, 1789; and next, to a Miss Elizabeth Woods, a distant kinswoman. The Hon. John D. Woods, of Hickory Valley, Tennessee, states that Elizabeth's father was one Hugh Woods, and that said Hugh was a son of Col. John Woods, of Virginia. But the writer gravely doubts this last statement, as he has never seen or heard any accounts of the family of Col. John Woods (after some pretty thorough investigation of all available sources of information) which made mention of a son by the name Hugh among his children. No such person is in any way referred to in Col. Woods's will (written in 1791), and there are the strongest possible reasons for affirming that in that instrument he mentions all of his children except two who died in early infancy or childhood.

Samuel Woods, the last child of John and Ann L., was twice married. By his first wife, Jennie Allison, he had three children that we know of; and by his second wife, Elizabeth Woods, he had six. These will be mentioned in the order given by Hon. John D. Woods, of Tennessee, who belongs to this branch, and is perhaps better informed in regard to it than any other person living.

(a) Joseph A. Woods was the first child of Samuel by his first wife, Jennie.

(b) John Woods was the second child of Samuel by his first wife, Jennie.

(c) David Woods was the third (and last)

child of Samuel by his first wife, Jennie, and was born in Orange County, North Carolina, October 28, 1795. He married Mary Robinson April 5, 1821, and moved to Hardeman County, Tennessee, in the winter of 1824-5. There he continued to reside until his death, June 28, 1878. His wife, Mary Robinson, was born in Orange County, North Carolina, December 1, 1799, and died June 26, 1854. David Woods was one of the Magistrates of Hardeman County for twenty-four years. His wife was the daughter of James Robinson, who was a son of Michael Robinson. Michael Robinson came from Ulster Province, Ireland, to America in 1742, and settled in Orange County, North Carolina, in 1760. Michael Robinson's wife was Mary Roy, and was a member of the well-known family of this name. James Robinson, who was the son of Michael and the father of Mary, married his cousin, Margaret Roy. In their old age James and Margaret settled in Tennessee, near to the home of their son-in-law, David Woods.

David Woods and his wife Mary Robinson had four children, as follows: 1, Samuel Mebane, who was born February 16, 1822, married Narcissa Robinson. Samuel M. Woods was the father of the Hon. John D. Woods, of Hickory Valley, Tennessee, one of the most efficient promoters of this publication, and in the sketch of that gentleman to be found in Part III of this work will be seen additional particulars of his family. 2, John R. Woods; 3, Mary Woods; and 4, Margaret Woods, the last of the four children of David and Mary.

(d) Hugh Woods was the fourth child of Samuel—the first one by Elizabeth, his second wife—and was born August 5, 1800, in Orange County, North Carolina. On the 26th of January, 1826, he was married to Elvira Jane Ray, who was born October 1, 1802, in Orange County. Six children were the fruit of this union, to wit: 1, Samuel Robert Faucett, who was born February 16, 1828; 2, Margarett Jane, born July 29, 1830; 3, Joseph Hammel, who was born November 7, 1833, and was the father of Mrs. James Dennis Goodwin, of Richmond, Virginia, one of the original promoters of this publication, a sketch of whom will be found in Part III of this work; 4, Elizabeth Ann, who was born August 19, 1837; 5, Hugh Phillips (generally called Tyler), born January 15, 1840; and 6, Mary Ellen, who was born July 22, 1842.

(e) Jennie M. Woods was the second child of Samuel Woods by his second wife (Elizabeth).

(f) Mary A. Woods was the third child of Samuel Woods by his second wife (Elizabeth).

(g) Susan F. was the fourth child of Samuel Woods by his second wife (Elizabeth).

(h) Samuel Ray Woods was the fifth child of Samuel Woods by his second wife (Elizabeth). He was born near Hillsboro, North Carolina, January 23, 1808. He married Miss Zilpha Elizabeth McKuine, of Wayne County, North Carolina, February, 1831, by whom he had six children, as follow: 1, William Samuel, born December 1, 1831; 2, Mary Elizabeth, born December 16, 1833, and died August 29, 1835; 3, Susan McKuine, born March 29, 1836; 4, John Raiford, born October 13, 1838; 5, Barbara Ann, born September 18, 1841; and 6, David Sidney, born December 28, 1844, of whom a sketch will be found in Part III of this volume. Samuel Ray Woods moved from North Carolina to Marion, Perry County, Alabama, in 1848. All three of his sons (William Samuel, John Raiford, and David Sidney) went as volunteers into the Confederate Army in the summer and fall of 1861. William S. was in Company B of the 20th Alabama Regiment, and saw service in the Army of Tennessee. John R. and David S. joined Company K of the 11th Alabama, and saw service in Virginia under General Robert E. Lee. William S. fell in battle in a charge near Marietta, Georgia, June 22, 1864. His comrades said of him that he was the most exemplary man in the Regiment, and all testified to his high Christian character and noble soldierly bearing. The last words he was heard to utter were: "Forward, boys; forward." His old commander, General E. W. Pettus, of Selma, Alabama, yet remembers him, and speaks of him in the highest terms as a brave, true, and fearless soldier. Zilpha Elizabeth, wife of

Samuel Ray Woods, died April 13, 1877, and Samuel himself died July 30, 1890. John Raiford Woods resides in New Berne, Alabama. He married Miss Annie Jane Paul, by whom he has three children, as follows: *George Sidney*, born March 1, 1877; *Mary Alice*, born July 13, 1879; *Elizabeth McKuine*, born April 20, 1882. Susan McK. and Barbara Ann Woods, the third and fifth children of Samuel Ray Woods by his wife Zilpha, are unmarried, and reside in Marion, Alabama.

(j) MARGARET A. WOODS was the sixth and last child of Samuel Woods by his second wife, Elizabeth, and married her cousin, Lindsey Woods, the son of her uncle, William Woods.

Samuel Woods, the sixth and last son of John and Ann L., was from early manhood till his death in 1852, an elder of the Little River Presbyterian Church, he being the fifth individual of the Woodses, in a direct line, who held that office in that particular church, and covering a period of ninety-one years—from 1761 to 1852. This is a remarkable record, and it seems to indicate that there must have been in this branch of the family uncommon fidelity on the part of parents in teaching their children to understand and hold fast to the faith of their fathers.

B.—WILLIAM WOODS was the second child of William Woods of North Carolina, the Irish emigrant. Of him we know extremely little, except that in a very early day he migrated to the region of East Tennessee in which the town of Jonesboro now stands. No doubt some of the Woodses in Washington and Greene Counties, Tennessee, are his descendants.

C.—SAMUEL WOODS was the third child of William, the Irish emigrant. He was probably born about the year his parents migrated to America (1724). He married Mary Mitchell, and inherited from his father the old home place on Hycotee River. Five sons are known to have been born to Samuel and Mary, as follows:

I.—JOHN WOODS was the first child, so far as known, of Samuel and Mary. We know that John married, and that he had two sons, as follows: (a) ANDREW, who was living a few years ago on the old home place on the Hycotee at the great age of ninety years; and (b) GREEN.

II.—ANDREW WOODS was the second child of Samuel and Mary.

III.—WILLIAM WOODS was the third child of Samuel and Mary.

IV.—THOMAS WOODS was the fourth child of Samuel and Mary.

V.—JAMES WOODS was the fifth child—and the last, so far as we are informed—of Samuel and Mary.

D.—ELIZABETH WOODS was the fourth child of William, the Irish emigrant. She married David Mitchell, who was a brother of the Mary Mitchell who married Samuel Woods, Elizabeth's brother. They lived on Hycotee River. Their descendants are very numerous, and are found in North Carolina, Tennessee and Alabama more especially.

E.—MARY WOODS was the fifth, and perhaps the last, child of William, the Irish emigrant. She married a Mr. Strain. For a few years after their marriage this couple lived on a large plantation which they owned on Little River, but in the early period of the settlements in East Tennessee they went with Mary's brother William to make their home near the town of Jonesboro, in what is called the "Dark Neighborhood."

We now bring to a close the account of the Woodses, which constitutes Part I of this volume; and in doing so it will not be thought inappropriate to offer some reflections concerning the Woods family as a whole. The author has endeavored to avoid, as far as possible, everything like a vainglorious spirit in speaking of the family of which it is his privilege to be a humble member. He has had no desire to exaggerate, in any degree, the merits of any person of whom he has made mention; but, so far as he has had the framing of the various accounts of individuals of the connection, he has endeavored to speak with modesty of their gifts and achievements, and to tell only what seemed to be true. The Woodses, as a rule, do not seem to

have been in any marked degree people of wealth, or exalted official station, or unusual brilliancy. A great many of them, indeed, have enjoyed all of these advantages; but it is not pretended that the Woodses in general have made any specially remarkable record as respects this class of distinctions, when compared with the average of worthy families in America. There have been, and still are, among the scattered thousands composing the Woods Clan, members of Congress, Governors of States, diplomats, high officers in the Army and Navy, distinguished authors and literary men and women, hundreds of bankers and capitalists, and a few millionaires; but the great mass of them have been men of moderate means, average education, humble station, and no remarkable brilliancy. But the Woodses and their descendants of myriad names have made a record in certain important spheres of life and human activity which we sincerely believe is not surpassed by that of any other one family in the Union. Let the reader, if he cares to determine the accuracy of this judgment for himself, begin with Elizabeth (Wallace), Michael, and William Woods (the three children of John Woods, of Ireland) at the time they landed in America in 1724, and follow them for the succeeding one hundred and eighty years, and he will see that we indulge no idle boast. The Woodses, Wallaces, McDowells, Bordens, Bowyers, Lapsleys, Millers, McAfees and their numberless descendants not only settled, in large measure, the Piedmont Region and the Great Valley of Old Virginia, and an important part of North Carolina, and were among the sturdy early settlers of West Virginia and Tennessee, but they had probably a larger share in the founding and development of Kentucky from 1773 onward than any other one family in America. The records show that in every war from 1734 to this day they have borne a prominent and honorable part on the field in defence of liberty and the rights of man. And, above all else, to their everlasting honor it can truthfully be said that, as a family, they have ever stood for industry, sobriety, high-toned morality, and the religion of Jesus Christ. A careful inspection of the records reveals among the descendants of the three Woodses mentioned a remarkably large number of ministers of the Gospel and Christian missionaries. Some of these have been among the most distinguished and useful in the various Evangelical Churches of the United States. There are probably not less than fifty Gospel ministers now alive in America or in foreign lands in whose veins the blood of John Woods of Ireland flows. If we should attempt to count the private members and officers of the various Christian denominations in the land to-day who trace their lineage back to John Woods and Elizabeth Worsop, it is believed they would be numbered by thousands. The descendants of this couple through the daughter and the two sons mentioned have been in an important and real sense founders of this nation, and some have gone to distant heathen lands to carry the glad tidings of salvation to men sunk in idolatry and barbarism. Doubtless there have been in this widely scattered family, in the course of nearly two centuries, many who have done nothing to add lustre to the name; but, taking the record as we have it in this volume, it can be said, without exaggeration or boasting, that if Elizabeth Wallace and her brothers Michael and William Woods could revisit the earth to-day and see what their posterity have accomplished, and what place they now fill in the religious, intellectual, financial and economic world, they would have a right to feel glad they had been permitted to live in America and to give to it so many worthy sons and daughters, whose lives and deeds have done so much to make this land glorious and blest.

NOTES ON PART ONE.

THE WOODS FAMILY.

1—The confession should be made at the outset that the amount of definite and absolutely certain information we possess in regard to the Woodses prior to their settlement in the colony of Virginia in 1734, is not great. Hence, positive assertions relating to the period now under consideration must be infrequent, and qualifying phrases will often be required. We must, therefore, content ourselves with reasonable probabilities and inferences, in many cases, greatly as we might like to feel entirely certain in regard to a multitude of matters touched upon. The manufacture of history is oftentimes a tempting form of industry, but it is the desire of the author to avoid engaging in it, if possible.

2—For helpful accounts of the persecutions which the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians suffered at the hands of English bigotry, see Fiske's Old Virginia and Her Neighbors, Vol. 2, pages 390-400; Foote's Sketches of Virginia, First Series, Chapter IV; the Introduction to Waddell's Annals of Augusta County, Virginia; and to any good, comprehensive history of England or Ireland.

3—That Michael Woods and his family migrated to the colony of Pennsylvania somewhere about the close of the first quarter of the eighteenth century, seems to have been an accepted belief in the families of his descendants; but the exact year of his migration is fixed with reasonable certainty by an unbroken tradition which has come down to our day through the descendants of Col. John Woods, the favorite son of Michael. That tradition is that John was a boy twelve years old when he came over in the ship to America with his parents. That John Woods was born in 1712, is known beyond all question. The author is personally acquainted with Mr. J. Watson Woods, of Mississippi, a lineal descendant of Col. John Woods, who has many ancient original documents of this ancestor, and he affirms that the date of the coming of the Woodses, Andersons and Wallaces to America was the year 1724, if the unvarying tradition of the family is to be regarded. The date 1724 may therefore safely be accepted as correct.

4—See Dr. Woods's History of Albemarle County, page 355.

5—Our best authority as to the ancient Woodses in Great Britain is Mr. John O'Hart, of Dublin, Ireland, the author of a well-known work entitled Irish Pedigrees, which has run through several editions, the third of which was published in 1881. The sixth edition, in MS., was ready for the press several years ago. Mr. O'Hart enjoyed exceptional advantages in making his researches, and had access to the public offices and larger libraries of Ireland. Then there is a Mrs. Elizabeth Barrett, of Ballyshannon, County Donegal, Ireland, a lady of high character, and an author of repute, who certifies to the reliability of Mr. O'Hart, and adds some notes of her own to what he has published. This lady is herself a descendant of the same family of Woodses as that one with which this volume is concerned, and is personally acquainted with a number of prominent Woodses now living in Ireland, who trace their line back to the same Woods ancestors as herself. The statements made in the body of this volume in regard to the Woodses in Great Britain are derived almost entirely from these two authors. Those who care to look further into these questions will be interested in Prendergast's Cromwellian Settlement of Ireland, Burke's General Armory, and the Office of the King at Arms, Dublin Castle, Ireland.

6—There are some records in Ireland which seem

to give the maiden name of John Woods's wife quite differently, namely, Wollup. Whether this is an instance of illegible writing, or not, can not be stated. The correct name is believed to have been as herein given Worsop.

7—Our information in regard to the remoter Wallaces has been gotten from the following sources, to wit: (a) Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, Wilkesbarre, Penn., 1891, pages 685-735; (b) Private family records of the late Major J. A. R. Varner, of Lexington, Va., who was a descendant of Peter Wallace and Elizabeth Woods, and several of whose letters are in the possession of the author of this work; (c) History of Albemarle County, Va., by Rev. Edgar Woods, Ph. D., pages 336-7, and 351-6; and the Life and Times of Judge Caleb Wallace, by the Rev. Dr. Wm. H. Whitsitt, Number Four of the Filson Club Publications, pages 1 to 5, and 21 to 23. In consulting Dr. Whitsitt's book, however, the reader should bear in mind that he fell into some inaccuracies concerning both the Woodses and Wallaces by reason of his not having noted that there were two Peter Wallaces—father and son—and that Peter, the elder, married a sister of Michael Woods, and his son, Peter, Jr., married a daughter of Michael. Dr. Whitsitt, furthermore, was probably not aware that Michael Woods had at least five children besides the six who were mentioned in his will. The identity of these five children is fully considered in the chapter on Michael Woods. So far as the writer can learn there is not a single court record in America to indicate that Peter Wallace, the elder, was ever in any of the colonies.

8—For a full account of that branch of Wallaces who located in King George County, Virginia, and named their homestead Elderslie, see Virginia Genealogies by Hayden, pages 685-735. The head of this branch was one Michael Wallace, M. D., who was born at Galrys, Scotland, in 1719, and whose father was named William. These Wallaces were probably near of kin to those now under consideration—William and Peter may have been brothers. Both branches were most probably descended from the same person as was Sir William Wallace, the famous Scotch patriot.

9—Sketches of Virginia by Rev. William Henry Foote, D. D., Philadelphia, 1850, First Series, page 101.

10—History of Albemarle County, Virginia, by Dr. Edgar Woods, page 336.

11—Life and Times of Judge Caleb Wallace, Number 4 of Filson Club Publications, by the Rev. Dr. Wm. H. Whitsitt.

11½—For additional items as to Wallaces see sketch of Major J. A. R. Varner.

12—For a brief account of his death at Guilford C. H., see Foote's Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, page 147. The death of his two brothers is also referred to in that place.

13—This story was told in an article which appeared in The Rockbridge County News (Lexington, Virginia) April 24, 1890.

14—Governor McDowell was a descendant of the Magdalene Woods who married John McDowell, and she was a sister of Adam Wallace's mother, Martha Woods. Both these women were the daughters of Michael Woods of Blair Park.

15—See Notes 3 and 5 on Part I, Chapter First.

16—Peyton's History of Augusta County, Virginia, page 302.

17—See Waddell's Annals of Augusta County, page 4; Peyton's History of Augusta County, pages 23, 31 and 79; and Fiske's Old Virginia and Her Neighbors, Vol. 2, pages 390-395.

18—See Fiske's Old Virginia and Her Neighbors, Volume II, the whole of Chapter XVII, especially pages 395 and 396. Foote's Sketches of Virginia, First Series, Chapter IV, and pages 102-106.

19—See Waddell's Annals of Augusta County, pages 7 to 9, and notes; and Dr. Hale's Trans-Alleghany Pioneers, page 21.

20—See Fiske's Old Virginia and Her Neighbors, Vol. 2, pages 384-5; and Waddell, pages 9 and 10.

21—Fiske, page 384.

22—See Waddell, page 16; Foote, First Series, page 101; Dr. Edgar Woods, page 351.

23—See Peyton's Augusta, pages 25 to 31.

24—Foote's Sketches of Virginia, First Series, page 101.

25—Waddell's Annals, page 13.

26—See all of Chapters I and III of Waddell's Annals; and Peyton's Augusta, pages 9 and 81.

27—Waddell's Annals, page 13, where is given a picture of travel in those days.

28—See Peyton's Augusta, page 9.

29—See Waddell's Annals, pages 30 and 31; Peyton's Augusta County, page 65; and Foote's Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, pages 92 and 93. It will appear from a comparison of these citations that Dr. Foote places the death of John McDowell in 1743, a year later than Waddell and Peyton do, and he gives what purports to be an exact reproduction of the inscription on McDowell's tombstone in the ancient burial-plot of Timber Ridge Church. The writer has great faith in the care and accuracy of both Waddell and Peyton, and he assumes that they must have found that Dr. Foote's date was an error. We may therefore accept the year 1742 as the correct date of the awful tragedy at Balcony Falls. The rude figures on such a primitive, unhewn head-stone as that which Dr. Foote states marked John McDowell's grave in his day were probably indistinct, and he might have mistaken a 2 for a 3.

30—Waddell's Annals, pages 67-71.

31—See Dr. Woods's History of Albemarle County, pages 6 and 351.

32—The original Patent, in the possession of Hon. Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia, is executed on parchment in beautiful handwriting, and is in a good state of preservation after 166 years. It is worded after the extremely verbose, technical style of ancient legal documents, with endless repetitions and useless phrases. It is too lengthy and tedious to justify insertion in full.

33—See The Cabells and Their Kin, by Alexander Brown, published by Houghton, Mifflin & Co., Boston and New York, in 1895, pages 59 and 599.

34—See Dr. Woods's History of Albemarle, page 130.

35—This mode of signing one's name the writer does not remember ever to have known an example of before. If the "m" interposed between the Christian name Michael, and the surname Woods had been meant for the initial of a middle name one would think it would have been of the same size as the one written in the name Michael, and on a line with it. On the contrary, this "m" is not only much smaller, but is in all cases slightly below the line. If anyone can suggest the true explanation of this anomalous form of signature employed by our ancestor in his deeds of 1743, and in his will of 1761, the author would be much obliged to hear from him. Address Rev. Neander M. Woods, 817 Second Street, Louisville, Ky.

36—Col. Green's Historic Families of Kentucky, page 15. This volume, let it here be noted, is of peculiar value to all the Woodses, and especially all the McDowells who are descended from Michael Woods of Blair Park. It contains an amount of important information as to these families which is nowhere else to be had, so far as the present writer is aware. It is greatly to be regretted that the book is already out of print, and it is to be hoped that the demand for copies may be such as to induce some one to issue a new edition.

37—For this valuable piece of unimpeachable information the author is indebted to the kindness of Professor W. G. Brown, of the University of Missouri, who has devoted much attention to genealogical matters relating to the Woodses and their various connections.

38—Waddell's Annals, page 13.

39—See Foote's Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, page 96.

40—See Green's Historic Families of Kentucky, pages 2 and 3.

41—The depositions of Mrs. Mary Greenlee, taken in 1806, in the celebrated Borden case, is given in part in Peyton's Augusta County, pages 66-74. This is a document of intense interest to the Woodses and McDowells. As only brief extracts from it can be quoted in this work, all who want to get an insight into the mode of life and social

conditions of the ancient McDowells and Woodses should give the extracts from this document quoted by Peyton a careful perusal. It throws much light on the history of the Woodses, McDowells, Bordens, Bowyers, Alexanders, Wallaces and others. The records of the whole case fill two folio volumes, and are to be seen in the clerk's office at Staunton, Virginia. See Dr. Foote's Sketches, Second Series, page 92.

42—See Waddell's Annals, page 482.

43—This account is found, in substance, in various books, but the one given by Dr. Foote in his Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, pages 92 and 93, is the one mainly followed. For some cause the year of Captain McDowell's death as given by Foote is not the same as that given by Waddell, Peyton and Green. Dr. Foote purports to give an exact copy of the inscription on the tombstone, but the other writers mentioned have had as good opportunities as he for ascertaining the facts, and we must assume that they are correct in fixing 1742 (December 25) as the true date, and that probably Dr. Foote, in reading the very rude inscriptions covered by the moss of generations, mistook a 2 for a 3. See Note 46 in which yet another date for John McDowell's death is discussed.

44—The author wishes to state that to the valuable work of Col. Thomas M. Green on some of the Historic Families of Kentucky he is indebted for most of the information herein given concerning the McDowells. One reason for making such extensive use of that work is the fact that it is out of print, and hundreds of the descendants of the Woodses, McDowells and others who would be glad to purchase it could not possibly obtain a copy at any price. There are various other volumes which give more or less complete lists of the McDowells and their connections and descendants to which the reader is referred, viz: Paxton's Marshall Family, pages 60-68; Peyton's History of Augusta County, page 302; and Dr. Whitsitt's Life and Times of Caleb Wallace, pages 21-23. Mr. Waddell, in his Annals of Augusta County, also has much to say of this family. The author of the present work could not undertake to sift the contradictory details to be found in the several publications mentioned. He is inclined to accept Col. Green's exhibit as, on the whole the most satisfactory one within reach.

45—Col. Green states that Samuel McDowell Reid, son of Andrew Reid and Magdalen McDowell, was a physician. See his Historic Families, page 100. This is a mistake. He was educated for the law, but spent nearly the whole of his mature life discharging the duties of clerk of court in Rockbridge County. He was never, at any period of his life, a physician. Mrs. Helm Bruce, of Louisville, Kentucky, is a grand-daughter of his, and she has learned the facts from her mother, who had had access to the records of the Reid family.

46—There is a record in regard to John McDowell at Orange Court House, Virginia, which may easily mislead any one who fails to bear in mind the "old style" of reckoning, which England did not abandon till the year 1752. The record in question shows that letters of administration were granted to Magdalen McDowell upon the estate of her deceased husband March 24, 1742. The natural inference would be that, inasmuch as it is known that John McDowell was killed on Christmas Day, he died in the year 1741. This would be true under the present style of reckoning, but not so under the "old style." Up to the year 1752, in England and all her colonies, the new year began March 25, instead of January 1, as now. Hence, Christmas Day next preceding March 24, 1742, was in the year 1742. March 24 was then the last day of the year, and of course the preceding twelve months all belonged to the same year as that date did. The administration letters granted to Magdalen March 24, 1742, were just three months subsequent to December 25, 1742. So John died December 25, 1742, and then March 24, 1742, his widow took out letters of administration.

47—For items concerning the Bordens the reader is referred to the following authorities: Peyton's History of Augusta County, pages 67-74, and 302;

Waddell's Annals of Augusta County, pages 16, and 398-400; and Col. Thomas Marshall Green's Historic Families of Kentucky, pages 14-15, and 78.

48—For particulars in regard to Col. Bowyer see the following: Waddell's Annals, pages 66, 116, 131, and 487; Peyton's Augusta County, pages 69-74; Foote's Sketches, Second Series, page 98; the fac-simile of the will of Michael Woods, Jr., herein given and noted in Index; and Col. Green's Historic Families, page 78.

49—The greater part of the information here given in regard to William Woods (2d) has been gotten from Dr. Edgar Woods's History of Albemarle County. See pages 353 and 354.

50—Henning's Statutes at Large, Volume 7, page 203, An Act providing for paying the men of the Albemarle militia.

51—The author perhaps needs to apologize to the most of his readers for this little digression from the narrative. He is anxious to draw the attention of the Woodses to a state of things which is something of a reproach, and to say that he stands ready to co-operate in every way in his power with any of the "Clan" who may be disposed to heed the hint given.

52—The most that the author has been able to learn concerning William, the second child of Michael Woods and Mary Campbell, has been derived from Dr. Edgar Woods's History of Albemarle County, see pages 353 and 354.

53—See sketch of Col. Charles A. R. Woods, in Part III of this work, who is a descendant of William Woods (2d) through his son, Adam Woods.

54—The reader is referred to the sketch of Mrs. McChesney Goodall in Part III of this work. She was born and reared within sight of the old Michael Woods Blair Park homestead, and her immediate ancestors have enjoyed special opportunities for knowing the family traditions bearing on the career of William Woods (2d), son of old Michael. Her information is that he lived in Pennsylvania till March, 1744, whilst his parents are known to have migrated to Virginia ten years prior to that date. Why it was that William, who was one of his father's favorite sons, should have remained behind in Pennsylvania so much as ten years whilst his parents and younger brothers and sisters were down in the Virginia wilderness struggling with all the trying conditions of a frontier settlement, we are unable to conjecture. We know not what documentary evidence in support of this supposition may be in existence; but if there be none, it would seem but reasonable to conclude that the sons of old Michael accompanied him on his move to Virginia in 1734. This, however, we confess, is only a conjecture on our part.

55—The information herein given in regard to Captain Archibald Woods and his wife, Mourning Shelton, has been derived mainly from the following sketches, to be found in Part III of this volume, viz: that of Col. Charles A. R. Woods; that of Col. J. W. Caperton; that of Mr. Samuel B. Royster and that of Hon. J. D. Goodloe. The reader is referred to these sketches for fuller details than could well be presented in this place.

56—The reader will please consult the sketches of Col. Woods and Mrs. Goodall in Part III of this volume. Also Dr. Edgar Woods's History of Albemarle, page 353.

57—See Dr. Edgar Woods's History of Albemarle, page 235.

58—The accounts given by Dr. Edgar Woods, Col. Chas. A. R. Woods, and Mrs. Goodall of the descendants of William Woods (2d) are in some respects widely different, and now and then contradictory of each other. Between these several narratives the author of this volume feels incompetent to decide with any positiveness, and he refers his readers to the several accounts so that they may judge for themselves.

59—See Peyton's Augusta County, page 119.

60—To some of the numerous descendants of Samuel Woods it may be a matter of interest to know something more about his Revolutionary service, and the pension he received, than is given in the body of the text; and for the gratification of such persons the following additional facts are furnished: Nearly forty years after the close of the

Revolution the Congress of the United States undertook to make proper recognition of the services of the old Revolutionary soldiers, hundreds of whom were still alive, but far advanced in life, and many of them being in greatly reduced circumstances. The acts relating hereto are known as "The Revolutionary Claim Acts of March 18, 1818, and May 1, 1820." It was under these acts that Samuel Woods got his pension. He was then residing in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, with his grandson, J. Harvey Woods, the father of the present writer. Born in 1738, he was a man of eighty when the first of the above-mentioned acts was passed. He had given the bulk of his property to his son, Samuel Woods, Jr., in 1791, and for some reason by the year 1819 was without means, and dependent for support on his grandson, with whom he was living. The records of the case consist of a number of affidavits and certificates which are now on file in the U. S. Pension Office at Washington City, and the same can be seen, free of charge, at any time by calling on the proper official. Parties who would like to procure certified copies of all the papers can readily obtain them for a nominal fee by writing to the Pension Department. The following papers of the set are regarded as of special interest: 1, the affidavit of one John Galloway, of Mercer County, Kentucky, made September 13, 1819; 2, the affidavit of Samuel Woods, himself, made April 11, 1823; 3, the affidavit of one Major John Arnold, of Madison County, Tennessee, made October 22, 1823; and 4, the affidavit of Col. Anthony Crocket, of Franklin County, Kentucky, made December 15, 1823, and certified to by the three Kentucky Congressmen, Moore, Buckner, and Letcher.

In paper 1 Mr. Galloway swears that he is well acquainted with Samuel Woods; that he saw him sworn into service as a Lieutenant in the Twelfth Virginia Regiment, on the Continental Establishment at Fort Pitt, in the spring of 1776; that Colonel James Wood was in command of said regiment, and Galloway himself a member thereof; that he knew said Woods served as a regular officer in said regiment for nearly three years; that said Woods served his country faithfully; and that he was at the battle of Guilford, N. C., as he believed.

In paper 2, Samuel Woods swears that he was not physically able then (April, 1823) to appear in Court owing to the feebleness of age; that in the spring of 1776 he was commissioned a Lieutenant and attached to the Twelfth Virginia Regiment, on Continental Establishment, commanded by Col. James Wood; that he continued in the Continental service (Regular Army, as distingnished from Militia) for three years, when he resigned; that afterwards he served as a militia officer, from time to time, till the war closed, and was in the Battle of Guilford, North Carolina; that he was then about eighty-five years old, and too feeble to do any work; that his wife (Margaret) was then old, and as infirm as himself, they having no children alive, and both in a dependent condition; and that he had sent on his application to the Pension Department in 1819, but that action on it had been delayed because, in spelling the surname of the Colonel of the regiment in which he had served, he had appended an s to it, making his Colonel's name Woods, instead of simply Wood as it properly was.

In paper 3 Major John Arnold, of Madison County, Tennessee, swore that he was well acquainted with Samuel Woods; that said Woods was a Lieutenant in the Continental Army; that he knew said Woods to be in service at the mouth of the Kanawha River for about fifteen months, he and Woods being together there; and that he believed Woods to have been a faithful soldier; and that Woods was an officer whom he knew and respected as such. Arnold's memory as to the years covered by this period of fifteen months was somewhat at fault, for he mentions the year 1775, when it is certain Woods did not enlist till the spring of 1776.

In the 4th paper, Col. Anthony Crocket states, under oath, that he knew Samuel Woods well; that during the Revolutionary War Woods was a Lieutenant in the regiment of which Col. James Wood was the commander; that Woods was in service at

Fort Pitt, and later at the mouth of the Kanawha, and later still marched to the South. Then follows the sworn statement of all three of the Kentucky Congressmen, Hon. T. P. Moore, Hon. Richard A. Buckner, and Hon. Robert P. Letcher, certifying to the absolute trustworthiness of Col. Crocket. The records show further that Samuel Woods was, in 1823, residing with J. Harvey Woods, his grandson, in Harrodsburg, Kentucky; that from December 15, 1823, he got $20.00 a month until his death, which occurred February 3, 1826, when he was eighty-eight years old.

It may be remarked here that whilst the particular regiment several times referred to in said documents as the one in which Samuel Woods was a Lieutenant, and of which Col. James Wood was the commander, is called the "Twelfth," there is some uncertainty as to this being correct. The author has seen in a published volume of Revolutionary Records (the exact title of which he can not now recall) that the regiment commanded by Col. James Wood was the Third, and not the Twelfth. He also observes that in those documents, above discussed, some of the affiants seem to have doubts as to this point themselves. Then the endorsement on the jacket or wrapper enclosing the papers of this case made by some official of the Pension Office, omits to give the number of the regiment, and simply says: "The regiment commanded by Col. James Wood." The solution of this question may possibly be that during the course of the five or six years of the Revolution Col. Wood may have commanded two entirely different regiments, in order, or his command may have undergone a reorganization, resulting in a new name for it, as often occurs in the course of a protracted war.

61—See Prof. Shaler's Kentucky, pages 20 and 21.

62—Col. Durrett's Centenary of Kentucky, pages 46 and 51.

63—See Shaler's Kentucky, pages 68, 80 and 93.

64—Butler's Kentucky, Edition of 1834, page 120; and Waddell's Annals of Augusta County, page 208, footnote.

65—See Waddell's Annals, pages 451-3.

66—Dr. Edgar Woods's History of Albemarle, page 355.

67—Davidson's History of Presbyterianism in Kentucky, pages 73-82.

68—Family Reminiscences by Le Grand M. Jones, of Trenton, Tennessee, St. Louis, C. R. Barns Publishing Co., 1894. See pages 43-46.

69—This is not intended in the least as a disparagement of Mr. Jones's narrative, but only to call attention to the fact that his principal informant probably did not possess much certain information concerning some of the details of family history to which he referred. This is noted here merely to show that the writer has good grounds for doubting the exactness and accuracy of some of the statements made as to Samuel Woods, of Paint Lick, and his children. First, Judge Black was evidently unaware of the more important incidents in the life of Samuel Woods during his stay of about fifteen years in Kentucky. He was evidently an important man at Paint Lick, and took part in the organization of the beginnings of Presbyterianism in Kentucky; and yet Judge Black had probably not heard of anything beyond the fact that he was a member of the Paint Lick Church, where the noted David Rice sometimes preached. Secondly, on reading over the items furnished to Mr. Jones by Judge Black about Samuel and his two wives, and his ten children, we find no indication of a written record quoted from, except as to one of the sons, John Woods. The exception in his case is expressly noted by Mr. Jones, (page 44) and the fair inference would be that the other items had not been copied from a written record. Thirdly, Mr. Jones himself calls in question the statement of Judge Black as to the date of Samuel's migration to Kentucky, and most justly. Judge Black has him coming to Kentucky in 1773, when, as a matter of fact, there was not a single resident white man in the State that year. The probability is that Samuel Woods did not come to Kentucky for many years after 1773. So far as we can judge from land entries on record he was scarcely there before 1783. Lastly, Judge Black was the last-born of a family

of twelve children; and it is easy to understand how a son born when his parents have reached middle life, and who comes to full maturity when his parents are either gone from this world, or have forgotten many details which they had heard their parents narrate in early life, labors under peculiar disadvantages in respect to securing reliable family history. Most men do not begin to take a lively interest in family traditions till they are nearing middle life; and if they happen to have been the latest-born of a large family, by the time their antiquarian instincts have become aroused and their fondness for genealogical details somewhat cultivated, the only persons who ever knew the facts desired have had the seal of lasting silence placed upon their lips. In such a case, if parents have themselves failed to set down in black and white what they had learned from their own parents, the loss is simply irreparable. Precisely this has been the present writer's experience. Being the last of a dozen children, his parents were dead long before he had come to care anything whatever about family tradition; and up to about twelve years ago he scarcely knew anything at all of his grand-parents, and less still of his remoter ancestors. Only by dint of patient and long continued effort has he learned, from all sorts of sources, what he now knows. It is evident Judge Black labored under almost the same disadvantages; and for this reason, and in view of the facts adduced above, the writer feels disposed to conclude that Samuel Woods, who lived at Paint Lick, was probably the Samuel who was the son of Richard Woods and a grandson of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and came from Virginia to Kentucky about 1783. The descendants of this man constitute a numerous company of excellent people scattered over the South and Southwest, West and Northwest, and the writer has been at some pains to set forth for their benefit, as best he could, all he could gather concerning this good old Presbyterian elder of Paint Lick.

70—In the land office at Frankfort the writer found the record of an entry which was certainly made to a Samuel Woods other than the one who migrated from Botetourt County, Virginia, to Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1782-3, and there died in 1826. The grant was for 350 acres of land in Lincoln County, on a branch of Paint Lick Creek, adjoining the lands of Brooks, Kennedy, Bett, McCormack, Miller, and McNeely. The warrant was numbered 3406, and bore date March 6, 1780. It was originally issued to Jesse Cartright, who assigned it to William Miller, who assigned it to Samuel Woods. The date of the survey of this tract was May 3, 1783, which is the year, most probably, in which this Samuel Woods came to Kentucky. The Patent for the land bears date December 2, 1785, and is signed by Governor Patrick Henry, of Virginia. This Samuel Woods was, beyond all reasonable doubt, the one who was an elder in the Paint Lick Church for about fifteen years, and then moved to Williamson County, Tennessee, about the year 1800; and there are good reasons for believing he was the Samuel Woods who was the son of Richard Woods, of Rockbridge County, Virginia, and sold out his interests there in 1783, and migrated to Kentucky.

71—It may be interesting to some to understand the main features of the Virginia and Kentucky Land Laws. Nearly all of the histories of Virginia and Kentucky recite their provisions, as enacted and altered from time to time. The reader will be referred to a few of the authorities whence he may get a fair notion of the peculiar regulations adopted by Virginia for encouraging the rapid and easy settlement of her vast domain. It was a system which had its serious drawbacks, and in time it caused endless contentions and litigation; and yet it was beneficent in aim, and it had some capital advantages not easily improved upon as a scheme for meeting the exigencies of the exceptional prevailing conditions. The intending settler did not need to wait till a government surveyor went to the desired spot and made an official survey and map of the land. The settler became his own surveyor; and with chain and compass he could lay off a thousand acres in a few hours. Then he had his survey

recorded in the Land Office, wherever it was at the time, and on the basis of this entry Land Warrants were issued to him which made his title good for his land against all comers except such as may have entered the same land before he did. Under this system the earlier settlers picked out only the choice lands, leaving untouched, as a rule, those deemed of small value. Like our Western cowboys on the Great Plains thirty years ago, who, on killing a buffalo, might carry away with them only the tongue or other choice bits of the carcass, leaving the rest for those who wanted it, the settlers in the vast and splendid wilderness of Central Kentucky disdained to waste their time on ordinary land—they sought the "tenderloins" only in those early days (1773 to 1789). In this way it came about that in between these tenderloin slices, so to speak, there were innumerable tracts of the most irregular size and shape, which for many years nobody claimed. Then came the so-called "blanket patents," by means of which land speculators and regular settlers sought to lay claim to any and all parcels of land not before taken up. As the law guaranteed title only to so much of the area included in the "blanket patent" as had not previously been conveyed to some one else, the blanket sometimes covered only little remnants of land which did not belong to a previous claimant. But whatever areas had not already been taken up became the property of the owner of the "blanket patent." It is said there are even at this late day considerable bodies of land in Kentucky the title to which has never passed from the State, though squatters may have been occupying them for several generations. But the earliest settlers (1773 to 1785) had the very pick of the land, and secured lands for a mere pittance which now are worth $100.00 per acre, not counting improvements.

There were three different kinds of rights in land acquired by prospectors: first, those arising from military service; secondly, those from settlement and pre-emption; and thirdly, warrants from the Treasury. Military rights were grants of land given to officers who had served in the French and Indian Wars, or in the Revolution. The number of acres allowed to each officer depended on his rank. The second class of rights arose from actual occupation of the soil. If a man remained in the country one year and raised a crop of corn, he got 400 acres free, and acquired a right to select 1,000 additional acres adjacent thereto for which he was expected to pay the government price—about forty cents an acre. If he merely erected a cabin or other improvement on the land he got no land free, but paid the government price for the same. One year's residence and the actual cultivation of the soil was the price each settler had to pay for his "400-acre settlement," and then for the "1,000-acre pre-emption" he had to pay about $400.00 in cash. This was the way in which Samuel Woods (born 1738, and died 1826) established his claim to the splendid 1,400-acre tract on Shawnee Run, in Mercer County, Kentucky. He mentions it in his deed of gift of November 9, 1791, to his son Samuel, Jr., as his "settlement and pre-emption." He probably raised his first crop on it in 1783, to make good his "settlement," and then afterwards paid cash for the extra 1,000 acres which he pre-empted. In the same manner the McAfees had taken up claims on Salt River in 1773, and had perfected their title later on. They surveyed and plotted their lands, and marked them by piling up brush and deadening trees thereon in July, 1773. In 1774 they came back, built a cabin, and planted corn. In 1775 they came again, raised corn, and planted peach seeds. And as soon as the first Court met in Harrodsburg to perfect land titles they completed theirs. See Shaler's Kentucky, pages 49-52; Filson's History, pages 37 and 38; Butler's Kentucky, pages 100-101; Collins's Kentucky, Vol. I, page 253, and Vol. II, pages 276 and 368.

72—In a pamphlet published by Mr. E. G. Wylie, of St. Louis, Mo., in 1900, entitled The Wylie Genealogy, many interesting details concerning the Grays may be found, pages 20-21. See Davidson's History of the Presbyterian Church in Kentucky, page 82.

73—Dr. Woods's History of Albemarle County, page 352.

74—This pamphlet was published in 1882 by Mr. W. H. Miller, of Richmond, Kentucky, and is entitled: Sketch of Daniel Miller and Christopher Harris, and Their Progenitors and Posterity. This publication contains much valuable information concerning the branch of Woodses to which it relates, and the author of the Woods-McAfee Memorial desires hereby to acknowledge his indebtedness to Mr. Miller for many items not elsewhere to be gotten. A few of his statements, however, have had to be corrected.

75—Waddell, in his Annals of Augusta County (page 179), quotes from the papers of a Col. Robert Gamble an item evidently written late in 1780 or early in 1781, in which reference is made to a Captain Andrew Wallace as having been killed October 7, 1780, in the Battle of King's Mountain. We know not, with certainty, just who this man could have been. The Andrew Wallace who married Margaret Woods about 1733 was too old a man to have been in the army in 1780—he was then about sixty-eight and Dr. Edgar Woods says he died in 1785. The Andrew Wallace who was the son of Samuel Wallace and Esther Baker, was born in 1748, as Dr. Whitsett informs us, and moved, in 1782, with his father to Kentucky, where he lived until his death in 1829. The writer knows of no other Andrew Wallace who could have been a soldier in 1780 except Andrew, the son of Peter Wallace, Jr., and Martha Woods, and who, according to the late Major Varner, was a Captain in the Eighth Virginia Regiment, and was killed at Guilford Court House in 1781. The Col. Gamble quoted from was no doubt correct in saying an Andrew Wallace was killed prior to 1781, at King's Mountain, and this may have been the one who was the son of Peter Wallace, Jr., and whom Major Varner supposed to have been killed at Guilford C. H.

76—See Capt. Thomas Speed's Wilderness Road, page 17.

77—See History of South Carolina In the Revolution, by Edward McCrady, 1901, page 10.

78—See Wheeler's Historical Sketches of North Carolina, Chapter 4, as quoted by Larned in his History for Ready Reference, page 2372, bottom of left hand column.

79—See The English in America, Chapter 12, as quoted by Larned, page 2374.

80—Sketches of North Carolina, by Rev. William Henry Foote, New York, 1846, pages 78-80, and 224-6.

81—See Manual of Orange Presbytery, edited by the Rev. D. I. Craig in 1895.

82—See Foote's North Carolina, pages 166-167.

83—Hillsboro, Colonial and Revolutionary, by Francis Nash, of the Hillsboro Bar and Member of the American Historical Association, Raleigh, 1903. An 8vo pamphlet of 100 pages. This publication is one of great value to all who may be interested in the history of Orange County, North Carolina.

PART SECOND.

THE McAFEE FAMILY.

McAFEE COAT OF ARMS.

THE WOODS-McAFEE MEMORIAL.

PART SECOND THE McAFEE FAMILY.

CHAPTER I.

THE McAFEES IN GREAT BRITAIN.

The name McAfee has shared the common fate of most patronymics in that it has, in the course of centuries, undergone such radical transformations that no one not familiar with its history would suspect that it ever had any connection with its original. The Gaelic for this name was Dubhsith, but it became merged, in time, into the English equivalent, Duffie. Later on, the Celtic prefix Mac, so common in the case of many Scotch and Irish names, and which simply means son, was conjoined with it, making it MacDuffie. In the course of time this form of the name also underwent a change, due, no doubt, to sharply accenting the first and last syllables (Mac, and fie), whilst obscuring the sound of the syllable Duf. Thus the name came at length to be Macfie, a form still retained by many of the families having the same origin as the McAfees. We accordingly find the name is spelled and pronounced quite variously in Scotland, Ireland and America. We may find the forms Macafee, Macfee, Macfie, Macphee, MacHaffie, and McAfee. In an old deed, dated 1748, and on record now in the court house at Staunton, Va., we find the name of James McAfee, whose career from 1739 to 1785 forms the subject of the next succeeding chapter of this work, spelled so obscurely as scarcely to be decipherable, and yet so as to indicate that he may have preferred a spelling of it in that early day which it is known he did not follow in 1763 and 1766, when he had deeds recorded in which he spelled the name as is done in this work.

We shall not attempt to quote in full all the allusions to the ancient members of this old Scotch family to be found in the several works which treat of them, but will give the substance of all the more important items of information, leaving those who care to do so to consult the authorities cited for a more thorough investigation of the subject.[1] That the family now under consideration, whose members are scattered all over the Union, are descended from the Highland Clan above mentioned, does not seem to admit of a serious doubt. Such facts as have been ascertained all point clearly to this conclusion, and we know of nothing to militate against it. Among the numerous islands which lie just off the western coast of Scotland, and which in olden days were dominated by the Lords of the Isles (from the 12th to the 16th century), is one known as Colonsay, pertaining to Argyleshire. It is only about fifty miles northwest of the city of Glasgow. This island was the possession and home of the McAfee Clan for some centuries, but they ceased to own it after the year 1645, when their chieftain, Malcolm McAfee, was cruelly slain and their clan dissolved. When this calamity overtook them they were not only dispossessed of their original inheritance, but the Clan, as such, ceased to have a separate existence. The majority of its members joined the MacDonald Clan of Islay; others settled among the Camerons, under Lochiel, where they became distinguished for their bravery; others chose homes for themselves around both entrances to the Firth of Clyde; whilst still others

crossed the channel and settled in the north of Ireland.[2] In 1745, at the Battle of Culloden, the Camerons (with whom many of the McAfees were joined), were one of the few clans who made that furious onset which nearly annihilated the left wing of the Duke of Cumberland's army, and almost led to a brilliant victory. In this contest the Camerons suffered severely in slain and wounded, and with them a proportionate number of the McAfees. In that battle there was a wall which protected the flank of the Highlanders' army, and through this wall the dragoons of the enemy attempted to force their way. One Duncan McAfee, a foot-soldier, was one of the heroic little band of Highlanders who took part in the vain attempt to prevent this; and in the course of the conflict he struck down, with his broad-sword, not only a dragoon, but also the horse on which he rode; but before Duncan could disengage himself from the fallen steed, he received a terrible kick from the wounded animal which broke his back. Next day he was carried from the field, and he recovered; but all the rest of his days he had to walk with the aid of a stick, his body bent almost to the ground. The old soldier used to say, in recounting the adventure, "She was a sore morning for me, but I made a Southern tak a sleep it would be lang 'ere he wakened frae." This famous battle (Culloden) was fought when the McAfees we now have to deal with were living in America; but we may rest assured they would know of the part their kith and kin took in it. And when, in 1775, James McAfee, Jr., and his brothers journeyed through the beautiful gap near what is now the town of Middlesboro, Ky., if he knew that Dr. Thomas Walker had named that gap, and the mountain range of which it is a depression, for that same "Bloody Duke" whom his McAfee kinsmen had faced at Culloden only thirty years before, we may readily believe he would have said it was a shame to drop the beautiful Indian name Wasioto so as to do honor to that of the Duke of Cumberland, whom he no doubt regarded as a monster.

At one end of the island of Colonsay there was a sort of valley, or little depression, extending across its width; and when the tide rose, the sea ran through this depression, thereby separating the two parts and making two islands of the one. This lower and smaller end was called Oronsay, and it became a historic burial-place of much celebrity. Many tombs of McAfees were to be found there, and on them they figured as warriors and ecclesiastics. But there was another yet more famous isle only about eighteen miles to the northwest of Colonsay in which all McAfees should feel a tender interest, namely; Iona. Here was located one of the most famous seats of piety and learning to be found in the world in ancient times, and here was a noted burial-place to which the bodies of kings and princes were brought from afar for honored sepulture. In this world-renowned cemetery reposes the body of Malcolm McAfee,[3] the last chieftain of the McAfee Clan, slain in 1645. The spot was visited by Pennant in 1772 (as quoted by Ian in his Costumes of the Clans), and he describes in detail the carving and inscriptions on the tomb over the old chieftain's grave. It presented the effigy of a warrior in high relief, armed with the great two-handed sword, and among the ornaments was the long fada, or galley, which is the invariable ensign of an insular or west Highland chief. The inscription upon his tomb was as follows: "*Hic jacet Malcolumbus MacDuffie de Colonsay.*" After his death the clan disintegrated, some of them uniting with the McDonalds of Islay, some joining the Camerons under Lochiel, others settling along the banks of the Clyde, and yet others emigrating to the north of Ireland. That the McAfees of the United States are lineal descendants of the men of this clan hardly admits of a reasonable doubt. The John McAfee from whom most of the American McAfees are known to have been derived was probably born about the very time the clan was deprived of its independence (1645), and his home at the time of his migration to Ireland in 1672 was in the very part of Scotland in which some members of the scattered clan had settled some years before. It is extremely probable that his father was a member

of the clan when Malcolm, its chieftain, was slain, and that he left Colonsay soon after that calamity occurred to find a new home between Glasgow and Edinburgh, whence his son John migrated to Ireland in 1672.

The armorial bearings of the branch of McAfees with which this volume has to do may be described as follows: Or; a lion rampant, gules, surmounted by a fesse; Azure. The Crest: a demi-lion, rampant, gules; Motto, *Pro Rege.* These insignia have been reproduced for this work. (See page 152.) The tartan of the clan, printed in colors, can be seen in the Scottish Clans above quoted from.

The remotest member of the family to whom the Virginia, Kentucky and Missouri McAfees can trace back with absolute certainty is John McAfee, Sr. It is certainly known that he lived in Scotland from about the year 1645 to the year 1672, and that his home was probably located between the cities of Glasgow and Edinburgh. We know that he married Elizabeth Montgomery near Glasgow, and the time of his marriage was probably about the year 1670. He lived in stormy and epoch-making times. When he was born the great Westminster Assembly of Divines was sitting in London, the great Civil War was in progress, and Charles the First was nearing his bloody doom on the scaffold. He lived through the period of the Commonwealth, and the Protectorate of Cromwell; saw the Restoration of Charles the Second; and witnessed the fearful reaction which took place under his reign, for about seven years. In 1672, tempted by the offer of liberal grants of land in Ulster Province, in the north of Ireland, John McAfee departed from his native heather and made his way to County Armagh, Ireland. He was then about twenty-seven years old, and with him went, no doubt, his young wife, and perhaps a wee bairn that had come to brighten their home. Some of the McAfees, we know, had preceded him to Ulster some twenty-five years, about the time the McAfee clan had been dismembered, so that he no doubt had kinsmen in the new land to which he migrated. He was now no longer merely Scotch, but Scotch-Irish. Of the genesis and characteristics of this sturdy race Mr. Fiske speaks so entertainingly in his "Old Virginia and Her Neighbors" that we shall let him tell the story for the reader (see Vol. 2, pages 391, et seq.): "Who were the people called by this rather awkward compound name, Scotch-Irish? The answer carries us back to the year 1611, when James I. began peopling Ulster with colonists from Scotland and the north of England. The plan was to put into Ireland a Protestant population that might ultimately outnumber the Catholics and become the controlling element in the country. The settlers were picked men and women of the most excellent sort. By the middle of the seventeenth century there were 300,000 of them in Ulster. That province had been the most neglected part of the island, a wilderness of bogs and fens; they transformed it into a garden. They also established manufactures of woollens and linens which have ever since been famous throughout the world. By the beginning of the eighteenth century their numbers had risen to nearly a million. Their social condition was not that of peasants; they were intelligent yeomanry and artisans. In a document signed in 1718 by a miscellaneous group of 319 men, only thirteen made their mark, while 306 wrote their names in full. Nothing like that could have happened at that time in any other part of the British Empire, hardly even in New England. * * * Confusion of mind seems to lurk in any nomenclature which couples them with the true Irish. The antipathy between the Scotch-Irish as a group and the true Irish as a group is perhaps unsurpassed for bitterness and intensity. * * * The term 'Scotch-Irish' may be defensible, provided we do not let it conceal the fact that the people to whom it applied are for the most part Lowland Scotch Presbyterians very slightly hibernicised in blood."

When, in 1785, James II. ascended the throne of England and began to lay the hand of persecution upon the Covenanters and other Protestants of Scotland, a great many of the connections and former neighbors of John McAfee followed him to Ireland, among whom were the Campbells, the Montgomerys, the McMichaels, and the McConns. John McAfee had a son bearing his own name, whom we must distinguish as John, Jr., and it is probable

this son was born about the time his parents migrated to Ulster, say 1673. We know that both he and his father enlisted in the army of King William during the Revolution of 1688, and that both fought under William in 1690 at the Battle of the Boyne, the son being at that time a youth not over seventeen years of age. In after times James McAfee, the son of John, Jr., was wont to boast of the valor of his Protestant sire, and to glory in the fact that he was at the Boyne fighting on the right side. Concerning the life of John McAfee, Sr., in Ireland, and the date of his death, we know next to nothing. As to John McAfee, Jr., it seems reasonably certain, as before intimated, that he was born about 1673, the year his parents migrated to Ireland. We know, as just stated, that when a boy of about seventeen years he was in the Battle of the Boyne under King William. We also know that he afterwards married a Miss Mary Rodgers. The date of his marriage to Miss Rodgers cannot be positively stated, but as their second child, James, was born in 1707, it may be inferred that the marriage occurred after the year 1700, when John, Jr., was about thirty years old. We know that he erected on his farm in County Armagh a stone dwelling-house, which was yet standing in the year 1846. His death occurred in 1738, at which time he was a man of about sixty-five, and his wife Mary survived him. They had four sons and six daughters. The names of the sons were as follows: John 3d; James; Malcolm; and William. The names of the daughters are not known. So far as known, all of the sons except James remained in Ireland, and there were descendants of John McAfee living in County Armagh as late as 1846.

John McAfee, Jr., who died in 1738, left an estate too small to provide a competency for all of his ten children, and his son James concluded to seek his fortune in the New World beyond the Atlantic. James McAfee was born in County Armagh October 17, 1707. In 1735 he married Miss Jane McMichael, and in 1736 their first child, James McAfee, Jr., was born. Whilst General R. B. McAfee makes no mention of the social and political conditions which at that time prevailed in Ulster, it is reasonably certain that they had much to do with the migration of James McAfee, Sr., and family to America. The treatment bestowed upon the people of Ulster by the English from about 1698 on through nearly a hundred years is one of the darkest blots upon the escutcheon of that great nation. The Scotch had migrated to Ulster at the urgent solicitation of the English themselves, and had made the wilderness to blossom as the rose; but that very prosperity which was the just reward of the industry and skill of the Scotch-Irish aroused the jealousy and spite of English manufacturers and of the bigoted prelates of the English Church. Let the scholarly Mr. Fiske be again asked to enlighten us concerning matters in which the descendants of James McAfee are so much interested. (See Vol. 2, page 393.) "The flourishing manufacturers of Ulster aroused the jealousy of rival manufacturers in England, who in 1698 succeeded in obtaining legislation which seriously damaged the Irish linen and woollen industries and threw many workmen out of employment. About the same time it became apparent that an epidemic fever of persecution had seized upon the English Church. The same persecuting spirit which we have above witnessed * * * found also a vent in the severe disabilities inflicted in 1704 and following years upon Presbyterians in Ireland. They were forbidden to keep schools; marriages performed by their clergy were declared invalid; they were not allowed to hold any office higher than that of petty constable, and so on through a long list of silly and outrageous enactments. For a few years this tyranny was endured in the hope that it was but temporary. By 1719 this hope had worn away, and from that year, until the passage of the Toleration Act for Ireland in 1782, the people of Ulster kept flocking to America."

It is known that James McAfee, Sr., took ship at Belfast, in the spring of 1739, for North America, and with him went his wife, his aged and widowed mother, and his three little baby boys, namely: James, Jr., born in 1736; John, who lived to mature

years, and who, as we shall see later on, met his death at the hands of savages in Virginia; and little Malcolm, a babe of but a few months, who was destined to die and be buried at sea during the voyage to America. James McAfee, Sr., like his father before him, had named a son Malcolm. Whilst it is only a conjecture, it is certainly not an unreasonable one, that this was done expressly to perpetuate the name of that Highland chief, whose death in 1645 had marked the dismemberment of the McAfee Clan. But the little namesake of the chieftain was not permitted to live to manhood. On the way over he was taken ill, and when within only a few days of the American coast he died. And the parents, the aged grandmother, and the two wondering little infant sons no doubt stood uncovered on the deck while the sturdy sailors lowered the tiny little body in its winding sheet down to old ocean's bosom, where, in an instant, it disappeared from their sight to be seen no more till earth and sea shall give up their dead at the end of the world. It was, indeed, a sad introduction to America; but these parents had been reared in good Presbyterian homes and had learned that God makes no mistakes, and that goodness and mercy shall follow his people all the days of their lives, and that they shall dwell in his house forever. The good ship sailed on to the westward, and in a day or two more the Delaware coast began to mark a dim outline along the horizon; the entrance to Delaware Bay, with its two capes standing guard, came into view, and soon they came to anchor at Newcastle, June 10, 1739. They were in America, and done with Great Britain for life.

CHAPTER II.

CAREER OF JAMES McAFEE, SR., IN AMERICA, 1739 TO 1785.

We need not assume that when James McAfee and family stepped ashore at Newcastle that summer's day, in June, 1739, they had no acquaintances in America. Besides, no doubt, a goodly company of fellow-passengers whom they had come to know on the voyage, there were probably many Scotch-Irish friends on this side the sea who had preceded them. We must bear in mind that it was then about forty years since the tide of emigration from Ulster to the American colonies had set in. That movement was one of the most remarkable phenomena in the history of this continent. From the year 1698, when the selfish rivalry of English manufacturers, coupled with the persecuting bigotry of English prelates, began to make residence in Ireland intolerable to Presbyterians, on to the passage of the Toleration Act for Ireland in 1782, that tide ceased not to flow. It began to assume large proportions in 1719. In the year 1727, in a single week, six ship loads of immigrants were landed at Philadelphia. Fiske gives it as his opinion (Vol. 2, page 394) that between 1730 and 1770 at least a half million souls were transferred from Ulster to America, at which last-named date one-third of the population of Pennsylvania, and one-sixth of that of the colonies as a whole, was Scotch-Irish. So, we may well believe the McAfee family were not total strangers in the new world. Still, the conditions which now confronted them were strange, and some of them far from pleasing. From what General McAfee says we necessarily infer that both James and wife had learned the trade of weaving in the old country; and as they had but a small amount of money, they wisely laid that aside for the purchase of a farm a little later on, and in the meanwhile employed their time at weaving. England, in her harsh treatment of those Scotch-Irish people, just as France had done in her cruelty to the Huguenots, followed a policy which was not only unchristian but exceeding costly. She thereby drove out from her dominion hundreds of thousands of her sturdiest, most industrious and most conscientious citizens, and thereby helped to make of them, and their sons,

the most invincible foes she had to reckon with in the American Revolution. This same James McAfee, Sr., sent into the Continental army several of his gallant sons a generation later.

The family only lingered a few months on the Delaware; the colony of Pennsylvania was their destination, and in the fall of that year, 1739, they purchased a farm in what is now Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, on Octoraro Creek. When William Penn secured the royal grant of the territory which afterwards came to be called by his name, he announced to the world that it was his purpose here to "try the holy experiment of a free colony for all mankind;" and no doubt the hope of sharing the benefits of that experiment fired the zeal of James McAfee, and made him glad to risk the hardships incident to starting life in a new country. So with determination he set about clearing his land, building a house and preparing for the raising of a crop. Here he lived a number of years, and here several of his children were born. General McAfee tells us that the family, after living on the Octoraro for some years, moved out into the western part of the colony where they remained but one year, and that then they moved, in 1753, down into the colony of North Carolina, near the line of South Carolina. Here, General McAfee thinks, they remained scarce two years, when, turning their faces again northward, they journeyed into Virginia, and settled on Catawba Creek, in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia. This makes the settlement of the McAfees in Virginia to have been effected not earlier than the year 1755. That this is an error of seven or eight years seems to be clearly proven by the court records of Augusta County, Virginia. The fact is, James McAfee was a citizen of that county as early as February, 1748. This point will receive attention presently; meanwhile, let us consider the probable reasons which constrained James McAfee to abandon Pennsylvania and settle in Virginia. Driven from Ireland largely by the narrowness and selfishness of the dominant elements there, the McAfees had supposed that the colony of the peace-loving Penn would afford a sure asylum for all who feared God and sought to live in peace and charity with their neighbors; but even in that colony they were soon made to realize that "Old Adam" had not been altogether left behind in Great Britain. It seems that the original settlers of the colony, who at first were eager to induce the Scotch-Irish to settle among them, especially on their western frontier, began to grow somewhat jealous of their presence when they saw them coming to the front as successful farmers and artisans. The result was that in time these original settlers, still in the ascendant in public affairs, induced the proprietary government to enact various restrictive measures intended to curb the power and influence of the more recent comers. Thus the Scotch-Irish people found themselves again hampered and annoyed in some measure as they had been in Ulster. Then the depredations of Indians, instigated by the French, began, about the year 1744, to make life in the colony uncomfortable. In that year England and France were at war, and the Indians were allies of the French. The northwest corner of the colony bordered Lake Erie, which the French controlled, and the French military posts in Western Pennsylvania threatened to confine the colonists to the eastern slope of the Alleghenies, if not to drive them entirely off the continent. The predominance of Quakers in the colonial assembly, with their theory of non-resistance to enemies, had left the people without means of public defence; and it was probably not until after the McAfee family had arranged to migrate to the southward, that any steps were taken to raise a military force. The culmination of these troubles occurred about 1746, which was the very year in which we have solid reasons for believing James McAfee took his departure from that colony to find a new home in the country to the southward. Then, furthermore, the shrewd and politic Governor Gooch, of Virginia, thoroughly appreciating the great importance of peopling the great Valley with a sturdy, industrious and law-abiding race of men like the Scotch-Irish, offered special inducements to all of

them who should take up lands in that then very sparsely-settled but splendid region. Governor Gooch was no admirer of the faith of the Presbyterians, but he was anxious to interpose them as a sort of buffer between the older settlements and the Indians on his western border. It is easy to understand, therefore, that the McAfees and hundreds of other families were in the course of years induced to exchange Pennsylvania for Virginia. This movement really led, in time, not merely to filling the great Valley with Presbyterians, who dominate that entire region to this day, but also to a pretty complete transformation of Virginia as a whole, so that what was once an overwhelmingly anti-Puritan community, ruled by people warmly devoted to monarchical ideals, came to be the very cradle of republicanism and democratic equality. (See Fiske, Volume 2, pages 395-7.)

Of course it is not a vital matter whether the McAfees settled on the Catawba, in Virginia, in 1755, or seven or eight years earlier; and yet it is a matter of considerable interest. The earlier date (1747-48) reveals to us, as the later date would not, the daring, adventurous character of James McAfee, Sr., and places him among the earliest pioneers of that portion of Virginia in which he settled. The records of Augusta County, Virginia, show that one Robert Poage conveyed to James McAfee 300 acres of land on Catapas Creek at a place designated as "Indian Camp," February 17, 1748, and James McAfee is therein referred to as a farmer and a citizen of Augusta County. That place is located in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia, thirteen miles northwest of the city of Roanoke. This farm is only twenty-five miles northeast of New River at the big bend near Blacksburg, and only eighteen miles from the famous Draper's Meadows Settlement, at which occurred, in 1755, one of the most horrible Indian massacres ever perpetrated in Virginia. That settlement at Draper's Meadows was itself effected the same year in which James McAfee bought the Indian Camp farm. The deed to McAfee says Augusta County, Virginia, was his place of residence at the date of the execution of the deed. (See Augusta County Records, Deed Book 2, page 163.) Nor is this all. The same records show that in the year 1763 James McAfee, Sr., conveys to his son George 190 acres of land on Catawba Creek which is described as part of a tract of 300 acres which James had patented December 15, 1749. The remaining 110 acres of that tract he deeds, the same day, to his son James, Jr. These deeds seem to settle it that James McAfee was a citizen of that region as early as 1748. Augusta County in that early day included within its bounds a little empire, namely: A large part of what is now Virginia; most of which is now West Virginia; and the whole of what is now Kentucky. In 1769 the county of Botetourt was carved out of Augusta, and was made to include all but the portion of the territory of Augusta lying in the Valley north of the James River. Thus we must regard the McAfees as among the very first white people to settle near New River, which was then the extreme south-western and north-western boundary of civilization. How General R. B. McAfee came to affirm that his grandfather did not leave Pennsylvania till 1753, and did not settle in Virginia till 1755 we can never know; but whatever may be conjectured in regard to the matter, we are not warranted in ignoring the official written records of Augusta County; and hence are shut up to the conclusion that James McAfee, Sr., was a citizen of some part of Augusta County in February, 1748.

In November, 1771, James McAfee, Sr., joined his son George and wife, and his son Robert and wife, in executing a deed for the Indian Camp farm to Archibald Woods, after which date he seems to have made his home at a farm he owned four miles down Catawba Creek. This farm had on it an old Indian fort in ancient times, and was only about one hundred yards north-east of the long-famous resort called the Roanoke Red Sulphur Springs. Both these farms are immediately on the public road leading from Fincastle to Blacksburg. The highest mountain peak within twenty miles of these farms is one known on all the maps as McAfee Knob, the highest point of which is 3,201 feet above

PINNACLE OF McAFEE KNOB, ROANOKE COUNTY, VA.

4201 Feet Above Sea Level.

LOCATED FOUR MILES EAST OF ROANOKE RED SULPHUR SPRINGS, AND TEN MILES NORTH-WEST OF ROANOKE CITY. NAMED FOR JAMES M'AFEE, SR., WHOSE HOME WAS THREE MILES WEST OF ITS BASE

sea level, and is the most prominent landmark in that vicinity. A few miles to the west of the farm at the Red Sulphur Springs is a gap in Brushy Mountain known as McAfee's Gap, and through it runs a stream called McAfee's Branch. This whole neighborhood, therefore, is very completely identified with the McAfees, whose homes were in close proximity to these several localities from 1748 onward to the migration of most of the family to Kentucky in 1779, and the death of James McAfee, Sr., in the neighborhood in 1785. In both the deeds made by James McAfee, Sr., to his sons in 1763 we find the witnesses were Robert Breckinridge, William Preston, and John Miller.

In the two deeds James McAfee, Sr., made to his sons in 1763, the name of his wife does not appear. In one he made in March, 1767, to one Archibald Fisher, conveying 150 acres on Catawba Creek, his wife signs as "Jannet." The witnesses were Robert and Lettuce Breckinridge, James Curry, Wm. Fleming, and Andrew Woods, all no doubt neighbors and friends—a "neighbor" in that day may have meant a man who lived twenty miles away.

The life of the McAfees on Catawba Creek was, of necessity, a frontier life; for Indian depredations did not finally cease along the New River and its tributaries till the close of the eighteenth century, lasting as long as they did in Kentucky. As late as 1768 John McAfee, second son of James, Sr., was killed by Indians somewhere on Reed Creek not far from where it empties into the New River in Wythe County. A careful study of the map in this volume entitled "The Parting of the Ways," will reveal the historic interest which the neighborhood of the McAfees possesses. At no other spot in the whole South was there ever such a remarkable convergence of important highways prior to the days of railroads. The focus of all these roads was the supply store at Draper's Meadows, twenty-five miles south-west of James McAfee's home on the Catawba. Here most of the early explorers and hunters bound for the Kentucky wilderness rendezvoused. Here Dr. Walker, Col. Gist, Daniel Boone and many of the early exploring and hunting parties procured supplies. The home of James McAfee, Sr., was right on the Wilderness Road leading north to Philadelphia and south-west to the Holston, the Clinch, East Tennessee and Cumberland Gap, and the McAfee boys were from childhood accustomed to meet with the early explorers, hunters, and traders, and necessarily became thoroughly imbued with the spirit of adventure, and versed in all the employments of men on the frontier. Besides this, they were all reared in the midst of conditions so primitive and strenuous that they were early inured to every form of hardship and danger. They learned all the tricks and habits of both wild beasts and savages, and lived habitually accustomed to the use of the rifle and the hunting knife. The eldest son in the family, James, Jr., was a youth of nineteen when, in 1755, the Indians suddenly fell upon Draper's Meadows and either killed, wounded or carried away into captivity, every man, woman and child that was there the day they made their deadly attack. There were a few Presbyterian churches scattered through the Valley of Virginia in those early days, and no doubt the McAfees, who were Presbyterians, attended religious worship occasionally, but such privileges were by no means common, and it is almost certain that the spiritual interests of the people suffered in consequence.

James McAfee, Sr., was a large, squarely built man, six feet high, with large bones, strong passions, and great decision of character. He had large hazel eyes. When aroused he was ready for any enterprise, and shrank not from danger. Nevertheless, he was amenable to reason, and could be ruled by gentleness and love. His wife, Jane McMichael, whom he called "Jinny," was a woman above the average size, tall and dignified. In a deed executed in 1767 she joins her husband, signing her name as Jannet. She had a remarkably fine face, and a prominent forehead. Her eyes were dark gray in color, and her hair black. Her expression combined decision with mildness and conciliation. When her husband would become aroused and angry she knew how to calm and silence him by

her gentle and persuasive manner. On one occasion when George Whitefield was on one of his preaching tours in America, and attracting vast multitudes to his meetings, Mrs. McAfee expressed a desire to hear him. Her husband, who was a rather rigid and somewhat narrow Seceder, had no liking for Whitefield's new methods, and was not only unwilling to go to the services of the eloquent evangelist himself, but forbade his wife's attending. On observing, however, that she was disappointed and hurt at his refusal, he relented and said to her: "Well, Jinny, you can hear him if you want to, but don't let him come about me." His five sons and their families and a goodly company of the family's connections got ready in the fall of 1779 to migrate to Kentucky and there make a new start in life, and the only prominent members of the family who did not join that caravan of emigrants were James McAfee, Sr., himself, and Mary, his son James's daughter, wife of David Woods. His wife had resolved to accompany her children to the lovely wilderness beyond the western mountains, but for some cause he was to remain in Botetourt. He was now seventy-two years old, and she was perhaps nearly seventy. The way to Kentucky lay along the Wilderness Road. It was not a wagon-road they had to travel, but a mere bridle-path, most of the way. It was a tedious journey of more than forty days on pack-horses, and not an undertaking for people who had passed three score years and ten, but Jane McAfee made it with her children and grandchildren, leaving her husband in Virginia with the almost certain prospect of never meeting him again on earth. Such an episode in the life of a couple who had walked together as husband and wife for forty-four years and reared a large family of children, and who had seen their children's children around them seems to call for explanation. We may well believe General R. B. McAfee knew other reasons than those he mentions. He refers to the old man's age and the difficulties of the journey, but does not explain how it was these could not deter the elder Mrs. McAfee from going. The family, however, made ample provision for the old gentleman's comfort, leaving him under the care of a Mr. Montgomery, who was a relative, and a Mr. McDonald. The father of the McAfees remained in Virginia and there he died in 1785, aged seventy-eight. View it as we may, there is something strange and sad about so unusual a separation as this must have been. In 1783 the old man's son, Robert, showed a filial interest in his father by making the long and dangerous trip to Virginia to see him once more, and took with him presents and loving messages from the other children. Soon after Robert got back to Kentucky his mother died (1783). She had made her home partly with her son Robert, and partly with her daughter Mary, who was now living with her (second) husband, Mr. Thomas Guant, at his home on Salt River out in the Mud Meeting House neighborhood, about three miles from Harrodsburg. She was buried, as General R. B. McAfee particularly points out, on Mr. Guant's farm, on a high hill, on the south-east side of Salt River, about half a mile south-west of the mouth of Dry Fork. (See map of Mercer County in this volume on which her grave is indicated.)

Children of James McAfee, Sr., and Jane McMichael.

A—JAMES McAFEE, JR., who was born in Ireland in 1736, came to America with his parents in 1739; married Agnes Clark about the year 1758; settled with his family on Salt River, Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1779, and there died in 1811.

B.—JOHN McAFEE, who was born in Ireland in 1737, migrated to America with his parents in 1739; and was slain by Indians on Reed Creek, near New River, in what is now Wythe County, Virginia, in 1768.

C.—MALCOLM McAFEE, who was born in Ireland in 1738 or 1739, was probably named for his ancestor, Malcolm McAfee, the last chieftain of the McAfee Clan, and who died in June, 1739, on board the ship in which his parents came to America, and was buried at sea.

D.—GEORGE McAFEE, who was born in Penn-

sylvania in 1740, moved to Catawba Creek, Virginia, with his parents in 1748; married Susan Curry some time prior to 1770; moved with his family to Salt River, Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1779, where he died in 1803. His body was the first one to be buried in New Providence Cemetery.

E.—MARY McAFEE (The First), who was probably born in Pennsylvania about the year 1742, came to Catawba Creek with her parents in 1748; married, first, a Mr. John Poulson, and, later, a Mr. Thomas Gaunt (or Guant, or Grant); and at whose home on Salt River, three miles south-west of Harrodsburg, occurred the death of Mrs. Jane McAfee, the mother of the McAfee pioneers.

F.—ROBERT McAFEE, who was born in Pennsylvania in 1745, moved with his parents to Catawba Creek, Virginia, in 1748; married Anne McCoun in 1766; moved with his family to Salt River, Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1779; and was murdered in New Orleans in 1795.

G.—MARGARET McAFEE, who was probably born in Pennsylvania about the year 1746-7; moved with her parents to Catawba Creek, Virginia, in 1748; married George Buchanan, and moved with her husband to Salt River, Mercer County, Kentucky, about 1784, where she spent the remainder of her life.

H.—SAMUEL McAFEE, who was born in the year 1748, and probably on Catawba Creek, Virginia; married Hannah McCormick about 1774; moved to Salt River, Kentucky, in 1779; and died there in 1801.

J.—WILLIAM McAFEE, who was probably born on Catawba Creek, Virginia, about 1750; married Rebecca Curry probably about 1774; moved to Salt River, Kentucky, in 1779; and died in 1780 from the effect of wounds he received while fighting Indians at Piqua, Ohio, he being at the time the captain of a company of Kentucky Cavalry under General George Rogers Clark.

K.—There was another daughter born to James McAfee, Sr., and his wife Jane, but the writer could learn nothing of her history.

Fuller details concerning each of the above-mentioned children of James McAfee, Sr., will be found in Chapter V. of Part II of this volume.

CHAPTER III.

TOUR OF THE McAFEE COMPANY TO KENTUCKY IN THE SUMMER OF 1773, AND WHAT IT MEANT FOR THE ACTUAL SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY.[23]

"The roots of the present lie deep in the past, and nothing in the past can be dead to the man who would learn how the present came to be what it is."
Prof. Stubbs, Oxford, England.

The Kentucky of to-day has had a genesis peculiarly its own; and in order to understand what it is at the present time, we must go back at least a hundred and fifty years. Like nearly every other kind of growth, it has had its day of humble beginnings; and if we would appreciate the results of a century and a half of development, we must scrutinize the conduct and motives of the sturdy pioneers who laid the foundations of its life. Very few, if any, of the men who had most to do with inaugurating the movement which issued in the creation of the splendid commonwealth we behold to-day, possessed much of either learning or wealth. But many of them were genuine heroes, nevertheless, and rendered a noble service to mankind. They may have builded far wiser than they knew, or even dreamed, and yet their debtors we are, because we, without them, could not have been made perfect. Those sturdy, adventurous pioneers labored, and we have entered into their labors. The heritage in which Kentuckians of the twentieth century take pride is so largely the creation of the men of the eighteenth that we are in honor bound to do them reverence.

The body of men known in Kentucky history as the McAfee Company[4] consisted of five individuals, to wit: James McAfee, Jr., the eldest member of the company, and its recognized leader; George and Robert McAfee, the younger brothers of the leader; James McConn, Jr., the brother of Robert McAfee's wife; and Samuel Adams. At the date of the tour these men made to Kentucky all of them except Adams were married men. James McAfee was thirty-seven years old, George was thirty-three, Robert was twenty-eight, McConn was about the age of Robert McAfee, and Adams was but nineteen. The achievements of this company have been pretty fully recounted in all the more comprehensive histories of Kentucky, such as those of Marshall, Butler, Collins and Smith. And more or less elaborate mention has been made of them in a great many other historical works, the latest of which is the "Winning of the West," by President Roosevelt. The homes of these five men were in what was then Botetourt County, Virginia, on Catawba and Sinking Creeks. The home of the elder James McAfee, the father of five sons who took an active part in the early settlement of Kentucky, was, in 1773, on Catawba Creek, about twelve miles north-west of Roanoke City, and within sight of the well-known summer resort, the Roanoke Red Sulphur Springs. The noted Ingles Ferry, at which most travellers crossed New River on their way to the south-west, was only thirty-five miles distant, on an air line, from the old McAfee homestead. What was called the Draper's Meadows Settlement, now the site of the town of Blacksburg, Virginia, and at which point was located, from 1748 onward, a famous supply store, was not more than twenty-one miles away. The region was very hilly and broken. Lofty parallel ranges of mountains were piled up in close succession, one behind another, and the amount of level and easily cultivated land was comparatively small. It is easy to understand how the glowing accounts of the splendid wilderness beyond the mountains, given by Boone and other hunters on their return home from that region about 1771-2, should have fired the imaginations of adventurous young men who saw a grand opportunity for bettering their condition in life. From what General R. B. McAfee says it is nearly certain the McAfees had conversed with Daniel Boone in 1772, or at least with men who had gotten information direct from him. We know the McAfees had all their plans laid for a tour to Kentucky by the time the year 1773 had opened. The road which Boone would naturally travel from Kentucky back to his home on the Yadkin in North Carolina, passed Draper's Meadows.

The men of this company were admirably adapted by character and training to just such a hazardous enterprise. Reared on the frontier, they had all their lives been accustomed to dealing with wild beasts and Indians, as well as all the sterner forces of nature. They were perfectly familiar with all the arts of wood craft, and were by no means novices in any department of adventure they were likely to have to deal with on a tour such as that on which they were about to embark. Certain it was that for that expedition "no tenderfoot need apply." It is clear from all the records we have of the doings of these men that, from the first inception of their undertaking at the close of the year 1772 on to the day of their safe arrival at home at the end of summer, the year following, theirs was a perfectly independent and autonomous body. They were never amalgamated with, or in any way subject to, any other company of explorers, though for a season they were associated with several other companies on the Ohio River for the mutual protection and convenience of all concerned, while accidentally thrown together. From the outset they had a very distinct idea of their mode of procedure, and of the particular region in which they wished to make their permanent home.

The condition of the region now composing the Commonwealth of Kentucky when visited by this company in the summer of 1773 should be regarded for a moment before we attempt to follow them on their tour. To-day this region has a permanent resident population of more than two million souls; at that date it did not have a single one. Indian

tribes, whose homes were to the north or the south of its borders, often hunted in its majestic forests, or marched across its territory; but when the McAfees entered Kentucky it is almost certain there was not one human being actually residing there. In our day tens of thousands of public roads connect every village and neighborhood in the State, many of which are graded and macadamized; in that day there was not one mile of road in the entire region save the trails and paths made by wild animals or savages in roving over the land. There are now fourteen million acres of the soil of the State under actual cultivation as farms and gardens, yielding every year a vast variety of agricultural products worth more than one hundred and fifty millions of dollars; at that day there was probably not an acre of ground in corn. More than four hundred thousand dwelling houses dot the country at the present time; in 1773 the only buildings in existence were some long-deserted houses on the banks of the Ohio opposite the mouth of the Scioto River, unless we except one little eight by twelve cabin which Dr. Thomas Walker had erected on the Cumberland River in 1750. In simple truth, Kentucky, in 1773, was but a splendid, uninhabited wilderness, along whose northern borders a few adventurous travellers had passed hurriedly in their canoes, and into a portion of whose interior some explorers and hunters had gone only for a few weeks to get a glimpse of the land, or to kill game, with no thought of becoming actual settlers. The real work of civilization had not been so much as begun. This was the Kentucky which, in the spring of 1773, the McAfees essayed to enter with the fixed purpose of effecting there a permanent settlement for themselves, their wives and their children. They came not as aimless adventurers, nor as hunters, nor as mere land speculators or agents of such. They came as men who desired to better their condition in life, and to make homes, and to take part in laying the foundations of a great Commonwealth west of the mountains. It is clear from General McAfee's Autobiography that these men had something of the prophetic vision, and foresaw the march of empire westward, and meant to be in the vanguard of those civilizing agencies which were to redeem the wilderness and make of it a fruitful field and the home of a Christian people. What Kentucky needed then was sober, industrious, moral men with families—men who should bring with them not only the hunting-knife and the rifle, but the implements of peaceful and beneficent industry, and, above all, the school and the church. To this class the McAfees and their associates belonged. That this was their aim, which they lived to see realized, is seen in the community which they established on Salt River in what is now Mercer County, and which, after one hundred and thirty years, is filled with their descendants; whilst hundreds of them have gone to the west and north-west and taken an honorable part in the development of the country.

It must have been an affecting scene that spring morning—Monday, May 10, 1773—when, probably at the home of the elder James McAfee, the five men of this company assembled, on the Catawba in Botetourt County, Va., to take leave of their loved ones on starting to the west. No such farewell had ever been said there before, we may well believe. Here were five choice young men about to make their way into an unknown wilderness where for several months they would be exposed to uncommon hardships and dangers, and where in any hour of sore need their friends would be unable to reach them, or even to know of their peril. With the five members of the company were two other gallant young men who deserve to be remembered, namely: John McCown, and James Pawling, whose humble yet hazardous mission it was to accompany them for at least one hundred and sixty-five miles of the way in order to bring back the horses which would no longer be needed by the company after they had reached the point on the Lower Kanawha, where they were to embark in canoes. The bridle-trail the party were to travel down New River was one along which Indians were wont to come from north of the Ohio at that season of the year on their maranding expeditions to the white settlements in

Virginia;" and young McCoun and Pawling would need on their return home to travel that trail for a week or more by themselves, and cumbered with perhaps five or six horses. Then also there were two of the McAfee brothers, Samuel and William, who, though not of the exploring party, should be considered as in a sense members, because their task was one which was as essential to the undertaking as if they actually had gone along with the others. Not all of the able-bodied men of the neighborhood could safely leave home at any one time, for we must remember that the whole of the New River region was still a frontier settlement and constantly exposed to Indian depredations. The very next year after this tour was made the savages invaded the Sinking Creek neighborhood, as Dr. Hale tells us (see pages 33 and 265 of his Alleghany Pioneers) and murdered five children of a Mr. Lybrook. Capable and fearless men were needed at home for purposes of protection, as well as to make the crops; and it is recognized in Holy Writ that "as his part is that goeth down to the battle, so shall his part be that tarrieth by the stuff; they shall part alike." It probably required more courage and self-restraint for these two young men to quietly stand guard at home than it would to have accompanied the expedition to Kentucky. Samuel was then twenty-five years old, and William was probably about twenty-three, and the part afterwards played by both in the establishment of the Salt River Settlement, and the death of the latter from wounds inflicted by Indians while leading his company of soldiers in battle under General George Rogers Clark in 1780, prove them to have been of the same heroic mould as their older brothers. At last the farewells were spoken, and the tender kisses of affection exchanged, and the men of the exploring company, together with the two friends who were to be their companions for a week, mounted their horses and took the road leading up the creek towards the Great Divide on whose summit stood the supply store at Draper's Meadows, whence their real start for the wilderness was to be made.[6] The distance was only about twenty-five miles from the home of the elder James McAfee, and it was probably covered by the middle of the afternoon, allowing the men ample time before night for the laying in of such supplies as were needed for the long journey. No doubt next morning, Tuesday, May 11th, they were ready by sunrise to proceed. Let us picture them to our minds as they are about ready to take the trail which led down New River. What would we not give now if a first-class photographer's outfit had been possible then, and some one had taken a good view of the whole party in a group, and the picture had been transmitted to us exactly as it appeared 130 years ago! The linsey hunting-shirt, the coon-skin cap, the buck-skin leggins and moccasins, the tomahawk, the hunting knife, the powder horn and last, but not least, the long-barrelled flint-lock rifle—the most effective short range arm yet devised by man—were all in evidence, not to mention numberless other items in the way of provisions and outfit. Their horses may not have looked very stylish, and the miscellaneous array of "plunder" indispensable for such a tour, no doubt imparted a somewhat ragged and inartistic look to the ensemble; and yet they must have presented a most picturesque spectacle. And what impresses us most, and causes a feeling of sadness, is the consciousness that no such spectacle can ever be witnessed anywhere in our world again. The pioneer age has vanished, never more to return. All the conditions of life have been radically altered. The pioneers are gone, and they can live in memory alone. Let us therefore be only the more careful to preserve, as faithfully as we may, the true story of their lives.

We can not with absolute certainty indicate the exact route they travelled on their way down towards the Ohio River, but it is reasonably certain, as Dr. Hale points out (see his book, page 102), that they went the trail the Indians were wont to follow in coming from north of the Ohio to the upper New River country. That trail went down New River to the mouth of Indian Creek, crossed over New River and the Bluestone, and Flat Top Mountain, and went on past the site of Raleigh

Court House to the head waters of Paint Creek, then down that stream to the Kanawha, and down the Kanawha to the noted Salt Spring at the mouth of Campbell's Creek, which is about five miles above the present city of Charleston, West Virginia,[7] and about sixty miles above the mouth of the Kanawha. The distance which the party travelled on their horses was not far from one hundred and sixty-five miles, and they were about one week in coming. From this point John McConn and James Pawling returned with all the horses to their homes. Ten days' time was consumed in the building of the boats; the provisions and outfit of the party were loaded into them; and before the end of May they had reached the Ohio, where they fell in with Capt. Thomas Bullitt and several other companies of whites, and some friendly Delaware Indians, going down to the Falls of Ohio.[8] The journey down to the mouth of the Kentucky River occupied the whole of the month of June and the first week in July. They proceeded leisurely, making many stops on the way, and exploring the country back from the river for ten or fifteen, and even thirty miles. On the afternoon of Wednesday, July 7th, the McAfees bade farewell to Capt. Bullitt and the other men with whom they had now been pleasantly associated for five or six weeks, as they were only a short distance then from the mouth of the Kentucky River, into which stream the McAfees purposed to enter, whilst all the other companies were destined for the Falls of the Ohio. The McAfees pulled at their oars that evening till darkness gathered over the earth, when they drew near to the shore at a point about six miles above where the town of Carrollton now stands, and spent the night in their canoes. Perhaps they feared Indians, as they were then only a very few miles from a well-known buffalo path and Indian trail, which led down from the Big Bone Lick, at which they had just spent several days, to what is now called Dremon's Lick, which they were destined to reach very soon. The next morning they were under way an hour before day, eagerly bending to their oars, for they were now anxious to see with their own eyes that stream near whose course it was their purpose to settle for life. Thursday morning, the 8th of July, 1773, just as the eastern sky was brightening with the flush of coming day, through the mist of the early dawn the dim outlines of the Kentucky's low banks were descried; and no doubt their hearts beat more rapidly as they began to realize that the goal of their hopes was almost in view. Soon the prows of their boats began to turn southward as, with searching glances at the now clearly visible shores of the new-found stream, they satisfied themselves that this was indeed the river for which they were seeking. In a moment or two more their light canoes were noiselessly gliding in between the banks of the Kentucky, and the broad Ohio was behind them. The wild birds had just awaked to their matins and were filling the forest with their songs. Perhaps a flock of water-fowl were disporting themselves playfully in the stream, and attracted by the gentle plashing of the oars, looked wonderingly at the intruders, scarce knowing whether to take wing or no. As they moved on up the river the sun came up in all his glory; and as he began to illumine the splendid wilderness with his beams not only had there begun another diurnal revolution of the earth upon its axis, but also the dawn of a new Commonwealth's life. Whether those plain, practical men were conscious of the fact or not, their quiet and unheralded entrance into that historic stream on that summer's morning was "the fair beginning of a time"—the birthday of a new era for one of the most favored regions beneath the blue dome of heaven. In that auspicious hour the banner of civilization was for the first time unfurled over Kentucky's soil, and the permanent settlement of the State begun. This event was one of those simple, unpretentious beginnings of things which men should ponder unless they would lose half the lesson which providence and nature have to teach us. As some one has said:

"There is a day in spring,
When under all the earth the secret germs
Begin to stir and glow before they bud:—
The wealth and festal pomps of mid-summer
Lie in the heart of that inglorious hour,
Which no man names with blessing,
Though its work be blessed by all the world."

KENTUCKY RIVER AT ITS MOUTH, CARROLLTON, KY.

THE M'AFEES ENTERED KENTUCKY HERE JULY 8, 1773.

The years which extend from 1750 to 1772 mark a distinct and most important era in the history of the region now called Kentucky—it was The Era Of Exploration proper. With it we associate the names of such men as Walker, Gist, Finley, Knox, Boone, etc. These men, and many others, first blazed the way to the settlement of the country, and deserve to be held in everlasting remembrance, chiefly because their work, no matter how meagre it may, in some cases, have been, and no matter what may have been their motives, rendered possible all that was accomplished by those who followed in their wake. But scarcely any of the men of this class and era were seriously intent on making permanent settlements in Kentucky with the distinct aim of subduing the wilderness into farms and villages; and had they not been succeeded by men of a wholly different temper and purpose, it may be doubted whether Kentucky would ever have been anything but a magnificent game preserve. Boone, grand old hero that he was, bears the character of a hunter and rover, rather than that of a settled citizen; and but for the enterprise of a man like Col. Henderson, who took the initiative, and paid him to assist in his schemes, he might never have founded anything more than a hunting station in the wilderness. But rapidly upon the heels of this first era in Kentucky's life marched the second—the Era of Permanent Settlements. For convenience this era may be assigned to the twenty years which began with the close of 1772, and ended with the admission of Kentucky into the Federal Union in 1792. Of this unique period the vanguard was led by the McAfee and Bullitt companies in 1773, by the men under Captain James Harrod in 1774, and by Col. Henderson's party in 1775. It was with the work of these men, principally, that the real settlement and civilization of Kentucky began. Hence, if we are to be true to the truth of history, the settlement begun by the McAfees on Salt River, and that of Captain Bullitt at the Falls of the Ohio, in July, 1773; that begun by Captain Harrod at Harrodsburg, in June, 1774; and that made at Boonesborough by Col. Henderson's party, in March, 1775, and some others made about this period, must, for all time to come, be regarded as distinctly epoch-making events in the founding and development of Kentucky, second in time, only, to the achievements of the explorers proper, and equal to theirs in importance. The day of mere adventure had now begun to wane, and the day of home-seeking and State-building was dawning. The tramp of thousands of emigrants with their pack-horses from Virginia and the Carolinas was soon to be heard along the Wilderness Road through Cumberland Gap, and the beautiful Ohio was soon to be dotted with fleets of canoes, pirogues and flat boats, bringing homeseekers from Pennsylvania and Maryland with their families and the implements of peaceful industry. Of all this mighty movement that modest entrance of the McAfees into the mouth of the Kentucky River at sunrise of the 8th of July, 1773, was the prelude and pledge. The savages to the north of the Ohio, who looked upon Kentucky as their hunting-ground, instinctively recognized the significance of the movements of the McAfees and Bullitt. Scientific travellers and explorers, who merely skirted the northern border of Kentucky in their canoes, or marched hurriedly across portions of the country, gave the Indians small concern; the traders with their packs full of trinkets and small wares for exchange were gladly welcomed; even the hunters aroused but little antagonism so long as killing game was their only purpose. But when, in 1773, and the next year or two following, they discerned sturdy men of another temper and aim searching the land, accompanied by the surveyor with his compass and chain —when it dawned on their savage minds that these were serious men, the vanguard of civilization, who meant to clear the land, and plant crops, and build towns, they realized, as never before, that the invasion of this fair region meant the complete expulsion, if not the extermination, of the Red Man; and the mystic signal was given for "war to the knife." The answer which the savages gave to the surveys made in 1773 was the series of hostilities which began early in the following summer, and which cul-

JAMES McAFEE'S SPRING, ON SALT RIVER, KY.

DISCOVERED BY HIM IN JULY, 1773.

Located on the bank of Salt River, just under the bluff on which the McAfee Fort was built in 1779, and the Stone House in 1790.

minated in October, 1774, in the bloodiest battle yet fought on Virginia soil, when the great chief Cornstalk, with perhaps 1,000 warriors, attacked the Virginia militia under General Lewis at Point Pleasant, at the mouth of the Kanawha River, and fought a whole day with splendid courage and valor until convinced that the whites were their superiors. That the surveys of 1773 were the very first movements of the whites which gave promise of permanent settlement, and that this was the light in which the Indians viewed it, is amply attested by a number of distinguished historical writers.[9]

The journey of the party up the river to Drennon's Lick,[10] and on up to where Frankfort now stands, occupied about a week, the details of which are given in the journals of James and Robert McAfee to be found in the Appendix. When, on the 21st of July, they left Cave Spring on Gilbert's Creek, in what is now Anderson County, five miles west of the Kentucky River, and marched to the west two miles, they found a stream which they aptly designated "Crooked Creek." This was Salt River; and the moment they reached it, they seem to have concluded that they had now discovered the precise neighborhood in which their final settlement was to be made. They began at once to survey land, one tract after another, and continued without cessation for more than a week. The party had already laid in two surveys on the creek where Vanceburg now stands, at least two or three on the upper Licking, one at the mouth of the Licking, two or three at Drennon's Lick, two at the site of Frankfort, and two at Cave Spring, making perhaps 5,000 acres thus far surveyed. On Salt River from the mouth of Hammond's Creek up to what is now known as the Mud Meeting House Neighborhood, some three miles above Harrodsburg, twenty-one additional surveys were made of 400 acres each. The total quantity of land surveyed on and very near to Salt River amounted to more than 8,000 acres, which, being added to that previously surveyed, brings the grand total up to somethingabove 13,000 acres. If we include the pre-emption claim to 1,000 acres additional for each 400 acre tract, to be paid for at the government price, the actual amount of choice land to which the men of this company had rights footed up more than 45,000 acres, equal to about seventy square miles of the best class of land in Kentucky. It is not at all likely, however, that the claim to all of these tracts was made good. The particular tract on which James McAfee afterwards settled, and on which he erected his fort or station in the fall of 1779, and his stone dwelling in 1790, was surveyed, as his journal seems to indicate, on either Friday, July 23d, or Saturday, 24th. The fine spring which issues out from the base of the bluff a few feet from the river was the special attraction to James McAfee in that piece of land. The party were standing on the bluff overlooking the spring and river, and James McAfee, taking Hancock Taylor's surveying staff in his hand, struck it into the soil, remarking to his companions: "Men, you may hunt for as much more land as you please; but, for my part, I intend to live here, my days out, with the blessing of Providence." To this remark his brother Robert, who had not yet secured all his land, made reply: "Well, James, we will try and find as good places near you." That simple incident was one well worth remembering. The spring is there still. Though its discoverer has been sleeping in his grave on the top of the little knoll a few hundred yards distant for nearly a hundred years, the sparkling water still ripples down over the gravel to the river as merrily as it did in 1773. The old stone house, erected by James McAfee in 1790, is still standing there on the hill where once the old fort was. We are impressed, as we picture to our minds that little company gathered on that bluff that July day, that they were no adventurers, or mere Indian fighters, but serious, God-fearing men, who were locating a home for their families, and who believed in a divine Providence in human affairs. They have all been dead for nearly a century, some of them much longer, but the orderly Christian community which was there founded by them still abides, with its old church which these men organized, and it is their monument. They seem to have desired no other.

The work of surveying was concluded on the 30th

NEW PROVIDENCE CEMETERY—OPENED IN 1854.

LOOKING NORTH FROM SITE OF OLD CHURCH.

The grave of Gen. R. B. McAfee in Background, to Left of the Centre, marked by Tall, Capped Monolith.

day of July. As General McAfee informs us, the lands selected were not only regularly surveyed and plotted, but plainly marked by deadening trees here and there, and piling up heaps of brush in conspicuous places, on their several surveys. These methods of identification were just as recognizable as were the little log pens called "improvers' cabins," which were not cabins at all, having no roofs, and useless as habitations. These men evidently expected to return the following spring to clear land and make a beginning with their settlement. The homeward journey is pretty fully detailed in the journals James and Robert McAfee kept. It was perhaps one of the most arduous and perilous journeys, for about one-half the way, that has ever been deliberately undertaken by men. It took them nearly one month to travel the 500 miles they were obliged to cover in returning to their homes. There was such a combination of adverse conditions to be met and endured for several consecutive weeks as has rarely had to be faced by any body of travellers. There were absolutely no roads of any kind for at least 300 miles of the way; they had to make their way for a distance of about 165 miles right along the course of Kentucky River, a tortuous stream whose banks were nearly all the way very steep and covered with greenbrier, laurel and other varieties of brush which constantly obstructed their progress, and lacerated their bodies to the utmost limit of endurance; and, to add to these horrors, there were days at a time along the most fearfully trying portions of the journey when no game was to be seen, so that after nearly two weeks of the most distressing hardships they found death by starvation staring them in the face when in the midst of the highest and most desolate mountains in Kentucky. Leaving Salt River where the Town Branch of Harrodsburg enters it, on Saturday, the 31st day of July, they marched in a south-easterly direction, intending to pass out of Kentucky somewhere about the head streams of the Kentucky River into Powells Valley and Clinch Valley on their way to New River through South-west Virginia. They crossed what are now Garrard and Madison counties to the site of Irvine, Ky., where they reached the Kentucky River and began its ascent. They followed the windings of the most northerly branch of that stream past the sites of Beattyville, Jackson and Hazard on to the mouth of Leatherwood Creek in what is now Perry County, where they finally abandoned the river. Ascending the easterly branch of that creek to its source, they then struck out across the steep and rugged ridges of Pine Mountain, coming on to the Poor Fork of Cumberland River, through Hurricane Gap, at the point where it is joined by Clover Lick Creek. Going up that creek to where there were some salt springs from which there were elk paths leading up over the Big Black Mountain toward Virginia, they undertook the ascent of that lofty range on a dry, hot day, when they had been almost entirely without food for two days, and were bleeding and worn out from having had to drag their way through laurel and greenbrier bushes for days. That was the 12th day of August, and these men had now about reached the point where human endurance utterly fails. Another fearful aggravation of their sufferings they found at that high altitude was a lack of water. The sun was now nearing his setting in the west, and the lofty, barren rocks to the east of them, 4,000 feet high, were now illumined by his rays, and only lent a strange horror to the scene. Not a living creature was anywhere visible. George McAfee and young Adams, at length unable longer to walk, cast themselves on the ground prepared to die, whilst James McAfee halted at their sides and tried to cheer them up. These men were not conscious of having done wrong to any man in making this tour. They considered the Indian titles to the country as having all been extinguished, and their motive in undertaking this journey was one which no good man could condemn. As far as the peculiar exigencies of their case would allow they had religiously abstained from violating the sanctity of the Sabbath, and had recognized their dependence upon the blessing of Heaven. But it looked now as if God had deserted them, and was about to allow them to perish miserably on that desolate mountain and

leave their sorrowing loved ones to mourn the rest of their days in hopeless ignorance of the place and manner of their awful death. But it has often happened in human experience that man's extremity is God's opportunity, and it was wonderfully illustrated that memorable afternoon on the Big Black Mountains. Robert McAfee, always cheerful and athletic, resolved to make one final, desperate effort to find some game and save the lives of the members of the party. He and McConn started across one of the ridges looking for some animal whose death might prove their life. Strange to relate, Robert McAfee had not proceeded more than five hundred yards when, to his unutterable joy, he espied a buck deer standing beside a spring, within good range of his rifle. It was a critical moment for all concerned. He was unavoidably excited, and a miss might mean the loss of the last opportunity to save the lives of the whole party, for another night without food would have meant the annihilation of the company. But he took careful aim and pulled the trigger of his trusty old rifle, the flint on its lock responded with a spark of fire, that spark fell upon the powder in the pan of the lock and communicated with the charge in the gun, the old rifle answered with a report heard far over the mountain, and the buck dropped to the earth with the bullet in his vital part. Overjoyed, Robert ran with his hunting-knife in hand, and in a moment he was on the wounded animal, dispatching him to make sure of his work. The other members of the company, hearing the crack of Robert's rifle, instantly divined its meaning, and in a few moments all came hobbling along to learn the results. Soon the buck was ready for cooking, and a fire was kindled by which to roast an abundance of juicy meat for all. It was as if that animal had dropped right out of the sky, and that stream of water had been made to flow by Moses striking the rock. Such devout thanksgivings were probably never poured forth on that lonely mountain, before or since, as that evening ascended to heaven from the grateful hearts of those five men who had thus been rescued from the hand of death. And in after years, when at last these men had been settled in their new homes on Salt River, and they came to erect a sanctuary for the worship of God, they remembered that August day on the Big Blacks, and named their church New Providence. And that organization still abides, and it bears that same sacred name after 119 years of testimony to the overruling mercy of God to his needy children that day in 1773.

Refreshed greatly by food and drink and rest, the party pursued their way to the eastward, crossing Powell's Valley and Clinch Valley a day or two later. At Castlewood's, a fording place on Clinch River, they got sight of the first white man's cabin they had seen since the 11th of May. Pushing on one day farther to the cabin of a Captain Russell, who was an old acquaintance of the McAfees, they felt the really hazardous part of their journey was past, and they gave several days to recuperating. Their blistered feet and lacerated arms and legs needed rest and healing, which could here be safely enjoyed. The remaining 170 miles of their homeward journey was accomplished in another week, and before the last day of August they had all reached their homes and found an inexpressibly glad welcome from the loved ones whom they had not seen for about 110 days. We can easily picture the crowds of eager listeners who gathered around the returned heroes to hear the story of their adventures, and be stirred by the glowing descriptions given of the splendid wilderness beyond the mountains, and of the magnificent lands they had surveyed for future homes. Henceforth the Blue Grass region of Kentucky was the Eldorado of their hopes; and the only question now was as to how soon it would be possible for them to enter into it and make it their permanent home.

CHAPTER IV.

THE REMOVAL TO KENTUCKY AFTER LONG DELAY.—1773–1779.

The purpose of the McAfees, from which they never wavered, was to open up their lands on Salt River for actual occupation just as soon as possible, with the view of removing thither. Their settlement in their new home, however, was retarded by a series of hinderances and misfortunes running through five or six years; and, through no dallying on their part, the date of their final migration to Kentucky was postponed until the fall of 1779. At the date of their first exploring tour the Indians and whites were practically at peace in the West, and no man could then have foreseen the outbreak of Indian hostilities to occur the following year, or the mighty revolt of the colonies against the English Crown a few years later. Had matters remained as they were in 1773, we may well believe the McAfees would have taken up their permanent abode in Kentucky by the fall of the following year. But a marked change in the temper of the Indians towards intending settlers in Kentucky began to be manifest early in the summer of 1774. The surveys made in Kentucky by the McAfees, Bullitt and others in 1773 had helped to produce an impression on the savage mind which was not at once understood by the whites. Whilst Harrod was busy, about the middle of June, 1774, laying off the town which now bears his name, Daniel Boone arrived with a message from Governor Dunmore, warning all the whites in Kentucky that the savages were about to go on the warpath.[11] And Harrod had only just completed his first cabins at Harrodsburg when (July 10th) the place was attacked by the Indians with fatal results, and in consequence the settlement was quickly abandoned, and was not reoccupied until March, 1775. The storm, however, broke in fury when that brave and capable leader, Chief Cornstalk, at the head of a formidable army of Indian warriors, attacked the Virginia militia under General Andrew Lewis at the mouth of the Kanawha River.[12] This was the bloodiest contest ever had between whites and Indians on Virginia soil. Three of the McAfee brothers, James, George and Robert, took an active part in this battle, being without reasonable doubt, in the company of Evan Shelby, of Col. Christian's regiment.[13]

A question of some importance is: Did the McAfees revisit their lands on Salt River during the year 1774? General McAfee affirms that they did not, but Marshall as positively declares that they did.[14] Between these two reliable witnesses we must choose. Both meant to tell only the truth, and neither had, so far as we can judge, any reason for misstating the facts. The only question, as between these two historians is, which of the two had the better means of knowing the facts? General McAfee first penned his statement in 1840, and repeated it in 1845. He had gotten what he knew of the matter from his uncle James in 1804. The General was only twenty years of age in 1804, and only twenty-seven when his uncle died; and it was twenty-nine years after his uncle's death that his first assertion was written in his "Rise and Progress of the Salt River Settlement." On the other hand, Humphrey Marshall came to Kentucky from Virginia in 1780, when about twenty years old, and lived till 1842. The first edition of his work was printed in 1812, and the last in 1824. He was personally familiar with the pioneer history of Kentucky. It is reasonably certain that he would not have gathered materials for a history of Kentucky and of the McAfee company without having personal interviews with the McAfee brothers, with whom he was contemporary in Kentucky from the year 1780 onward. If he began to gather his materials about the year 1804, he was then a man forty-four years old. Though he was not a kinsman of the McAfees he was in a better position,

considering his age, his purpose, and his previous close contact with the men of the pioneer period, to make an accurate note of facts than the then youthful nephew of James McAfee. As the General himself states, he got his data from his uncle James in the year 1804, and he was then only twenty years old, and his uncle sixty-eight. Marshall was preparing to publish an elaborate history of Kentucky, whilst the General was only making memoranda relating to his own family, and without, most likely, any idea at the time of publishing what he wrote. There would, therefore, seem to be a slight preponderance of credibility in favor of Marshall's assertions, even if valid reasons had been assigned by General McAfee as against a visit early in 1774. But the only reason given for the McAfees not having come to their lands in 1774 is the fear of Indian hostilities, but this reason had little or no foundation till late in the spring. We know that the next year the McAfees were on Salt River by the 11th of March, having left Botetourt County, Virginia, the 20th of February. Reports of impending Indian raids such as would deter those men would have had to reach the Catawba Creek neighborhood before March, and we know no reason why the McAfees could not have made their visit and gotten back home a month before Governor Dunmore despatched Daniel Boone to Kentucky with his message of warning. All in all, we must conclude that Marshall was correct, and that the McAfees did, as he asserts, revisit their lands on Salt River in the early spring of 1774, and made additional improvements thereon with a view to an early occupation of the same. Captain Harrod certainly was there in June of that year, and was not forced to retreat till July; and we know of no reason why the McAfees could not have done the same, especially if they had left home as early as the end of February.

The opening of the year 1775 was no doubt marked by special activity among the McAfees. The great battle of the previous October at Point Pleasant, in which the Indians had received a never-to-be-forgotten chastisement, and which closed Lord Dunmore's war, gave to the whites great encouragement; and in the absence of any new complications, the way now seemed reasonably clear for a third visit of the McAfees to the Salt River country of Kentucky. It is true that the quarrel of the Thirteen Colonies with the Mother Country was constantly increasing in bitterness and extent. The opening conflict of the Revolution, the Battle of Lexington, was destined to be fought this spring (April 19), and Bunker Hill two months later; and the Second Continental Congress, which voted to raise an army, with Washington as Commander-in-Chief, was to assemble the 10th of May. But news travelled slowly in those days, and especially to so remote a frontier region as the New River settlements. Certain it is that on the 20th of February, 1775, all five of the McAfee brothers (James, George, Robert, Samuel and William) and David Adams, and also an apprenticed servant of the elder James McAfee by the name of John Higgins set out for Kentucky.[15] Their route this time was down the Wilderness Road through Southwestern Virginia by way of Cumberland Gap and Wasioto Gap.[16] They reached James McAfee's spring on Salt River March 11th—a journey of nearly 400 miles, in eighteen days. Captain Harrod and company, who had come by the Ohio and Kentucky Rivers, passed the McAfees four days later on their way up to Harrodsburg to re-occupy the cabins deserted the summer before. Daniel Boone, who came this spring as Colonel Henderson's agent to make a settlement at the place afterwards named Boonesboro, did not arrive till some weeks after the McAfees had begun work on their land on Salt River.[17] On this visit they cleared two acres of ground near James McAfee's spring, and planted it in corn. They also made a beginning on an orchard by planting peach and apple seeds. George and William McAfee also cleared and planted some ground quite near Harrodsburg, at a spring on the Town Branch near Salt River. The purpose of the party was to move their families that fall or the next spring. Having spent a month there they set out for home by the way they had come, April 10th,

A SHORT STRETCH OF BOONE'S TRACE, OR THE WILDERNESS ROAD, IN WASIOTO GAP, NEAR PINEVILLE, KY.

MARKED OUT BY DANIEL BOONE FOR COL. HENDERSON IN 1775.

Along this very way went Thousands of the Pioneers from 1775 to 1800.

KENTUCKY RIVER AT THE MOUTH OF DRENNON'S CREEK.

LOOKING UP THE RIVER

Here the McAfee company turned into Drennon's Creek July 9, 1773.

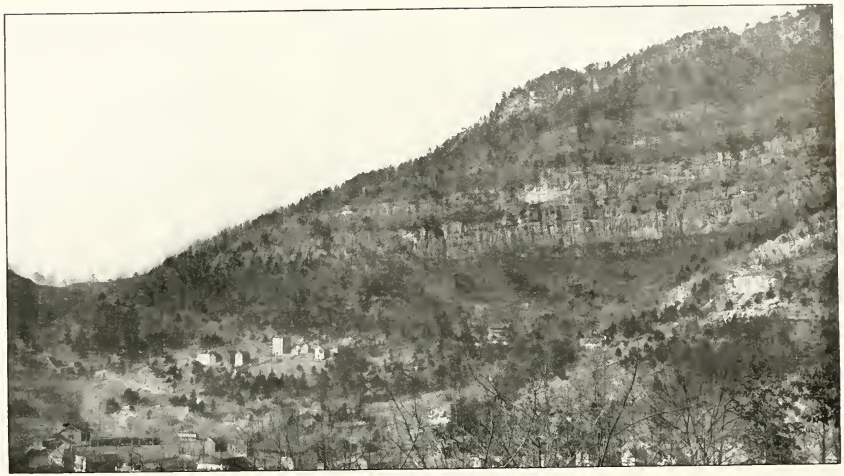
leaving Higgins and a man by the name of Poulson to plant more corn and guard the property against intruders. When the party, on their way down the Wilderness Road (then a mere trail) towards Cumberland Gap, reached Skagg's Creek, which is a small tributary of Rockcastle River, and in the county of Rockcastle, they met Colonel Henderson and Boone, with a considerable number of men coming in on their way to the place where they were soon to found Boonesboro. Here a council was held in which Henderson laid before the McAfees his plans. He had only a few weeks before, at what is now Kingsport, Tennessee, concluded the Treaty of Watauga with the Cherokee Indians, by which the Henderson company purchased over one-half of the present territory of Kentucky, calling it Transylvania. It was a stupendous enterprise, and Henderson sought to enlist the co-operation of the McAfees.[18] James McAfee was evidently something more than a plain farmer; he was a reading man, and well informed as to public matters, and was not easily carried away by the eloquence and rosy pictures of the able Colonel Henderson. He resisted the proposition to allow him liberal grants of land if he should join in the large undertaking, holding that Henderson's treaty with the Cherokees was without government sanction, and hence invalid. He therefore refused to have anything to do with the scheme, and so counselled his brothers against it. George, Robert and William McAfee, however, were persuaded to go with Henderson, and they separated from their brother James, and went on to Boonesboro, and were participants in the founding of that place. There they remained about two months, when they proceeded back to Virginia. They were not long in learning that their older brother, James, had placed the proper estimate on Colonel Henderson's scheme, and that they had made a mistake. Here, again, was a scene in the life of the McAfees—that council at Skagg's Creek—of which we could wish we had a faithful portrayal on canvas. It must have been intensely picturesque and interesting. The creek at whose crossing this discussion took place is all that remains to us of the picture—every person present there that day has been in his grave from 90 to 125 years. A second visit to Salt River was made by the McAfees in September of this year (1775). The same men came in again, this time having in their company David and John McCown, and John Magee. They drove along with them forty head of cattle, which were turned loose in the cane on the river near where the New Providence church was afterwards erected. Ground was cleared and some cabins erected. John McCown and some others of the company remained in Kentucky through the winter of 1775-6. They cleared fifteen acres of land, and early in the spring of 1776 planted it in corn. A little later, discovering Indians in the neighborhood, they left and returned to Virginia.

When the year 1776 opened, the McAfees, and their associates in this enterprise, laid all their plans to remove their families and their belongings to Kentucky, which was this year made one of the counties of Virginia. They got together their provisions and chattels to make their final move to the wilderness. But new hindrances were to be encountered. The fact that the Revolution had now begun, and that the colonies were all aflame, was not deemed by them any sufficient reason for not migrating to the West. Perhaps they reasoned that to aid in holding the savages at bay on the frontier would be as valuable a service as any they could render anywhere; or perhaps their remoteness from the seaboard and the slowness of news in reaching them from the centres of political and military activity rendered them less responsive to the exigencies of the hour than they had otherwise been. Of their patriotism, their abhorrence of tyranny and their courage no one could for one moment have a doubt. They (three of the McAfee brothers) had marched with Evan Shelby to the aid of Lewis against the Indians at Point Pleasant in October, 1774, and their loyalty to the American cause was above all suspicion.[19] They were all Whigs; and we shall see that, later on, they still further delayed their removal to Kentucky because

they were in the Virginia militia, James McAfee being a lieutenant. The women were all kept busy, night and day, getting ready for the move this spring (1776). The plan was to transport all bulky goods on pack-horses across the mountains to a suitable point on the Greenbrier River, there load them into boats, and convey them to Central Kentucky by water. Some of the men, and the women and children were to go by the Wilderness Road and Cumberland Gap. It happened that a wagon road had been cut out only the year before by a Rev. John Alderson[20] all the way from Catawba Creek to the Greenbrier River, a distance of at least seventy miles. It terminated on that stream at the site of the present town of Alderson in Greenbrier County, W. Va. The women having made up all kinds of clothing, etc., to last for several years, and the men having gathered together such groceries, provisions, implements, and household conveniences as they could afford, the McAfees, the McConns, the Currys, the Adamses, the Magees, etc., with wives and sons and daughters and sons-in-law started off the heavy goods across the mountains to the Greenbrier in May, 1776, intending, no doubt, that just as soon as the horses got back the women and children and a sufficient force of men would take up their march to the south-west, and enter Kentucky through Cumberland Gap. The story of the trials and sore disappointments of these people is fully told by General McAfee in his Autobiography,[21] and is too lengthy to be reproduced in full. Suffice it to say that their goods and chattels were carried across the mountains to the Greenbrier River to the place where Alderson now stands; that canoes were constructed into which, on the 11th of June, all the goods were loaded; that the horses were sent back home for the use of the members of the colony who were going overland to Kentucky; that the men in charge of the canoes started down the Greenbrier for Kentucky; that, to their great disappointment, they soon saw the water was so low and the rapids so dangerous that they were destined to have endless trouble in carrying out their plans; that after many trying experiences, in some of which their boats were completely overturned, they were compelled to pull to shore and abandon all idea of transporting their effects by water, after having gone only about fifteen miles—about to where the railway station of Talcott now stands. Bringing their goods ashore, they erected a little cabin in the forest in which they securely stored all their valuables, constituting about all of their household possessions, the accumulations of years of labor. The plan was to return home the way they had come, procure their horses and come back and take the goods home, and then take everything—persons and goods—by the Wilderness Road. But on reaching home they found the Cherokee War had broken out in the south-west; and as the prompt chastisement of the savages in East Tennessee was necessary to save Virginia from their depredations, the McAfees enlisted for the campaign and served under Col. Wm. Christian in his expedition.[22] This delayed them until September, when they mounted their horses to go over to their cabin on the Greenbrier and bring their stores and effects back so as to move on to Kentucky by the overland route to the south-west. Imagine their dismay on arriving at the cabin in which they had stored their valuables, to find it broken open, their valuables scattered all about on the earth, moulded and ruined by the rain, and many articles missing. The accumulations of years had been almost completely wasted and ruined. They instituted a search for the cause of this disaster, and were not long in finding him—a runaway white servant by the name of Edward Sommers. They satisfied themselves of his guilt, and resolved to hang him. But no one, when the time came to act, was willing to take the culprit's life. They, instead, returned him to his master. But for Samuel McAfee's timely interposition, when his brother James first discovered Sommers, the tomahawk of James would have ended the man's life. Fortunately for all concerned, this deed of blood was prevented. Gathering up such things as had not been rendered utterly worthless, the party took up their sad march for home. It was a terrible blow, for it would take

several years to recover from their loss, and get once more into good condition for removal. The years 1777-8 had to be allowed to pass without even an attempt to move their families to Kentucky, partly because of the great loss of supplies incurred in the summer of 1776 and partly because the Colonies needed the services of the men in their contest against the British. Most of these men served in the Virginia militia, James McAfee being a lieutenant.

At last, when the year 1779 dawned, these long-delayed and oft-disappointed, but never utterly discouraged men once more began their preparations to move to the West. Some of them had revisited their settlements on Salt River in the fall of 1777, but it was to find that all their cattle had been stolen, or had wandered off, thus giving them still another backset; but they were not the men to be easily deflected from their purpose. They had never, for one moment, since 1773, relinquished their determination to make a home for themselves in Central Kentucky. This year their efforts were finally to be crowned with success. Accordingly, on the 17th of August, 1779, everything being in readiness, a considerable colony of emigrants moved off towards the south-west bound for Kentucky. In this goodly company were McAfees, McCouns, Adamses, Currys and others. There were at least two persons of the McAfee connection who remained behind, and who must have experienced many a pang as they realized what a separation was taking place. One of these has already been adverted to in Chapter II of this narrative, namely; the elder James McAfee. As there shown, his aged wife accompanied her children and grandchildren to the new home beyond the western mountains, and he remained in old Virginia till his death, some six years thereafter. There was also the eldest child of James McAfee, Jr., his daughter, Mary, who was not with these emigrants. There was a well-to-do widower up on the James River, some thirty-five miles to the north-east of the McAfee homes on the Catawba, by the name of David Woods, who owned the old homestead of his father, recently deceased, and he had persuaded Mary to share that pleasant home with him. She and David Woods had probably married only a very short time before the migration of her family to the West, and Mary was now (1779) probably about eighteen to twenty years old. David Woods, however, did not linger long in Virginia after the departure of his young wife's kinsfolk, but removed with his family to Kentucky, about 1782 or 1783, and settled only about ten or twelve miles from the new home of his wife's father in what is now Mercer County. The journey of 400 miles occupied more than forty-one days, an average of only ten miles a day. The party were all on pack-horses; and as there were no doubt cattle and hogs and sheep, as well as women and little babes, in the company, progress was necessarily slow. They may have gone by the Hunter's Path, which led down the Clinch Valley to Castlewood and across to Powell's River, about the mouth of Buck Creek, between Big Stone Gap and Dryden, and thence on down to Cumberland Gap; or they may have taken the road which went past Fort Chiswell, Marion, Wytheville and Abingdon, and which comes into the Hunter's Path about the present town of Jonesville, in Lee County, Virginia (see Map of Hunter's Path in this volume). Either way there were perils and hardships enough. Nearly the whole way the so-called road was only a bridle-path, and led up and down steep and rugged mountains and across numerous rapid streams. At nearly every stage of the journey there were reminders of Indian outrages, and for not a single day or night of the entire journey could they have the slightest assurance that they would not be attacked and some of their number slain and scalped, and others carried away into captivity to be tortured to death far to the north of the Ohio. When they came in full view of the Cumberland Mountain in Powell's Valley, as they approached Cumberland Gap, they could see those great high walls of rock which for nearly a hundred miles present an almost impassable barrier to entrance into Kentucky, and from whose inaccessible fastnesses a



GIGANTIC ROCK WALL OF CUMBERLAND MOUNTAIN,
ON THE TENNESSEE SIDE, AT CUMBERLAND GAP.
Top of Wall, 2,500 Feet Above Sea Level. Wall Extends 50 Miles North-east.

savage foe could fire the fatal rifle-volley into their defenceless ranks. When that majestic pass in the mountain, known as Cumberland Gap, loomed up on the horizon ahead of them, and they slowly began its ascent, and realized that now they were actually entering Kentucky, strange emotions must have filled their breasts. And when a few hours later they began to creep along through that equally majestic pass by which the Cumberland River cuts through Pine Mountain—Wasioto Gap—and the dark shadows of the lofty crests on either hand lent a sombre hue to the scene, and they felt the damp of the river flowing at their feet, they had been more or less than human not to have imagined some frightful experiences as possible to them now; and we may well believe those fearless men who led the way, rifle in hand, scanned with painstaking care every object about them, and listened cautiously for every noise in the deep, dark forest which enveloped them, as, with measured step, they marched along. As the slow-moving caravan hove in sight of the Crab Orchard, they began to realize, perhaps for the first time, that now at last all the mountains were behind them, and that the level lands were in full view. From this point on the hills melted more and more away till the earth became like the billowy sea, with just enough of undulation to lend a picturesque tone to the landscape. Passing where Stanford and Danville now are, and coming on down past Harrodsburg, they found the earth thickly set in luxuriant blue grass and cane, telling of a soil of exceeding richness, and giving promise of glorious harvests in years to come. On the 27th of September the party reached Wilson's Station, nearly three miles from Harrodsburg, and here the company halted. Next day the most of them went on to James McAfee's Station, some ten miles farther to the north, where cabins had already been erected for their use by members of the party in previous years. When all had dismounted and removed their baggage from the pack-saddles, and began to look around them, no doubt grave misgivings filled the minds of at least some of them as they realized under what stern conditions they were now to begin their lives anew. Old Virginia was far away to the east beyond the mountains—Kentucky must henceforth be their only earthly home. But hearts brave enough to come thus far could not seriously falter now. That indomitable courage and simple faith in an all-wise Providence, which had sustained them amidst all the trials and dangers of the previous years, did not forsake them now. As one man they went to work in earnest to establish a community of which neither they nor their posterity would need to feel ashamed. That they succeeded in this aim no man can doubt who knows anything of the region in which the villages of McAfee and Salvisa stand to-day.

FORT AT BOONESBORO—1775
TYPE OF PIONEER "STATIONS."
James McAfee's Station on Salt River, smaller than this, was built in 1779

CHAPTER V.

THE SALT RIVER SETTLEMENT FROM 1779 TO 1811, WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO THE CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF JAMES McAFEE, Sr.

"Ay, this is freedom!—these pure skies
Were never stained by village smoke:
The fragrant wind, that through them flies,
Is breathed from wastes by plough unbroke.
Here, with my rifle and my steed,
And her who left the world for me,
I plant me, where the wild deer feed
In the fair wilderness—and I am free."
—(Selected.)

It would be difficult for the men of this day to picture to themselves the severe conditions under which the members of the colony on Salt River began their life in Kentucky one hundred and twenty-five years ago. Only two or three small, rude cabins were ready for their reception when they arrived, and only a small area of the soil had as yet been partially cleared and planted in corn. It was plain to all that dangers and hardships of no ordinary kind they would surely have to face for many years to come; and only brave men and women were equal to such an occasion. It was only a few days after their arrival that a Colonel Rogers and seventy men under his command, who were descending the Ohio in boats, were attacked by two hundred Indians just above where the city of Newport now stands, and all but twenty of them were slaughtered. The twenty who escaped with their lives made their way to Harrodsburg, and thus these new settlers on Salt River began their labors in the wilderness by listening to the bloody narrative these fugitives had to tell. If space permitted, some account would here be given of the appearance of Kentucky in that early day—of its natural scenery, climate, etc. —but the reader will have to look elsewhere for such information. Collins in his History of Kentucky, Vol. 2, pages 27-31, quotes from several writers (Imlay, Doddridge, Filson) some interesting details; and Col. R. T. Durrett, in "The Centenary of Kentucky" (Filson Club series) pages 26-28 and 42-50, has given one of the truest pictures of early Kentucky anywhere to be found.

Their first care, naturally, was to build for their shelter and protection one of those rude but effective fortifications, consisting of a quadrangular enclosure of log cabins and stockades, called a fort or station. The one they erected in the fall of 1779 was known as McAfee's Station. Filson's map, published in 1784, gives its location very correctly. The illustration given above and entitled "A Typical Pioneer Fort," may serve to furnish a good idea of the average fortification of that period in Kentucky, though it is, in fact, a picture of the one at Boonesboro, erected in 1775, four years before that of the McAfees. In a country where artillery was not to be found no fort could possibly be constructed that would more perfectly meet all the needs of the situation. It was a dwelling place for both the people and their horses, and also a safe defence against hostile attack. Every outer wall was absolutely bullet-proof. An enemy could not approach it except at the imminent peril of his life, even if tenanted by only a few men. But, of course, its occupants could not always remain within those walls; they had to go out to procure water from the spring, to till the soil, to look after their cattle, to attend church, etc. And whenever they got outside that enclosure, for whatever purpose, they would unavoidably be exposed to danger as long as Indians infested the land.

James McAfee's Station, which, for about fifteen years was the rallying point for the whole community in times of danger, stood on a small bluff overlooking Salt River, only a few hundred yards from the present railway station of Talmage. (See map of Mercer County, etc.) There were a num-

ber of cabins included in the fort which were permanently occupied as residences until the Indians ceased to annoy the inhabitants of that part of Kentucky, when the several families living therein one by one went out and erected homes on their respective farms. To the people of that community it must have seemed, humanly speaking, a strange Providence that the first winter they were to spend in the wilderness should be one of the most trying character. The winter of 1779-80 in Kentucky was one of unexampled severity. From the latter part of November till the middle of February there was one continual freeze. All the water courses were entirely frozen over. The buffaloes, bears, wolves, deer, turkeys and beavers were found in large numbers, frozen to death. The people at the various stations were reduced to the utmost extremity for bread. One "Johnny cake" was often divided into twelve pieces, each piece having to answer one person for a meal. For weeks there was nothing for the people to eat except the meat of wild game. Early in the spring of 1780 James and Robert McAfee journeyed to the Falls (now Louisville) and paid sixty dollars (Continental money) a bushel for corn. But a kind Providence favored them with an early and promising spring. Vegetation put forth very early, and the peach trees that had been planted five years before were loaded with fruit, and plenty and happiness seemed to smile upon the settlement, except that Indian depredations were frequently committed on various stations, which kept the settlers more or less alarmed. It was these depredations that influenced General George Rogers Clark to undertake a military expedition against the Northern Indians. It has been asserted by some, on what authority is not known by the writer, that George Rogers Clark was related to Mrs. James McAfee, and having been left an orphan at an early age, lived for some years in Virginia with James McAfee, Jr., as one of the family. Certain it is that General Clark, on his first visit to Kentucky in 1775, came to the very neighborhood in which the McAfees had taken up land, and was intimate with them. Moreover, several of the McAfee brothers accompanied him on several of his expeditions against the Indians, and William McAfee, a most gallant soldier, was the captain of one of the companies which he led to Ohio in this year (1780). When he started on this undertaking all of the men of the McAfee Stations who could be spared, went with him, and took part, under him, in the fights with the savages at Piqua, Ohio. It was near this place that Captain William McAfee was mortally wounded by an Indian (July, 1780), dying some weeks later, after having been conveyed by his men back to Kentucky. Thus this year was made forever memorable to the McAfees by the death of one of the five brothers at the hands of the savages. The chastisement administered to the Indians by General Clark on that expedition secured quiet to the central portion of Kentucky for the remainder of this year. It was in May of 1789 that Kentucky County was divided into three counties, Lincoln, Fayette and Jefferson. The winter of 1780-81 was comparatively mild, and the settlers did not suffer for food. Salt, however, was exceedingly high in price, and had to be transported on horseback from the Falls of the Ohio. In March of this year (1781) there occurred an event which cast a dark shadow over the whole community. Joseph McCoun, a son of James McCoun, Sr., a most lovable youth of eighteen, was out of the Station one morning, March 6th, engaged in looking after his father's cows. As he was returning, some Indians, who were prowling about the place, saw him and pursued him. He ran as rapidly as he could, but the savages succeeded in capturing him, and made off towards the Ohio River with their prisoner. Alarmed by his absence beyond the expected time, his friends made search for him till the trail of the Indians was discovered. Men from the Station at once gave pursuit, and followed the retreating Indians and their helpless captive. They found the place where the Indians had stripped off the bark of a young hickory to bind their prisoner. The pursuing party travelled as far as the Ohio River, some distance above the mouth of the Kentucky; and, giving up the chase, they re-

turned to the station and broke to the dear boy's anguished parents the news of the failure of their pursuit. A few years later it was ascertained that the unfortunate young man had been carried by his cruel captors far up into Ohio near to the site of what is now the city of Springfield, where he was tied to a tree and burnt to death. This crushing blow was too much for his mother, for Joseph was the darling of her heart. She was rarely seen to smile afterwards, and soon sank into the grave. The first sermon ever preached by a minister in that neighborhood was by the Rev. David Rice, in 1784, at the funeral of this Mrs. McConn. She was the mother of Robert McAfee's wife, and hence her death, as well as the awful bereavement which led to it, was a sore affliction to all the McAfees. Hers was probably the first death to occur in the settlement, Captain William McAfee having died near the mouth of the Kentucky River, four years before.

The Indians gave so much anxiety this spring (1781) that all the families in the neighborhood gathered into James McAfee's Station, except William McAfee's widow and her family, who had a station of their own on Salt River, near Harrodsburg. James McAfee and family occupied the cabin at the north-east corner of the station, and Robert had the one at the south-west corner. In April of this year some Indians tried to steal the horses belonging to the station that were in a stable close by. By a dexterous movement of the men inside the scheme of the Indians was thwarted, but a more serious adventure with the savages was soon to try the courage and resources of all the men in the fort.

May 9, 1781, early in the morning, when there were only thirteen men in the Station, an attack was made by one hundred and fifty Indians. They had spent the night only about a mile below the station, but by sunrise had posted themselves on all sides of the same, but mostly on the east and south. The cattle and the dogs had exhibited some uneasiness during the night, but all suspicions aroused by their behavior had been quieted. It seems that Samuel McAfee, accompanied by a man named Clunendike, had taken a horse out of the fort to go to his farm, about a mile up the river (towards the south) to get a bag of corn; and that James and Robert McAfee had gone out to clear some ground for a turnip patch, only one hundred and fifty yards from the fort, taking their guns with them and setting them against a tree close by. Samuel McAfee and Clunendike had not proceeded but a few hundred yards when, passing down into a hollow, they were fired on by Indians, and Clunendike fell dead in his tracks. Samuel McAfee at once turned and attempted to escape to the station, but ere he had gone fifteen steps he met a huge Indian coming directly towards him, and at once each of them levelled his gun at the other. Both fired at once, the Indian's gun making a flash, and Samuel McAfee's making a clear fire. The Indian dropped dead, and Samuel McAfee, who was rapidly advancing towards the station, had to jump over the prostrate body of his foe, several other Indians firing at him as he ran. He made good his escape into the station. By this time James and Robert, hearing the firing, had seized their rifles and started towards the spot. Robert, being the best runner, got ahead of his brother, but James discovered several Indians rise from behind a brush heap who fired at him, some of the balls cutting his clothes. James took shelter behind a tree, but at once discovered six or seven other guns pointed at him from another direction, the discharges from which cut up the dust at his feet. He then turned and reached the station unharmed. Robert, who was ahead of James, rapidly running towards the spot where the first firing occurred, went on till he met Samuel running back to the fort. Samuel told him Clunendike had been killed, and told him not to go any further, but Robert misunderstood him, and went on till he came in sight of Indians engaged in scalping Clunendike, and close to where other Indians were lying in wait. Turning to retrace his steps and make good his escape to the fort, he saw the path was intercepted by Indians, and he therefore took to the woods, closely followed by a tall, fine looking warrior, who had silver rings and moons in his nose and ears. After

running awhile Robert turned upon his savage pursuer, when the Indian at once halted and took shelter behind a tree. Robert again ran on, and again the Indian pursued him. This went on for some time, Robert being closely pressed, and both he and the savage reserving their fire till the last extremity. At last Robert reached the turnip patch fence in the flat just south-west of the station, where he once more wheeled and the Indian again took refuge behind a tree. Robert then threw himself over the fence and lay quiet on the earth, and waited for a few moment for developments. Directly the Indian cautiously put his head out from behind the tree to see what had become of his man. For this very move Robert had waited, and, taking sure aim, he fired and killed the Indian, enabling him to make the fort. The firing now became general, and the Indians approached from every direction. The women in the fort moulded bullets and prepared patches, while the men kept up a constant fire wherever they could see an Indian within good range. Finding that they were making no impression on the station, the Indians went to killing all the horses and cattle in sight. Several rushes were made by the savages as if to scale the walls of the station, but each time they met a warm reception, and the Indians retreated as if beaten in order to withdraw the whites from the fort, but James McAfee, who was in command, ordered all to remain in the fort, as they were too few in number to make such a charge. He told his men to watch closely and fire only when the Indians showed themselves. In this way several of the foe were seen to fall after shots fired from the station. About ten o'clock a. m. the firing by the Indians began to slacken, and a noise like distant thunder was heard in the direction of Harrodsburg, which place was only six miles away. In a little time a tremendous yelling was heard, and to the unspeakable joy of all the occupants of the station, Colonel Hugh McGary was seen coming in a gallop, in command of forty-five men from Harrodsburg and William McAfee's station, some of them having mounted their horses without staying to get their hats. The yells of the frightened savages, now in full retreat to the west of the river, mingled with those of the advancing whites. A halt of a few minutes was made till the men in the station could get mounted and ready to go, and then began the pursuit of the fleeing Indians. They were overtaken about a mile below the station, on the west side of the river, and here the firing again commenced, the Indians retreating and shooting from behind trees. The pursuit was continued for several miles. The whites lost, in all, but two men killed, and one wounded. The Indian loss is not exactly known, but it was considerable. The prompt action of the men from the two adjacent stations was most gallant and timely—but for it no one can say what might have happened to the little band of thirteen men and their wives and children in the fort. After this attack this station sustained very little injury from the Indians. They learned by costly experience that those pioneer forts were well-nigh impregnable when defended by men of such courage and resource. Kentucky was not entirely delivered, however, from Indian depredations for about fifteen years, and the very next year after this occurred the most disastrous blow Kentucky ever suffered at the hands of the savages—the Battle of the Blue Licks, August 19, 1782—was received, spreading mourning and distress throughout all the settlements in Kentucky. Several detailed accounts of that bloody and memorable conflict can be found in Collins' Kentucky, Vol. 2, pages 657-63. A more recent, and perhaps more accurate, account will be found in the Volume of the Filson Club publications, devoted exclusively to this disastrous contest and the attack on Bryan's Station. These accounts will well repay careful perusal by any one interested in the pioneer period of Kentucky's history; they should prove specially interesting to the descendants of the founders of the Salt River Settlement, inasmuch as the Indian invasion which they recount furnishes a vivid illustration of the tragic circumstances amid which the McAfees and their associates began their pioneer enterprise on Salt River.

The year 1781 was a most memorable one on several accounts, and especially because near its close (October 19) the army of Lord Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, thereby virtually ending the war of the Colonies with England. But the final signing of the treaty of peace did not occur till September 3, 1783. In those early days news travelled slowly, and it was a long time after Cornwallis's surrender till the whites in the Kentucky backwoods and their savage foes, north and south of them, came fully to realize that the Colonies were soon to be in position to turn all their resources against the Indians. The disastrous Battle of the Blue Licks, just now referred to, in which the whites lost seventy-four brave men—about one-tenth of their entire fighting force in Central Kentucky—occurred the 19th of August, 1782, nearly a year after the English forces had been overwhelmingly defeated. Nor did the savages give up the contest when they learned of the withdrawal of the British armies from America, but for at least ten years longer continued to harass the settlers of Kentucky, though with constantly diminishing vigor. It was about the year 1794 that the people of Kentucky in all parts of the State began to feel perfectly safe against Indian depredations, and ceased to make use of their forts or stations. Thus it was that the McAfees and their associates had fifteen years of a strictly frontier life after their settlement on Salt River in the fall of 1779. The effects of such an experience upon the social, moral and religious life of the community can easily be imagined—it could not but prove in many ways detrimental. In the seven years from 1783 to 1790 the damages inflicted on the Kentucky settlers by the Indians has been summed up thus: One thousand five hundred whites killed, twenty thousand horses stolen, and property of the value of fifteen thousand pounds sterling carried off or destroyed. When we bear in mind that the entire population of Kentucky in the year 1784 numbered only about thirty thousand souls, congregated in fifty-two stations and eighteen cabins, it is easy to appreciate the tremendous drain of blood and treasure to which our pioneer fathers were subjected. (See Col. Durrett, Centenary of Kentucky, pages 46 and 51.)

The most serious aspect of this terrible experience, however, was its bearing upon the religious life of the whole body of the people. When we reflect upon the absence of religious and educational advantages, and think of the chief occupations and aims of the people, and picture to our minds the probable themes of conversation usually prevailing, we can readily agree with Dr. Davidson in what he says of the spiritual destitutions which obtained in the Salt River Settlement and elsewhere. (See his History of the Presbyterian Church in Kentucky, page 63.) But there was one tremendous advantage this particular colony enjoyed: Its heads of families were, almost to a man, good Christians, who had been well instructed from their childhood in the doctrines and duties of the Christian religion as it was understood by Scotch-Irish Presbyterians. The McAfees were people of faith and prayer, who brought with them to the wilderness their Bibles and Catechisms, and Psalm Books, and their reverence for the Sabbath day, and their respect for law and order. Such people a backwoods life might indeed greatly injure, but could not utterly demoralize.

The year 1783 was marked by a considerable influx of newcomers, especially from Virginia. It was in this year that the wife of James McAfee, Sr., died at the home of her son-in-law, Mr. Guant, three miles south-west of Harrodsburg. On his farm she was buried.[24] The population of Kentucky now numbered about thirty thousand souls, but these were so widely scattered that there was practically no commerce. Some notion of the real condition of affairs may be gathered from the fact that it was in this year that the second store in Kentucky was opened. About this date, also, the first distilleries were started. The old soldiers of the Revolutionary army, now disbanded, were ready for a change of residence; and as special privileges were accorded them by Virginia in the matter of acquiring lands in the western wilderness, thousands of them

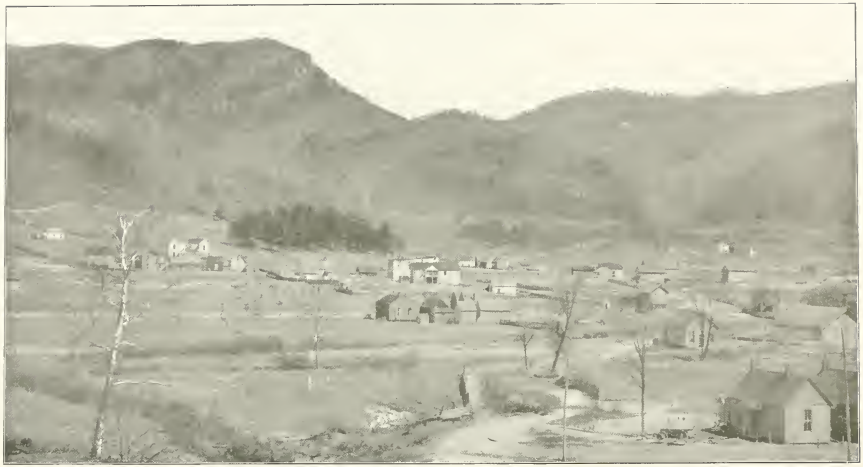
turned their attentions to Kentucky. Along with this tide of new settlers there came a devout Presbyterian minister from Virginia, Rev. David Rice, who later won the title of "Father," because he was in large degree the founder of the Presbyterian Church in Kentucky. He made his home near Danville, and preached about over Central Kentucky as he was invited and had opportunity. The first year of his residence in Kentucky he succeeded in laying the foundations of three closely related Presbyterian churches, which were formally organized in 1785 by the election of elders and deacons. These churches were the following: Concord, located at Danville; Cane Run, situated three miles east of Harrodsburg; and New Providence, which was in the Salt River Settlement. In the month of March, 1783, Kentucky, which, since 1780, had consisted of the three counties of Jefferson, Fayette, and Lincoln, was organized by the Virginia legislature into the "District of Kentucky," and a District Court was opened at Harrodsburg. Father Rice's first sermon was preached at Harrodsburg in October of that year. The prevalent irreligion of the masses of the settlers distressed him, and he returned to Virginia; but he was soon induced to come back to Kentucky on receiving a petition of three hundred of the settlers. He married a couple at McAfee's Station June 3, 1784, and on the next day preached the first sermon ever heard on Salt River, at the funeral of Mrs. James McConn, Sr. As no history of the McAfees could be at all complete without some account of the New Providence Church, and the early history of that church is inseparably connected with the beginnings of the church on Cane Run (Harrodsburg), it is proper that just here a brief notice of both these churches should have a place. From 1784 to 1816 the congregation of Cane Run worshipped at its original seat, but from that date on to the present time Harrodsburg has been the home of the congregation. For a great many years the Harrodsburg Church was associated with New Providence in the support of the pastor. Communion occasions at one of these churches were largely attended by the members of the other. A revival at one was sure to prove a blessing to both. Some of the most useful members of the Harrodsburg Church were converted under Dr. Cleland's ministry at New Providence, and many of the Harrodsburg Presbyterians lie sleeping in the New Providence burying-ground. The church building, now used by the congregation of the First Presbyterian Church at Harrodsburg, a good picture of which is given in this volume, whilst the result of several enlargements and remodellings, is, substantially, the same building as that which was reared in 1820. To a great many of the descendants of the McAfees that sacred edifice possesses the most precious associations, and some of the subscribers to this work largely owe their salvation, under God, to the instructions they and their parents enjoyed in that venerable house of worship.

The McAfees were not without family religion during the six years that followed the date of their final settlement on Salt River, but they certainly seem not to have had a regular house of worship till 1785. In the fall of 1784 the Salt River Settlement received valuable accessions in Captain John Armstrong and Mr. George Buchanan, both good men and favorably disposed to religion, and also William Armstrong, who had been an elder in Mr. Rice's church in Virginia. Early in the spring of 1785 the Salt River people entered upon the work of erecting a building to be used for both church and school purposes. A meeting of heads of families was held near the spot afterwards selected for their church, at which the following men were present: James McAfee, George McAfee, Robert McAfee, Samuel McAfee, James McConn, Sr., James McConn, Jr., John Armstrong, William Armstrong, James Buchanan, George Buchanan, Joseph Lyon, and John McGee. Two sites were offered; one by James McAfee, and another by James McConn; and after considerable warm debate the two acres offered by James McAfee were accepted. The vote stood seven to five. As soon as they had gotten their corn planted the men began the erection of a plain log meeting-

FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, HARRODSBURG, KY.

ORGANIZED 1783.

Very dear to many of the Woodses and McAfees.



CUMBERLAND GAP.

LOOKING SOUTH-EAST FROM MIDDLESBORO, KY.

The Gap Height is 1,656 Feet: Crest Heights, 2,500 and 2,300 Feet, Respectively, Above Sea Level

house twenty by eighteen feet in size, and here Father Rice preached once a month for about eleven years. This house stood on the side of the hill about fifty yards to the south of the west end of the church building afterwards erected, and which in recent years was abandoned when the congregation changed the location of their house of worship and built a large and well-appointed brick church on the pike about a mile north of the present village of McAfee. The name "New Providence" was given this church organization, not, as some might suppose, in honor of the old church of that name in the Valley of Virginia, with which some of these people had worshipped prior to their emigration to Kentucky, but out of gratitude to God for the many remarkable tokens of His gracious care they had received in the past, especially that great deliverance of August 12, 1773, out on the Big Black Mountains, an account of which was given in a previous chapter.[25]

During those early years the people were compelled, for safety, to reside in the stations, and when they went to church to worship God on the Sabbath they took their rifles along. The danger was not imaginary, for as late as 1790 some people on Brashear's Creek were fired on by Indians as they were returning from church. In 1790 the first log-house was replaced by one double its size, and this was further enlarged in 1803. Finally, some years later, the log church was superseded by a substantial brick edifice which stood for perhaps sixty years, and was at last abandoned, as above stated, when the congregation built their present commodious house on the pike a mile north of McAfee.[26]

The Rev. Dr. Thomas Cleland was the able and devoted pastor of that church for forty-five years—from 1813 to 1858. During twenty-six of these years—from 1813 to 1839—Dr. Cleland was also the pastor of the Harrodsburg Church. His was a fruitful ministry, and there were years at a time when at both New Providence and Harrodsburg the most precious revival scenes were witnessed.

The church-yard in the midst of which this church stood, and which is at this day (1904) one of the most tenderly venerated "God's Acres" in Kentucky, deserves a passing notice. Two pictures of it are given in this volume. The one taken from the former site of the old brick church, looking north-west, shows the tombstone of Dr. Cleland. It stands hardly an inch to the left of the large tree in the center of the picture. It is the larger of two headstones rounded at the top, and leans perceptibly to the right. There Dr. Cleland was buried in 1858. About one and a half inches to the left of Dr. Cleland's tombstone (in the picture), stands a tall monument, which also leans to the right, that marks the grave of General Robert B. McAfee, the faithful chronicler of the McAfee family, who died in 1849. The other picture of this church-yard gives a view of it looking to the south-west. This view, as the other, includes the graves of many of the older McAfees and their descendants. Only two of the five pioneer McAfee brothers are buried here—George and Samuel. The eldest of the five, James, is buried, with his wife, in the old Pioneer Burial Place, which is on a hill some five or six hundred yards south by west from this enclosure, in the direction of his stone house. William died near the mouth of the Kentucky River in 1780, and was probably buried there. Robert was assassinated by a Spaniard in New Orleans, May 10, 1795, while on his own flatboat, and he was buried near the hospital in that city. The New Providence Churchyard was first opened for burials at the very beginning of the nineteenth century, for George McAfee, who died in 1803, was buried there. After the lapse of a century it is still in fair condition, and is the preferred burying-place of most of the families residing in that vicinity; but it is nearly filled with graves, and there may be danger of its falling soon into disuse, especially as it is not only distant from any considerable town, but quite a mile from the present house of worship of the congregation whose name it bears. No cemetery in all Kentucky is more closely identified with the very first settlement of the State, and it would be a great mistake for the good people of that wor-

thy community to allow it to fall into decay. Kentucky contains no more notable relic of her pioneer days.

The population of Kentucky rapidly increased, and the people began to feel the disadvantages due to their being so far removed from the civil authorities of Virginia, to whom they were responsible. A vast mountain-wilderness several hundred miles in extent separated them from the capital of their State. The journey to and from it was tedious and perilous. Hence, in 1784, was held the first of a long series of conventions, looking to separation from the mother State. There was no bad feeling in this movement on the part of the Kentucky people, and Virginia acted with a prudent generosity. The outcome of the long years of deliberation was that Virginia finally allowed her fair daughter to depart, and in 1792 Kentucky became a separate State of the American Union, having at the time about one hundred thousand inhabitants. (All who would like to have a just and interesting description of the Kentucky of 1792 are advised to read the chapter on this subject by Col. R. T. Durrett, in "The Centenary of Kentucky," pages 75-85.) When Kentucky was admitted to the Union the McAfee Colony had been settled on Salt River thirteen years, and was steadily progressing; and the environment and general conditions of the people are well portrayed in the chapter cited. The year 1801 was marked by the death of the youngest of the five McAfee brothers, Samuel. In 1803 George departed this life. Finally, in 1811, James, the eldest of the five, at the ripe age of seventy-five, passed away. Thus in the course of thirty-eight years (from the July day in 1773, when the McAfees first set foot on the banks of Salt River) they had removed to Kentucky; had founded a permanent settlement, and helped to found a great Commonwealth; and at length had passed from this earth, leaving behind them a noble community, and a numerous posterity who rise up and call them blessed. The old church organization, begun in 1785, still abides in strength and usefulness, and from its pulpit the Gospel of God's grace is still proclaimed to saint and sinner. The old churchyard, now hoary with the moss of a century, still holds the precious dust of many of the McAfee dead. Across the valley five or six hundred yards towards the south, on a commanding knoll, sleeps the body of the eldest of the five pioneer brothers, along with that of his beloved Agnes, in sight of the old stonehouse erected in 1790. And the little river near by flows quietly on as it did when first the McAfees looked upon it a hundred and thirty-one years ago. All through the old settlement are still to be found numerous families descended from those pioneers, who stand, as their ancestors did, for industry, patriotism and religion—for all that goes to constitute the sturdy manhood and the lovely womanhood for which Kentucky has justly been famed throughout all her history. The country of Kentucky, embracing more than 40,000 square miles, which did not contain a single white family when first the McAfees visited it in 1773, had grown to be a State with 420,000 inhabitants by the time the last of the five pioneer brothers had passed away. We, their descendants, are permitted to view it in its splendid maturity, a grand Commonwealth of more than two million people.

CHAPTER VI.

BRIEF NOTICES OF THE PIONEER McAFEES AND LISTS OF THEIR CHILDREN. THE ORIGINAL FOUNDERS OF THE SALT RIVER SETTLEMENT.

James McAfee, Sr., and his wife Jane, as has already been noted, had nine children, as follows: James, Jr., John, Malcolm, George, Mary, Robert, Margaret, Samuel, and William—seven sons and two daughters. Concerning several of them and many of their children we know almost nothing, and of none of them do we know enough to enable us to honor their memories with a complete biography. The very best the editor can do is to tell all he has been able, after years of earnest labor, to learn of each of the nine children, and the children's children, in regular order. As long as the majority of people take more pains to preserve the pedigree of a blooded horse, or even a fine dog, than that of their own ancestors, none need marvel that the editor has been unable to induce some of his kinsmen even to make a reply to letters of inquiry touching the history of the family. Additional items, however, may be found in some of the Sketches of Patrons in Part III.

The Children of James McAfee, Sr.

A—JAMES McAFEE, JR.—1736-1811.

James McAfee, Jr., the first child of James, Sr., and his wife Jane, was born in County Armagh, Ireland, in 1736, and when only three years old migrated with his parents to America in the spring of 1739. With them he resided some years in Pennsylvania, and with them he moved, about 1746, to North Carolina, and later, in 1747, or 1748, to Catawba Creek, which was then in Augusta County, Virginia. Therefore he was scarcely twelve years old when he began living in Virginia. His father probably lived from 1748 to 1771 on the farm he bought of Poage, and sold to Archibald Woods, near the head of Catawba, and then moved four miles farther down that stream to a farm quite close to the now well-known Roanoke Red Sulphur Springs. On this farm once stood an ancient Indian fort. Part of the old house at the latter place, built of walnut logs, was standing a few years ago.

We have good reason to believe that the marriage of James, Jr., to Agnes Clark, occurred about 1759-1762, when he was about twenty-three to twenty-six years old. She was the daughter of one Thomas Clark (or Clarke) who came to America with a family by the name of Walker, landing at Charleston, S. C., about 1742. He returned to Ireland, but again came to America and landed at Charleston, where he shortly after died, or was murdered. It has been surmised that he was a near relative of the father of General George Rogers Clark, but nothing positive as to this matter is known by the writer. It is also said that George Rogers Clark, left an orphan in youth, was reared in part by James and his wife. It is not without significance that when Clark first visited Kentucky (1775) he went to the very region in which the McAfees had entered lands.

James McAfee, Jr., must have received a fair education in the ordinary English branches; the journal which he kept on his tour to Kentucky in 1773, and certain facts known to the writer, clearly indicate as much. The writer has in his possession a paper signed by him in 1790, and it shows a good, clear handwriting. He was probably nothing but a farmer all his life, and nearly the whole of his life he resided in frontier regions. In the year 1763 (February 10th) his father deeded to him a tract of 110 acres of land on Catawba Creek, in what then was Augusta County, but what was Botetourt County from 1770 onward. That tract was a part of a body of land which his father had patented in

1749. James, Jr., was about twenty-seven years old, and but recently married, perhaps, when he got this farm. The records of Botetourt show that he and his wife, Agnes, conveyed this farm away for seven hundred pounds July 8, 1779, which was only a few weeks prior to his final migration to Kentucky. He was therefore not one of the McAfee brothers who had their homes on Sinking Creek. This was his last conveyance to be found on the Botetourt County records. The witnesses to the deed were Wm. McBrayers, John Moore and Archibald Hill. When Boone and others came back in 1771 with their glowing accounts of the Kentucky wilderness he was a mature man and the head of a small family. Being the eldest son, he was naturally made the leader of the exploring company that made the tour to Kentucky in 1773. Besides his seniority, however, he possessed sound judgment and strength of character, so that throughout his whole career he was looked up to by the other members of his father's family.

He was a soldier of the Virginia Colony in some of the French and Indian Wars (1754-1763), being eighteen when they began and twenty-seven at their close, and was entitled to land for the services he rendered, as recognized by the proclamation of the Colonial Governor of Virginia. In 1774 he enlisted in the company of Captain Evan Shelby, and was in the battle at Point Pleasant, Va., where General Andrew Lewis defeated the brave army of Indian warriors under Chief Cornstalk. In 1776 he went down into Tennessee with Colonel Christian against the Cherokees, whom the British had incited to revolt. In 1777 and '78 he was in the Colonial Militia as First Lieutenant, and served against the British. He was probably with General George Rogers Clark in his expedition against the Ohio Indians in 1780. Throughout life he proved himself a brave man who was ready to face, with calmness and resolution, any dangers he was called to meet.

He seems to have been, like nearly all the pioneers, a man of scarcely any sentiment or romance. In all his journal of 1773, in which he made daily record of the journey, going and returning, we look in vain for a single allusion to the beauties of natural scenery. The picturesque seems not to have attracted his attention; he was intensely, severely practical. The form of his journal of 1773 indicates a systematic man and close observer. He took note of the good or bad soil, the timber, the water, the adaptation of the country to farming purposes, but he ignored the esthetical side of life. The sense of humor is never revealed in his journal—not a word of sarcasm, wit or ridicule does it contain. There is no philosophizing whatever. Then he never once dwells at any length on the personal perils and hardships of the way. He never wrote a line in his journal to call attention to his own deeds. Even of that fearful day on the Big Blacks, August 12, 1773, he makes an exceedingly brief record from which no one would ever have inferred that starvation almost did its fatal work for the whole company. Had not his nephew, General R. B. McAfee, late in life wormed it out of him, it is doubtful if his descendants would ever have known a word about those terrible and thrilling experiences.

When the question of erecting a log meeting-house on Salt River, Ky., was raised in 1785, he came forward with the offer of two acres of land as a gift for church and school purposes, but when the congregation chose elders to govern the infant church he, for some reason, was not made one of them. Three were chosen, and not a McAfee among them. George Buchanan, James McCoun, Sr., and William Armstrong were the men selected. James McAfee was undoubtedly a modest man, and it may be that he declined to allow his name to be considered. The reason this eldest one of the McAfees, then nearly fifty years old, and esteemed for his good judgment and reliability, was not put into office, we shall never know; but it is a rather unaccountable fact. But the church got good men, one of whom, George Buchanan, suggested the name that was given the church and which it still bears—a most appropriate name, and one which only a devout man would have been apt to think of.

McAFEE STONE HOUSE, SALT RIVER, KENTUCKY.

ERECTED BY JAMES M'AFEE IN 1790.

One of the Most Ancient and Best Preserved Relics of the Pioneer Period Now in Existence in Kentucky.

The name "New Providence" was given to signalize the grateful recollection which those people cherished of the many special deliverances God had vouchsafed to them from 1773 to 1785.

When the little colony arrived at Salt River in the fall of 1779, the Station which was to be for the next fifteen years the central rallying place for defence, was erected on his land. To James McAfee's Station the whole community repaired in the hour of danger through many years.

He evidently was prospered in his worldly affairs despite the considerable family he had; and when, by the year 1790, it was apparent he could prudently cease living in a fort, he proceeded to erect what, in that day, must have seemed a palatial mansion—a neat two-story dwelling of dressed stone. And so well did his workmen perform their task that after the lapse of one hundred and fourteen years it is a comfortable dwelling still, and used as such. The picture of it in this volume faithfully represents it as it was only a few years ago (in 1895). There is probably not a house in all Kentucky at this time, of any description, that antedates the birth of Kentucky as a State and is still in such good habitable condition. It is one of the relics which the State, as such, ought to keep from perishing from the land. Kentucky has never yet done anything to attest her appreciation of the McAfee family, who were of her earliest and noblest pioneers, and here is a spot on which she might well erect some beneficent institution such as an industrial school, for example, as a monument to men who contributed in no small measure to the founding of the Commonwealth.

James McAfee's will was made January 24, 1809, and admitted to record at the Mercer County July Court of 1811. His two sons, John and Clark, he named his executors. The witnesses were General R. B. McAfee, Samuel Bunton and Hannah McAfee. He mentions the following persons in the will: his "loving wife, Agnes"; his sons John, and Clark; his two grandchildren, Sally, and Woodford Woods, who were the orphan children of his daughter Mary by her last husband, Samuel Woods, Jr.; his daughter Betsy, wife of William Davenport; his daughter Nancy, the wife of Alex. Buchanan; and the four children of his daughter Peggy McKamey. To his son Clark he gives what he calls "my farm and about five hundred acres cornering on John Armstrong's land." By "my farm" was probably meant his old home place, on which stood the stone house which he erected in 1790. As this farm probably contained 400 acres he must have given Clark 900 acres in all. To John he gave 300 acres on the west side of Salt River. He provided that 500 acres more, being the balance of the "home tract," was to be divided up between Betsy Davenport, Nancy Buchanan, and the four children of Peggy McKamey. His personal property, which included seven slaves, was inventoried at $3,788.12. The actual value of the 1,700 acres of land devised by the will we can only guess at—it may have been $25,000. We know that to-day it would bring probably three times that sum. We may say that he left an estate worth not far from $30,000.00, which, in that day, would have been considered rather large. Sally (Patsy) and Woodford Woods, the children of his daughter Mary by her last husband, Samuel Woods, Jr., were assured a home and education. Their brother, James Harvey Woods, is not mentioned in the will, and probably because he was now (in 1809) eighteen years of age, and was making his own living. From the way in which he speaks of the two Woods children it would seem that their mother, Mary, may not have been then alive.

James McAfee died June 25, 1811, aged seventy-five years, as we learn from the tombstone at his grave. His wife, Agnes, survived him not quite three years, dying May 2, 1814. They were buried side by side in the old Pioneer Graveyard, on the top of the hill, about six or seven hundred yards to the north-east of the old stone house, and about five or six hundred yards to the south-west, by south, of the New Providence Churchyard. The editor of this volume visited the spot in the summer of 1897, and found all the stones of both graves lying flat on the ground, and almost hidden from view.

They are neat stones, and the inscriptions on them are very clear. They have been reset in position, but they lack a proper foundation. The two graves lie side by side and extend due east and west. That of James, which is the more northerly of the two, is just twenty-seven and a half feet south of the fence which runs east and west and divides the farm of Watts from the field in which the graves are. No care whatever is taken of this ancient burial-place. It is in an open field where stock roved at will, and unless the descendants of the sainted dead provide a substantial enclosure for the place, in a few more years the grave stones will have been broken to pieces and scattered, and the last resting-place of the leader of the McAfee brothers will have become indistinguishable, and trodden under the feet of cattle and horses. There are other graves near by, the most of which have no grave stones in position and nothing to indicate whose ashes are sleeping there—an apt illustration of the truth that the deadest and most desolate thing in all this world is a cemetery that has ceased to be used and cared for, and to which loving hands come no more to lay the tributes of affection on the graves of those who slumber there.

James McAfee, Jr., and Agnes had born to them eight children, to wit: Mary, John, James III, Elizabeth, Nancy, George, Margaret, and Thomas Clark, of each one of whom, in order, such notice will be given as the information at the editor's command may warrant. It is with deep regret, however, that he is obliged to pass so many by with a bare mention.

The Children of James McAfee, Jr.

1—MARY McAFEE—1761-1814.(?)

Mary, the first child of James and Agnes, was, beyond reasonable doubt, born on Catawba Creek, some eight or ten miles north-west of Salem, Virginia. The date of her birth, we have good cause for believing, was about 1760-1763. The most that we certainly know concerning her relates to her two marriages, and there was something of romance about both of them. About thirty-five miles north-east of her father's home, on the banks of James River, there lived a well-to-do young widower, whose name was David Woods. By the will of his father, who died in 1777, David had come into possession of the old homestead on the James, which included four hundred acres of good land. It has been known both as the "Hollow Ford Farm," and as the "Shepherd Island Farm." It is located about five miles below Buchanan, and directly opposite the village of Indian Rock. From that farm down to the home of James McAfee, Jr., on the Catawba, it was but a day's journey, and David came to like to travel that way. Certain it is, he married Mary. His first wife had left him one daughter, Ann, and one son named John. For various reasons the date of his marriage to Mary has to be fixed not later than the summer of 1779. If he was born, as is supposed, in 1742; and married his first wife in 1763; and his first child, Ann, was born in 1764; and his second child, John, was born in 1766; then in 1779, when he married his second wife, Mary, he was himself thirty-seven, his daughter Ann was fifteen, and his son John was thirteen, whilst Mary, the new wife, was possibly only about sixteen. Whilst none of these dates are capable of exact verification, it is believed that not one of them can be far from the truth in the case. This second marriage of David must have occurred in 1778 or 1779, a short time before the migration of the McAfees to Kentucky. When that large colony departed for the western wilderness James McAfee's eldest child, Mary, was the wife of David Woods, and perhaps mistress of the old homestead on the James River. But it was natural that she and her husband should be attracted to Kentucky. We know that there was, a few years later, quite a migration of Woodses from Botetourt to the very region in which the McAfees had settled. David was the main executor of his father's estate, which may have required some years for its winding up; and then the Revolution was in progress, and it may be that he was slow to follow his wife's people to the West. It is, nevertheless, possible that he may have accompanied the McAfees, who moved the 17th of August, 1779, for the Botetourt records

show that August 11, 1779, he sold the old homestead to his brother-in-law, William Campbell, for thirty-five hundred pounds. This, however, is not considered very probable, because his brother Samuel and family seem to have accompanied him, and the first known entries of land made in Kentucky by either David or Samuel could not have antedated 1783, or 1782, at most. But whatever the exact date, we know certainly that David and his wife, and all his children (except his first wife's daughter Ann, who had married a Jonathan Jennings) and his widowed mother, and his brother Samuel and family were all living in Kentucky by the year 1783, and possibly by the fall of 1782. The land entries made by Samuel and David in Kentucky, and other considerations, raise a very strong presumption in support of this conclusion.

David Woods, with his family, settled in what is known as the Cane Run neighborhood, a few miles east of Harrodsburg, Ky. There he died in 1786. His will, on record in Mercer County, shows that it was written in September, 1786, and probated in January following—in less than four months thereafter. In his will he mentions Mary, his "beloved wife;" Ann, the daughter of his first wife, who was now the wife of Jonathan Jennings, and her brother John, and the three children of his last marriage, Nancy, William, and Elizabeth. Samuel Woods, Sr., David's brother, was one of the witnesses to the will, and he was made the guardian of the minor children. Thus Mary was left a widow, at the age of about twenty-five, with three young children of her own, and one stepson, now nearly grown.

For fear of imitating too closely the modern historical romance, the editor has refrained from any suggestive references thus far to a certain young man, the son of Samuel Woods, Sr., and nephew of David Woods, deceased. That would have presented a "sensational situation." Fidelity to the actual facts, however, now compel us to introduce him. Samuel Woods, Jr., was probably a young man of about twenty-two or four when Mary was left a widow, and hence something like one to three years her junior. Exact dates can not be given, but those we do give have strong circumstantial evidence to support them. Samuel, Sr., was the guardian of Mary's children, but Samuel, Jr., seems to have aspired to still greater things—he became, about five years later, the guardian of those children, and of their mother, as well. About the year 1791 he and Mary were married, and Samuel, Sr., gave his son a fine start in life in the way of lands and personal property. And as the years passed, and Mary bore to him four children of his own, he soon found himself the head of a very considerable family. This marriage was opposed by the members of the two families, owing, no doubt, to Mary's being one to three years her husband's senior, and to the fact that he was her nephew-in-law. But it seems to have proved a happy match, and there were only sentimental reasons to be urged against its consummation. If we look at all the facts calmly, and recall how scarce eligible material for wives was at that day in Kentucky, and note that there was a quite reasonable delay (five years) no blame can attach to any one for the forming of that union. The children of Samuel Woods, Jr., and Mary were the following: (a) James Harvey Woods, who was born in 1792, and died in 1860; (b) Ann, who married George Bohon; (c) Patsy, who married a Sheely, and (d) Woodford, who died before reaching manhood. In 1802 Mary was again bereaved of a husband, Samuel Woods, Jr., dying before he had reached the age of forty. She did not survive him a great many years. When her father, James McAfee, wrote his will in 1809 he referred to her minor children in a way to indicate she might not be alive. There are references to her in the court proceedings of Mercer County, which prove she was dead by 1813. About a dozen of the descendants of this couple are subscribers to this volume.

II—JOHN McAFEE.

John McAfee was the second child of James, Jr., and Agnes, his wife. The editor has no knowledge of him except that he married Margaret Ewing, daughter of Samuel Ewing, Jr., who was

the son of Samuel Ewing, Sr., who married one Margaret McMichael, and that when his father wrote his will in 1809 he mentions this son by name, giving him 300 acres of land lying on the west side of Salt River, and constituting him one of the executors of the estate. John was no doubt born on Catawba Creek, Virginia, and the date of his birth was probably not far from the year 1765. We have no means of knowing when he died, or whether he left any children.

III—JAMES McAFEE, THIRD.

James McAfee III was the third child of James McAfee, Jr., and Agnes. He was born in Virginia, possibly about 1767, but he died very suddenly in his bed one night in the year 1783.

IV—ELIZABETH McAFEE.

Elizabeth (Betsy) McAfee was the fourth child of James, Jr., and Agnes. The date of her birth may have been about 1770. She married William Davenport. In 1809 her father, in his will, left 500 acres of land, one-third the proceeds of which was to be given to her.

V—NANCY McAFEE.

Nancy McAfee was the fifth child of James, Jr., and Agnes. It is not positively known, but she was probably born in Botetourt County, Virginia, on Catawba Creek, about the year 1773. She no doubt came to Kentucky with her parents in 1779. Later on she married Alexander Buchanan, her first cousin, by whom she had six children, to wit: (a) Mary; (b) James M.; (c) William; (d) Alexander; (e) Caleb; and (f) George. In the section in this volume devoted to the Buchanans will be found a full account of the descendants of Nancy McAfee, to which the reader is referred. She and her husband lie side by side in New Providence Churchyard, and their descendants are people of high social position and moral worth.

VI—GEORGE McAFEE.

The sixth child of James, Jr., and Agnes was George, who was probably born about the year 1776. He was never married, and died in 1804.

VII—MARGARET (PEGGY) McAFEE.

The seventh child of James, Jr., and Agnes was Margaret (often called Peggy). She was born in Kentucky, for the date of her birth was May 15, 1780, the year after the McAfees settled in Kentucky. She married John McKamey, who was eleven years her senior, by whom she had children. The reader is referred for further information concerning this branch of the family to the sections devoted to Mrs. Margaret D. Guthrie, Mrs. Champ Clark, and Mrs. Jennie M. Marshall.

Her father mentions her in his will in connection with her four children, in 1809, as if she was then a widow.

VIII—THOMAS CLARK McAFEE.

The eighth and last child of James, Jr., and Agnes was Thomas Clark (Clark is often spelled with a final e). He was born in Kentucky in 1785. In the year 1808 he married Nancy Greathouse, of Shelby County, Kentucky, by whom he had nine children, as follows: (a) George G.; (b) Isaac; (c) Elizabeth R.; (d) Thomas Cleland; (e) William Lewis; (f) Sarah Jane; (g) America; (h) Nancy Clarke; and (j) Mary E. The sections in the succeeding chapter of this volume devoted to Miss Sallie Daingerfield, Mrs. William L. McAfee, and Mr. Edwin McAfee will contain additional matter in regard to this branch of the family, to which the reader is referred.

"Clarke McAfee," as his father refers to him in his will, was a favorite son of his parents. He inherited the old stone mansion which his father built, and in which he resided at the time of his death in 1811, and a large body of fine land. He was one of the executors of his father's estate. He died in 1827, and his descendants are scattered

throughout the Union. It is a matter of sincere regret that so little is to be found in this volume in regard to this prominent member of the McAfee clan.

CHILDREN OF JAMES McAFEE, SR.

B—JOHN McAFEE III.

1737-1768.

John, the second child of James McAfee, Sr., and Jane, his wife, was born in County Armagh, Ireland, in 1737 or 1738, and came with his parents to America, and accompanied them in their several migrations till they finally settled in Virginia, in 1747 or 1748. Here he spent about twenty years of his life. The region near the head of Catawba Creek was exposed to Indian attacks down nearly to the close of the eighteenth century, and John McAfee III, as he came to maturity, had to do service against the savages from time to time. In the year 1768, when in the prime of his manhood, he was killed by the Indians at the ford of Reed Creek, not far from the point where that stream enters the New River. Nothing farther is known of his life. He was the first of two sons James McAfee, Sr., had to resign in the defence of his country against a blood-thirsty foe, William being the other, some twelve years later.

C—MALCOLM McAFEE.

1739.

Malcolm, the third child of James, Sr., and his wife Jane, was born in County Armagh, Ireland, in the year 1739, only a few months before his parents set sail for America. While coming over on the ship he was taken ill, and he died only a few days before the vessel sighted land on this side of the Atlantic. The body of the little babe was lowered into the deep, and his parents had to enter this New World under the shadow of a peculiar bereavement.

D—GEORGE McAFEE.

1740-1803.

George McAfee, the fourth child of James, Sr., and Jane, was born on Octoraro Creek, Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, April 13, 1740. He was with his parents in their various migrations, and was a boy of about seven or eight years when they finally settled on Catawba Creek, Virginia. When the French and Indian wars began (1754) he was too young to be a soldier; but as those wars continued for nine years, and General R. B. McAfee states that "nearly all" of the McAfee men participated in them, we must believe that George served during at least some of the latter years of that long series of contests between the British, on the one side, and the allied French and Indians, on the other.

When the exploring tour to Kentucky was undertaken in 1773, George, who was then a stalwart young man of thirty-three, entered into it heartily. He took a worthy part in all the experiences of that remarkable trip, and also in the series of visits subsequently made to Kentucky to prepare the way for the final settlement there. He was in Capt. Evan Shelby's company at the Battle of Point Pleasant, October, 1774, with Colonel Christian in his expedition against the Cherokees, in 1776, probably in the Virginia militia serving the Colony against the British in 1777-1778, and with General George Rogers Clark in his expedition against the Indians in Ohio in 1780. It was probably somewhere between the years 1765 and 1770 that he was married to Susan Curry, who was his first cousin, and a daughter of William Curry. It is said that in 1781 he received from Benjamin Harrison, Governor of Virginia, a grant of 1,400 acres of land in recognition of his services as a Revolutionary soldier. It is stated by Collins (Vol. 2, page 249) that he, like his brothers, James and Robert, kept a daily journal of the tour to Kentucky in 1773, but the editor, after due inquiry, could not learn anything of it.

The survey of his land on Salt River, on which he afterwards resided, was made on either the 22d, 23d, or 24th of July, 1773. It lay on the east bank of Salt River, about a mile and a half due southwest of the present town of Salvisa. His house stood only a few hundred yards west of where the track of the Southern Railway now runs. When

the company had that critical experience August 12, 1773, on the Big Black Mountains, he seemed nearer to fatal exhaustion than either of his brothers, and he would most probably have died had not relief come before the following morning. He was back in Kentucky with his brothers early in the spring of 1775, and he and William McAfee cleared a small piece of ground at that time at a spring which runs into the Town Branch a short distance below Harrodsburg. The company started back to Virginia in April of that year, after making improvements on their land, and when on the 21st of that month they met Colonel Henderson at Scagg's Creek on his way to Boonesboro, George agreed with Robert and Samuel in favoring Henderson's scheme, against the advice of their older brother, James, and parted with him and the rest of the company to go with Henderson to Boonesboro. But in about two months the three younger brothers proceeded to Virginia, and later on they learned that the Colonial Government repudiated Henderson's claims. But George and his brothers, Robert and Samuel, though mistaken in their judgment, had some share in the so-called Transylvania Colony undertaking, which, despite its failure, forms one of the most interesting and important episodes in the early history of Kentucky.

Susan Curry (often called "Susanna") was the daughter of William Curry, and a first cousin to George McAfee. She was also the sister of the Rebecca Curry who became the wife of her husband's younger brother William. She was born October 8, 1740, probably in Virginia, and died September 3, 1810.

George McAfee, husband of Susan Curry, died more than seven years before his wife did, viz.: April 14, 1803. His remains lie in the New Providence Churchyard, and from his tombstone there the dates of his birth and death are taken. His grave was the first one opened in that venerable cemetery. Their descendants are to be found in Kentucky, Missouri and various other parts of the Union. This couple had the following six children, to wit: (a) JOHN; (b) JAMES; (c) MARGARET; (d) GEORGE, JR.; (e) SUSAN, (f) and another daughter.

THE CHILDREN OF GEORGE MCAFEE, SR.

I—JOHN McAFEE.

The first child of George, Sr., and Susan Curry was John, who lived to manhood unmarried, and died in South Carolina while engaged in trading. Nothing further is known of him.

II—JAMES McAFEE (THE FOURTH).

The second child of George McAfee by his wife Susan (Susannah) was named James (IV), no doubt in honor of his father's elder brother, James, Jr. The exact date and place of his birth are unknown. His parents were probably married about 1765 to 1770, and he was probably born in Botetourt County, Virginia, about 1773. He was six feet high, and of the most powerful build, and came to be known as "Big Jim McAfee", a man whom but few people would care to encounter in a hand to hand fight. He married Nancy McKamey. He seems to have been engaged, as so many men in Central Kentucky were, in taking stock, furs and provisions on flat-boats down the Kentucky, Ohio and Mississippi Rivers to New Orleans. It is related of him that on one occasion, having taken a cargo to that city and received his pay for it, he was making his way back home by land, and he and some companions stopped for the night at a tavern. A conspiracy was formed by a gang of thieves to rob these men, who were supposed to have their belts full of Spanish coin, and the keeper of the tavern was in the plot. But after the keeper mingled with the travellers and discovered who they were, he went out to his confederates and whispered a warning to them—"Don't try it; Big Jim McAfee is among 'em." That fact seemed to have a tremendous significance with the rascals, and he lived to reach home again. He served as a soldier in the War of 1812. In the year 1826 he removed to Missouri.

James (IV) and his wife Nancy had three sons, to wit: (a) GEORGE (III), who was killed by lightning; (b) PHILIP, who married Elizabeth Sheely; and (c) ROBERT LIVINGSTONE, who married Jane Murray. Robert L. was educated at Danville,

Ky., and became a Presbyterian minister. Robert L. and his wife, Jane M. R. Moore, had children, as follows: 1, Elizabeth, who died in infancy; 2, Mary Rochester, who married Marvin R. Banks, who died in Columbia, Mo., May 13, 1884; 3, James Philip, who married Anita Alexander, of Kentucky, and has four children who will be noted in the section of the succeeding chapter devoted to James Philip McAfee; 4, Jane, who died in infancy; 5, Cornelia Lawson, who is a sister in the Convent of Mercy at Louisville, Ky.; and 6, Laura, who died at the age of fifteen.

III—MARGARET McAFEE.

The third child of George McAfee and Susan, his wife, was named Margaret, who married Abraham Irvine, of Boyle County, Kentucky.

IV—GEORGE McAFEE, JR.

1777-1819.

The fourth child of George McAfee and his wife Susan was George, Jr., who in mature life came to be known as "Colonel Geo. McAfee." He was born April 28, 1777, only a little more than two years prior to the final removal of his parents to Kentucky. He married Anne Hamilton, who was born January 11, 1777, and was therefore a few months his senior. Her portrait will be found in this volume. Colonel George and his wife Anne had the following children, to wit: (a) NARCISSA W., born August 19, 1804, who married Andrew Forsyth; (b) JOHN, born January 9, 1806; (c) MARGARET, born December 6, 1807; (d) MARY MCCLUNG, who married JOEL D. BENNETT; (e) WM. H.; and (f) GEORGE (V), who was a physician. Colonel George McAfee died May 28, 1819, and his wife Anne survived him many years, dying April 7, 1851.

The section of the succeeding chapter devoted to Mr. William Stockwell Forsyth of Paris, Mo., and Mrs. Champ Clark, of Bowling Green, Mo., will afford additional information concerning this branch of the family.

V—SUSAN McAFEE.

The fifth child of George McAfee and his wife Susan was named for her mother, Susan. The date of her birth and death are not known to the writer. She married Robert McKamey, who was a brother of the John McKamey who married Margaret, the daughter of James McAfee, Jr., and his wife Agnes.

VI—There was another daughter, and she married an Armstrong. See Sketch 32, in Part III.

E—MARY McAFEE.

The fifth child of James McAfee, Sr., and Jane his wife, was named Mary, and she was born, beyond all reasonable doubt, in Pennsylvania, about the year 1743. Positive assertions on these points can not be made, but there are good reasons for giving the date named, and if that date be correct within even a few years, then the place of her birth was undoubtedly as stated. Mary was twice married. Her first husband was John Poulson, by whom she had one daughter, I—MARGARET, who married William Ewing, one of the grandsons of Samuel Ewing, Sr. Mr. Poulson having died, Mary married Mr. Thomas Gaunt (or Grant) by whom she had the following children, to wit: II—MARGARET, who married her cousin John Buchanan; III—JANE; IV—JOHN, who married a Miss Darland; and V—MARY, who married Henry Eccles. Jane McAfee, the wife of James, Sr., who accompanied her children to Kentucky in 1779, leaving her husband in Virginia, lived a part of her time with her widowed daughter, Mrs. Grant or Guant, whose husband was killed by Indians on Salt River. When Jane—"Mother McAfee," she ought to be called, for the five pioneer brothers were her sons—died in 1783, she was buried on Mr. Grant's farm beside his remains. This farm was on Salt River about three miles south-west of Harrodsburg near what is known as "The Mud Meeting House." On the map of Mercer County, given in this volume, the site of the graves referred to is correctly indicated.

F—ROBERT McAFEE.

1745-1795.

Robert McAfee, the sixth child of James McAfee, Sr., and Jane, his wife, was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, July 10, 1745. He was but an infant when his parents made the several moves which ended, in the fall of 1747, or the beginning of 1748, in their settling on Catawba Creek, Virginia. Genl. R. B. McAfee, son of Robert, as has been fully discussed in Chapter III, assigns the year 1755 as the date of the settlement of the family in Augusta County, Virginia. The reasons which compel the editor to fix upon 1748, a date seven years earlier, as the proper time of that settlement, have been stated at length in that place, and need not be repeated here. Genl. R. B. McAfee was only eleven years old when his father met with his untimely end in New Orleans, in 1795, and his mother had died some years before, so that he could hardly have obtained from his parents any first-hand information about their early life. He says almost nothing of their young days in his narrative. Some have thought Robert had a university education, but this is clearly a mistake. December 10, 1766, Robert McAfee, when twenty-one years old, married Anne McCoun, daughter of James McCoun, Sr., who had come to Virginia from Ireland in 1742. For some reason Robert McAfee, in the spring of 1767, only a few months after his marriage, migrated to North Carolina, but he only remained there a year. Returning to Virginia, he settled in Botetourt County, on Sinking Creek, some little distance to the south-west of his father's home. In 1770 he moved up to the head of that creek, and some of his brothers also bought land in that section and removed thither.

When the tour of 1773 to Kentucky was undertaken, Robert was twenty-eight years old, and into that movement he seems to have entered with much enthusiasm. Whether he served the colony in the French and Indian wars is rather doubtful, as he was only eighteen years old when those wars came to an end. He may have taken some part during the last one or two years of that protracted conflict, especially as his son, the chronicler of the McAfee family, states that "nearly all" of the McAfees had participated, and it is certain he was an uncommonly daring and athletic young man, the best possible material for a valuable soldier. During the tour of 1773 he and his elder brother James, regardless of the great risks incurred, made frequent side trips off the main line of their route, for several days at a time, to explore the country; and when the party got near to where Newport, Ky., now stands, he went a long distance, apparently alone, into the interior far up the Licking River, rejoining the company some days later on the Ohio. He seemed to be absolutely fearless of danger, though in an utterly strange land where bands of roving Indians might meet him at any moment. When the McAfee company reached the level bottom on the Kentucky River where Frankfort now stands, Robert had their surveyor measure and enter for him one tract of 400 acres, and another of 200 acres, of land. These surveys included the fine spring which heads a little branch. In this spring the party buried a tomahawk and a fish gig, and the spring has been called "McAfee Spring" ever since. The last corner of the survey made was at a point about 250 to 300 feet north-west of the present site of the capitol building, and the party camped that night (July 16, 1773), on the very spot where the capitol afterwards stood. This was undoubtedly the very first survey ever made at any point on Kentucky River; and this event, for all coming time, connects the McAfees with that stream in the most intimate manner. From July 8 to August 11 this company were not any day more than a very few miles distant from it. For some reason Robert failed to complete his title to the surveys just mentioned. In 1785, Humphrey Marshall—who is said to have had a remarkably keen eye for land openings—having discovered that Robert McAfee had omitted to make good his claim, proceeded to enter a part of it for himself, which, it should be said, he had a perfect right to do.

Robert's land on Salt River was surveyed July 26 and 27, 1773. It was situated on the east side of the river about four miles north-west, by north, from Harrodsburg. Other parties came along there in the following year (1774) with Col. James Harrod; and though Robert had deadened trees and piled up brush heaps on his land, and had even cut his initials on a beech tree, a man by the name of Williams made some additional improvements on the same lands, and laid claim to the property later on. This led to a most protracted and expensive law suit, which annoyed Robert McAfee to the end of his days, and which was not finally settled in favor of his heirs until the year 1820, when he had been in his grave a quarter of a century.

If the McAfee brothers returned to their lands on Salt River in the spring of 1774, as there is good reason for supposing they did, we can feel sure Robert was with them. For the discussion of this mooted question, however, the reader is referred to Chapter IV, Part II.

In the fall of 1774, Robert was with his two older brothers, James and George, in Capt. Evan Shelby's company at the battle of Point Pleasant, where Cornstalk and his army were defeated by Genl. Andrew Lewis.

Early in 1775, he accompanied the McAfee company to Salt River, arriving at James McAfee's spring, March 11th. On the 15th, Col. Harrod passed them on his way to re-occupy his cabins at Harrodsburg, six miles to the south, which the Indians had caused them to abandon the previous summer. April 21st, as the McAfees were on their way back to Virginia, by way of the Wilderness Road, they met Col. Richard Henderson, and Robert took a favorable view of his enterprise; and at Henderson's request (but against the advice of his brother James), he turned back and went with Henderson to Boonesboro. His brothers George and Samuel accompanied him. James McAfee and the remainder of his party continued on their way to Virginia. The three brothers who joined Henderson spent some two months at Boonesboro. They were present at Henderson's famous May convention, of which body Robert McAfee was made sergeant-at-arms. In the fall of that same year, Robert was again in Kentucky with his brothers and a number of other men. This time the McAfees brought cattle with them to their lands, and turned them loose in the rich cane. Genl. Robert B. McAfee does not state positively which of the five brothers, other than James, served as soldiers in the Revolutionary war, but merely says that "most of them" did so, mentioning by name James only. But as Robert was thirty years old when the war began, and was a fearless and active man, he was probably an active participant in all the various wars and expeditions in which his brothers had a share. When the McAfees finally got their families to Kentucky, in the fall of 1779, Robert stopped at Wilson's Station, two and a half miles south-west of Harrodsburg, and erected a cabin, as he claimed land adjoining the station. But Wilson contested his claim, and the dispute was settled by the Commissioners adversely to Robert. Robert then made an entry of 400 acres one mile below the place first chosen, his land covering on what is now the Perryville turn-pike. But not liking the land in that neighborhood very well, he moved down the river several miles and built on land he bought from John Magee, his brother-in-law. But this move, as has already been narrated, proved a mistake, because it led him in 1780 into a law suit which lasted forty years. He was finally successful (that is, his heirs were, long after his death), but it proved a dearly-bought possession.

In the spring of 1783, Robert McAfee moved out of his brother James's fort to his own land, a few miles up the river, feeling that the danger of Indian attacks would not be great in future. This year he paid a last visit to his aged father who was still living in Botetourt County, Virginia, carrying to him many presents and affectionate remembrances from the various children. In the fall of 1783, after his return from Virginia, he built a mill on Salt River for grinding wheat and corn. His brothers, James and Samuel, assisted him in erecting the dam across Salt River. The mill

proved a success financially, some of the patrons coming from Frankfort, about thirty miles distant.

Robert McAfee was five feet, eleven and a quarter inches high, large around the breast, well proportioned, and possessed of great strength and activity. He was the most athletic member of the family. It was he that on that terrible day on the Big Black Mountains, August 12, 1773, refused to despair of life when the prospects of the company looked exceeding dark, and with a cheerful heart went in search of game, and succeeded in killing the deer that saved the whole party from starvation. He had a large, well-proportioned face, a prominent square forehead, a clear, strong mind and very black and thick hair, inclined to curl. His eyes were black, or very dark hazel. He was a man of great decision of character, whom no obstacles seemed to thwart. His wife was a kind and affectionate woman, with gray eyes, a round, expansive forehead, and very long and dark auburn hair.

In the spring of 1789, Robert erected a new house of hewed logs, having heretofore lived in rude cabins. One night, this spring, Indians came within one hundred and fifty yards of his cabins, and stole nearly all of his horses. Robert raised a company of twelve men at once and followed the trail of the Indians, and finally overtook them, in the forenoon of the third day, near the Ohio River. He ordered a charge, and the Indians were routed, one of them being killed, and all their plunder and the stolen horses were captured. In the captured Indian packs were found many silver brooches, rings and other ornaments.

In 1793, Robert rode to Philadelphia on horseback to get Congress to further some plans he had for getting land grants in what is now Indiana, but his mission failed, because the Indian title had not been extinguished. Mr. John Breckinridge, a lawyer at Lexington, was associated with him in this enterprise. In 1794, Robert's wife died, and soon after this bereavement he planned a trading trip to New Orleans, and began building a boat, which was completed in March, 1795. He made the trip to New Orleans and sold out most of his stock, but on the night of May 10, 1795, while asleep in his boat, some unknown villain crept upon him and struck him a fearful blow with an axe, which proved fatal. His body was buried at the hospital in New Orleans.

The children of Robert McAfee and his wife Anne, were the following:

I.—MARGARET, who married Nathan Neelds;

II.—SALLY, who married James Curran;

III.—MARY, who married Joseph Adams;

IV.—ROBERT, JR., who died in 1784, aged six years;

V.—ANNE, who married John R. Cardwell;

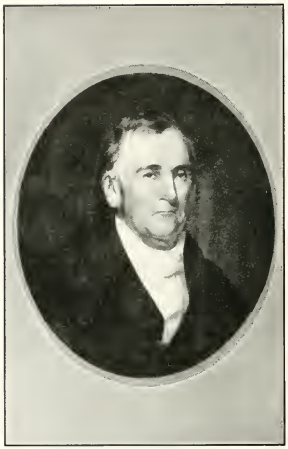
VI.—ROBERT BRECKINRIDGE, of whom a sketch will be given presently;

VII.—JOHN, who died single at twenty years of age.

VI—ROBERT BRECKINRIDGE McAFEE.

1784-1849.

The sixth child of Robert McAfee and Anne, his wife, was named Robert Breckinridge, and he was born at his father's cabin on Salt River, Mercer County, Ky., February 18, 1784. In mature life he was known as General McAfee. Inasmuch as accounts of General McAfee's life have long since been published in Collins' "History of Kentucky," vol. 2, pages 621, 622, and in various other works, there is the less need of any extensive account of him in this volume. His well-known "Biographical and Family History," in manuscript, written by him in 1845, has been many times copied, and is to be found in many public and private libraries in America. It constitutes one main source of information touching the McAfees up to the year 1845, and the editor has had a copy of it before him during all the years he has been engaged in editing the present work. To General McAfee, more than to any other individual, living or dead, the descendants of the Irish immigrant, James McAfee, Sr., owe grateful acknowledgments for the efforts he made to preserve, in writing, the scattered traditions and items of information relating to the McAfees.



GENERAL ROBERT B. McAFEE

1784-1849

SON OF ROBERT, THE PIONEER. THE FAITHFUL CHRONICLER OF THE McAFEE FAMILY.

BURIED IN NEW PROVIDENCE CHURCH-YARD.

General McAfee was, first of all, a Christian gentleman, and an elder in the New Providence church. He was an educated man, and was favored with the society and friendship of the best people to be found in Kentucky at the time he was preparing for the active duties of life. As a soldier in the War of 1812, he served with distinction, having commanded the largest company in Colonel Richard M. Johnston's regiment at the battle of the Thames, October, 1813. As a member of the Kentucky Legislature for many years, as Lieutenant-Governor of his native State for four years, and as the representative of the United States at the capital of Colombia, South America, for a like term, he shed lustre upon the family name. In 1842, he was elected one of the visitors to West Point Military Academy, and was made president of the board. He was a member of the Royal Antiquarian Society of Denmark, and of the Kentucky Historical Society. In October, 1807, he was married to Miss Mary Cardwell, by whom he had a considerable family of children. General McAfee died in 1849, in the sixty-fifth year of his age, and was buried in the New Providence Churchyard in the midst of a goodly company of his kinsmen. His monument can easily be distinguished in the engraving to be found in this volume, showing a part of the churchyard looking towards the north-west.

G—MARGARET McAFEE.

Margaret, the seventh child of James McAfee, Sr., and his wife, Jane, was probably born in Pennsylvania colony, about the year 1746. She went with her parents to Virginia when yet an infant. Of her early life scarcely anything is known.

Margaret married George Buchanan, and probably in Botetourt County, Virginia, not far from the year 1770. George, her husband, was born in Ireland in 1745, and he was probably acquainted with the McAfees in Pennsylvania, if not in Ireland. Margaret and her husband settled in the Salt River (Ky.) neighborhood not long after the McAfees did (in 1784), and the next year, when New Providence church was organized, George Buchanan suggested the very appropriate name the church received, and was elected one of its ruling elders, a place he no doubt filled till his death in 1813.

George Buchanan and his wife, Margaret, had the following children, to-wit: I.—JAMES; II.—JOHN; III.—ALEXANDER; IV.—GEORGE; V.—MARY; VI.—JANE; VII.—MARGARET; VIII.—NANCY; IX.—ANNIE; and X.—DORCAS. For appropriate notices of all the Buchanans the reader is referred to the sketch of the Buchanans given in Part III of this volume.

H—SAMUEL McAFEE.

1748-1801.

Samuel, the eighth child of James McAfee, Sr., and his wife, Jane, was born in October, 1748. As his parents had by this time moved to Virginia, as shown in Chapter III it is reasonably certain Samuel was born on Catawba Creek, Virginia, a few miles north-west of the town of Salem. Of his early life we know nothing. He was entirely too young to have taken any part in the French and Indian Wars, being but fifteen when they closed. There is no evidence that he enjoyed any better educational advantages than his older brothers—all had apparently a good, plain English education, as Scotch-Irish parents were sure to secure for their children. When the first tour to Kentucky was made in 1773, he was twenty-five years old, but it would have been an exceedingly hazardous thing for all the men of the family to have left their families and homes unprotected. It must be borne in mind that at that time, and for a good many years later, the region they lived in was on the frontier, and exposed to Indian attacks. Besides, there were farms and crops requiring to be looked after. For these reasons, no doubt, Samuel and his younger brother, William, remained at home. Every one of the five brothers had the courage and manhood necessary, but it was out of the question for all to go off and leave a large number of defenseless women and children unprovided for.

Samuel may have had another reason for not going to Kentucky in 1773, in addition to that just given, though we can not assert it as a fact. It is nearly certain that his marriage to Hannah McCormick occurred either in 1774 or the year previous, and this lady may have had something to say in regard to Samuel's taking such a hazardous and protracted journey just as they were about to be married. Hannah's home, it would seem, was in that part of the Valley of Virginia, which is now included in Rockbridge County. Samuel is said to have been a man of more than ordinary self-possession and coolness; brave and determined, and yet without passion or rashness. It is probably true that no one of the children of James McAfee, Sr., can count among their descendants a larger number of people of culture and distinction than Samuel. For more than half a century past there have been among his descendants a large number of persons who in point of character, attainments and position have been above the average.

Samuel was in Kentucky with his brothers in 1775, and, as has already been shown, he was one of the three brothers who for a short time were associated with Colonel Richard Henderson in his scheme for establishing the Transylvania colony in Kentucky. He was probably a soldier in the Colonial forces of Virginia during a part of the Revolution, and he may also have gone with General George Rogers Clark to Ohio, in his expedition against the Indians in 1780. He came with his brothers when they made their final move to Kentucky in the fall of 1779. His lands were surveyed for him under the supervision of his older brothers, July 26 and 27, 1773, and were situated on the east bank of Salt River not quite two miles west by south of the present village of McAfee. Part of his farm extends to the east of the turn-pike leading from that place to Harrodsburg and is now owned by J. J. McAfee, one of his worthy descendants. He was the first magistrate of Mercer County. In the noted attack by Indians on McAfee Station in the year 1781, he narrowly escaped being killed, because of his agility and coolness, an account of which will be found in the previous chapter. His death occurred, as shown by the inscription on his tombstone, June 8, 1801. His body was first buried in his own private burial ground, but, as Collins informs us (Vol. 2, page 619), at the death of his wife, which occurred in 1817, his body, with hers, was laid away in the New Providence Churchyard.

The following children were born to Samuel McAfee and his wife, Hannah, to wit: I.—JOHN; II.—ANNIE; III.—ROBERT; IV.—JANE; V.—HANNAH; VI.—WILLIAM; VII.—SAMUEL, JR.; and VIII.—MARY.

For a full account of the above-named eight children of Samuel and Hannah the reader is referred to the section in the succeeding chapter devoted to the "McAfees of Parkville, Mo.," and to that devoted to Miss Annie T. Daviess, all of whom are descendants of Samuel and Hannah McAfee.

The said eight children of Samuel and Hannah are mentioned in General R. B. McAfee's narrative thus:

I.—JOHN, who married Margaret McKarney.

II.—ANNE, who married Thomas King of Shelby County.

III.—ROBERT, who married Priscilla Armstrong.

IV.—JANE, who married Beriah Magoffin of Harrodsburg.

V.—HANNAH, who married Captain Samuel Daviess, attorney and Senator.

VI.—WILLIAM, who married Mrs. Lowery, a widow.

VII.—SAMUEL (Jr.), who died, young and single, at Harrodsburg.

VIII.—MARY, who married Thomas P. Moore, member of Congress and United States Minister to Colombia, from 1829 to 1833.

J—WILLIAM McAFEE.

1750 (?)-1780.

William, the eighth and last child of James McAfee, Sr., and his wife, Jane, was probably born about the year 1750, and on Catawba Creek, Vir-

ginia. Nothing is known of his early life. He was only about twenty-three when his older brothers made the exploring tour to Kentucky in 1773, and he and Samuel remained at home to look after the families and farms of the absent brothers. In several of the subsequent tours which his brothers made to Kentucky, he accompanied them. He married Rebecca Curry, sister to Susan Curry, his brother George's wife. The date of his marriage is believed to have been about 1774. He moved to Kentucky with the families of his brothers in 1779. His lands were located on the west bank of Salt River at the mouth of the Town Branch near Harrodsburg, and he built there a station of his own. In 1780, when General George Rogers Clark called for men to accompany him on his expedition to Chillicothe, and Piqua, Ohio, William McAfee, who was probably his cousin, raised a company of men, and was elected captain, and went to Ohio with Clark. At Piqua he was mortally wounded in the breast by an Indian whilst gallantly doing his duty, and was carried on a litter between two horses to the mouth of the Licking River, and thence down the Ohio to the Falls and to Floyd's station near by. But, as he grew worse, he was carried to the mouth of the Kentucky River for the purpose of conveying him to his home by canoe. He was too ill, however, to leave the mouth of Kentucky River. Here his wife joined him, having been notified of his injury. She got to him just before he breathed his last. Captain William McAfee was a brave and efficient soldier, and like his brother John, who died in 1768, he lost his life at the hands of a savage.

The following children were the fruit of the marriage of William and Rebecca, the last one named having been born only a few months after her father died, namely:

I.—ANNE, who married Elijah Craig, who lived at the mouth of Kentucky River, and who was killed at the battle of the Thames, October, 1813.

II.—MARGARET, who married Thompson Jones, and afterwards died in Indiana opposite Yellow Banks.

III.—MARY, who married Willis A. Lee, Clerk of the Senate of Kentucky, and the General Court. After Mr. Lee's death she resided in Frankfort till 1843, and then moved back to Mercer County.

In bringing to a close Part Second of this work, which is devoted to the McAfees, it will not be considered out of place, we trust, if we attempt to show what place in the history of Kentucky these men are justly entitled to occupy. A more modest set of men—men who made less claims for themselves—it would be difficult to find among those whose achievements have, in any marked degree, contributed to the advancement of civilization. Those five sturdy brothers never seem to have imagined that they had done anything unusual, much less heroic, in founding a permanent settlement in the Kentucky wilderness when there was not one human family living anywhere within its bounds, and nothing had really been done to subdue its virgin meadows and forests to the service of civilized man. They seem not to have sought to perpetuate their name by affixing it to any stream or mountain peak, or civil division of the country. They knew how to bring things to pass, but they did no boasting, and asked no reward. Such self-effacement was, indeed, a commendable trait in them; but the truth of history is something we should maintain. It can not be wrong in their descendants to want to see the McAfees rated as they really deserve. It is very natural in a historical writer to select a few of the more prominent actors in a given undertaking for special mention and ignore the rest. It requires far less of pains-taking study and discrimination to do this than to carefully look into the whole subject, investigate the details, and then try to do exact justice to all. The McAfees have been duly honored by some of the most prominent writers on the pioneer period of Kentucky, but there are some others who have accorded them but scant justice. The writer's aim is simply to fix their rightful place in Kentucky's history.

It will not be contended, of course, that the McAfees may rightfully claim the first place as pioneers in the order of time; for many other men preceded them to Kentucky. All that is here insisted

on is that, all the circumstances of the early settlement of the State being considered, and especially when the character and motives of their work are duly taken into account, no historian can justly deny that these men should be regarded as at least among the first and worthiest. It may be noted, in passing, that the "doctors," as usual, do not agree; the ablest historical writers on this subject not only differ as to which men deserve the greatest credit for the exploration and settlement of Kentucky, but the most contradictory positions are taken in regard to the matter. For instance, Collins (History of Kentucky, Vol. I, page 248) says: "Neglecting the obscure visit of Dr. Walker to the north-eastern portion of Kentucky in 1758, and the equally obscure but more thorough examination of the country by Finley in 1767, we may regard the company headed by Daniel Boone in 1769, and by Knox in 1770, as the earliest visits to Kentucky worthy of particular attention." Thus we see that Dr. Collins sets Boone before Walker in honor and importance, despite the fact that Walker was many years in advance of him. On the other hand we find Professor Shaler (see his excellent little volume on Kentucky, pages 59 and 65) exalting Dr. Walker, and belittling the work of Boone. He says: "The first authentic report of a deliberate journey beyond the line of the Alleghenies is that of Dr. Thomas Walker, who in 1750 travelled to the central parts of the region afterwards called Kentucky and returned with a good report of the country." Then, farther on, he says: "Thus it will be seen that Boone's first visit was relatively late in the history of Kentucky explorations. Almost every part of its surface had been traversed by other explorers before this man, who passes in history as the typical pioneer, set foot upon its ground." These last quoted sentences are the most unwarranted and injudicious we have noted in Professor Shaler's otherwise admirable and scholarly work. It reveals a carelessness and rashness of judgment not to be expected of a writer who ordinarily is so fair and accurate. The estimate of Boone is not only unjust to that old hero, but it rests on the false assumption that no explorations subsequent to those of Walker, Gist and Croghan are worthy to be considered as being early, or as having contributed much to the founding of the great Commonwealth of Kentucky.

Now just here the question emerges: "When did the period of exploration proper come to a close, and when did actual settlement commence?" To affirm that exploration proper had ceased with the visit of Colonel Croghan in 1765, or with the alleged, but unproven, visit of George Washington in 1772, is to do violence to the facts of the case. (See Col. Durrett's very able and interesting Centenary of Kentucky, page 30.) It is conceded that the dividing line between these two stages of the early history of Kentucky is not as distinct as it might be, and yet it is maintained that nothing worthy the name of permanent settlement occurred till the McAfees and Captain Bullitt entered the State in 1773. These men were all explorers, and the McAfees were certainly settlers as well. In fact, the years 1773 to 1775 mark the transition period when the last real explorations were made, and the first really permanent settlements were effected. It is simply unimpeachable history that with that year 1773, when the McAfees entered Kentucky, the permanent occupation of the State began. Dr. Collins, who was one of the best informed and most reliable of all writers on Kentucky, says in his "History of Kentucky," Vol. II, page 517: "The present State of Kentucky was *visited* by various parties, at different periods from 1747 to 1772. The first visits that gave promise of return and settlement were those of 1773, with the large number of surveys in that year." Of course he has reference, in this statement, chiefly to the McAfees and Captain Bullitt. To the same purport speaks Colonel Durrett in the passage from his "Kentucky Centenary" just referred to, when he says: "In 1772 patents were issued to John Fry for lands in Lawrence and Greenup counties, said, without conclusive authority, to have been surveyed by the great Washington himself; but the surveyors whose work led to prompt and permanent settlements did

not reach Kentucky till the following year." Here, again, we assume, the reference is to the McAfees and Bullitt mainly. In view of all these facts and considerations it would seem clear that in speaking of the first explorers and settlers of Kentucky we are bound to include in the account the men who went there in 1773, if not those in 1774 and 1775. This would make the dawn of Kentucky's history as a distinct section of this country coincident with the momentous change in the political relations of America to Great Britain. The year 1775 marked the close of the Colonial period. When the McAfees were surveying their lands on Salt River in July, 1773, they were subjects of King George the Third, and their lands belonged to England; when they got ready to move in with their families and occupy the land, the dominion of England over Kentucky had been forever broken. Kentucky was now just entering upon a new career, in a double sense: She was no longer an unexplored and utterly uninhabited wilderness, and no longer an outlying portion of an English colony. A new era had dawned; old things had passed away; behold all things were become new; and the McAfees took an honorable part in rendering both these changes possible.

Some writers seem to adopt very strange and illogical criteria for deciding the relative place to be assigned the early settlers of a new region of country. Some of them have, apparently, no other test of priority than that of the date of their coming. They would almost deny a man who got there years in advance of all others, even though he were conveyed thither against his will by a runaway horse, or was a fugitive from justice, seeking to hide from the officers of the law, without a thought of making a careful exploration of the country for a worthy purpose. If some Spaniard or Frenchman happened to sail down the Ohio or Mississippi on some business wholly foreign to that of examining the lands along the shore, they would parade his name to all future generations as a distinguished explorer of that region whilst not mentioning men who came hundreds of miles at great personal peril expressly to explore the country and there make for themselves a home.

There are a number of facts touching the movement of the McAfees to the wilderness of Kentucky which deserve thoughtful attention, and must be fairly considered if we are to determine their true place in the annals of the grand old Commonwealth for whose settlement they so efficiently helped to blaze the way.

It has already been fully conceded that the McAfees were not the first men to explore Kentucky. The first real explorer of Eastern Kentucky was Dr. Thomas Walker in 1750, and he was followed the next year by Colonel Gist. Later—1765-69—came a class of hunters and adventurers like Croghan, Findley, Knox and Boone, different from Walker and Gist. Next came men, unlike all their forerunners, who had surveyors with them, and who looked to permanent settlement in the country—the McAfees, Bullitt, Harrod, etc. Immigration proper was not possible till these three different classes of explorers had done their preparatory work. In the settlement of a new country the above-mentioned order of procedure usually obtains, and the men who are first in the order of time deserve especial credit, because their achievements render the subsequent efforts of other men possible. All three classes of the first explorers of Kentucky merit honorable mention; and yet the motives and aims of all were not equally high. (See Shaler's "Kentucky," pages 65 and 66, and Durrett's "Kentucky Centenary," page 28.) Love of strange adventures, fondness for roving in primeval forests where game is plenty, and a purely commercial, money-making aim are all admissible and proper motives in their place and measure, and yet they are not the very noblest of motives. Fearlessness amid the perils of untried conditions and a willingness to face death in the pursuit of one's aims are qualities all of us admire, quite apart from the governing purposes of the actors and the ultimate objects they had in view; but when the men under review are known to be of high moral character, with something better than purely sordid aims, and exhibit inflexible purpose and persistency in realizing their ideals, their courage and daring take on a new attraction, and they rise into the sphere of the heroic and

noble. The indisputable facts concerning the McAfee Company show that they fairly earned the right to be thus regarded by posterity. The records show that they were not mere adventurers and speculators, nor Indian fighters, intent on exterminating savages; nor mere hunters passionately devoted to the chase; nor employed at a stipulated price to survey lands for other people; nor merely eager to make money. It is made clear that they were men of Christian training and high moral character, who feared God, who had families to whom they were devoted, who had already acquired some property but were hampered by the peculiar economic conditions of the country in which they had lived, who were moved by a desire to make a better home for themselves and their loved ones than it was possible for them to have in Virginia, and who had enough of prophetic vision to discern the fact that the charming wilderness beyond their blue mountains had a glorious future, of whose rewards they coveted an honorable share.

But there are some additional considerations to be kept in mind if full justice is to be done the members of this company. For one thing, as to the matter of mere courage they exhibited a readiness to face deadly perils in a manner some of their most honored predecessors were not called on to do. Dr. Walker does not seem to have had any special reason to fear Indian attacks, as the tribes he was likely to encounter were at peace with the whites. The grave troubles which issued in the French and Indian Wars had not come to a head when Walker and Gist set out on their respective expeditions. (See Colonel Johnston's "Walker and Gist," page 53, and Note 3 at bottom.) It was quite otherwise when the McAfees started to Kentucky. There had then been long years of bloody encounters between the two races, and only five years prior to this date one of their brothers (John McAfee) had been slain by the Indians. Besides, the story of Boone's recent adventures with the savages in Kentucky was fresh in mind. All the men who went to Kentucky in 1773 went knowing full well the danger of meeting at any time roving bands of Indians who would be eager to take their scalps. Troubles were then brewing which culminated the very next year in the bloodiest battle ever fought on Virginia soil between Whites and Indians—that at Point Pleasant, in October, 1774, in which conflict all three of the McAfees of this company bore a worthy part.

There is something worth noting also in the fact that the McAfees did not skim along the outer edges of the region known as Kentucky, nor seek to walk only in the tracks of previous explorers. They went to Kentucky with the full purpose of penetrating to the very heart of that region, and they entered lands where no surveys had ever been made before. Walker and Gist confined themselves to the border portions, and the easterly and least important end of the State, but the McAfees made their main surveys in the geographical centre of Kentucky, and followed the Kentucky River step by step from its mouth almost to its very head springs for more than three hundred miles, so that the marvel is the Legislature of the State did not call that picturesque stream by their name. (See Johnston's "Walker and Gist," page 6.) Dr. Walker did not even see one square mile of bluegrass lands.

But, after all, the most notable feature of their achievements was the fact that they not only went far into the choicest interior section to locate, but actually settled a community which they never relinquished for a day, and which for one hundred and thirty-one years, without a break, has been continuously held by them or their lineal descendants. The little village which bears their name is indeed but a small place, but it stands there as a landmark to show that the McAfee settlement meant a permanent settlement and not a mere land speculation; and there on the brow of Salt River still stands the stone house which James McAfee erected in 1790, marking the very spot on which once stood the station or pioneer fort which for many years was the rallying point for the McAfee settlement. And right over on the hill, not a thousand yards away, stand some neat grave-stones which for more than ninety years agone have marked the last rest-

ing place of the leader of the McAfee Company. It is this fixedness of purpose, this staying quality, this permanency, which gives the work of the McAfees a character which does not belong to that of some who suddenly appeared in the wilderness, and as suddenly left it, no more to be seen or heard of there. And if from that stone house we look across the fields which the McAfees began to cultivate before the land had ceased to belong to England, we shall see a substantial brick church, the fourth of a series of sanctuaries used by a congregation which was founded soon after the McAfees settled there, showing that the permanence of their choice was linked with godliness and a careful regard to the intellectual and religious welfare of the community.

Of course, it is not meant that these men were continuously present as occupants of the farms surveyed from July, 1773, and onward. The actual, permanent occupation by the McAfee families did not begin till the fall of 1779, when they all arrived on their pack-horses after a long and perilous journey from Virginia by way of Cumberland Gap. But the land was regularly looked after from time to time after July, 1773; it was annually visited by some member of the family; fruits were planted; cattle were driven in from Virginia; land was cleared, and everything was done that was possible to be done under the trying circumstances of the situation. Never, for one hour, was their hold on those lands relaxed; not for one day did they relinquish their purpose to make the settlement they founded on Salt River their lasting earthly home; and just as soon as the exigencies of war would admit of it they took leave of Virginia, and journeyed to their new home west of the mountains, there to toil and abide till God should call them to a place in the "house not made with hands."

These incontrovertible facts, it would seem, warrant us in holding that the McAfees were among the very noblest and first of the real founders of Kentucky, and as such merit honorable mention in every history that professes to tell, with any fullness and truth, the story of Kentucky's genesis.

NOTES ON PART SECOND.

THE McAFEE FAMILY.

1—The information given in this narrative has been derived almost entirely from the following works, to wit: (a) "The Scottish Clans and Their Tartans," issued by Johnston of Edinburgh and London, Sixth Edition, and republished in New York by Scribner's Sons. This valuable little volume gives the history and the beautifully colored Tartans of nearly one hundred Highland Clans, the McAfee Clan being numbered 50. The descendants of the McAfees should all have this book, though they will probably be amazed at the wretched character of the binding. It costs but one dollar. (b) "Highland Clans and Highland Regiments," by John S. Keltie, London, 1882, Volume 3, page 165; (c) Ian's "Costumes of the Clans," Vol. 2; (d) The Autobiography of General R. B. McAfee, in MS. (e) Map of Highland Clans at page 498, Vol. 21, British Encyclopedia, Ninth Edinburg Edition.

2—General R. B. McAfee, in his Autobiography, tells us that John McAfee, the earliest known head of the American McAfees treated of herein, settled near Glasgow, and then later on migrated to County Armagh, Ireland; and that in 1690—only forty-five years after the death of Malcolm, the chieftain of the McAfee Clan—he and his son, John, Jr., were with King William at the Battle of the Boyne. The two narratives fit well together.

3—It is not altogether an insignificant fact that in the year 1739, when James McAfee, Sr., had a son born to him, he chose for him this name Malcolm. Whilst we have no right to assert that this choice of a name was made by James in honor of the hero, his kinsman (and possibly his ancestor), who sleeps in Iona's sacred soil, we can but surmise that such was probably the case.

4—The authorities on which all the historians have had to rely for their facts in regard to this company are the following: 1, the daily journal kept by James McAfee, Jr., on the tour of 1773; 2, the daily journal kept by Robert McAfee on the said tour; 3, a manuscript volume, written in 1840, by General R. B. McAfee, entitled "The Rise and Progress of the First Settlement on Salt River"; and 4, a second manuscript volume by the same author written 1845-9 entitled "The Life and Times of Robert B. McAfee and His Family Connections." The two Journals are printed in full in the Appendix, with copious notes by the editor. The two documents by General R. B. McAfee, who was a son of Robert, the pioneer, and, of course, a nephew of James McAfee, Jr., contain, in addition to a great deal of other information about the family, a sort of running commentary on the matter of the two journals, enriched with many valuable items derived by him from the lips of his uncle James McAfee in 1804. Then the editor of this work has, during the last ten years, been engaged in somewhat extensive researches which have borne considerable fruit, the results of which are embodied in the narrative now presented. Numerous individuals living along the route travelled by the McAfee Company have been called upon for information; the editor has personally visited some of the most important localities in question, and has been enabled to solve some puzzling problems of the tour; and, finally, a series of maps has been drawn and engraved expressly for this work, embodying the most of the results bearing upon the geography and topography of the regions traversed by the company in 1773. The maps can be relied upon as accurate.

5—Dr. Hale—"Allegheny Pioneers," pages 34, 36 and 102—shows that the Indians who invaded the Draper's Meadows Settlement in 1755 followed an old trail which was probably the same as that the

McAfees travelled on their way to the lower Kanawha.

6—For an interesting account of this place and of some of the more important expeditions which set out from thence, see Dr. Hale's "Trans-Alleghany Pioneers," pages 101-3. He says this was the point of departure of this company.

7—General R. B. McAfee in his "Rise and Progress of the First Settlement of Salt River" states that the point on the Kanawha to which the McAfees came on horseback, and at which they embarked on the river in canoes, was four miles above the mouth of Elk River. This river enters the Kanawha at Charleston. The famous Salt Spring at the mouth of Campbell's Creek is beyond question the place intended. Here salt for the journey could easily be made, and here canoes could be built with the assurance that in their course down to the Ohio no dangerous falls or rapids would be encountered. In his Autobiography the General states that the party built their canoes at a point one hundred and twenty miles above the mouth of the Kanawha. This is clearly an error, for that would locate the embarkation on the river at a point sixty miles above the Salt Springs, and Dr. Hale, who was reared on that river, and knew every mile of it, wrote the author of this volume that it would have simply been impossible to carry loaded canoes over the many dangerous rapids in that part of the Kanawha. The Salt Spring, sixty miles from the Ohio by the river, was the place at which the party sent back their horses and constructed their boats.

8—From this point onward the journals of James and Robert McAfee afford all needful information as to most of the details of the journey, to which documents, and the notes of the editor thereon, the reader is referred.

9—See Collins' "Kentucky," Vol. 2, page 117; Shaler's "Kentucky," pages 65 and 66; Colonel Durrett's "Centenary of Kentucky," page 30; and Foote's Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, page 160.

10—The party spent some days at this lick which has been famous for more than a century. It bears the name of the man Drennon, one of Hancock Taylor's assistants, who with Bracken had preceded the party to this place in a way displeasing to their companions. While here thousands of wild animals were observed licking the salt mud around the various salt springs—buffaloes, elk, deer, bears, etc. For an interesting account of the place, and of a thrilling incident in which James McAfee and Samuel Adams were the participants, see General McAfee's Autobiography.

11—Collins' "Kentucky," Vol. 2, pages 517-18.

12—Foote's Sketches of Virginia, Second Series, pages 159-168.

13—General McAfee's Autobiography, year 1774; and Dr. Hale's "Trans-Alleghany Pioneers," page 182.

14—Humphrey Marshall's History of Kentucky, Vol. 1, page 27; and General McAfee's Autobiography, year 1774; and also his "Rise and Progress of the First Settlement on Salt River," under year 1774.

15—Collins' "Kentucky," Vol. 2, page 519; General McAfee, for the year 1775; and Marshall, Vol. 1, page 27.

16—See the map of South-Western Virginia, and South-Eastern Kentucky, showing this route, and the two gaps only fifteen miles apart.

17—See General McAfee, under year 1775; and the various larger Kentucky histories, which mention this trip in some detail.

18—For a full account of the Henderson Company and their proceedings in Kentucky, see Collins, Vol. 2, pages 496-514.

19—See General McAfee's Autobiography, years 1776-77-78.

20—Dr. Hale (page 267) says this was the first wagon road ever constructed across to the Greenbriar. Mr. George Alderson, who is a grandson of the Rev. John Alderson (not Joseph, as Dr. Hale has it) who opened this road, resides now at the town of Alderson, West Virginia, named for his family, and he informed the editor that the road began on Catawba Creek, ran across John's Creek and Potts Creek, to Old Sweet Springs, to Picka-

way Plains, in between Flat Top Mountain and Swoopes Knob on to Alderson, West Virginia, on the Greenbriar River. This road was seventy to seventy-five miles long, and it must have been exceedingly rough, and at some points in getting over the mountains as steep as a wagon road could well be. Not less than four or five days would be required in making the journey with heavily laden pack-horses or wagons.

21—See General McAfee's Autobiography for the years 1776, etc., which goes more fully into the details than the limits of this volume will admit of our doing.

22—Ramsey's "Annals of Tennessee," pages 152 and 165.

23—It may occur to some who read these pages that this chapter is a needless repetition of the narratives contained in the journals of James and Robert McAfee to be found in the Appendix. The author's apology is found in two facts, to wit: First, that the chapter contains a good many items which needed to be presented, but which could not properly appear in the notes on those journals, as the reader will discover on carefully comparing the matter in this chapter with the journals and the notes thereon; secondly, the journals, with the notes, are not adapted to the purposes of a continuous and readable narrative, being suited rather to separate study.

24—The grave of the venerable mother of the McAfee pioneers has, with filial care, been exactly identified and pointed out by her grandson, General R. B. McAfee, and it will be found duly indicated on the map of Mercer County, contained in this volume. If the editor may be pardoned the suggestion, he would express the opinion that the descendants of this lady can not afford to allow her grave to go unmarked and neglected—it deserves a neat monument, securely enclosed with an iron railing, which shall tell to those yet unborn where lies the body of the mother of five of the bravest and noblest of the men who helped to found the Commonwealth of Kentucky. (See General McAfee's Autobiography under year 1779.)

25—There is a multitude of details relating to the life of this colony on Salt River given by General McAfee in his Autobiography which it would be interesting to have transferred to these pages. This, however, would consume more space than is at our command in this volume, and the reader is therefore asked to consult that manuscript work, which can be found in a good many libraries.

26—For somewhat elaborate accounts of the New Providence Church, see Dr. Cleland's Life; General McAfee's "Rise and Progress of the Salt River Settlement," etc., and Davidson's "History of Presbyterian Church," pages 71-73.

PART THIRD.

THE PATRONS OF THIS WORK.

REUBEN T. DURRETT, A. M., LL. D.

PRESIDENT OF THE FILSON CLUB. AUTHOR OF INTRODUCTION TO THIS VOLUME.

WOODS-McAFEE MEMORIAL.

PART THIRD.

GROUP ONE—PATRONS NOT DESCENDED FROM EITHER WOODSES OR McAFEES.

Ninety-three persons are listed below as patrons of this work, and all but six of them are lineal descendants of either John Woods of Ireland or of John McAfee of Scotland, or of both. For convenience these patrons are distributed into four separate groups. First, there are six individuals, who, though not descended from either the Woodses or the McAfees, have rendered the editor valuable assistance, in one way or another, in furthering this publication. It was at his request that these gentlemen kindly furnished him with materials for the sketches of themselves which will be found herein. They deserve the thanks of all the other patrons for their kind encouragement. Five of these gentlemen have made the history of the Virginias and Kentucky a matter of careful study, and there are probably no equal number of persons living who know as much about the genesis of Kentucky as they. They are all gentlemen of antiquarian tastes, and have all published valuable historical works bearing on the earlier days of Kentucky. The editor is happy to be able to present in this volume a sketch and portrait of each of them, especially as he ventures to believe that at least a portion of the matter contained herein is of the kind in which they take special interest.

The second group, containing twenty-seven names, is composed of lineal descendants of John McAfee of Scotland. The third consists of lineal descendants of John Woods, of Ireland, and numbers forty-seven individuals. The fourth group, having thirteen members, is made up of persons who claim both the Woodses and McAfees as their ancestors. The number of people now living in America who are closely related, by blood or marriage, to one or more of the patrons of this work and their forbears probably includes thousands of individuals.

SKETCH 1.

REUBEN THOMAS DURRETT, A. M., LL. D., LOUISVILLE, KY.

Reuben Thomas Durrett, son of William and Elizabeth (*nee* Rawlings) Durrett, was born in Henry County, Kentucky, January 22, 1824. After enjoying such educational advantages as the schools of his native county afforded, he went to Georgetown College, at Georgetown, Kentucky, in 1841, and remained there until 1846. He then went to Brown University, in Providence, R. I., where he graduated with the degree of A. B., in 1849. The same year he entered the law department of the University of Louisville where, by superior application, he combined the courses of study for two years into one and was graduated with the degree of LL. B., in 1850. In 1853 the degree of A. M. was conferred upon him by Brown University for continued advancement in learning, and since then he has received from each of the three colleges he attended—Brown University, Georgetown College and the University of Louisville, the degree of LL. D., which was the highest honor they could confer upon him.

Immediately after leaving the law school, Mr. Durrett began the practice of law in Louisville, and was one of the most finished scholars of his age who ever appeared at the Louisville bar. His knowledge of different languages, Greek, Latin, French, Italian, Spanish and German, and his rare gifts as both a speaker and a writer contributed largely to his success at the bar. After continuing

at the practice for thirty years he was able to retire in 1880 upon the competency he had earned. A number of his speeches to juries, and arguments to courts, were deemed worthy of publication, and appeared in the newspapers at the time they were made. His speech in defense of Heitz for the murder of Lobstein, published in the *Courier-Journal* of January 29, 1871, and his argument in behalf of that paper in defense of the libel suit of Hull, March 30, 1872, are specimens of learning, style and eloquence which have seldom been surpassed in the Louisville Court House. His fame as an orator, however, will more permanently rest upon his orations prepared for public occasions. When he was graduated from the law school in 1850 he delivered the valedictory, and it was so much admired that it was published and highly praised in the newspapers. His Fourth of July oration at the invitation of the City Council of Louisville in 1852, his address before the Mechanics' Institute of Louisville in 1856, his Centennial orations for Louisville in 1880 when the city was an hundred years old, and for Kentucky in 1892, when the Commonwealth had reached the same venerable age, and his address to the Alumni of Georgetown College in 1894, all of which were published at the dates of delivery, were so replete with learning and so beautifully written that they can not fail to occupy a permanent place in our literature.

In his earlier years, Mr. Durrett yielded to an imagination which demanded the expression of thoughts in verse, and had he not acquired distinction in other lines he might have been widely known as a poet. In poetry he was exceedingly versatile and passed from the humorous to the grave with marked facility. His serious humor, however, predominated, and his best productions may be considered in this vein. His "Night Scene at Drennon's Springs" in 1850, his "Thoughts Over the Grave of the Rev. Thomas Smith," in 1852, and his "Old Year and New in the Colliseum at Rome," in 1856, each of which was published when written, are fine specimens of classic thought expressed in blank verse and entitle him to high rank among Western poets.

It is as a prose writer, however, that Mr. Durrett will be most favorably and most enduringly known. So soon as he left college he began writing for the newspapers and periodicals. Most of his articles, however, appeared in print as editorials or over anonymous signatures, so that he got no credit for them except among a few intimate friends. From 1857 to 1859 he was the editor-in-chief of the Louisville *Courier*, and his leaders, always distinguished for their broad range of knowledge and vigor of style, made him an enviable reputation as a journalist. After retiring from the bar in 1880 he devoted much of his leisure to historic studies, for which he always had an inclination. His articles in the *Southern Bivouac* for March, April and May, in 1886, on the Kentucky Resolutions of 1798-99, may serve as specimens of his writings in this line. He corrected the errors which had prevailed for three-quarters of a century concerning these celebrated resolutions, and placed the authors and the resolutions themselves in their true position in history. His numerous historic articles published in the *Courier-Journal* since 1880 have been widely read and much admired for their original research and the new color with which they invested important events and subjects. In the annual reports of the American Historical Association for 1891 and 1892, several pages are occupied with a list of his historical writings.

In 1884 a few of his associates of similar tastes joined Mr. Durrett in establishing an association in Louisville for co-operative effort in collecting and preserving and publishing historic matter relating to Kentucky. This association was named "The Filson Club," in honor of John Filson, the first historian of Kentucky, and Mr. Durrett, who was made its president, prepared and read the first paper before it. This paper was entitled "The Life and Times of John Filson," which was published as No. 1 of the series of club publications. It is a quarto of 132 pages, so full of original matter and so beautifully written that it at

once gave the club a prominent stand among kindred associations. Mr. Durrett is also the author of No. 5 of the club publications, entitled "An Historical Sketch of St. Paul's Church, Louisville, Kentucky;" of No. 7 entitled the "Centenary of Kentucky;" of No. 8 entitled "The Centenary of Louisville," and of No. 12 entitled "Bryant's Station." The characteristic of Mr. Durrett's historical writings is original research, and he invests his new matter with such charms of style that it is always a pleasure to read what he has written.

In his literary studies Mr. Durrett has always bought the books he needed, and in thus purchasing from year to year he has accumulated a large and valuable library. The volumes and pamphlets and papers and manuscripts upon his shelves number more than 50,000, and he is adding to them every year. His collection embraces works in almost every branch of human knowledge, but is particularly rich in history, and especially American history. He has the principal histories of every State, as well as those of the United States at large and of the North American Continent. In Kentucky histories and Kentucky books his collection surpasses those of all others combined. He has made it an object to secure every book about Kentucky or Kentuckians or that had been written by a Kentuckian or even printed in Kentucky. He has thus covered the whole field of Kentucky bibliography, and the other libraries of the world contain nothing to compare with his collection. He is so familiar with his books that he can promptly lay his hands on any one of his fifty thousand volumes without the aid of a catalogue; but, better than this, he is as familiar with the contents of his books as he is with their location upon the shelves.

In recognition of his varied attainments, Mr. Durrett has been made a member of numerous historic, scientific and learned societies in this country and in Europe. Unlike most men distinguished for learning he has a clear business head and sound judgment, which have weight among men of affairs. As president, vice-president, director, trustee, commissioner, etc., he is connected with various corporations in Louisville, and is noted for giving as unremitting attention to those of a charitable as to those of a business character. He is a man of broad benevolence, and contributes liberally to all the charities which he deems worthy.

In 1852 Mr. Durrett was married to Miss Elizabeth H. Bates, the only daughter of Caleb and Elizabeth (*nee* Humphreys) Bates, of Cincinnati, Ohio. Mrs. Durrett was a lady of rare intellectual attainments, and, like her husband, had literary tastes of a controlling nature. There were but few good books in the accessible range of literature which had not contributed to her knowledge, and Mr. Durrett owes much of his varied learning and culture to the companionship of his gifted wife. She bore him four children, three of whom preceded her to the grave, and one of whom, Lily Bates Durrett, who died at the dawn of young womanhood, had written a series of letters from Europe and from Florida, which were published in the *Courier-Journal* in the winter and spring of 1880, and which gave abundant proof that she had inherited her father's gifts as a writer. The only survivor of their children is Dr. William T. Durrett, of Louisville, Kentucky.

The Durretts are of French origin, and the family traditions date back to Louis Duret, an eminent French physician and author, who flourished about the middle of the sixteenth century. He was the author of several learned books and especially of a commentary in Greek, Latin and French, upon the works of Hippocrates, which was first published in Paris in 1588. It is a venerable folio bound in thick boards covered with vellum, and now in possession of the subject of this sketch. Mr. Durrett has also other venerable volumes of which different members of the family were the authors, and which are quaint specimens of the art of printing and binding in early times. Among these may be mentioned "A Commentary on the Customs of the Dutch," by Jean Duret, a folio published at Lyons in 1584; "A Treatise on the Causes and Effects of Tides," by Claude Duret, an octavo published at Paris in 1600; "A History of the Languages of the

East," by Claude Duret, a quarto published at Cologne in 1613. After the Massacre of St. Bartholomew some of the Durets crossed the British Channel and settled in England. In 1644, Christopher Duret was prominently connected with the Baptists in London, and his name appears subscribed to the Articles of Faith put forth that year. In England the French pronunciation was dropped, and the name pronounced Duret, as it was spelled, instead of Duray, as the French had it. In the course of time this English pronunciation was emphasized by doubling the "r" and "t" which produced the name "Durrett," as we now have it. Early in the eighteenth century three brothers, John, Richard and Bartholomew Durrett, came from England to Spottsylvania County, Virginia, where they purchased lands and permanently settled. From these Virginian ancestors the Durretts in the United States have descended. Francis Durrett, the grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was with General George Rogers Clark in the Illinois campaign of 1778-9, but returned to Virginia instead of settling at once as others did in the new country. Early in the present century, however, he moved to Kentucky, and settled upon land which he purchased in Henry County. Here William, the oldest son of Francis and the father of Mr. Durrett, became a wealthy farmer and erected upon his plantation the first brick house that was built in Henry County. That house stands to-day as sound as it was when erected, a century ago.

Mr. Durrett is a well-preserved man of health and vigor, who bids fair, with his regular and mild habits, to live through a generous number of the years of the future. He belongs to the school of old Virginia gentlemen, now so rare among us, and his hospitable home is ever open to those who wish to see him. His collection of books and antiquities has made him a kind of show in Louisville whither strangers as well as acquaintances resort with an assurance of seeing something worth seeing and learning something worth knowing. He is never more delighted than when in his great library with one or more persons in search of information from rare books and manuscripts. In this way most literary persons at home and many from abroad have been placed under obligations to him, and his constant regret is that he has not been able to do more good to others with his books. The introduction to this volume is from the pen of this distinguished writer.

SKETCH 2.

COLONEL J. STODDARD JOHNSTON, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Colonel J. Stoddard Johnston was the second son of Judge John Harris Johnston, a native of Mason County, Kentucky, and elder brother of General Albert Sidney Johnston, who removed at an early age to Louisiana, and died there in 1838. He was a lawyer and planter, speaker of the Louisiana House of Representatives in 1830 and Judge of the Parish of Rapides at the time of his death. He was a half-brother of Hon. Josiah S. Johnston, three times elected Senator from Louisiana, for whom the subject of this sketch was named. The mother of Colonel Johnston was Eliza Ellen Davidson, eldest daughter of Dr. Richard Davidson, a Virginian, of New Orleans, La. Her mother was the daughter of John Pintard, a noted citizen of New York, whose ancestors emigrated from France to America in 1786 after the revocation of the edict of Nantes. He was the founder of Tammany, originally an Historical Society, in 1790, and its first Sagamore; Editor of the *Public Advertiser* in 1802; founder of the New York Historical Society in 1804; a promoter of the first Savings Bank and its president; and one of the founders of the American Bible Society. He was a vestryman of the French Church of St. Esprit, New York, and translated into French the Book of Common Prayer still in use. He died August, 1845. Among Colonel Johnston's other ancestors was Colonel Abram Brasher, a member of the first, second and third Provincial Congresses of New York; a Revolutionary officer, and a member of the Committee of One Hundred, when Washington occupied New York.

Col. Johnston was born in New Orleans, La., at

the house of his grandfather Davidson, February 10, 1833. On the death of his mother in 1837 his father intrusted his three little sons to the care of their mother's sister, Mrs. Mary Davidson Hancock, wife of Colonel George Hancock, of Jefferson County, Kentucky. The eldest son, John Pintard Johnston, died of cholera in 1849. The youngest brother, Harris Hancock Johnston, who was an infant a few months old when his mother died, became the adopted son of Colonel and Mrs. Hancock, was educated at the University, and served with distinction through the Civil War in the Confederate Army on the staff of General William Preston, and as Captain of Cavalry. For the greater part of his life he was engaged in farming until his death in 1877. Colonel Johnston was a pupil of Samuel V. Womack, of Shelbyville, Ky., a noted teacher of classics, and afterwards a cadet in the Western Military Institute at Georgetown, Ky., when James G. Blaine was a professor there. In 1850 he entered the sophomore class at Yale College, where he was graduated in 1853. He studied law at the law school of the University of Louisville, and took his diploma in 1854, with no immediate intention of engaging in the practice, but to complete his education and as a future resource in case of necessity. In the same year, June 13, 1854, he married Eliza Woolfolk Johnson, daughter of George W. Johnson, of Scott County, Kentucky. In the succeeding year he became a cotton planter near Helena, Arkansas, where he lived four years. In 1859 he sold his interests in Arkansas and bought a farm in Scott County, Kentucky, where he was living when the Civil War broke out. At that time he was tendered the nomination for the Legislature, but declined it in view of his purpose to enter the Confederate service. Circumstances, however, prevented his carrying out his purpose until the first raid of General John H. Morgan into Kentucky in July, 1862, when after his retreat he made his way through the Federal lines and was thereafter in active service in the field in the Adjutant General's department continuously until the close of the war. He served on the staff of General Bragg with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel through the Kentucky campaign, taking part in the battles of Perryville, Murfreesboro and other lesser engagements. In June, 1863, he became a member of General S. B. Buckner's staff, serving with him in the campaign in East Tennessee and in the battle of Chickamauga. General Buckner having been transferred to the Trans-Mississippi, he then became Chief-of-Staff to General John C. Breckinridge, who was shortly afterwards, in January, 1864, assigned to the command of the Department of South-western Virginia. The campaign of that year was an arduous one, embracing the battles of New Market, Second Cold Harbor, Monocacy, Maryland, Winchester and many others of less note, including the invasion of Maryland under General Early and occupation of the territory up to the fortifications of Washington in full view of the Capitol. He continued with General Breckinridge until that officer was appointed Secretary of War, six weeks before the surrender at Appomattox and served on the staff of his successor, General John Echols, until the surrender of General Joseph E. Johnston, when he was paroled at his headquarters May 1, 1865.

After the war, by which he lost his entire estate, Colonel Johnston went to Helena, Arkansas, and entered upon the practice of law, meeting with immediate success, but in the fall of 1867, owing to an impediment in his hearing he returned to Kentucky, and became the editor of the *Frankfort Yeoman*, the official organ of the Democratic party of the State. In 1869 he assisted in organizing the Kentucky Press Association, and was its president from 1870 to 1886 by annual election. He was Adjutant General of Kentucky in 1871, and Secretary of State from 1875 to 1879. In 1867 he became secretary of the Democratic State Central Committee, and was secretary or chairman for the greater part of eighteen years, effecting a thorough organization of the party and maintaining its ascendancy. In 1886 he retired from the *Yeoman*, in which he had become a partner, and in 1889

abandoned political life and removed to Louisville, which has since been his place of residence.

In addition to his editorial and political activity Colonel Johnston has found time to render service in other fields. He has always taken great interest in the matter of education and common schools, having been for four years a member of the State Board of Education, and delivered frequent public addresses, besides advocating the most liberal policy as an editor. He has also rendered valuable service in the development of the natural resources of Kentucky, having been largely instrumental in the establishment of the Geological Survey of Kentucky, and having made himself, for the purpose of keeping up with its work under Professor Shaler, and his intimate friend, the late Professor John R. Proctor, its directors, one of the best practical geologists in the State. In the flora of Kentucky he is equally proficient, as also in arboriculture, in which he has always taken a lively interest.

Of late years Colonel Johnston has devoted himself chiefly to literary work and authorship. In 1896 he compiled a valuable history of Louisville in two large quarto volumes, which is recognized as authority upon everything pertaining to the city's past, and includes much valuable information incidentally relating to the State of Kentucky. As a member of the Filson Club, of which he has been vice-president ten or twelve years, he has made valuable researches into the early history of Kentucky, upon which he has read many papers before that body. He is also the author of a valuable volume of the Filson Publications, entitled "First Explorations of Kentucky," in which he first defined the routes of Dr. Thomas Walker in his tour through the State in 1750, and of Colonel Christopher Gist in 1751, with their complete diaries accompanied with valuable explanatory notes. It was published in 1898. In the same year he wrote the Confederthe Filson Publications, entitled "First Explorations Volume IX of the Confederate Military History, published in Atlanta, Ga., under the auspices of the Confederate Veteran Union, in twelve large octavo volumes.

Two years ago Colonel Johnston had the misfortune to be bereaved of his wife, with whom he had led a happy life exceeding forty-seven years. He continues to make Louisville his home, although his children, of whom he has four, reside without the State. His eldest son, George W. Johnston, and his youngest, named for his father, live in New York City; his daughter, Mrs. William B. Wisdom, in New Orleans, and his second son, Harris H. Johnston, in St. Louis. They are all married.

SKETCH 3.

COL. BENNETT H. YOUNG, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Bennett Henderson Young, son of Robert Young and Josephine Henderson, was born in Jessamine County, Kentucky, May 25, 1843. He was educated at Bethel Academy, Nicholasville, and at Center College, Danville, Ky. He also took honors at the University of Ireland, Belfast.

In the summer of 1862, with his education half finished, when the great War of the Rebellion was breaking on the country, he cast his fortunes with the South, and enlisted with John H. Morgan's Cavalry. In General Morgan's great raid through Indiana and Ohio in 1863, he was captured on the 26th of July, and was confined with a large number of his comrades, first in the Columbus penitentiary and afterwards in the Military Prison at Camp Chase, Columbus, Ohio. He was afterwards removed to Camp Douglas, at Chicago. He escaped from Camp Douglas, December 15, 1863, and made his way to Halifax, Nova Scotia. He obtained passage thence to the West Indies, and succeeded in running the blockade into Wilmington, North Carolina. At Richmond, Virginia, on the 16th of June, 1864, he was given a commission by the Confederate Government, and sent abroad on secret service. In August, 1864, he was sent on a secret mission to release the prisoners at Camp Chase. Returning to Canada, he was commissioned to lead the St. Albans raid, now famous in history, which he successfully conducted on the 19th of October, 1864. This raid led to international complications with Great Britain. The United States

Government sought to obtain possession of his person by extradition proceedings, which ended in the release of Colonel Young, and his comrades, on the ground that Colonel Young had commanded the St. Albans raid in obedience to military orders from the Confederate Government. So bitter was the sentiment against Colonel Young that amnesty was refused him until late in 1868. When he returned from his four years' exile in Europe, during which time he had completed his education, as before stated, he came to Louisville, and entered upon a successful career as a lawyer.

In 1880, he and his law partner, St. John Boyle, revived public interest in the construction of the Louisville and St. Louis Air Line Railway, which they completed.

Colonel Young, immediately after this enterprise had been placed upon a thoroughly sound financial basis, and the work of construction being well advanced, undertook to reorganize and extend the old Louisville, New Albany, and Chicago Railway, which was then practically abandoned. With others he rehabilitated the road and completed it to Chicago. During the year of 1883, Colonel Young was president of the new road, which took the name of the Monon Route to Chicago, and now known as the Monon Road. He next set about the organization of a company to bridge the Ohio River. The Kentucky and Indiana bridge, one of the finest structures of the kind in the country, is the result of that enterprise.

In 1888 he undertook the construction of the Louisville Southern Railroad between Louisville and Lexington. At Tyrone, some confusion resulted from a misunderstanding with the bidders for the contract to construct a bridge across the Kentucky River. As it was important the road should be finished by a specified time, the failure to have the contract properly executed for the building of this bridge seriously threatened the success of the enterprise, when Colonel Young, with the aid of his chief engineer, Mr. John McLeod, undertook the work, and successfully completed the bridge in ample time to comply with the contracts made with the subscribers to the capital stock of the road. During the first year of the operation of the Southern Road, Colonel Young was its president, and succeeded in securing recognition for it as the great connecting link between the Northern and Southern systems of railway, and affording Chicago direct communication with Jacksonville, by way of the East Tennessee & Virginia, the Georgia Central and the Plant System.

In 1875 he founded Bellewood Seminary, for the education of young ladies. He was one of the original promoters and incorporators of the Central University of Kentucky, to the endowment fund of which he contributed liberally, and served more than twenty-five years as one of its trustees. He was one of the founders and original incorporators of the Louisville Presbyterian Seminary, and has been from the beginning, and is now, one of its trustees. His devotion to the cause of Presbyterianism has been enthusiastic. He was one of the originators of the Evangelistic work of the Southern Presbyterian Church. For years, he and Mr. Richard S. Veech gave about $5,000 annually to set in motion the forces which enabled the Southern Presbyterian Church to double its membership in Kentucky in eighteen years, beginning in 1881.

In 1878, when the Legislature passed an enabling act, for the purpose of allowing the Polytechnic Society of Kentucky to take charge of and manage the public library of Kentucky, located in Louisville, Colonel Young was one of the leading members of the Society, and took an active interest in the new and responsible duties it assumed.

The Society chose the late Rev. Stuart Robinson as its president, reorganized the Society, elected Colonel Young and five other associates, members of the Executive Committee. Soon afterwards, on the death of Dr. Robinson, Colonel Young became president, and has held that office from 1881 to the present time.

In 1890, Colonel Young was elected a delegate to the Constitutional Convention, from the Fifth District of Louisville. About that time he published a history of the Constitutions of Kentucky, contain-

ing copies of the Constitutions of 1798 and 1851. In the Convention he took a more active part than any other member. He is the author of those provisions embraced in Sections 213, 214, 215 and 216, which prevent discrimination of the railroad companies against each other, in the transmission and delivery of freights. One of the highest judicial authorities declares these provisions of the Kentucky Constitution to be the wisest and most carefully constructed provisions of that document.

In 1900 he was elected president of the Kentucky Institution for the Education of the Blind, an office he still holds. He was the principal promotor of the establishment, in 1902, of the Kentucky Institution for Indigent Confederate Soldiers, known as the Kentucky Confederate Home; which, by act of the Kentucky Legislature, is one of the important eleemosynary institutions of the State. He is the president of its Board of Trustees, and has been since the time of its organization. For thirty-six years he has been Superintendent of the Sunday School of the Stuart Robinson Memorial Church. In 1902 the Kentucky Division of the United Confederate Veterans elected him Commander, with the rank of Major-General, and have continued to re-elect him annually. He has been conspicuous in the work of organizing the great Association of Confederate Veterans, for purposes of benevolence as well as social enjoyment.

During the time he was engaged in the building of railroads, and bridges, he devoted all his time and best efforts to this work; but, after fifteen years, he returned to his profession, and in less than a year's time he had taken a commanding position at the bar. To-day he is recognized as one of the most successful lawyers of the bar of Kentucky, and as a jury lawyer he has few, if any, equals, and no superiors in this country.

Colonel Young is often spoken of as Kentucky's most progressive and enterprising citizen. In all public enterprises for the advancement of the people's interests he is esteemed by his fellow-citizens as a leader.

Amid the busy and multifarious activities which have been successfully inaugurated and prosecuted by Colonel Young, he has found time to make many valuable contributions to the history of the State. His first important work is entitled "A History of Presbyterian Evangelistic Work in Kentucky." In 1890, he published "A History of the Constitutions of Kentucky." He is a leading member of the Filson Club, of Louisville. In 1900 he published "A History of the Battle of the Blue Licks." He is the author of "A History of Jessamine County," and "A History of the Battle of the Thames." In reviewing his contributions to history, the editor of the Kentucky Historical Register, calls him Kentucky's Macaulay. His style as an author is brilliant and attractive, at the same time methodical and analytical.

SKETCH 4.

THOMAS SPEED, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

(Deceased)

Thomas Speed was born near Bardstown, Kentucky, November 26, 1841. He was the son of Thomas S. Speed, and grandson of Major Thomas Speed, both of whom were residents of the place where the above Thomas Speed was born. His grandfather, Captain James Speed came to Kentucky from Virginia, 1782. He served in the Revolutionary War as captain in a Virginia regiment.

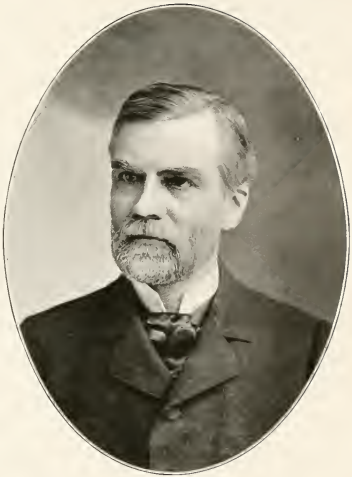
The above Thomas Speed was educated in the schools at Bardstown, and at Center and Hanover Colleges. During the war he served in the Union Army as Adjutant of the Twelfth Kentucky Volunteers.

After the war he studied law at the University of Michigan, and in the office of Hon. James Speed, of Louisville, Kentucky, whose partner he became, and he also practised law as the partner of John Speed.

In 1892 he was appointed clerk of the United States Court at Louisville, which office he held till his death.

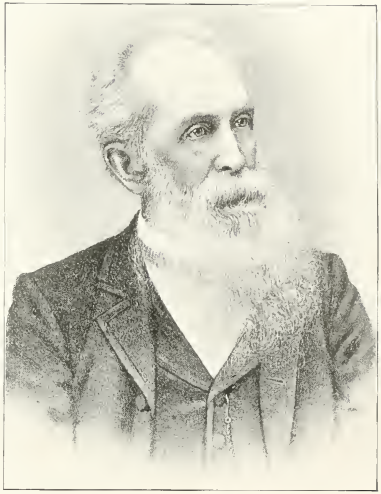
He has written and published several works, "The Wilderness Road," "The Political Club," "History of the Speed Family," "History of the

COL. J. STODDARD JOHNSTON.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 2.]



THOMAS SPEED.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 4.]

COL. BENNETT H. YOUNG.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 3



DR. JOHN P. HALE.
LATE OF CHARLESTON, W. VA
[See Sketch No. 5]

Union Regiments of Kentucky;" also pamphlets and addresses, among them an account of the Battle of Franklin, which is used in Larned's "History for Ready Reference."

Mr. Speed died in Louisville, January 30, 1905.

SKETCH 5.

DR. JOHN P. HALE, DECEASED, LATE OF CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Dr. John P. Hale was born May 1, 1824, at Ingles Ferry, Virginia, on New River. His maternal grand-parents were William Ingles and Mary Draper, who in 1748 founded the famous Draper's Meadows Settlement, now marked by the town of Blacksburg, Virginia. The massacre of the whites at that place in 1755, and the carrying away into captivity of his grandmother, Mrs. Ingles, by the Indians, and her almost miraculous escape and return to her home, are matters familiar to all who are at all acquainted with Virginia history. Dr. Hale, when yet a boy of sixteen, moved down into the Kanawha Valley, where he lived for sixty-two years, dying July 11, 1902. He studied medicine, and in 1845 he was graduated from the Medical Department of the University of Pennsylvania. He practised medicine only a short time, however, and engaged in the manufacture of salt near Charleston, W. Va., in 1847. In this business he was engaged for about forty years. The discovery in other parts of the United States of rich mines of almost pure rock-salt in inexhaustible quantities gradually destroyed this industry in the Kanawha Valley, and Dr. Hale was probably a heavy loser thereby. He later became interested in coal properties, but only in the latter years of his life did he realize much therefrom. He was a public-spirited man throughout his whole career, and the city of Charleston is largely indebted to him for its having been made the capital of West Virginia. He was for many years of his life a prolific contributor to magazines and newspapers, and became the author of a number of valuable publications, chief among which was his book on the pioneer history of the Virginias and Kentucky, entitled "The Trans-Allegheny Pioneers." Early in 1890 he took a leading part in organizing the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society, and was its first president. His fondness for antiquarian research was almost a passion with him; and it may be doubted whether there has ever lived a man who was more thoroughly informed than Dr. Hale was concerning the early history of the whole region adjacent to the Kanawha, Greenbrier and New Rivers, and their several tributaries. The place of his birth (Ingles Ferry) was only a few miles distant from Draper's Meadows (now Blacksburg), and there was never a locality in all that part of our country at which so many ancient trails and highways centered. The supply-store which stood there from 1750 onward was a famous rendezvous and point of departure for explorers, hunters and emigrants from Virginia and the Carolinas. Dr. Hale's boyhood was spent in that neighborhood; and his ancestors had made the original white settlement there, and had had some of the most bloody encounters with Indians that ever happened in the South during the eighteenth century. It was but natural, therefore, that a man of his turn of mind should pay special attention to the early history and traditions of that region. It was under his guidance, to a great degree, that the author of this volume drew the map to be found herein, entitled Map of the Parting of the Ways. Dr. Hale rendered the author of this volume most valuable service in the way of information on the pioneer history of Virginia. Dr. Hale was never married. His death occurred, as above stated, July 11, 1902, when a little past his seventy-eighth year.

SKETCH 6.

CHARLES M. DEDMAN, HARRODSBURG, KENTUCKY.

Charles Mortimer Dedman was the only child of Dr. Dickson Gooch Dedman by his second wife, Mrs. Mary Sea (*nee* McBrayer), and was born in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, May 22, 1849. His father was a native of Versailles, Kentucky, and

the son of Nathan Dedman by his wife Elizabeth (*nee* Gooch). A full account of the Dedmans and Gooches will be found in Sketch 93, and need not be repeated here.

Mr. Charles M. Dedman settled in Harrodsburg in 1868, and for many years has conducted in that place a drug store with marked success. In 1876 he was married to Miss Mollie B. Curry, daughter of the late W. T. Curry, of Harrodsburg. Three daughters and one son have been born to Mr. and Mrs. Dedman, to wit: Bessie G.; Mary Wallace; Nellie; and Thomas Curry. They have one of the most beautiful homes in Harrodsburg. A brief account of the Seas and McBrayers follows:

MARY McBRAYER was born on Salt River, in Franklin, now Anderson County, Kentucky, on March 30, 1811, and died in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, 26th of July, 1857. She was the daughter of Andrew McBrayer and Martha Blackwell. Her father was the son of William McBrayer, one of the earliest pioneers of Kentucky, and was born October 20, 1770, and died about 1838. He was for many years a member of the Kentucky Legislature, and was such, as is believed, at the time of his death. His wife, Martha Blackwell, was the daughter of Robert Blackwell, and was born March 22, 1789, and died April 20, 1861.

Mary McBrayer was twice married—first, to Robert W. Sea, on September 3, 1835; and second, to Dr. Dixon G. Dedman, on August 22, 1848.

Mr. Sea was the son of Leonard Sea, and was born on Salt River, in what is now Anderson County, Kentucky, April 15, 1810, and died in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, September 25, 1845, at the early age of thirty-five, having amassed a handsome fortune. He was also a member of the Kentucky Legislature, and a speech he made there is said to have been the indirect cause of his death. During the course of his speech, he became excited and overheated, and retired to an ante-room, and unfortunately got in a draft, which brought on "quick" consumption, and soon ended his life. He was in many respects a remarkable man, and possessed the respect and confidence of his fellow-citizens to such an extent that he was constantly called upon to settle disputes and controversies, and his decision ended the matter.

Of this first marriage, five children were born, only two of whom grew to manhood.

1—Captain Andrew M. Sea, born 1840, now living in Louisville, Ky. He was Second Lieutenant in Marshall's S. C. Battery in the Civil War, afterwards known as Morton's battery; was present at, and participated in, the battles of Shiloh, Resaca, Peach Tree Creek, Chickamauga, Columbia, Franklin and others. Was for some years Secretary of the Kentucky State Sunday School Union, and Grand Master of the Kentucky A. O. U. W. Has been an elder in the First Presbyterian Church of Louisville, Kentucky, since 1886. He married Miss Sophie I. Fox, of Danville, Kentucky, daughter of the late Judge Fontaine T. Fox and Eliza Jane Hunton.

2—Robert W. Sea, born 1844; married, 1864, Miss Amelia M. Grimes, daughter of Robert Grimes, of Harrodsburg. Mr. Sea at present lives in Chicago. His only son, Robert G. Sea, private in Company I, Twentieth Infantry, U. S. Regulars, was in the battle of Santiago, and came home only to die with typhoid fever at Ft. Leavenworth, Kansas, October, 1898.

Charles Mortimer Dedman was the only child of Dr. Dixon G. and Mary Sea Dedman, and was born in 1849. His father died on the 15th of May, 1850.

Mrs. Mary Sea Dedman had the following brothers and sisters who grew to manhood and womanhood.

1—Sanford McBrayer, born 1806, lost his life at the burning of the steamer "War Eagle" in the Mississippi River, May 15, 1870. He married his cousin, Elizabeth McBrayer, and their only daughter, Mattie, married Rev. J. V. Logan, D. D., of Central University, Danville, Kentucky. Mr. McBrayer was a merchant and banker, very wealthy, and one of the most hospitable of men.

2—Robert C., born 1809; died young, *sine prole*. He was very prominent in military matters, and held a high command in the K. S. G.

3—Jane, born 1813. She married a Rev. Mr. Sherman, but of her and her husband nothing is known.

4—Sarah, born 1815; married Tarlton Bailey; has been dead probably half a century.

5—Dr. John Allen, born 1817; he studied medicine with Dr. Dixon G. Dedman at Lawrenceburg; established himself at Mt. Eden, Kentucky, and in the spring of 1842, received the degree of M. D. from the Medical Institute of Louisville, and located at Harrodsburg; spent November of the year 1846 in Cuba to regain his fast failing health. In November, 1847, he left for Mexico; was appointed Assistant Surgeon in the United States Army there; served until March, 1848. Dr. McBrayer kept a journal while in Cuba and Mexico, which is considered valuable as an accurate description of the country and people half a century ago. In politics, he was a Jeffersonian Democrat, and in religion, a Presbyterian, with which church he became connected in 1840. In the May number (184-) of the *Western Journal of Medicine and Surgery*, is a description of a surgical operation performed by him upon wounded intestines, which for that date was a remarkable operation. Dr. McBrayer died March 23, 1850, of consumption, aged thirty-two, with the unmistakable promise of a bright and useful future before him.

6—J. Mortimer, born 1819; died young, *sine prole*.

7—William H., born 1821; died Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, December 6, 1888. He married (1) in 1848, Henrietta Daviess, who died 1851, and (2) in 1856, Mary Wallace (daughter of Dr. John Wallace), who still survives. His only child, Henrietta, married Colonel Dan L. Moore, and died in 1882, leaving three children. Judge McBrayer was for some years judge of the Anderson County Court, a member of the Kentucky Senate, and held many other offices of trust and honor. He was the maker of the celebrated "W. H. McBrayer Cedar Brook" whisky.

8—Katherine, born 1825; married Pendleton Garvey, of Cincinnati.

9—Francis, born 1827; married Dr. Will Dedman, a son of Dr. Dixon G. Dedman.

10—Martha A., born 1832. She never married, and died very young.

11—Elizabeth, born 1834; married John Curry, and died about eleven years ago.

Mr. Charles M. Dedman, though not descended from either the Woodses or McAfees, is connected with one family of the Woodses, in that Sarah Everett Dedman, who was his father's sister, became the wife of James Harvey Woods. He is therefore interested, more especially, in the accounts of the Dedmans and Gooches, given in this volume.

Mr. Dedman has long been a deacon of the First Presbyterian Church of Harrodsburg, and he ranks among the most honored citizens of his community.

GROUP TWO.

PATRONS DESCENDED FROM THE McAFEES—THE BUCHANANS.

SKETCHES 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12 AND 13 ARE COMBINED IN ONE.

It seems to be an easy thing for many persons in this day and generation, and has become quite the fashion, to construct for themselves a long line of descent from an ancestor who "came over with William the Conqueror." Such persons invariably begin "their line" there; but no attempt in that direction will be made by the writer. It is probably true that, at the time of the battle of Hastings, the ancestors of all the Buchanans in this country were existing somewhere in the Highlands of Scotland.

It is also, doubtless, true that the Buchanan name originated in Scotland—the first bearing the name being one Anselan O'Kane, who went to Scotland from Ireland, and took the estate and name Buchanan; and there is every reason to believe that all the Buchanans in this country are of Scotch ancestry, more or less remote. The name is one of the oldest in Scotland, and has been borne by many distinguished men there, and is found all over the United Kingdom. The principal street in Glasgow is *Buchanan Street*. (In Scotland the name is pronounced as if spelled "Bien-canon," with accent on second syllable.)

In a *History of the Ancient Surname of Buchanan, written by one William Buchanan, of Auchmar, printed for a Buchanan Bookseller above the Cross MDCC, XCIII Glasgow*, picked up by the writer in a book-stall in Edinburgh, it is related: "The name originated in Scotland, and was first borne by one Anselan O'Kyan, or O'Kane, who left Ireland in 1016, and twelfth year of King Malcolm II, his reign." The account further says: "He was a nobleman, and lived upon the northern coast of Argyleshire, near the Lennox." The Buchanan Crest and Coat-of-Arms is also pictured in this book. The book says: "The Arms assigned by the King to Anselan, on account of his heroick atchievements are: Or, a Lion Rampant Sable Armed and Langu'd Gules, with a double Treffune, flowered and counterflowered with Flower-de-luces of the 2d; Crest: A hand couped holding up a Ducal Cap (or Duke's Coronet proper), with two Laurel branches wreathed surrounding the Crest, disposed Orleways proper, Supported by two Falcons garnished Or; Ancient Motto above the Crest 'AUDACES JUVO.'" The claim is also made by some that George Buchanan, the distinguished Scottish Latin poet, scholar, soldier, and author, of the fifteenth century, was of the same family. He was a Scotch Presbyterian from the Highlands and wrote a number of works against the Monks and Friars; translated The Psalms into Latin verse, and also wrote a work entitled "De jure Regni Apud Scotos," inculcating the doctrine that governments exist for the sake of the governed, violently assailing the Scottish form of government, which work was gathered up and burned by order of the Scotch Parliament. The writer has met men of the name in many States of the Union, and elsewhere, and has marked that they all have certain characteristics in common. They are either Scotch or of Scottish origin; they are all, with rare exceptions, Presbyterians, at least by birth if not in church affiliation; and all have a Scotch stubbornness of character and tenacity of opinion; many have attained distinction in the various callings and professions of life. Commodore *Franklin Buchanan* was in command of the "Merrimac" during the Confederate war, the con-

struction and career of which revolutionized the navies of the world. One of the kinsmen, President Buchanan, reached the pinnacle of political preferment in this country. There are streets, towns and counties, mountain peaks, and streams, in several States of the Union, bearing the name *Buchanan;* all of which is evidence that some one bearing the name left his impress upon the community in which he lived. The writer would not force kinship with all the Buchanans in this country, but expresses his opinion, after many years' study of the subject, that all are more or less related. To adhere to authentic history, the writer must begin the account of the family of George Buchanan (the pioneer) with one James Buchanan, who, during the first half of the eighteenth century, came with his family and his brothers and their families, from Armagh County, Ireland, and settled in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. One old record says "they called themselves 'McKane,' on account of religious persecution, but after landing in this country, they resumed the honorable name of Buchanan." This use of the surname "McKane" seems to be a connecting link between those people and Anselan O'Kayan, previously mentioned; but the writer assumes nothing—merely throwing out the conjecture.

The writer endeavored to acquire information concerning the family beyond the period named, but without success.

George Buchanan, the pioneer, son of James Buchanan, was born in Armagh County, Ireland, in 1745; was one of eight children who came with their parents to this country (to Lancaster County, Pennsylvania). It is, doubtless, true that the Buchanans came to Pennsylvania with the McAfees, thence both families removing to Virginia about the same time, and that they had previously intermarried with the McAfees before leaving Ireland. The beginning of accurate information concerning George Buchanan is that he married Margaret McAfee, daughter of James McAfee, Sr., and sister of James McAfee, Jr., the pioneer (one of the central figures in this book), and that he lived in Botetourt County, Virginia. No written record of his marriage is extant. It is recorded that when the McAfees brought their families from Virginia to Kentucky, about 1779, George Buchanan and his family came with them, and settled near them in Mercer County. He had a brother who came with the McAfees and Buchanan families as far as Cumberland Gap, and then veered off south-westwardly and settled in Tennessee, near Nashville.

George Buchanan, the pioneer, and his wife Margaret McAfee, as we learn from an old record, had eleven children, as follows: A—James, who died in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1838; B—William, who died in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1830; C—John, who moved to Taylor County, Kentucky; D—Alexander, who died in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1806; E—George, Jr.; F—Mary; G—Jane; H—Margaret, who moved to Indiana; J—Nancy; K—Annie; and L—Dorcas. It is a matter of regret to the writer that he was unable to obtain much information in regard to most of the children.

George Buchanan settled permanently in Mercer County, Kentucky, died, and was buried there in 1813. The writer has conversed with those who knew him personally. His reputation was that of an unpretentious farmer, who "minded his own affairs" and endeavored to live uprightly. He was an elder in New Providence Church, a brief notice of which is given in this book.

No history of an individual family, or nation, is of value unless accurate. The writer kept that truth in mind when preparing the following account of the Buchanans, who are descendants of George Buchanan and Margaret McAfee, his wife, the pioneers to Kentucky. He is aware that there are several families of Buchanans in Kentucky and elsewhere, who properly belong in this book, but he has not had the leisure to devote to the gathering of such information as would enable him to designate them all. In a large measure he has had to rely upon correspondence for information, a wearisome task, and oftentimes most unsatisfactory. Many of his letters were never answered, and many answers received were known to be inaccurate. The

magnitude of the undertaking to gather together in book form, all, or even any considerable number of the descendants of George Buchanan, the pioneer, will be appreciated when the following circumstances are considered:

He came to Kentucky about the year 1780, with a family of ten children (four sons and six daughters). Kentucky at that time was a wilderness still subject to the depredations of Indians, settlements were many miles apart, no public roads laid out, with no mail facilities, and with no communication with the outside world, these conditions existing for many years and until that part of Kentucky became more thickly peopled. George Buchanan's children in the meantime having grown up and most of them removed from the original settlement in Mercer County, Kentucky, while the family of George Buchanan embraced his wife and ten children, whom he brought to Kentucky, it appears that but two of his children (Alexander and William Buchanan) remained permanently in Mercer County, and there raised families—his other children as they grew to age having moved to other counties in Kentucky and a part of them to other States, and it has been impossible to trace them farther than the details here following:

C—JOHN BUCHANAN, third child of George Buchanan and Margaret McAfee married and went to Taylor County, Kentucky, where some of his descendants now live.

(I) WILLIAM BUCHANAN, son of John Buchanan, married Susan Miller, of Adair County; they had five children.

(II) WOOD H. BUCHANAN, who married Alethia Sublett, of Taylor County; they had no children.

(III) ISAAC C. BUCHANAN, who married Lila Harris, of Marion County, Kentucky; they lived in Baltimore.

(IV) NORA, who married J. W. Davis, and removed to Kansas.

(V) LIZZIE, who is unmarried and lives with her father in Taylor County, Kentucky.

(VI) LEE, who married and lives in Tampa, Florida.

D—ALEXANDER BUCHANAN, fourth child of George Buchanan and Margaret McAfee, was born in Botetourt County, Virginia, in 1769; came with his father to Kentucky, and married his cousin, Nancy McAfee, daughter of James McAfee, Jr. He never removed from Mercer County, and died there in 1806. His grave is plainly marked, by head and foot-stones, in the family lot in New Providence Burying-ground, near McAfee Station. His wife is buried by his side. Alexander and Nancy had six children: (I) MARY; (II) JAMES MILTON; (III) WILLIAM; (IV) ALEXANDER, JR.; (V) CALEB; (VI) GEORGE (THIRD).

I—MARY (BUCHANAN) DUNN.

MARY (familiarly called "Polly"), first child of Alexander Buchanan and Nancy McAfee, was born in Mercer County in 1798. Her whole life was spent in that county. She married Peter R. Dunn, a native of Maryland, who took up his residence in Mercer County, Kentucky, when a young man. Peter R. Dunn and wife are buried in New Providence Burying-ground. They had eight children, four of whom died in infancy.

(a) SUSAN, their first child, married Dr. John W. Powell, a native of Warren County, Kentucky, who was reared in Mercer County. Dr. Powell and wife had but one child who survived infancy—William Dunn Powell, who was born in 1859. He is a physician in good practice in Harrodsburg, Kentucky. He is unmarried. Susan Dunn Powell died in 1864. Her husband married a second time, and now lives near McAfee Post-office, Mercer County, Kentucky.

(b) GEORGE DUNN, second child of Peter R. Dunn, was born in 1836. He is a farmer in Mercer County, Kentucky. He married Mary Robb, daughter of W. N. Robb, of Franklin County, Kentucky. They have five children, all unmarried: Mary, Margaret, George, John and Sue.

(c) NANCY, third child of Peter R. Dunn, married John W. Davis, of Mercer County. They had two children: Mary Alma, who married Phil T.

Allin, of Harrodsburg, and William W., who married Nannie McAfee, of Mercer County. Nancy (Dunn) Davis died in 1846. Her husband married again and now lives in Texas.

(d) JOHN DUNN was born in 1839. In 1861 he married Mary, daughter of Edgar and Eveline Robinson, of Mercer County. Their only child who lived to adult age was Powell R. Dunn, who was born in 1864. He is unmarried and lives in Harrodsburg, Kentucky. John Dunn died in March, 1889. His widow married C. D. Kyle, and now lives at Pottstown, Pennsylvania.

H—JAMES M. BUCHANAN.

JAMES MILTON BUCHANAN, second child of Alexander Buchanan, was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, November 27, 1799. His father, dying when he was but eight years old, James was reared by his grandfathers, George Buchanan, and James McAfee. His early life was spent on a farm, and he received such an education as the schools of the neighborhood could bestow, and afterwards acquired a classical education through his own exertions, aided by private tutorage. He, in connection with one or two others, opened a high school in Danville, Kentucky, in 1820. This school was merged into Center College, Kentucky, in which he became professor of mathematics in 1823. He continued at Center College until 1835. He was a man of marked individuality of character, strong in his likes and dislikes, with a fixed purpose in mind always to live uprightly and square his dealing with his fellow-men by the golden rule. When any matter was presented for his consideration and action, the only thought with him was what was his duty; solving this to his satisfaction, no question of policy or fear of consequences could change his course of action. He paid little attention to what others thought on a question of right or wrong, but, as he used to say, he "did his own thinking and acted in accordance with his own views, and let the consequences take care of themselves." No better example of this trait in his character can be cited than a reference to a deed of record, in the Mercer County, Kentucky, clerk's office, made in 1834, by him, wherein he freed his slaves. When it is remembered what it meant, socially and otherwise, to be an abolitionist in a slave State at that time, the grandeur of this act of manumission can be appreciated. The preamble in the deed referred to recites:

"Whereas, I, James M. Buchanan, believing that human slavery is opposed to the law of love to our neighbor, enjoined by God upon every man, and opposed to the great fundamental truths that all men are created free and equal and are entitled to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness, and being desirous of doing, as a man, that which will be most beneficial to my fellow-creatures, and, as a citizen, that which will most tend to perpetuate the blessings flowing from our happy Government, do hereby emancipate, set free, and forever discharge from the bonds of slavery the following named persons:" etc.

In this matter he was a generation ahead of his day, as he was in most things. The writer, his son, has heard him say: "I became convinced that human slavery was wrong, and determined to wash my hands of the whole business." While he did not try to force others to think as he thought, nor do as he did, he knew that his views and action on the question of slavery would render him unpopular, and he, therefore, resolved to remove to a "Free State." To resolve, with him, was to act. He resigned his chair in Centre College, and removed to Carlinville, Illinois. A sojourn of about two years in that community proved to him that the social atmosphere of a free State was not agreeable to a man who had been born and reared in a slave State, and that the idea and aggressive methods of free-State abolitionists concerning the "man and brother" were not such as he could adopt, and he returned to Kentucky with his family, and located in the town of Hopkinsville, where he opened a school. After a few years in Hopkinsville, he removed to Shelbyville, where he resided until within a short time of his death. In person, he was six feet two inches in height. Standing or walking, he was

erect. He was a modest man, and while more accomplished than most of his associates, he never assumed to know more than others, and never thrust his opinion upon anyone. He possessed many peculiarities, and was considered an eccentric by many who did not know him thoroughly and understand him; he fully understood this, and laughed at it. He had a thorough knowledge of himself, and went through life remaining, as he expressed it, "on good terms with himself," letting the world construe, judge, or misjudge as they chose. He maintained his physical vigor up to within a short time of his death, on January 17, 1875, in his seventy-sixth year. He died at the residence of his son-in-law, Prof. B. F. Duncan, in Eminence, Kentucky, and is buried at that place in the city cemetery. For nearly sixty years he was a member of the Presbyterian Church, was scrupulously exact in his dealings with his fellow-men, and heartily despised anything like duplicity or deceit. In 1829 he married America Greathouse, a daughter of Isaac Greathouse, of Shelby County, Kentucky. Isaac Greathouse was one of the pioneers of Kentucky. The records in the County Clerk's office in Shelby County, Kentucky, show that he bought land in that county in 1796. Isaac Greathouse lived many years in Shelby County, and died there in 1838, and, with his wife, who was Elizabeth Rigby, is buried in what is known as the "Old Presbyterian Churchyard," now abandoned as a burial-ground.

America Greathouse Buchanan, the wife of James M. Buchanan, was born near Shelbyville, Kentucky, July 11, 1809, her ancestral history dating back only to the settlement of the family in Maryland, in the seventeenth century. Her father, Isaac Greathouse, held high rank in the military and civil service of the State after he located in Kentucky in 1796, where he raised a large family who were educated with great painstaking, and nearly all of whom became prominent in the local affairs of their surroundings, and to them were born eight sons and daughters: William, Stull, Isaac, Ridgeley, Nancy (Mrs. Clarke McAfee), Sally, (Mrs. Samuel Tevis), Elizabeth (Mrs. Thomas Wilson), and America (Mrs. James M. Buchanan). America Greathouse, wife of James M. Buchanan, was educated at Science Hill, the famous school of Mrs. Robert Tevis, at Shelbyville, Kentucky. At an early age she became a member of the Church, and was a constant attendant upon religious services during her long and useful life. With gentle and affectionate disposition, she was devoted to her family; patient and enduring under all conditions, she was the trusted physician and ministering angel of the household in time of sickness or discomfort. As a neighbor, she was beloved by all, ever seeking to relieve want, distress, and suffering. Blessed with a vigorous constitution, she spent the latter years of her life visiting the families of her children scattered over the Southern States, a faithful "Mother in Israel." She died on July 17, 1892, in the eighty-fourth year of her age, at the home of her son-in-law, Dr. Wm. C. Warren, at Waterford, Mississippi, and is buried in the family lot of her son, George M. Buchanan, in the city cemetery at Holly Springs, Mississippi.

Charles Howard Greathouse, son of John Stull Greathouse and Catherine R. Waring, and grandson of Isaac Greathouse, was born October 13, 1857, near Morganfield, Kentucky, graduate of High Schools, Greenville, Ill., 1874, and Ann Arbor, Mich., 1876; University of Michigan, B. A., 1879, and M. A. on examination, 1880; 1880-1882 Principal of Schools, Danville, Michigan; Barbourville, Kentucky; and Richmond, Missouri; 1882-1897, an editor, reporter and correspondent on staff of *Louisville Commercial*, four years; *Louisville Courier-Journal*, seven years; *Washington Times*, three years; also during this period correspondent for *New York World*, *New York Tribune*, *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, *Chicago News*, and agent for the Associated Press at Louisville. Also owner and publisher, 1889-1893 of *Home and School Educational Weekly*, Louisville, Ky.; 1897—— an assistant editor, Division of Publications, United States Department of Agriculture, Washington, D. C., Publications: Historical Sketch of Department of

Agriculture; Development of Agricultural Libraries; Free Delivery of Rural Mails; Index to Yearbooks, 1894-1900.

Married 1886 to Mary Melissa Curtis, Ann Arbor, Mich., who is also a graduate of University of Michigan, B. A., 1882, M. A., 1883. Children: Ruth Curtis Greathouse, sixteen; Lucien Helm Greathouse, twelve; Raymond Ridgley Greathouse, nine.

While my residence (domicile) is Washington, D. C., my legal residence and citizenship has been at Uniontown, Kentucky, where I still own the farm on which I was brought up and specifically retain a residence in lease to tenant.

The children of James Milton Buchanan and America Greathouse were the following: (a) William, born January 11, 1831, and died June 13, 1845; (b) Alexander H., born May 31, 1832, and died July 28, 1876; (c) James, born April 30, 1834; (d) Queen, born January 24, 1836, and died June 13, 1838; (e) George McAfee, born March 19, 1838; (f) Mary Yoder, born February 27, 1840; (g) Nancy McAfee, born February 7, 1842; (h) Sarah E., born October 29, 1843; (j) John W., born June 4, 1845, and died September 7, 1901; (k) Anna Maria, born August 9, 1847; and (l) Thomas, born April 23, 1849; and died January 22, 1853.

(b) Dr. Alexander H. Buchanan.

Dr. Alexander H. Buchanan, second child of James M. Buchanan, was born May 31, 1832, in Danville, Kentucky, and died at Hardin, Missouri, July 28, 1876. He received a good education at the hands of his father, studied medicine while clerking in a drug-store, and graduated in that profession from McDowell Medical College, St. Louis, Missouri. He removed to Richmond, Missouri, and entered upon practice with Dr. George W. Buchanan, his cousin. In May, 1861, he married Laura Hughes, a daughter of Dr. Berry Hughes and Susan (Campbell) Hughes, of Ray County, Missouri. Dr. Buchanan continued to practice with marked success until his death in 1876. His widow and two sons now reside near Hardin, Ray County, Missouri. His son George was born in July, 1862. He married Nancy Boggess in 1885. They have four children: Frank, Susie, Butler and Nell.

William Buchanan, second son, was born in 1868. He is a farmer. His mother makes his house her home. In 1890 he married Lula Johnson, daughter of James E. and Alice (Frazier) Johnson, of Jackson County, Missouri. He has two children: Ruth and Harry.

SKETCH 7.

(c) JAMES BUCHANAN.

James Buchanan, third child of James M. Buchanan, was born in Danville, Kentucky, April 30, 1834. His education was such as fitted him for business pursuits, and at the age of about eighteen years he came to Louisville, where he at once secured employment as a clerk in a large mercantile house. Three years after, at the age of twenty-one, he was admitted to a partnership, and continued in the same business for ten years. His firm, along with many others, was broken up by the Civil War, and he went from Louisville to Chicago, and in a short time formed a partnership there, and the firm did a large grain and provision business and were members of the Chicago Board of Trade for several years. Subsequently he returned to Louisville, and, in 1871, engaged in the real estate business, which he has pursued until the present time, 1904.

In January, 1860, he married Rebecca Graham Smith, daughter of Thomas P. and Cornelia (Simrall) Smith, of Louisville. (Thomas P. Smith was Commissioner and Deputy Commissioner of the Louisville Chancery Court from 1835 until his death in 1896—a period of sixty-one years).

James Buchanan and wife are both active members of the Second Presbyterian Church. They have had four children: Cornelia Smith, born and died in November, 1861; Fannie Smith, born February, 1870, died November, 1875; Thomas S. Buchanan, the eldest son, born May 20, 1862, and died May 9, 1903; and James S. Buchanan, born September 14, 1864, who is the only surviving one of the children.

SKETCH 11.

Thomas S. Buchanan, son of James and Rebecca, was educated in the Louisville public schools, and was admitted to the Bar of the Louisville Courts, and practised his profession for some years. He afterwards joined his father in the real estate business, and remained in that business until his death.

He married Ida Shallcross, daughter of Stephen H. and Marcia (Mimms) Shallcross, of Louisville, who is still living. They had no children.

SKETCH 12.

James S. Buchanan, second son of James and Rebecca Buchanan, was born in September, 1864. He likewise was educated in the Louisville public schools, and has been engaged in the real estate business in Louisville for eighteen years, both on his own account, and as partner of his father, and his uncle, John W. Buchanan. He married in November, 1903, Elizabeth Canfield, daughter of W. Q. Canfield, and grand-daughter of the Rev. Isaac W. Canfield.

James S. Buchanan is a member of the Second Presbyterian Church in Louisville, Kentucky.

SKETCH 8.

(e) GEORGE M. BUCHANAN.

George McAfee Buchanan, fifth child of James M. Buchanan, was born March 19, 1838. He received a good education at the hands of his father. His advent into the business world was as a clerk in a store in Louisville, Kentucky. In 1857 he removed to Versailles, Missouri, and subsequently to Sedalia, where he secured employment as a clerk. When the Civil War began he enlisted as a private, afterwards becoming a lieutenant, in the Second Missouri Cavalry, Confederate States Army. He participated in the several battles fought in Missouri and in the battle of Pea Ridge, Arkansas. After the Battle of Pea Ridge, his regiment was transferred to Bragg's Army, at Corinth, Mississippi, and afterwards assigned to Forrest's command. He remained with that organization until the war ended, surrendering in the spring of 1865, and was severely wounded in a sharp engagement at Collierville, Tennessee, in one of General Forrest's famous cavalry raids. Near the close of the war he married Victoria Nunnally, daughter of James B. Nunnally, a planter of Marshall County, Mississippi. Five children were born of the union; their names were Mary Coleman, Charles Nunnally, Susan Dean, Nannie Warren, and Fanny Dean; all of whom died in infancy or early childhood. His wife died in Holly Springs, Mississippi, in 1885. In December, 1886, he married his second wife, Susie F. Dean, daughter of Joseph E. and Fannie (Nunnally) Dean, of Holly Springs. They have two children: George McAfee, born August 28, 1888; and Victoria Nunnally, born February 21, 1890.

At the close of the war George M. Buchanan settled in Marshall County, Mississippi, and engaged in cotton raising. He has lived there continuously since. He was for eight years sheriff of his county, and in the past thirty years has held many positions of trust, both private and public. He served one term as United States Internal Revenue Collector for the Northern District of Mississippi. He is a member of the Presbyterian Church, and active in business generally, was for four years United States Marshal for the Northern District of Mississippi, under appointment of President McKinley (1899), and is now president of "The People's Bank," Holly Springs, Mississippi.

Susie F. Dean, wife of George M. Buchanan, was born in Marshall County, Mississippi, on December 3, 1858, and completed her education at Higbee High School, Memphis, Tenn. Her father, Joseph E. Dean, came with his parents to Marshall County, Mississippi, in 1835. Her father served during the Civil War as a Confederate soldier, and was severely wounded. His business has always been that of a cotton planter. Susie F. Dean's mother was Fanny V. Nunnally, the daughter of James B. Nunnally and Dorothy Couch, who came from Virginia to Tennessee, and from there removed to Marshall County, Mississippi. James B. Nunnally's father

JAMES BUCHANAN.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 7.]

MRS. JAMES BUCHANAN.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 7.]

JAMES S. BUCHANAN.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
[See Sketch No. 12.]

JOHN W. BUCHANAN.
(Deceased.)
[See Sketch No. 10.]

James M. Buchanan

[See Sketch No. 8.]

Mrs A. Buchanan

[See Sketch No. 8.]

FAMILY OF GEORGE M. BUCHANAN.
HOLLY SPRINGS, MISS.
[See Sketch No. 8.]

was Arthur Nunnally, whose wife was Rachel Couch, a sister of Daniel Couch, and the latter's wife was Jane Thomas, Arthur Nunnally and Daniel Couch being brothers-in-law, James B. Nunnally having married his first cousin, Dorothy Couch, a daughter of Daniel Couch. The elder Nunnally and Couch families were all born and raised near Lynchburg, Virginia, and came of English family originally. James B. Nunnally, with his wife, came to Marshall County, Mississippi, in 1835, where they raised a large family, and are buried at the old family homestead six miles southwest of Holly Springs, where is also buried Rachel Couch Nunnally, the mother of James B. Nunnally. Joseph E. Dean's father, Joseph Dean, was born in Maryland. His father, Samuel Dean, emigrated from Wales, and settled in Maryland in the early part of the seventeenth century; and from thence came to Pickens District, South Carolina, where Joseph Dean married Elizabeth Edmonson, they removing to Marshall County, Mississippi, in 1835, where they raised a large family on their plantation near Chulahoma. Joseph Dean lived to the advanced age of ninety-three years, and died in the year 1871; and his wife died in the year 1874, in the eighty-ninth year of her age. Both are buried at the old plantation homestead near Chulahoma, Mississippi.

(f) Mary Yoder Buchanan.

Mary Yoder, sixth child of James M. Buchanan, was born February 27, 1840. She is a member of the Baptist Church. In 1861 she married Wm. Oscar Coleman, son of William L. Coleman, of Trimble County, Kentucky. They have had seven children.

Mary Oscar, their first child, was born in 1862. She married George W. Williams, of Henry County, Kentucky. Williams and wife have two children: Lily May, and Howard.

George D. Coleman, second son of W. O. and Mary Y. Coleman, was born September, 1867. He married Alpha R. Penn, and resides at Frankfort, Ky.

Charles C. Coleman, third child, was born in November, 1868. He married Sallie Graham Hamilton. They have one child (Hamilton).

Wm. L. Coleman, fourth child, died at the age of eleven.

America Greathouse Coleman, fifth child, was born in 1872. She married Mr. —— Snyder, and now resides at Milton, Kentucky.

James Buchanan Coleman, sixth child, was born December, 1874. He is now married, and resides near Sulphur, Kentucky.

Nora Sibley Coleman, seventh child, was born July, 1877. In 1895 she married E. B. McCain, and died in 1898.

W. Oscar Coleman espoused the Confederate cause, and joined the Fourth Kentucky Cavalry in 1862. He served honorably until the general surrender in 1865. His occupation is that of a farmer. He has served one term as sheriff of his county, and two terms as representative of his District in the Kentucky Legislature, and for one term was a member of the Kentucky State Senate, and now holds the position of Superintendent of the Confederate Soldiers' Home at Pewee Valley, Kentucky.

(g) Nancy McAfee Buchanan.

Nancy McAfee Buchanan, seventh child of James M. Buchanan, was born in Shelbyville, Kentucky, February 7, 1842, and is a member of the Presbyterian Church. In December, 1868, she married Dr. W. C. Warren, of Marshall County, Mississippi, and lives there now. Dr. Warren is a native of Green County, Alabama. He was born in 1832, and is a cotton planter and practising physician. He received a classical education, and graduated in medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, at Philadelphia. By steady practice and thorough acquaintance with the current literature of his profession, he maintains the position of one of the leading physicians of this State. Dr. and Mrs. Warren have three children.

James Buchanan, their first child, was born in 1870, lives in Memphis, Tenn., and is engaged in business there.

Mary, their second child, was born in 1873. She married Robert F. Malone, of Laws Hill, Marshall County, Mississippi, in 1893. They have one child, William Ross, born in 1894. Malone is a farmer.

Clara, their third child, was born in 1875, is unmarried, and lives with her parents.

SKETCH 9.

(h) SARAH E. BUCHANAN.

Sarah E. Buchanan, eighth child of James M. Buchanan, was born October 29, 1843, and is a member of the Presbyterian Church. In 1867 she married Professor B. F. Duncan, of Shelby County, Kentucky, son of Daniel B. and Eleanor (Cook) Duncan. B. F. Duncan is a cultured man. He graduated at Georgetown (Kentucky) College, and subsequent to graduation, received the degree of A. M. at that institution. His pursuits have been entirely in literary ways. He taught school for several years in Kentucky, and is now Superintendent of Public Schools at Maryville, Missouri. B. F. Duncan and wife have four children:

James Buchanan, born in 1869. He is a lawyer in good standing in the town of Carrollton, Kentucky.

Blanch Duncan; John McAfee Duncan (born in 1876), and Mary Eva Duncan, children of B. F. Duncan and wife, are all unmarried and live with their parents in Maryville, Missouri.

SKETCH 10.

JOHN W. BUCHANAN, ninth child of James M. Buchanan, was born June 4, 1845, and died at Louisville, Kentucky, on the eighth day of September, 1901. As a boy he developed great fondness for books, and being the youngest son, his father gave him special opportunities for the cultivation of his tastes in literature, and his leisure moments were spent in adding to his knowledge from the choice works and standard authorities in art and literature. While below the average in stature, he was a man of splendid physique and commanding presence, and his genial, kindly nature and princely bearing served to make him always a welcome visitor. He was never so happy as when contributing to the pleasure and comfort of others. In 1873 he became associated with his brother James Buchanan in the real estate business in Louisville, Kentucky, in which business he continued until his death. Few men in the city of Louisville had more friends. Fond of mingling with his fellow-men, he was a leader in a number of social, charitable and other organizations. As a member and secretary of the Kentucky branch of the "Sons of the Revolution" he took great pride in the order, and in developing the history of his own ancestry and that of other pioneer Kentucky families. As a Mason he was a zealous and active member of that order. It was only a few days before his death that the National Assemblage of the "Knights Templar" met at Louisville, and from his residence window, while propped on his couch, he witnessed their grand parade and with an improvised sword exchanged salutations with the Knights of his acquaintance, and fully conscious of his condition, remarked: "This is the last parade that I will ever witness." In 1883 he married Nathalie Claiborne, a daughter of the late Colonel Nathaniel C. Claiborne of the St. Louis bar, and one of its most distinguished members. Colonel Claiborne came of an illustrious Virginia family, his father having served forty years in Congress, and his uncle was one of the early Governors of Mississippi. John W. Buchanan's widow with three children survive him. Their names are Claiborne, Warren and Mildred. They reside in Louisville, Ky.

The untimely death of John W. Buchanan was the occasion for great grief and sorrow on the part of his kinspeople throughout the land, and especially so to the four sisters and two brothers who survive him. He was cut off, as it were, without warning in the prime of life and in the full vigor of physical and mental manhood.

He was suddenly stricken with total paralysis and passed away in a very few days. He was a member of the Presbyterian Church.

(k) ANNA BUCHANAN.

Anna Buchanan, tenth child of James M. Buchanan, was born August 9, 1847, and is a member

of the Methodist Church. In 1875 she married Charles B. Hardy, son of Barnett Hardy, a planter of Marshall County, Mississippi. Charles B. Hardy is a farmer near Victoria, Mississippi. They have three children.

Charles B., born in 1876; in 1897 he married Miss Alice Houston, and they have three children and live at Victoria, Mississippi.

John Buchanan, born in 1878, and resides with his father.

J. Warren, born in 1880, and died after a short illness on August 1, 1899.

Oscar, born in 1891, and lives with his father.

These three boys are bright, manly fellows, and live with their parents, who have made a life study of the proper training, education, and Christian care of their children; devoted to their church, Mr. and Mrs. Hardy spend their time and means freely for the cause of religion.

(V)—CALEB BUCHANAN.

Caleb Buchanan, fifth child of Alexander and Nancy (McAfee) Buchanan, was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1801. He was reared in that County, and when he attained manhood, removed to Madison County. In January, 1836, he married Sallie Wood, daughter of Wiley Wood, of that County. Caleb Buchanan and wife both died in Madison County, Kentucky, and are buried there. They had three children:

John B. Buchanan, their first child, was born in Richmond, Kentucky, September, 1837. He joined the Federal Army, in 1861, as Captain of Company "D," Sixth Kentucky Cavalry, and served during the War. In 1867 he married Sarah E. Boulware, daughter of William and Arthusia (McWilliams) Boulware, of Madison County. In 1869 he removed to Missouri, and is now living at Carthage in that State. They have five children. Their first child, Sue, was born in 1868. In 1889 she married Wm. Duncan Gregory, a farmer of Fort Estill, Madison County, Kentucky, where they now live. Wm. Gregory and wife have two children, Elizabeth (born in 1889), and James (born in 1895). Sallie Buchanan, second child of John B. Buchanan, was born in Carthage, Missouri, in 1869. She is unmarried, and lives with her parents. Arthur Buchanan, third child of John B. Buchanan, was born in October, 1871. He lived awhile in the Province of Nova Scotia, where he married Laura Pemberton, in 1896. He now lives in Buffalo, N. Y. Lucy Buchanan, fourth child of John B. Buchanan, was born in September, 1873. Mary E. Buchanan, fifth child, was born in December, 1875. Lucy and Mary are both unmarried, and live with their parents.

Anderson Wood Buchanan, second child of Caleb Buchanan, was born in March, 1842. He was never married, and died in 1871, at Winnsboro, South Carolina, and is buried there.

Mary D. Buchanan, third child of Caleb Buchanan, was born in June, 1844. She was never married. Died in Madison County, Kentucky, in March, 1871.

SKETCH 13.

(111) WILLIAM BUCHANAN, third child of Alexander Buchanan and Nancy McAfee, was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, in July, 1805. He was reared in that county. In early manhood was engaged in business in Harrodsburg. He married Phoebe Ann McCoun, daughter of James T. and Mary (Caldwell) McCoun, also of Mercer County. He died in May, 1830. His wife died in September, 1829. They are buried in New Providence Graveyard, Mercer County. Their only child, George William Buchanan, was born in Harrodsburg, August, 1828. At the age of six years he was taken, by his maternal grandfather, to Ray County, Missouri, and reared on a farm. He received a finished education, graduating at Centre College, Kentucky, in 1852, and in medicine, at Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, in 1855. He at once began the practice of his profession at Richmond, Ray County, Missouri. In 1856 he married Emily R., daughter of Joseph B. and Mary (Chew) Terry, of Lexington, Missouri, formerly of Fredericksburg, Virginia. When the Civil War began,

Dr. Buchanan espoused the cause of the Confederacy, and served as surgeon in General Sterling Price's Army, two years—1861-62. He removed to Central City, Colorado, in 1864. His wife died there in 1869. They had five children, four of whom died in infancy. Their surviving child, William Terry Buchanan, was born in Lexington, Missouri, June, 1861. He now lives at Colorado City, Colorado. In 1887 he married Cora Zimmerman, of Troy, Kansas. They have one child, Terry Buchanan, born October, 1888. In 1871 Dr. George W. Buchanan returned from Colorado, and resumed his residence at Richmond, Missouri, and there died March 14, 1899. He was a ruling elder in the Presbyterian Church. In November, 1873, he married his second wife, Henrietta Rives Watkins. Dr. Buchanan had four children by his second wife: George Watkins, born in 1875, who is a farmer, and lives in Ray County, Missouri; Charles Allen, born 1876; James McAfee, born 1880; and Henry Rives, born 1883.

(IV) ALEXANDER BUCHANAN, JR., fourth child of Alexander Buchanan, was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1803. Early in life he moved to Garrard County, Kentucky, and about the year 1852 moved to Indiana, he having quite a large family.

SKETCHES 14, 15 AND 16.

14—REV. DR. JOHN A. MCAFEE, DECEASED.
15—REV. DR. SAMUEL L. MCAFEE.
16—MR. ROBERT W. MCAFEE.

The three individuals whose sketches are here combined were all sons of Joseph McAfee, who was the son of John McAfee, who was the son of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, who was a son of James McAfee, Sr., the Irish immigrant, who died in Botetourt County, Virginia, in 1785.

A brief sketch of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, is given in Part Second of this volume, but a few additional particulars will here be presented.

The history of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, as it is preserved in the annals of the family is very meagre. From the incidents that have been preserved, he seems to have been a man of more than usual self-possession and cool deliberation, brave, but always cautious, determined, but without passion or rashness. He was the first magistrate in Mercer County, and was filling the office of sheriff of the county when the State became a part of the nation.

He was married to Hannah McCormick, of Rockbridge County, Virginia, some years before the family immigrated to Kentucky. The fruit of this marriage was eight children, viz:

I. JOHN, born October 26, 1775; died April 28, 1833.

II. ANNIE, born ———.

III. ROBERT, born ———; died January 31, 1849.

IV. JANE.

V. HANNAH.

VI. WILLIAM, born August 27, 1787; died October 29, 1852.

VII. SAMUEL, born 1792; died October 18, 1819.

VIII. MARY, died July 9, 1833.

John was twice married and had a family of eleven children.

Annie married Thomas King, and left a family of five.

Robert married Priscilla Armstrong, and reared a family of four daughters.

Jane married Beriah Magoffin, and had a family of nine, among whom was the Hon. Beriah Magoffin, Governor of Kentucky in 1861.

Hannah married Captain Samuel Daviess, and left one son.

William married late in life, and left no heir.

Mary married Colonel Thomas P. Moore, and had a family of two daughters.

Most of the children lived in Mercer County until after the father's death, which occurred October 10, 1825. The wife and mother followed him June 27, 1833. Their bodies are entombed in the old graveyard of Providence Church, of which church they were both members from its organization until their deaths.

I. JOHN McAFEE, the eldest son of Samuel McAfee and Hannah McCormick, was born in Botetourt County, Virginia, October 26, 1775. He was four years of age when his parents came as pioneers to Kentucky, and grew up amid the hardships and perils that attended life in those early days. When he reached his majority his father gave him a portion of the homestead. Upon this he made his home and passed a quiet, uneventful life, leaving behind him an unsullied record of a true citizen, and consistent Christian, and a family whose careers testify to his fidelity to the divine covenant. A portion of the original building which he erected is still standing on the farm, now owned by his son, James Jackson McAfee, one mile south of the village of McAfee, on the pike leading to Harrodsburg.

His first marriage was to Elizabeth McKamey. Six children were the crown of this union, viz:

(a) SAMUEL, born July 12, 1800; died December 29, 1869.

(b) ROBERT, born ———; died in infancy.

(c) JOSEPH, born June 3, 1803; died November 9, 1876.

(d) CYNTHIA, born March 3, 1805; died ———.

(e) JOHN CLARK, born October 1, 1807; died January 4, 1874.

(f) WILLIAM, born October 3, 1810; died ———, 184—.

His second wife was Mrs. Dicy (Caldwell) Curry, of which marriage there were five children, as follows:

(g) CALDWELL, born January 16, 1817; died ———.

(h) MARY ANN, born August 31, 1819; died February 2, 1888.

(j) PHOEBE ELIZABETH, born September 8, 1821; died November ———, 1849.

(k) JAMES JACKSON, born February 23, 1824.

(l) FRANCIS MONROE, born March 31, 1827; died June 15, 1889.

All the children of the first marriage remained on the farm until their majority, except Samuel, who was apprenticed to a carpenter of Georgetown, Kentucky, at fourteen, until he was twenty-one. The family circle was not broken by any distant removals, until the fall of 1830; when Joseph married and removed to North-eastern Missouri, to open his farm which he had entered from the government the year before. His land was located ten and one-half miles north of west from Palmyra, the county seat of Marion County. The country was very new, and only a few settlements had been made in the neighborhood, and these of very recent date. There was no such thing as a grist, or saw mill, and the nearest base of supplies of any sort was the county seat.

In 1834 his brothers, John C. and William, followed him, and located their farms about four miles west. About the same time his sister Cynthia, who had married Jack Allen, Esq., of Harrodsburg, came with her husband to the State, but settled near Huntsville, Randolph County, where they reared their family of six sons and two daughters. Samuel followed the others in the fall of 1835, and opened his farm on Flint Creek, adjoining John C. on the west.

In August of the same year that Samuel came to Missouri, the New Providence Presbyterian Church was organized. The organization was effected in the house of John C. McAfee, and Joseph and John C. McAfee, and Joseph Blackwood, were the original elders. Subsequently Samuel McAfee was made a deacon. The church took its name from the Providence Church in Kentucky, of which Dr. Thomas Cleland was so long the cherished pastor, and from which a majority of its original members had come.

In 184— this circle of brothers was broken by the death of the youngest, William, who left a widow and two children, a son and a daughter. These soon after returned to the old home in Kentucky. The only survivor of this family is Mr. Allen McAfee, of Alton, Kentucky.

There was no more break in the circle until 1849, when Samuel left his farm and removed to La Grange, Missouri, to engage in the lumber, and subsequently in the book and stationery business.

John followed him in 1858, and planted a nursery near LaGrange. Joseph remained on his Marion County farm until the spring of 1866, when he also removed to a small farm near LaGrange.

It may safely be said that no three men in the community exerted a more powerful influence for good than did these three brothers. They were universally recognized as men of honor and integrity, as men of settled convictions, with courage to maintain them. They did not seek political preferment, or covet official positions. Except Samuel, who served as Mayor of the City of LaGrange, and was, at the time of his death, United States Revenue Collector, none of them ever held a public or civil office. Politically they all adhered to the Democratic party, were the admirers of Hon. Thomas H. Benton, Missouri's illustrious Senator, and followed him in his opposition to the extension of slavery, until the campaign of 1860. In this campaign they all withdrew from the Democratic party. Joseph supported the Constitutional Union candidate, and both the others voted for Abraham Lincoln. From that time until their deaths their affiliations were with the National Republican party.

They were always more prominent in the affairs of the church than of the State. They were recognized as pillars in the New Providence Church as long as they were connected with it, and when one after another transferred his membership to the LaGrange Church he was almost immediately called into the session there. They were all well known in their Presbytery and Synod, and each of them represented his Presbytery in one or more General Assemblies. Each lived to a good old age and departed as a shock of corn fully ripe.

SAMUEL, the first child of John McAfee and Elizabeth McKamey, was twice married. First on December 5, 1822, to Martha Curry, daughter of his step-mother.

Their children were William Curry, and two daughters who died in infancy. William lived to about thirty years of age, and left a widow and two children, a son and daughter. Martha Curry died July 6, 1830.

His second wife was Hannah Bohon, to whom he was married January 12, 1832. The children of this union were: 1. Susan Mary, who married Homer Howard Winchell and had a family of eleven children, five of whom are now living. Her residence is at Parkville, Missouri, where her husband is engaged in the general merchandise business. 2. John Walter, who died in Texarkana, Texas, at the age of thirty-seven and unmarried.

His death occurred at Palmyra, Missouri, December 29, 1869. His wife survived him about seven years, dying October 24, 1876.

JOSEPH McAFEE was married October 26, 1830, to Priscilla Ann Armstrong, daughter of Major Thomas Lanty Armstrong and Tiny Dorland, and granddaughter of Captain John Armstrong and Priscilla McDonald. Tiny Dorland was a daughter of Garrat Dorland, who was commissioned by the Convention of the State of Pennsylvania, August 27, 1776, as "Second Lieutenant of a Company of Foot for York County in the Flying Camp for the Middle States of America." [This commission is signed by "B. Franklin, President," and is now the property, or is in the possession, of Miss Helen Armstrong, Louisville, Kentucky.] She was a true help-meet, and lived to share his trials and triumphs, joys and sorrows for about thirty-five years. Her death occurred July 16, 1865.

The children of Joseph McAfee and his wife Priscilla Ann, were:

John Armstrong, born December 12, 1831; died June 12, 1890.

Rebecca Jane, born February 5, 1834; died April 15, 1880.

Tiny Elizabeth, born April 24, 1836.

Charlotte Cleland, born July 2, 1838; died November 2, 1891.

Samuel Lanty, born May 13, 1841.

Margaret Ann Gray, born November 27, 1843; died March 27, 1849.

Mary Helen, born July 2, 1846; died September 27, 1865.

Robert William, born October 11, 1848.

Hannah Catharine, born June 7, 1851.

JOHN C., fifth child of John and Elizabeth, was also twice married. His first wife was Matilda Bohon, whom he married January 4, 1832.

The children of this marriage were:

Mary Hannah, who died in infancy.

Cynthia, who married Joseph H. Hargis, of LaGrange, Missouri, and had a family of four children, only two of whom are now living. She died August 22, 1874.

Samuel Bohon, who resides at Augusta, Illinois, and whose family consists of nine children, six of whom are living.

William, also living at Augusta, Illinois. Four of his children are living.

George Fletcher, now the Rev. George F. McAfee of New York City, Superintendent of the School Work of the Board of Home Missions of the Presbyterian Church. He has no children.

John C.'s second wife was Catharine Bohon, a cousin of his first wife. One daughter only was born of this union. She grew to womanhood and was married, but died soon after, and left no family.

His death occurred at LaGrange, Missouri, January 4, 1874.

SKETCH 14.

John Armstrong McAfee, the eldest son and child of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong, was born on his father's farm, near the village of Houston (now known as Emerson), Marion County, Missouri, December 12, 1831, the first year after the removal of his parents from Kentucky to Missouri. Those were pioneer days in Missouri when hardships were many and advantages few. He availed himself of such advantages as the local schools afforded, until he was twenty years of age, when he began to teach in the common schools of the day. He prepared for college under the private tuition of Rev. Josiah B. Poage, and graduated from Westminster College at Fulton, Missouri, in 1859. Twenty-five years later the college conferred upon him the honorary doctor's degree in divinity. In August, 1859, he was married to Miss Anna W. Bailey, daughter of Major James G. Bailey, of St. Charles, Missouri. He became a teacher, and though later ordained to the ministry in the Presbyterian Church, counted himself a teacher and educator rather than anything else, throughout his life.

In 1859 Professor McAfee taught in a young ladies' school in Fulton, Missouri, still in existence. 1860-1867 were spent in teaching at Ashley, Missouri, where his life-work began to take shape in his mind. During this period, also, in response to earnest solicitation of the church and friends, he was ordained to the ministry. Three years were spent in Louisiana, Missouri, in college teaching, when, in 1870, a call came to the professorship of Greek in Highland University, Kansas. There were soon gathered about him here students who were without means, but who were ready to perform whatever manual labor was assigned them. They were counted members of his family, living in a large hall which he erected by the help of friends, and called "Hufford Home," and their tuition in the University was remitted in lieu of his salary. Having won his own college course by his own efforts, and with great difficulty, he felt his life-work to be that of aiding those similarly situated and equally desirous for education.

It became evident, after five years of effort, that the peculiar purposes and methods which were in Professor McAfee's mind could be better developed apart from any already established institution, and friction appeared in the University on that account. He at once resigned his position, not knowing to what place he might go. An opening was providentially made for his work in Parkville, Missouri, whose founder, the Hon. George S. Park, offered him land and a large stone building, formerly used for a hotel. Here he began in 1875 what was to be his great work. As an educational institution, the enterprise was called Park College. As a peculiar training school for the Missouri Valley and the entire West, it was called Park College Family for Training Christian Workers. As the name suggests, the institution was aggressively Christian. The practical study of the Bible was

made first of all. From the beginning all its students have been expected to be present at two devotional chapel services each day, and each must take part in the singing and reading of Scripture. As a result, few students go through a year of attendance unconverted, and all of its graduates have been professing Christians.

Professor McAfee offered no course of study but the severely classical one, and the college has had no other. All the members of the family were required to pursue that single course. At first most of the teaching was done by advanced students, other teachers casting in their lot with the moneyless leader and students, with little or no salary, all supplied from the common treasury. The faculty has grown until it now (1898) includes twenty-three professors and instructors, all classical graduates from many institutions, and all receiving very moderate living salaries.

Each student, according to Professor McAfee's plan, becomes part of a family in whose behalf he spends part of each day in assigned manual labor. It is not supposed that he can support himself by his work; and if he can pay the $60 required each year to supplement his labor, he is expected to do so. If not, the amount is secured from friends for the family treasury. The manual labor is not, therefore, meant for teaching trades, but to lessen the expense of the education provided, and a part of the training for usefulness. The young women do all the "home" work; the young men do many kinds of outdoor and indoor work. Dr. McAfee established a printing office, carpenter shops, stone-quarries, blacksmithing and several other departments, besides the farming and gardening. Several buildings were erected by student labor before his death, and many have been since erected. The lands have been gradually acquired until there are about 1,200 acres contiguous to or near the campus, besides 2,000 acres in other places. Some of the latter tracts are not of great value. Considerable money endowment has been secured, now more than $225,000.

Dr. McAfee died June 12, 1890, on the evening of the commencement day of that year. At his death, his family undertook the work, under the title of John A. McAfee's Sons, his five sons and one daughter joining with Mrs. McAfee in the management.

His sons are:

1. Lowell Mason McAfee, born 1860, graduated from Park College 1880, attended McCormick Seminary 1883-4, superintendent manual labor department Park College 1880-83 and 1884-5, principal of academy and chairman of college faculty from 1885 to the present time. Married Carrie Imogene Canfield, 1887. Children: Ralph Canfield, Kenneth Bailey, Esther Lucille.

2. Howard Bailey McAfee, born 1861; graduated Park College 1880; attended Union Theological Seminary, New York, 1882-84; professor of Mathematics Park College, 1880-82; business manager and superintendent, 1884 to present. Married Lucy H. Hindman 1886. Children: Paul Hindman; John Armstrong; Anna Helen, died 1896; Lou Marie, died 1896; Helma Louise.

3. Lapsley Armstrong McAfee, born 1864; graduated Park College 1882; graduated McCormick Seminary 1885; ordained Presbyterian Church 1889; pastor Parkville Presbyterian Church 1889-1898; superintendent and disciplinarian Park College Family 1885-1898; pastor Presbyterian Church, Phœnix, Arizona, 1898. Married Ella Taylor, 1887. Children: Hugh Bailey, Anna Ruth, Lapsley Ray, Wallace Taylor.

4. Cleland Boyd McAfee, born 1866; graduated Park College 1884; Union Seminary, New York, 1888; ordained Presbyterian Church 1888; co-pastor Parkville Presbyterian Church 1889-1898; pastor same 1898; Professor Mental and Moral Philosophy Park College 1889 to present. Married Hattie L. Brown 1892. Children: Ruth Myrtle, Catherine Agnes.

5. Joseph Ernest McAfee, born 1870; graduated Park College 1889; graduated Auburn Seminary 1893; Helper Park College Family 1893-95; Princeton Seminary 1896; professor Greek Park College 1896 to present. Married Adah E. Brokaw, 1898.

SAM'L McAFEE.
1800-1869.

JOSEPH McAFEE.
1803-1876.

JOHN CLARKE McAFEE.
1807-1874.

[See Sketches 14, 15 and 16.]

REV. SAM'L L. McAFEE, D. D.
PARKVILLE, MO.

PRESIDENT JOHN A. McAFEE. D. D.
1831-1890.

ROB'T WM. McAFEE.
CRAWFORDSVILLE, IND.

[See Sketches 14, 15 and 16.]

MRS SALLIE McAFEE EDMUNDS,

RELICT OF

EDWIN SHORT EDMUNDS,

Only Surviving Grandchild of James McAfee, the Kentucky Pioneer.

Taken on Her Eightieth Birthday.

[See Sketch No. 26.]

6. The daughter is Helen Bailey McAfee, born 1872; graduated Park College 1892; Western Female Seminary, Oxford, Ohio, 1894; teacher of Latin, Park College Academy, 1897 to present.

Rebecca Jane (McAfee) McKamey, the eldest daughter of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong, was born near Salvisa, Kentucky, February 5, 1834. She was married to Joseph McAfee McKamey of Paris, Missouri, September 10, 1854. Her family consisted of one son, Calvin McAfee, who was killed by a mule when fourteen years of age; and two daughters, Margaret and Josephine. The latter died in early womanhood and unmarried; the latter married, but died childless in 1894. She was never possessed of a robust constitution, and, after a lingering illness of several years, died in the triumphs of a Christian faith, April 15, 1880.

Tiny Elizabeth (McAfee) Kizer, daughter of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong, was born near Emerson, Missouri, April 24, 1836. On the 19th of March, 1857, she was married to Jacob R. Kizer of Illinois. Her residence has been for many years at Louisiana, Missouri, where her husband has been engaged in mercantile business. Her children have been two daughters, Nettie and Effie, both of whom died in infancy; and one son, Joseph Leslie, who was born in Louisiana, Missouri, February 20, 1870; married Bell Wilson, and has one son, Thomas Leslie. He is at present in Lincoln, Nebraska, engaged in mercantile business.

Hannah Catharine (McAfee) Robinson, was the youngest child of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong. She was born on the old homestead near Emerson, Missouri, June 7, 1851. She was given the best advantages of the school facilities at hand, as had been given to all her brothers and sisters in their day, but these were very meagre. When she was fourteen years of age her father removed to LaGrange, and she had the advantages of such school facilities as were provided for the youth of that little city. In 1872 she entered Highland University, of which her brother John A. was then president, and graduated in June, 1875. In the fall of that year she engaged as instructor in Park College, but her health soon gave way, and she was compelled to abandon her cherished work. On October 2, 1878, she was married to Rev. Joseph Carle Robinson, who was a classmate in the University, and a graduate of Princeton Theological Seminary in the class of 1878. Her children are: Harold McAfee, and Ethel. Her home for a number of years has been at White Bear, Minnesota, where her husband is the esteemed pastor of the Presbyterian Church.

Charlotte Cleland (McAfee) Pollock, daughter of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong, was born near Emerson, Missouri, on the 2d day of July, 1838. After her mother's death she became her father's housekeeper, and made a home for him and the family as long as he lived. On January 11, 1877, she was married to James F. Pollock, of LaGrange, Missouri. She was a woman of sterling character, the life of the circle in which she moved, and foremost in every good work in the church of which she was a member. She died November 2, 1891, leaving two daughters, Nellie McAfee and Elsie May.

SKETCH 15.

Rev. Samuel Lanty McAfee, D. D., second son of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Armstrong, was born on the old homestead, near Emerson, Missouri, May 13, 1841. He remained with his father on the farm until he was twenty years of age, enjoying only such limited facilities for education as the public schools of Missouri of that day afforded. In the fall of 1861, he entered Watson Seminary, at Ashley, Pike County, Missouri, of which institution his brother John A. was then principal. After one year of study there, in October, 1862, he enlisted as a private in Company A, Third Missouri Cavalry, United States Volunteers, and served until the close of the Civil War, rising to the rank of First Lieutenant, and Quartermaster of his regiment. At the close of the war, he returned to school, and was graduated from Pardee College, Louisiana, Missouri, in 1869, and from the North-western—now McCormick—Theological Seminary, in 1871. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of North-

eastern Missouri, May 14, 1869, and ordained by the Presbytery of Missouri River, December 17, 1871. At the same time of his ordination he was installed as pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Red Oak, Iowa, which pastorate he held until May, 1882. After a few months' ministry in Winnebago City, Minnesota, he accepted a call from the Presbyterian Church at Malvern, Iowa, which position he filled until called to organize the Presbyterial Academy at Corning, Iowa, October, 1885. He gave up the principalship of that institution in 1889, and went to Park College to organize the Department of Biblical History and Practical Christian Training, which professorship he still holds. Highland University conferred upon him the degree of Master of Arts in 1872, and Parsons College that of Doctor of Divinity in 1897.

On the 19th day of April, 1871, he was married to Mary Esther, daughter of Rev. Josiah B. Poage, of Ashley, Missouri. Only one child was born to them, Samuel Poage, who was born at Corning, Iowa, August 22, 1888, and died at Parkville, Missouri, April 16, 1892.

SKETCH 16.

Robert William McAfee, youngest son of Joseph McAfee and Priscilla Ann Armstrong, was born in Marion County, Missouri, October 11, 1848. He remained on the farm with his father until the autumn of 1867, enjoying very limited school privileges at any time, and during the War of the Rebellion, more limited still, when he entered Pardee Collegiate Institute at Louisiana, Missouri, of which his oldest brother, Rev. John A. McAfee, was president. He went with him to Highland University, Kansas, in 1870, and was graduated from that institution in the class of 1872, and received from it the degree of Master of Arts in 1875. He took up a special course of study at Princeton Seminary, but, finding weakness of eyesight forbade continuous study, turned his attention to interesting people in the work of his brother, John A. McAfee, and remained with him nearly two years. He then took up editorial work at St. Joseph, Missouri, but had to abandon that on account of his eyes. Becoming interested in the work of suppressing obscene literature, in the line adopted by Anthony Comstock of New York, he took an active interest in it, and in 1877 succeeded in completing active organizations in Cincinnati, St. Louis and Chicago, to sustain the work in the West, in co-operation with the New York Society, and became the General Agent of the Western Society for the Suppression of Vice, composed of the above-mentioned branches. He has been the active agent of the same to the present time. His vigorous prosecution of the work attracted the attention of the Post-Office Department, and in June, 1884, Judge Walter Q. Gresham, then Postmaster-General, appointed him a Post-Office Inspector, and issued to him a commission, commanding that he be "obeyed and respected accordingly by mail contractors, postmasters, and all others connected with the postal service," and requiring "all railroads, steamboats, stages, and other mail contractors to extend to him the facilities of free travel." Each succeeding Postmaster-General has treated him likewise. He has secured legislation on the subject in almost every Southern and Western State, and many municipalities. Probably the most valuable work accomplished by him was securing the passage of an Act of Congress forbidding the depositing with any express company or other common carrier, for delivery in another State or territory any obscene, lewd or lascivious book, etc., which went into effect on the 8th of February, 1897.

He was married June 9, 1875, to Grace L. Deane, who was born in Franklin, Massachusetts, May 10, 1853, of Puritan stock. They have four living children: Emile Wadsworth McAfee, born September 16, 1876, and is a member of the class of 1900, in Wabash College; Robert William McAfee, Jr., born February 12, 1881, and is a member of the class of 1903, Wabash College; Grace Deane McAfee, born November 25, 1884; Ruth Winchell McAfee, born January 18, 1889. His residence is at Crawfordsville, Indiana, where he manages to spend his Sabbaths, though under the necessity of traveling about 50,000 miles a year.

The following from the many published references to him and his work are selected.

The *Interior* of Chicago says:

"A notable victory was scored last week for public decency by Mr. R. W. McAfee, agent of the Society for the Suppression of Vice, in the conviction of Joseph R. Dunlop, editor of the Chicago *Dispatch*, before Judge Grosscup, and his sentence of two years in the penitentiary and the payment of $2,000 fine, with the large costs of prosecution."

The Presbytery of Chicago passed the following in reference to the same case:

"*Resolved*, That this Presbytery express its supreme gratification for the zeal and fidelity exercised in the successful prosecution and exclusion of the Chicago *Dispatch* from the United States mails. Further, be it resolved, that we recommend the Society for the Suppression of Vice to the sympathy of all our churches."

The officers of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union sent the following as a personal letter to Mr. McAfee:

"In behalf of 300,000 white-ribbon women who love purity and righteousness we desire to thank you for the great victory that has crowned your efforts in convicting the editor and publisher of a Chicago paper of sending through the mails matter calculated to pollute society. You certainly are to be congratulated, and all good men and women rejoice at the result of the trial in the United States Court.

"Sincerely yours,

(Signed) "FRANCIS WILLARD, *President*.
"KATHARINE LENTE STEVENSON,
Corresponding Secretary.
"HELEN M. BARKER, *Treasurer*."

From the report of the Executive Committee of the Society for the Suppression of Vice:

"At present the entire work of the country in this line, with the exception of an occasional case of glaring notoriety attacked by the police, is conducted by two heroic men who stand between the twenty-seven millions of youth and the greedy monsters who would sap their life blood. The lives of these men have been consecrated to this work of discovery, repression and rescue. They have won battles of which any general on the field would be proud. They have endured trials, hardships, persecutions, attacks; have sacrificed financial and social privileges. They have been ready to suffer for the children they have saved. They stand supported by the united voice of the fathers and mothers of the land in their demand for vigorous non-political, non-sectarian action."

The following from Mr. Anthony Comstock to the Western Society for the Suppression of Vice:

"I desire especially to speak of Mr. McAfee, my co-laborer and co-sufferer.

"I have known Mr. McAfee, I think, before any member of your organization knew him. I have never known a more faithful, self-denying and efficient officer. There is no man in this country for whom I have a more profound respect and admiration, because of his noble fidelity to an unpopular cause. I have sympathized with him in his many discouragements, privations, trials and hardships, but have never known him to complain or speak disloyally or disrespectfully of any of his directors.

"I do not believe that there is a member of your society who realizes what it is to be, as he has been throughout many weary years, often separated from home and home ties; to be far removed most of the time from the sympathy and love of wife and children; to spend a portion of his nights, week in and week out, month in and month out, year in and year out, on a sleeping car or at some hotel away from home influence and comforts, in order that he might, as a minute man, respond to every demand made upon him. He is deserving of a monument while he lives. * * * * * * * *

"McAfee is a whole regiment in himself, and when backed by your organization with a purpose as faithful as has been his effort, you will be a whole army corps in this magnificent battle for the moral purity of the youth of this great nation."

SKETCH 17.

MRS. CHAMP CLARK, BOWLING GREEN, MISSOURI.

Mrs. Clark was Miss Genevieve Davis Bennett, the daughter of Mr. Joel D. Bennett, by his wife Mary McClung McAfee, who was the daughter of George McAfee, Jr., and Anne Hamilton. George McAfee, Jr., was the son of George McAfee, the pioneer, and his wife Susan Curry. Genevieve Davis Bennett was the youngest of the seven children of her parents, and was born near New

Bloomfield, Callaway County, Missouri. On her father's side she is descended from the Bennetts of Maryland, who came over from England with Lord Baltimore. Her grandfather, Joseph Bennett, and his brothers, Elijah, Moses and John, settled in Madison County, Kentucky, at an early day. Her father was born in that county, and her mother in Mercer County. Joel D. Bennett and Mary McClung McAfee were married in Callaway County, Missouri. Miss Bennett (the subject of this sketch) was married December 14, 1881, to Mr. Champ Clark, then a lawyer in Bowling Green, Missouri. Her husband is now known all over the United States as the Hon. Champ Clark, M. C., from the Ninth Missouri District, he having been for many years a member of the Lower House of Congress, and one of the wittiest and most eloquent members of that body. Mr. and Mrs. Clark have had four children born to them: Champ, Jr., and Anne Hamilton, who died in infancy; and Bennett and Genevieve, who are still living, and whose handsome faces can be seen portrayed in this volume on the same sheet as that which contains portraits of their parents.

Mrs. Clark's father was born March 1, 1805. Her mother (Mary McClung McAfee) was born November 22, 1813, and died March 20, 1903, when in her ninetieth year. Her grandfather, George McAfee, Jr., was born April 28, 1777, and died May 28, 1819. Anne Hamilton, wife of George McAfee, Jr., was born January 11, 1777, and died April 7, 1851. An excellent portrait of Mrs. George McAfee, Jr., will be found in this volume. George McAfee, the pioneer, was born April 13, 1740, and died April 14, 1803; and his wife, Susan Curry, was born October 8, 1740, and died September 10, 1810. Mrs. Clark's paternal grandfather, Joseph Bennett, and two of his brothers (Elijah and Moses), married ladies by the name of Davis, who were sisters, Joseph's wife being named Margaret (Peggy).

Mrs. Mary McClung (McAfee) Bennett was a remarkable woman.

"Ma Bennett," as she was affectionately called, came of Scotch-Irish Calvinistic families on both sides—McAfee on the paternal side; Hamilton and McClung on the maternal. They are strong, brainy, prolific stocks. Mercer County, Kentucky, is full of them.

With such ancestry it was inevitable that Mrs. Bennett should be a Presbyterian and a Democrat. When a child, and until she migrated to the West, she attended New Providence Church, a famous seat of Presbyterianism, where many of her kindred lie buried, her grandfather, George McAfee, Sr., a soldier of the Revolution under General George Rogers Clark, being the first who was laid to rest in that historic spot.

Her grandfather entered 1,400 acres of land near by upon a warrant granted him for his services to his country under "The Hannibal of the West."

Her father was Colonel George McAfee (son of George, Sr., the pioneer), who fought under Col. Dick Johnson, at the River Thames, and under Andrew Jackson at New Orleans.

She was only two years old when her father returned from the expedition in Canada, and such were her powers of memory that she recollected his home-coming to her last days.

Mrs. Bennett was a woman of great strength, mentally and physically—a fine type of the Kentucky pioneers who settled in Missouri, drove out the Indians, conquered this rich wilderness and established civilization west of the Mississippi, making it the most delectable place for human habitation beneath the stars.

She reared seven children of her own, and twice that many negroes. She never became reconciled to Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation.

All her children grew to manhood or womanhood.

John McAfee and Sedocia Bacon died in the flower of their years without being married. They were successful farmers and stockmen. Sedocia was a Confederate soldier.

Anne Hamilton married William W. Pitzer, a lawyer, now deceased. She and her only child,

MRS. GENEVIEVE B. CLARK.
WIFE OF HON. CHAMP CLARK.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

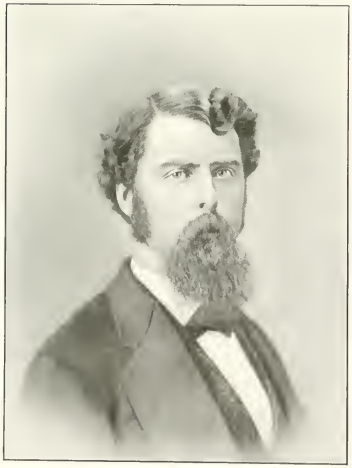
HON. CHAMP CLARK, M. C.
BOWLING GREEN, MO.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

MRS. JOEL DAVIS BENNETT.
NEE MCAFEE.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

BENNETT AND GENEVIEVE CLARK.
BOWLING GREEN, MO.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

MR. JOEL DAVIS BENNETT.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

MRS. JOEL DAVIS BENNETT.
[See Sketch No. 17.]



SADOCIA BACON BENNETT.
[See Sketch No. 17.]

JOHN McAFEE BENNETT.
[See Sketch No. 17.

Anne Bennett Pitzer, reside at Colorado Springs, Colorado.

Joel A., of Kansas City, Missouri, married Annie Bradford Herndon. To them have been born seven children: Little Joel, Sallie Belle, Joel A., Edward Buckner, George Grant, Anne Craig and Susie Herndon.

George Lisle, of Kansas City, Missouri, married Sue Beattie. They have no children.

Mollie Coulter married John O. Herndon, farmer, of Fulton, Missouri. To them have been born four children: Sedocia Bennett, Belle Harris, Mary McAfee, and Champ Clark.

Genevieve married Champ Clark, lawyer of Bowling Green, Pike County, Missouri.

Mrs. Bennett was firm in the faith that Presbyterians are the salt of the earth. One of her greatest crosses was that four of her children, Anne Hamilton, Mary Coulter, Joel A. and Genevieve all married outsiders.

When a young woman she was tall and well built, remarkably strong and active. She was next youngest of the children of Colonel George McAfee and his wife, Anne Hamilton. I have heard her brother William McAfee, late of Mercer County, Kentucky, say that in a scuffle, Mary was six to anybody's half dozen. Her brother, Dr. George McAfee, late of Hardin County, Kentucky, was two years her junior. When he was just graduated from college he came home and said to her, banteringly, "Now, madam, I am a *man*, and will run things to suit myself and you must mind me." In a minute she was wrestling with him, and laid him on his back, where he capitulated and begged for mercy.

My mother has always been noted for her benevolence; I suppose there never was a more unselfish person than she. She is a natural-born nurse, and can do more to make a sick person comfortable than anybody I ever saw. Like all the old stock of McAfees she had an inexhaustible fund of humor. Although she had a great head for business and understood all kinds of work, she has always been a great reader. To this day, if she gets interested in a book, she is liable to sit up till 12 o'clock at night reading it.

Her father's sisters, "Aunt Armstrong," "Aunt Irving," and "Aunt McKamey," I have heard her speak of and describe so often that I feel that they are personally known to me. "Aunt Armstrong" would never allow the door to be shut winter or summer. This came from her early environments when the Indians were liable to creep up unawares and make a forcible entrance into the house. George McAfee, Sr., had his house burned three times by the savages. Aunt Armstrong used to tell the children of that day (my mother among them), many thrilling stories of encounters with the Indians. She said that one evening she went out to milk the cow, her father, George McAfee, Sr., standing guard with his gun, they heard what she thought was the cry of a panther, when her father told her to hurry and milk the cow—that they were to be attacked by the Indians—that it was an Indian cry instead of a panther's. They drove the stock to a hiding place in the woods; then they built up a large fire in the house to make the Indians think they were still there and fled to the fort which was owned by James McAfee. That night about 9 o'clock George McAfee, Sr., and a negro man, under cover of darkness, slipped back and witnessed the conflagration of the house; the Indians were all in high glee, dancing around the house thinking that it was inhabited, and were prepared to tomahawk them when they ran out to escape the flames. Aunt Armstrong used to tell how, when they fled to the fort she carried her little sister Susanna, then a baby, on her back, and that she felt as light as a feather as she bounded over logs and through the forests on her way to the fort. Susanna was the youngest of George McAfee's children. She married Robert McKamey. Robert McKamey's family and the family of James McAfee (he was the oldest son of George McAfee, Sr., his wife was Nancy McKamey, sister of Robert) moved to Missouri in 1826. Thirteen years afterwards, my mother, then twenty-six years of age, came to Missouri on a visit to her kinsfolk, met my father, Joel

Davis Bennett, of Madison County, Kentucky (his older brother, Moses Bennett, had married my mother's cousin, Lucinda, the older daughter of Robert McKamey and Susanna McAfee), they were attracted toward each other from the first; indeed, they were "cut out" for each other by mutual friends before they met, and their acquaintance ripened rapidly to love. They were married at Robert McKamey's house February 19, 1839. My mother has a great fondness and pride in recounting the daring deeds of her ancestors, the McAfees. I think her stories of her father's brother, James McAfee, would fill a volume, while all of her aunts would come in for a fair share. Her own father, Colonel George McAfee, died when she was six years old. He was a tall, handsome man who always wore ruffled shirts and rode a good horse. "Uncle Jimmy," Cousin Robert's father, was a man of tremendous size, and was known up and down the river as "Big Jim McAfee," and wasn't afraid of the devil himself.

GENEVIEVE BENNETT CLARK.

SKETCH 18.

MRS. ROBBIE SCHUERMAN, NASHVILLE, TENN.

Mrs. Schuerman is a sister of Mrs. Jennie Marshall, of Unionville, Missouri (see Sketch 19), and the following exhibit shows one of the genealogical lines of these ladies and their brothers and sisters. It will be seen that their name, before marriage, was Banks. Their parents were Marvin Rhoten Banks and Mary Rochester (*nee* McAfee). Their mother was a woman of great beauty of form and face, and of the most lovely character. The children of Marvin R. Banks and wife were the following:

A—LAURA ALICE BANKS, who married Thomas C. Lipscomb, of Tennessee, and died June 13, 1895, without issue.

B—JENNIE MOORE BANKS, who married Neal B. Marshall, of Unionville, Missouri. She has one child, named Mary McAfee.

C—WILLIAM ROCHESTER BANKS, who married Sarah Northrup, relict of John Adams. He has two children, to wit: Northrup, and Mary Boothe.

D—MARY ROBERT BANKS, who married William H. Schuerman, of Cincinnati, Ohio. She has no children.

E—ANITA MOORE BANKS, who married T. Parker, of Laurel, Delaware. She has no children.

F—CLINTON S. BANKS, who is single, and resides in Denver, Colorado.

The mother of the above listed individuals was Mary Rochester McAfee, and her line is as follows: Her father was Robert Livingston McAfee, of Columbia, Missouri, and her mother was Jane Murray Rochester Moore. Robert L. died in 1870, and his wife died in 1855. The said Robert L. McAfee was the son of James McAfee (a soldier in the War of 1812), and Nancy McKamey. The said James McAfee was the son of George McAfee (one of the five pioneer McAfee brothers, and a soldier in the Revolution of 1776). Said George McAfee was the son of James McAfee, Sr., and one of the founders of Kentucky, and his wife was Susan Curry. Said James McAfee, Sr., was the son of John McAfee of Ireland, and married Jane McMichael. Said John McAfee of Ireland was the son of John McAfee of Scotland and married Mary Rogers. Said John McAfee of Scotland married Elizabeth Montgomery. John of Scotland and John of Ireland—father and son—were soldiers under William of Orange and took part in the Battle of the Boyne, July 1, 1690.

Professor Wm. H. Schuerman, husband of the subject of this sketch, is the Dean of the Engineering Department of Vanderbilt University.

SKETCH 19.

MRS. JENNIE M. MARSHALL, UNIONVILLE, MO.

Mrs. Marshall is the daughter of Marvin Rhoten Banks and his wife, Mary Rochester McAfee. She is the wife of Mr. Neal B. Marshall, of Unionville, Missouri, by whom she has one child, a daughter, named Mary McAfee Marshall. In the sketch of her sister, Mrs. Schuerman, which precedes this one, will be found additional particulars in regard to her family.

MRS. MARGARET D. GUTHRIE
HATTON, MO.
[See Sketch No. 20.]

JAMES I. McKAMEY.
[See Sketches Nos. 20 and 21.]

MRS. MANDY BROWN.
[See Sketch No. 20.]

EDWIN McAFEE.

SAN FRANCISCO, CAL.

[See Sketch No. 23.]

SKETCH 20.

MRS. MARGARET D. GUTHRIE, HATTON, MO.

Mrs. Guthrie, whose maiden name was Brown, is descended from George McAfee, the noted pioneer —one of the five McAfee brothers—through his daughter Susan, and was born October 25, 1853. Her father was C. Hamilton Brown, who was born August 14, 1812, and died April 2, 1897. Her mother, whose maiden name was Amanda McKamey, was born July 23, 1814, and died February 12, 1892. Miss Margaret D. Brown married Mr. D. Baxter Guthrie, who was born December 23, 1843. The children of D. Baxter Guthrie and Margaret D. Brown are the following: (a) ROBERT B. GUTHRIE; (b) MARY VE GUTHRIE, who is dead; (c) H. TAYLOR GUTHRIE; (d) MCKAMEY P. GUTHRIE; and (e) A. GRACE GUTHRIE.

C. Hamilton Brown, the father of Mrs. Guthrie, moved from Kentucky to near New Bloomfield, Calloway County, Missouri. Her maternal grandparents (Robert McKamey and Susan McAfee) came from Mercer County, Kentucky, to Missouri, and settled near New Bloomfield. Mrs. Guthrie had the following brothers and sister: (a) WILLIAM BROWN; (b) ROBERT MCKAMEY BROWN; (c) JAMES MCAFEE BROWN; (d) JOSEPH BROWN; (e) CHARLES H. BROWN; (f) J. SHANNON BROWN; and (g) MARY ANN BROWN, who married a Mr. Fry.

One of Mrs. Guthrie's maternal genealogical lines is as follows: She was the daughter of Amanda McKamey by her husband, C. Hamilton Brown; and the said Amanda was the daughter of Susanna McAfee by her husband, Robert McKamey; and the said Susanna was a daughter of George McAfee, one of the five pioneer brothers who helped to found Kentucky.

Several of the McKameys married McAfees, as follows: 1, as just shown, Robert McKamey married Susanna McAfee, daughter of George McAfee, the pioneer, and his wife, Susan Curry; 2, Nancy McKamey married James McAfee, a son of George, the pioneer, and brother to the Susanna McAfee who married Robert McKamey; 3, John McKamey (Robert's brother) married Margaret McAfee, daughter of James McAfee, the pioneer. There were other intermarriages between these two families which need not now be mentioned. One of the Rickenbaughs also married a McKamey, namely; Jacob Rickenbaugh, who married Nancy Clark McKamey, a daughter of the aforementioned John McKamey and Margaret McAfee, of whom mention will be made in Sketch 21, which relates to Miss Sara Rickenbaugh. The Robert McKamey who married Susanna McAfee had a son, James Irving McKamey, born in 1818, who was Mrs. Guthrie's uncle. Of this gentleman we shall presently speak. Robert McKamey was born in Pennsylvania March 7, 1780, and died in Missouri in 1850. He was a devoted member and officer of the Presbyterian Church in Missouri, and a man of noble character. His wife, Susanna McAfee, was born in Virginia August 26, 1779, just as the McAfees were starting for Kentucky, and died in 1852, leaving four children.

Mrs. Amanda Brown (*nee* McKamey) was born, as above stated, July 23, 1814, and died February 12, 1892. She was born near Harrodsburg, Kentucky, and when a girl of thirteen her parents moved to near New Bloomfield, Missouri. Here she united with the Presbyterian Church in 1828 when fourteen years of age, and down to her closing days she was a devotedly pious woman. March 9, 1837, she was married to Mr. C. H. Brown. In a modest, unassuming way she let her light shine as a Christian wife and mother. Among her last words were the cheering ones: "All's well with me." In the cemetery of Westminster Church her dust reposes, waiting for that morning without clouds when Christ shall come in power and glory to call his people to their full inheritance in his completed Kingdom.

James Irving McKamey, to whom reference has already been made, was a beloved uncle of Mrs. Guthrie, and it would not be proper to close this sketch without a word concerning this godly man. He was born near New Bloomfield, Missouri, February 10, 1818. Early in life he confessed Christ before men in the Presbyterian Church. In 1850

he was made a deacon, and about 1878 was made a ruling elder. When the Synodical Female College at Fulton was organized he was made one of its first Board of Trustees. To this school Mr. McKamey gave liberally, pledging his word for its debts to the point of parting with his childhood home. In 1881, when he was sixty-three years old, he was married to Miss Margaret Curry Rickenbaugh. He died about six years later, leaving no children, but having a considerable estate to bequeath to his widow and other loved ones. Modest, devout and conscientious, he was one of the quiet, reliable, good-natured and useful men on whom the life of a church and the welfare of a community are dependent. He was one of four brothers and sisters, to wit: (a) William H., who married Angelina Scott; (b) Lucinda, who married Moses Bennett; (c) Amanda, who married C. Hamilton Brown; (d) James Irving, who married Margaret Rickenbaugh.

SKETCH 21.

MISS SARA RICKENBAUGH, FULTON, MO.

Miss Rickenbaugh is a lineal descendant of James McAfee, the pioneer, through his daughter Margaret, who married John McKamey. One of her maternal ancestral lines is as follows: 1, James McAfee, the eldest of the five McAfee pioneers, and his wife, Agnes Clark, had a daughter Margaret; 2, this daughter, Margaret, who was born May 15, 1780, married John McKamey, who was born April 12, 1769, and to them was born a daughter, Nancy Clark McKamey; 3, this daughter, Nancy C. McKamey, who was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, December 7, 1801, married Jacob Rickenbaugh, who was born in Hagerstown, Maryland, December 10, 1798. They were married December 4, 1822. This couple (Jacob and Nancy) had eleven children, as follows: (a) Mary McKamey, who married Arthur Barnett; (b) Elizabeth, who married Adam McDonnald; (c) Margaret Curry, who married James I. McKamey; (d) Susan Harriet, who married John Barnett; (e) James McAfee; (f) Martha Anne, who married Edgar Rogan; (g) John Thomas; (h) Maria Jane, who married Robert Young; (j) Sara Frances, the subject of this sketch; and (k) Laura Anna.

It is said by the older members of the McAfee connections that the McAfees, as a rule, were dark-skinned people, with large muscular frames. The McKameys, on the other hand, were of slender build and florid complexion, and light or reddish hair. Nancy Clark McKamey resembled her father's side of the family, and was a beautiful girl with fair skin and blue eyes. Agnes Clark, the wife of James McAfee, the pioneer, was unlike her husband's family in complexion and features, and it is said their children had a larger share of good looks than the other McAfees possessed. It may be that this fact, also, helps to account for Nancy McKamey's pretty face.

Jacob Rickenbaugh came to Mercer County, Kentucky, in company with Peter Dunn about 1820, from Maryland, and they engaged in the business of mill-wrights. Their wives were first cousins, both being grand-daughters of James McAfee, the pioneer. After being associated for some years with Mr. Dunn in business Mr. Rickenbaugh moved to Missouri. He made his home at Fulton, where several of his children still reside. The Rickenbaughs have always been known as staunch Presbyterians, and they have long been among the most devoted and useful members of the Fulton Church. Their home was the gathering place for Presbyterian elders and ministers whenever Synod or Presbytery met in the town.

Miss Gretchen Yates, whose portrait appears in this work, is a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Randolph Yates, and Mrs. Yates is a daughter of Maria J. Rickenbaugh, who is a Mrs. Young. Mr. Chalmers B. Young, Mr. Carl Price Barnett, and Mr. Robert McAfee Barnett are all grandsons of Jacob Rickenbaugh and Nancy Clark McKamey, and lineal descendants of James McAfee, the pioneer.

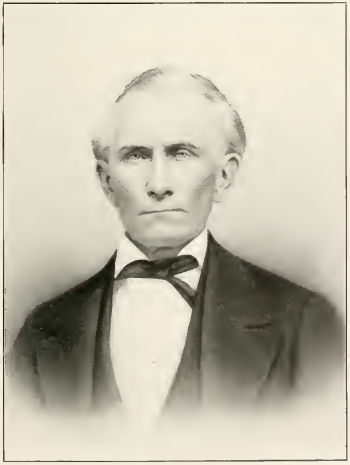
SKETCH 22.

J. P. MCAFEE, DILLY, TEXAS.

James Philip McAfee is the son of Rev. Robert L. McAfee by his wife Jane Rochester Moore, and was

JAMES McAFEE RICKENBAUGH.
FULTON, MO.
[See Sketch No. 21.]

JAMES I. McKAMEY.
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No. 21.]



JACOB RICKENBAUGH
[See Sketch No. 21.]

MRS. NANCY CLARK RICKENBAUGH.
[See Sketch No. 21.]

MISS GRETCHEN YATES.
FULTON, MO.
[See Sketch No. 21.]

CARL PRICE BARNETT.
[See Sketch No. 21.]

ROBERT McAFEE BARNETT.
[See Sketch No. 21.]

MRS. ANNE HAMILTON McAFEE.
WIFE OF COL. GEORGE McAFEE.
[See Sketches 21, 24 and 25.]

CHALMERS B. YOUNG.
LEXINGTON, MO.
[See Sketches 21, 24 and 25.]

born at New Bloomfield, Missouri, July 24, 1837. He formerly resided at Columbia, Missouri, but now lives at Dilly, Texas. His father (Robert L.) was a son of James McAfee by his wife, Nancy McKamey; and said James McAfee was a son of George McAfee, the pioneer, by his wife Susan Curry. Said George was a son of James McAfee, the Irish immigrant, and one of the five McAfee brothers who helped to found the Commonwealth of Kentucky.

James McAfee and Nancy (*nee* McKamey) had three children, to wit: (a) George; (b) Philip, and (c) Robert L., the only one who left children. Robert L. McAfee became a minister of the Gospel. He married Miss Jane Rochester Moore, the daughter of Lawson Moore and Jane Rochester. Robert L. and Jane left four children, as follows: (a) James Philip, the subject of this sketch; (b) Cornelia, who is in a convent in Louisville, Kentucky; (c) Laura, who died unmarried; and (d) Mary, who married Marvin Banks.

Mr. James Philip McAfee was married to Miss Anita Mays Alexander, a daughter of James B. Alexander and Lucy Fitzhugh Dade, October 22, 1862. Four children were born to them, as follows: (a) Jennie Moore McAfee, who married William B. Bates; (b) Lucy Dade McAfee, who married L. D. Brewer; (c) Ellen Fitzhugh McAfee, who married Robert Courtney; and (d) Mary McAfee.

SKETCH 23.

EDWIN McAFEE, SAN FRANCISCO, CAL.

Edwin McAfee is the son of Thomas Cleland McAfee by his wife, Martha Amelia Shrodes. Said Thomas Cleland was a son of Thomas Clarke McAfee by his wife Nancy Greathouse. And said Thomas Clarke was a son of James McAfee, the eldest of the five McAfee brothers, who helped to found Kentucky, by his wife Agnes Clark. Edwin McAfee, the subject of this sketch, was born in Louisville, Kentucky, January 5, 1851. He now resides in San Francisco, California, where he is employed in the Wells-Fargo Bank. His father, Thomas Cleland McAfee, was born December 7, 1817, married Miss Martha Amelia Shrodes, and died May 28, 1885. His mother, Martha Amelia, died April 27, 1894. Both parents died in San Francisco. Thomas Cleland and Martha Amelia had the following children, to wit: (a) Clarke William McAfee, who married Miss Lizzie Cook, of Louisville, Ky., and had two children, Lloyd and Harrison; (b) Lewis Carroll McAfee, who married Miss Lena Haggin, daughter of J. B. Haggin, of San Francisco, pioneer and millionaire, and had a son, James Ben Ali Haggin McAfee, and a daughter, Mabel; and (c) Edwin, the subject of this sketch, whose modesty caused him to withhold from the editor any details concerning his own life.

SKETCH 24.

GEORGE M. FORSYTHE, VANARSDELL, KY.

George McAfee Forsythe was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, October 20, 1837, and his present home is near the place of his birth and only a few miles from the farm on which lived the worthy old pioneer whose honored name he bears. It is probably true that no man mentioned in this volume is so closely and so variously related to the McAfees as is Mr. Forsythe; for not only both of his own parents, but both of his wife's parents were lineal descendants of one or more of the five McAfee pioneers. If Mr. Forsythe were blessed with children they would be lineal descendants of James, George, Robert, and Samuel McAfee—four of the five pioneers—and their exact relationship to their numerous McAfee kin could be reckoned only with the aid of a professional genealogist.

First, his father, Andrew Forsythe, was the son of Jane McAfee (daughter of Robert McAfee, the pioneer) by her husband Matthew Forsythe; secondly, his mother, Narcissa W. McAfee, was a daughter of Colonel George McAfee, and grand-daughter of George, the pioneer; thirdly, his wife was the daughter of John B. McAfee, grand-daughter of John McAfee, and great-granddaughter of James, the pioneer; and lastly, Mrs. Forsythe's mother was Margaret McAfee, a daughter of the Robert McAfee whose father was Samuel McAfee, the pioneer.

Mr. Forsythe is engaged in farming on lands which the McAfee Company probably surveyed in 1773. He has been, since 1887, an elder in the New Providence Church, which his ancestors founded in 1785. A more thorough-going McAfee than he it would be difficult to find. He is one of Mercer County's worthy citizens. For additional items in regard to his family see the sketch next following, namely: that of his twin-brother, Wm. S. Forsyth.

SKETCH 25.

WILLIAM S. FORSYTH, PARIS, MO.

William Stockwell Forsyth, now a citizen of Paris, Monroe County, Missouri, was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, on the twentieth of October, 1837. His father was Andrew Forsyth, son of Matthew Forsyth. His mother was Narcissa W. McAfee, daughter of Colonel George McAfee, and his wife, Anne Hamilton, and said Colonel George McAfee was a son of George McAfee, the pioneer. The mother of William S. Forsyth's father was Jane McAfee, daughter of Robert McAfee, the pioneer. Thus Mr. Forsyth is a lineal descendant of two of the pioneer McAfee brothers, namely: Robert and George. Mr. Forsyth was a twin brother of George M. Forsythe, whose sketch precedes this one. The Missouri brother leaves off the final *e* from his name, but the Kentucky brother retains it. Wm. S. Forsyth was taken to live with his uncle, John Forsyth, when a boy of eleven years, and by this uncle he was reared.

Colonel George McAfee, son of George, the pioneer, married Anne Hamilton, and by her he had the following children, to wit: (a) Narcissa W. McAfee, who was born August 19, 1804, and married Andrew Forsyth, and died April 22, 1875; (b) John McAfee, who was born January 9, 1806, and died May 29, 1876; (c) Margaret McAfee, who was born December 6, 1807, and died January 21, 1829; (d) Mary Bennett McAfee; (e) W. H. McAfee; and (f) George McAfee, M. D. Colonel George McAfee, the father of the foregoing six children, was born April 28, 1777, and died May 28, 1819. Anne Hamilton, wife of the foregoing, was born January 11, 1777, and died April 7, 1851. A good portrait of this lady will be found in this volume.

Andrew Forsyth, father of William Stockwell Forsyth, was born December 26, 1796. He married Narcissa W. McAfee, who was born August 19, 1804, and died April 22, 1875. This couple had eight children, as follows: (a) Mary J. Lee Forsyth, who was born October 2, 1831, married Wm. R. Evans, M. D., and by him had Ludwig, Jennie, Mollie, and Andrew; (b) Robert B. Forsyth, who was born May 21, 1834, married Mary E. Irvine, and had William and Bettie; (c) William Stockwell Forsyth, who was born October 20, 1837, married Annie M. Fulton, and now lives in Paris, Missouri; (d) George McAfee Forsythe, who was twin brother of the said William S. Forsyth, born October 20, 1837, married M. E. McAfee, and now lives in Mercer County, Kentucky, as stated in the preceding sketch; (e) M. L. Forsyth, who was born December 19, 1840, married Bettie Griffin, and has had Vevie, Dunbar, Louise, and Willette; (f) Jos. H. Forsythe, who was born May 23, 1843, married Adeline Shryock January 16, 1873, and died February 27, 1886, leaving Wylie and Jean; (g) Ann E. Forsyth, who was born October 17, 1846, married William P. Moyes, and has Joe, Maggie and Willette; (h) W. Etta Forsyth, who was born April 17, 1849, and married Edwin Ferguson, and has Andrew and William F.

Matthew Forsyth, the grandfather of William Stockwell Forsyth, was born March 10, 1760, and died August 7, 1846. His wife was Jane McAfee, daughter of Robert McAfee, the pioneer. She was born July 26, 1769, and died February 17, 1839. This couple had eight children, as follows: (a) Robert; (b) Andrew; (c) John; (d) William H.; (e) Samuel; (f) Sarah; (g) James; and (h) Julia Burford.

William Stockwell Forsyth was married to Miss Annie Mariah Fulton, by the Rev. J. M. Travis, D. D., May 18, 1871. Miss Fulton was a daughter of John Milton Fulton and his wife, Mary Julina McCutcheon, of Williamsburg District, South Carolina. Mr. and Mrs. Forsyth have had the following

children, to wit: (a) a son who was born and who also died February 13, 1874; (b) James Fulton Forsyth, who was born October 24, 1875; (c) Mary Julina (called "Lina"), who was born October 15, 1881; and (d) Ben Travis Forsyth, who was born June 4, 1885.

The following sketch of Mr. Forsyth is from the pen of his pastor, the Rev. Dr. J. M. Travis:

"I became acquainted with Mr. Wm. Stockwell Forsyth in the summer of 1859. He had just left Westminster College. His father had offered to give him a medical education, but after consultation with his uncle John Forsyth, he began business for himself on his farm in Monroe County, Missouri. He was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, October 20, 1837.

"His uncle John Forsyth, of Missouri, on a visit to his father in Stockwell's infancy said to his mother: 'When I get married I want that boy.' The mother said: 'Well, you may have him,' hardly aware of what she was promising. After his marriage he sent for his boy, now about eleven years of age. The mother, with almost the tears of bereavement, adhered to her promise, and Stockwell's home henceforth was in Missouri. His uncle and his wife (Isabella Berry) were persons of sterling qualities, both of strong minds and refined tastes, and were strong characters. They had two daughters, Mary Lock, wife of Mr. J. N. Powers; and Ella Adair, wife of Judge Jas. M. Crutcher, all of Paris, Missouri. Mr. John Forsyth was an elder in New Hope Presbyterian Church. This was Stockwell's home, and while he holds in tenderest regard his parents he never forgets the wise and faithful training that he received from boyhood to manhood. A pure heart and an unblemished character, was his aunt's ideal; true manliness, that of his uncle.

"He started in life in war times. Various circumstances kept him out of the regular army of the Confederacy and he would join no marauding bands. Besides, his uncle's negroes had been taken from him and he was needed at home. He united with the church when young and was soon after elected elder, and has been an active and capable officer from the start, first in New Hope Church and now in Paris. He, in 1880, was a delegate to the General Assembly in Charleston, South Carolina. He often attends the church courts, and is a working trustee of Westminster College.

"May 18, 1871, he was married by the Rev. J. M. Travis, D. D., to Miss Annie Mariah Fulton, who migrated from Williamsburg, South Carolina, at the close of the war. They are the parents of three living children, two having gone before.

"He and his wife are staunch adherents of Presbyterian usages and pillars in the church. Theirs too is a hospitality open and unostentatious, refined and genial, such as reminds one of Missouri before the days of Reconstruction. Possessed of ample means, and with a heart for the work, good causes, such as he approves, find in him a generous supporter. Outspoken in his opposition to immorality and littleness in conduct, he has enemies; independent in his opinions and self-reliant in his undertakings, there are those who oppose him; successful in business, there are those who envy him; but his warm heart and unselfish kindness bind friends to him in tenderest affection and confidence. The writer is one of them. Thirty and six years of intimate association enables him to write with confidence. He, his wife, and dear children occupy the place of a brother and his family in the old pastor's heart. J. M. Travis."

SKETCH 26.

MISS DAINGERFIELD, FOWLER, CALIFORNIA.

Miss Sally Daingerfield is descended from James McAfee, the pioneer, through his son, Thomas Clarke McAfee. She is a daughter of Joseph Fauntleroy Daingerfield, M. D., by his wife, Mee Edmunds. Miss Mee Edmunds was the daughter of Edwin Short Edmunds, by his wife, Sally McAfee; and the said Sally McAfee was a daughter of Thomas Clarke McAfee, by his wife, Nancy Greathouse; and said Thomas Clarke McAfee was the youngest child of James McAfee, the pioneer.

Miss Daingerfield's father was the son of Major

Joseph Fauntleroy Daingerfield and Sally Withrow; and said Joseph Fauntleroy was the son of LeRoy Daingerfield, by his wife, Elizabeth Parker; and said LeRoy was the son of Colonel William Daingerfield, by his wife, Apphia Fauntleroy; and said Colonel William was the son of Colonel Daingerfield, by his wife, a Miss Meriwether. Her mother, Miss Mee Edmunds, after the death of her first husband (Dr. Daingerfield), married the Rev. Henry VanDyke Nevins, D. D. She was, as above stated, the daughter of Edwin Short Edmunds, by his wife, Sally McAfee; and said Edwin Short was the son of John Thomas Edmunds, by his wife, Eliza K. Randolph; and said John Thomas was the son of Major Thomas Edmunds, of the Order of the Cincinnati, by his wife, Martha Short. The wife of James McAfee, the pioneer, Miss Agnes Clark, was the daughter of Thomas Clark, who is believed to have been a near kinsman of General George Rogers Clark, "the Washington of the West." This relationship of Agnes to General Clark has been claimed by various members of the McAfee connection, but the present writer is unable to assert it as an ascertained fact. Several considerations may be mentioned as giving some color to this claim. First, there is the name. The maiden name of James McAfee's wife was Clark. Secondly, General Clark came from Albemarle County, Virginia, and Agnes (Clark) McAfee came from Botetourt County in the same State. Thirdly, General Clark's middle name was Rogers (after spelt Rodgers), and James McAfee's grandmother was a Miss Mary Rogers. Fourthly, when General Clark first visited the Kentucky wilderness in 1775, he came to the very neighborhood in which the McAfees had made a settlement two years before, and in which several of them were busy putting in a crop when General Clark reached it. We think it very probable that the Clarks and McAfees were blood kin, but can not assert it to be the case.

Mrs. Sally McAfee Edmunds, who is Miss Daingerfield's maternal grandmother, is the only living daughter of Thomas Clark McAfee and the only living grandchild of James McAfee, the pioneer. An excellent portrait of her will be found on page 252, which was made from a photograph taken on her eightieth birthday. She was born at James McAfee's old Stone House (which was erected in 1790, and is still a habitable dwelling), in Mercer County, Kentucky, April 4, 1822. She was married to Mr. Edwin Short Edmunds, September 12, 1843. She has had five children, to wit: (a) Mee Edmunds, who married, first, Dr. Daingerfield, and later, the Rev. Dr. Nevins; (b) George McAfee Edmunds, who married Ida Craig, and left no children; (c) Thomas McAfee Edmunds, who married Nettie Van Vlear, and left three children, Evaline Louise, Marguerite and Thomas, Jr.

Miss Mee Edmunds, who became the mother of Miss Daingerfield, was born at Clay Hill, Christian County, Kentucky. She married Dr. Daingerfield, February 3, 1869, and by him had two children, as follows: (a) Sally, the subject of this sketch; and (b) Marion Louise, who died in infancy. After the death of her first husband, Mrs. Daingerfield married the Rev. Dr. Nevins.

Thomas Clark McAfee, son of James, the pioneer, and great-grandfather of Miss Daingerfield, was a favorite son of his father; and when his father wrote his will shortly before his death in 1811, he bequeathed his homestead and a large body of land to him, and made him one of his executors. Thomas Clark McAfee was born at McAfee Station (or Fort) in 1785, married Nancy Greathouse, daughter of Major Isaac Greathouse, in 1808, and died at the old Stone House in 1827. His wife survived him about five years. To this couple eight children were born: (a) George Greathouse McAfee, who became a Presbyterian minister, was born November 20, 1809, and married Martha Anne Eliza Mary Jane Sally Edmunds, the only daughter of John Edmunds and Eliza Hannon Randolph. George and wife had one daughter, George Anne, who married Charles F. Ratcliffe, M. D., of Christian County, Kentucky. Charles F. and George Anne had eleven children, to wit: 1. Charles Theodore; 2. Kate; 3. Richard; 4. Edwin Edmunds; 5. Anne, born in 1861, and died in 1892; 6. George, who

married and has children; 7. Mee, who married and has children; 8. Henry; 9. Mary, who married, has one child and lives in Alexandria, Louisiana; 10. Mattie, who died in childhood; and 11. Jenny Carroll, who with her mother lives in San Antonio, Texas.

(b) The second child of Thomas Clark McAfee and Nancy Greathouse was Isaac, who was born March 3, 1812, and died March 19, 1848. He married Mary Davis, of Taylorsville, Kentucky.

(c) The third child of Thomas and Nancy was Elizabeth Ridgley, who was born May 19, 1815, and died July 28, 1834.

(d) The fourth child was Thomas Cleland McAfee, who was born December 7, 1817, and died May 28, 1885. He married Martha Shrodes, of Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, who died in San Francisco, California, April 27, 1894, leaving three children, as follows: 1. Clarke William, who married Miss Lizzie Cook, of Louisville, Kentucky, and had issue, Lloyd and Harrison; 2. Lewis Carroll, who married a Miss Lena Haggin; and 3. Edwin, who now lives in San Francisco.

(e) The fifth child of Thomas and Nancy (to be mentioned here) was William Lewis McAfee, who married Cornelia Zane, of Wheeling, West Virginia. The children of William L. and Cornelia are the following: 1. Blanche, who married Thomas Atcherson, and had several children, all of whom died in infancy except Blanche and Cornelia; 2. Mary, who married Vess Hamilton, and had two daughters; 3. Cora, who is unmarried. Mrs. William L. McAfee, Mrs. Hamilton, Miss Cora McAfee and the four granddaughters live in Asheville, North Carolina.

(f) The sixth child of Thomas Clarke McAfee and Nancy Greathouse was Sarah, who was born April 4, 1822, of whom an account has already been given in this sketch.

(g) The seventh child of Thomas C. and Nancy was America McAfee, who was born April 26, 1824, and died December 28, 1845. She married Thomas Porter, of Versailles, Kentucky, and had one daughter, Mee, who married a Mr. Craig.

(h) The eighth and last child of Thomas Clarke McAfee and his wife, Nancy, was named Nancy Clarke McAfee, who was born July 11, 1827, and died November 17, 1832.

SKETCH 27.

MRS. W. L. MCAFEE, ASHEVILLE, NORTH CAROLINA.

Mrs. McAfee is the widow of William Lewis McAfee, the youngest child of Thomas Clarke McAfee and Nancy Greathouse. He was born in Mercer County, Kentucky (and probably at the old "Stone House"), October 16, 1819. When a young man he moved to Louisville, and became a prominent business man of that city. There he met and married Miss Cornelia Zane, youngest daughter of Noah Zane, of Wheeling, West Virginia, on the 28th day of April, 1846. He afterwards moved to Wheeling, West Virginia, and took an active part in the development of that place. To this couple three children were born, to wit: (a) Blanche, who married Thomas Acheson, by whom she had two children, Blanche and Cornelia. (b) Mary Lizzie, who married Sylvester Hamilton, of Woodsfield, Ohio. Mr. Hamilton is dead. Two daughters of this couple, Blanche and Maud, now live in Asheville, North Carolina. (c) Cora, the third child of William L. and Cornelia, is unmarried and lives with her widowed mother in Asheville, North Carolina. William L. McAfee died in Asheville, North Carolina, November 8, 1890, aged seventy-one years.

Noah Zane, the father of Mrs. McAfee, was a man of large landed estates in Wheeling, West Virginia, and gave liberally to the endowment of several churches in that city, and to Lindsley Institute, and also to various other institutions. Columbus, Lancaster and Zanesville, Ohio, were laid out by him, the last-mentioned city being named for him. During the investment of Fort McHenry by the British, in September, 1814, the Elizabeth Zane who carried powder to the besieged Americans in the fort was a great aunt of Mrs. McAfee.

Many of the details presented in the sketch next preceding this relate to the family of William L. McAfee, to which the reader is referred.

SKETCH 28.

MISS ANNIE T. DAVEISS, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

Miss Annie Trimble Daveiss, fourth child of the late William Daveiss, of Harrodsburg, Kentucky, by his wife, Maria Thompson, is a lineal descendant of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, who moved to Kentucky with the McAfee colony in 1779. Her father —known as Major William Daveiss—was the only child of Judge Samuel Daveiss by his wife, Hannah McAfee; and the said Hannah was the fifth child of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, by his wife, Hannah McCormick. Mrs. Maria Daveiss, *nee* Thompson, the mother of the subject of this sketch, was the daughter of the Hon. John Burton Thompson, former United States Senator from Kentucky, from 1853 to 1859. Mrs. William Daveiss came of a family noted for their intellectuality and strength of character, and having enjoyed fine educational and social advantages and being a devout adherent of the Presbyterian Church, she was honored and admired by all who knew her as one of the best examples of the culture of Central Kentucky during the period covered by her long life.

Judge Samuel Daveiss was a brother of the distinguished Colonel Joseph Hamilton Daveiss, who was killed November 7, 1811, at the Battle of Tippecanoe, and was prominent in the history of Kentucky. He was an able and successful lawyer, a gentleman of the old school, and accumulated a comfortable estate, which he left to his only son. He was connected by ties of blood or marriage with a number of the most prominent families of Kentucky.

Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, the great grandfather of Miss Annie T. Daveiss, was one of the five distinguished sons of James McAfee, Senior, who took an active and prominent part in that early movement which resulted in the founding of the Commonwealth of Kentucky. He was born in October, 1748, as appears from the inscription on his grave-stone in New Providence Churchyard. He died June 8, 1801. His wife was Miss Hannah McCormick, a lady of Scotch-Irish descent, who came to Virginia from Pennsylvania. This couple had eight children, to wit:

(a) The first child of Samuel and Hannah McAfee was John McAfee, who married Margaret McKamey.

(b) The second was Anne, who married Thomas King, of Shelby County, Kentucky.

(c) The third was Robert, who married Priscilla Armstrong.

(d) The fourth was Jane, who married Beriah Magoffin, Senior, the father of the late Beriah Magoffin, who was Governor of Kentucky at the outbreak of the Civil War, and resigned August 18, 1862. Governor Magoffin married a Miss Shelby, a daughter of Governor Isaac Shelby, and had a large family of children. Among these were the following: 1. Sue, who married a Mr. Gaither; 2. Beriah (third), who has long resided in Duluth, Minnesota; 3. Gertrude, who married Mr. Frank Singleton; 4. Ebenezer, who resides in Harrodsburg, Kentucky.

(e) The fifth was Hannah, who married Judge Samuel Daveiss, as already shown.

(f) The sixth was William, who was a merchant in Harrodsburg, and married a Mrs. Lowery.

(g) The seventh was Samuel, Jr., who died young without having married.

(h) The eighth and last child of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, by his wife, Hannah McCormick, was Mary, a most beautiful woman, who married the Hon. Thomas P. Moore, once a member of the United States House of Representatives, and United States Minister to the Republic of Colombia from 1829 to 1833.

Judge Samuel Daveiss and his wife, Hannah McAfee, seem to have had only one child, a son, William, who married Miss Maria Thompson. William and Maria had eight children, whose names appear below:

(a) The first child of William and Maria was Hannah Daveiss, who married William H. Pittman, by whom she had six children, as follows: 1. Nannie Trabue Pittman, who married Archer Anderson and by him had one child, named Jean Ham-

ilton Anderson; 2. William Daveiss Pittman, who married Sallie D. Patterson by whom he had four children, Velona (deceased), Marie, Cora and William Daveiss Pittman, Jr.; 3. Asa Pittman (now deceased), who married Mazie Walker, and had one child, Martha Pittman; 4. Marie D. Pittman, who died in infancy; 5. Trabue Pittman; and 6. William H. Pittman (deceased).

(b) The second child of William and Maria Daveiss was John Burton Thompson Daveiss, who married Miss Leonora Hamilton, by whom he had two children, to wit: 1. Maria Thompson Daveiss; and 2. Mortimer Hamilton Daveiss.

(c) The third child of William and Maria was Nannie, who died in infancy.

(d) The fourth was Annie Trimble, the subject of this sketch.

(e) The fifth was Samuel, who died in infancy.

(f) The sixth child was Jean Hamilton, who married William Warren, and by him had four children, to wit: 1. Marie, who married Lucien Beckner, and had issue, Jean and Elizabeth; 2. William Warren (deceased); 3. Jean Hamilton; and 4. Letitia Craig.

(g) The seventh child was William J. Daveiss.

(h) The eighth and last child of Major William Daveiss and Maria Thompson, was Samuel Daveiss, who resides in Louisville, Kentucky.

The father of Judge Samuel Daveiss, and Colonel Joseph Hamilton Daveiss, was Joseph Daveiss, and his mother was Jean Hamilton. The said Jean was the daughter of Robert Hamilton by his wife, Margaret McKee. Jean had a brother, William Hamilton, who married and moved to Kentucky; and a sister, Miriam Hamilton, who married a Mr. Robinson, and became the mother of General Robinson, who was in the Mexican War. The above-mentioned Robert Hamilton was a son of Ninian Hamilton, and came from Scotland to Ireland, and thence to Pennsylvania, where he met and married Margaret McKee. The McKee family to which said Margaret McKee belonged were Scotch-Irish. They passed from Scotland to Ireland, and sided with the Protestants under William and Mary (1690). In 1737 they migrated to Pennsylvania, and from thence moved down into the Valley of Virginia. It thus appears that the Daveiss family in Kentucky are descended along several lines from excellent Scotch-Irish Presbyterian stock.

SKETCH 29.

SAMUEL D. JOHNSON, FRANKFORT, KENTUCKY.

Samuel Daveiss Johnson, younger of the two sons of Benjamin F. Johnson, by his wife, Hannah Ellen Moore, was born in Frankfort, Kentucky, August 31, 1850. On the 27th of January, 1892, he was married to Miss Margaretta Harrison Martin, daughter of William Howard Martin and his wife, Margaretta Ross Harrison. Mr. Johnson is one of the successful merchants of Frankfort, Kentucky. He is a lineal descendant of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, and his wife, Hannah McCormick, and is nearly related to the Moores, Magoffins, Daveisses and other prominent Kentucky families. Much of the matter given in the foregoing sketch of Miss Annie T. Daveiss relates directly to Mr. Johnson's family and need not be repeated here. His mother, Hannah Ellen Moore, was a daughter of the Hon. Thomas P. Moore by his wife, Mary McAfee; and the said Mary was the youngest of the eight children of Samuel McAfee, the pioneer, by his wife, Hannah McCormick. Mary was a lady of great beauty, and became the wife of Thomas P. Moore, as above stated. The children of Thomas P. Moore and Mary McAfee were the following:

(a) The first child was James J. Moore, who accompanied his father to Mexico as a Lieutenant in the regiment of which his father was Lieutenant Colonel, and was a gallant and meritorious young officer.

(b) The second child of Thomas P. and Mary was Mary Lock Moore, who married Dr. C. S. Abell, a surgeon in the United States Regular Army during the Mexican War. Dr. Abell and Mary L. Moore left two children, to wit: 1. Russell Abell, M. D., who died in St. Louis, Missouri, in January, 1895; and 2. Mary, who is unmarried.

Mrs. Abell died before reaching middle life, and Dr. Abell lived to old age, dying in 1903.

(c) The third and last child of Thomas P. Moore and Mary McAfee, was Hannah Ellen Moore, who married Benjamin F. Johnson, and was the mother of the subject of this sketch.

Thomas P. Moore was but a boy, attending school at Transylvania University, when the War of 1812 broke out, but a year later, fired by the fervent patriotism of his race, he enlisted. He was made Captain of one of the Kentucky companies, and rendered conspicuous services in the campaign against the British and Indians in Northern Ohio and Canada. In 1823 he was elected to represent his district in Congress, and soon after he was appointed by President Jackson to represent the United States as Minister to Colombia. He was engaged in the peaceful pursuits of life at Harrodsburg, Kentucky, when the War with Mexico began (1846), and he tendered his services to the Government. Soon after he was commissioned as Lieutenant-Colonel in the Regular Army, and served throughout the campaign in Mexico with distinction. He was a gallant and brilliant man, both in war and in political life.

Mr. Benjamin Franklin Johnson, husband of Hannah Ellen Moore, was a prominent and successful merchant of Frankfort, Kentucky. Mr. and Mrs. B. F. Johnson left but two children, both of them sons, as follows: (a) William McAfee Johnson; and (b) Samuel Daveiss Johnson, the subject of this sketch, who is the leading dry goods merchant of Frankfort.

SKETCH 30.

DWIGHT A. McAFEE, SHELBYVILLE, KENTUCKY

Mr. Dwight A. McAfee is a lineal descendant of George McAfee, the pioneer, and his wife, Susan Curry, as is shown herein. We regret that the records of Mr. McAfee's family have, for some reason, not been accessible to him or to the author of this work; and this fact, together with the extreme modesty of the subject of this sketch, accounts for the very meagre details presented concerning him and his family. Mr. McAfee resided in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, up to about 1902, when he moved to Shelby County, Kentucky, and is now there engaged in farming and stock-raising.

The father of Dwight A. McAfee was William H. McAfee; and said William H. was the son of Colonel George McAfee and Anne Hamilton; and said Colonel George was a son of George McAfee, the pioneer, and Susan Curry.

SKETCH 31.

R. J. ALEXANDER, McBRAYER, KENTUCKY.

Mr. Richard Johnson Alexander is a son of James Alexander and Mary Cardwell, and lives in Anderson County, Kentucky, near the village of McBrayer, where he was born and has spent his life. He is engaged in farming and stock-raising near the bank of Salt River, very close to where the McAfee Company first began surveying land on that stream in July, 1773. He is a lineal descendant of Robert McAfee, the pioneer, who was in that immediate vicinity with his four companions 131 years ago. Mr. Richard J. Alexander married Miss Julie Ann Dickey, by whom he has had five children, to wit: (a) Mildred Alexander, who married Robert Phillips; (b) Fannie Alexander, who married William Painter; (c) Emma Alexander, who married J. W. Sale; (e) William Alexander, who married Mary Cunningham; and (f) Jinger Alexander, who married Fanny Hardwick.

The aforesaid James Alexander who married Mary Cardwell was a son of William Alexander, by his wife, Margaret Bailey, whom he married in Virginia, in 1783. The said Mary Cardwell, the mother of R. J. Alexander, was the daughter of John R. Cardwell; and said John Cardwell married Anna McAfee, daughter of Robert McAfee, the pioneer. The aforesaid William Alexander, who married Margaret Bailey, came to what is now Anderson County, in 1783, and erected the first dwelling ever built there by a white man, and on this place Mr. R. J. Alexander now resides.

SKETCH 32.

J. M. ARMSTRONG, ALEXANDRIA, LOUISIANA.

James Mitchell Armstrong was born and reared in Mercer County, Kentucky, in the Salt River neighborhood. His wife was Miss Mary Vincent Turner. His father was Joseph Armstrong, who married Miss Charlotte May. Joseph Armstrong had a brother William, who was a member of Captain Robert B. McAfee's company in the regiment of Colonel Richard M. Johnson and served in several of the campaigns of the War of 1812. Mr. James M. Armstrong is a lineal descendant of George McAfee, Sr., through his eldest daughter, Mary. His paternal grandfather was Robert Armstrong, the husband of the Mary McAfee just mentioned as the eldest daughter of George McAfee, the pioneer, and his wife, Susan Curry. Attention is here called to the fact that in the list of the children of George McAfee, the pioneer, as given by General Robert B. McAfee in his Autobiography, the name of Mary does not appear. That was a strange omission for such a chronicler as General McAfee to make; and we incline to the opinion that the fault lies not with him, but with some careless copyist of his manuscript history. Mr. Armstrong, the subject of this sketch, is thoroughly informed in regard to his family history, and he positively asserts that his grandmother, the wife of Robert Armstrong, was named Mary, and was the eldest daughter of George McAfee, Sr., the pioneer.

From Mr. James M. Armstrong, the author has obtained the following items of interest:

1. He states that George McAfee, the pioneer, was the tallest one of the five McAfee brothers, he being six feet, four inches high, and of slender build. He was called "The Cornstalk" by his relatives.

2. Joseph Armstrong, father of the subject of this sketch, married Charlotte May, whose mother was a sister of old Dr. Thomas Cleland, of precious memory. Joseph was a boy four years old when George McAfee died, and he used to tell his children that he remembered seeing the old pioneer (his grandfather) before his death in 1803.

3. Robert Armstrong and Mary McAfee, his wife, were in James McAfee's Fort on Salt River, May 9, 1781, when about one hundred and fifty Indians attacked it. This is Mr. James M. Armstrong's statement, but it conflicts with General Robert B. McAfee's narrative. The General expressly affirms that it was in the fall of 1781—months after this attack on the fort—that Robert and Alexander Armstrong, the eldest sons, respectively, of John and William Armstrong, joined the McAfee settlement. The author does not undertake to reconcile these two accounts. Mr. James M. Armstrong says it was his grandfather (Robert), who was sent out of the fort that morning as a messenger to run the gauntlet, as it were, and convey to the men at the Harrodsburg Station information of the perilous situation of the thirteen beleaguered men in the fort and who met them as he ran, coming in full gallop, about forty-five strong, to the relief of the McAfees, led by Colonel McGary.

4. George McAfee, the pioneer, had two sons who were men of tremendous size and daring, namely: James, and George, Jr. The former was known as "Big Jim McAfee," and his courage and resolution were equal to his physical strength. George, who was afterwards known as Colonel George McAfee, and married Anne Hamilton, was also a man to be shunned in an encounter. These two brothers, and Joseph Woods, and William Armstrong, Sr., and Jr., Robert Forsythe, and William Adams, all related to each other by blood or marriage, one or both, were members of that company of Colonel Richard M. Johnson's regiment in the War of 1812, of which Robert B. McAfee was the captain. That company numbered one hundred and sixty-three men and officers, and took a conspicuous part in the charge against Tecumseh's warriors in the swamp at the Battle of the Thames, October, 1813.

5. Mary McAfee (the grandmother of Mr. J. M. Armstrong) was milking the cows at her father's place below James McAfee's Station late one even-

ing, and she heard the hooting of what sounded like an owl in the dark forest just across the river. At that moment her father (George, the pioneer) came up to her. He also had heard that mysterious, ominous hoot, and he inquired of his daughter, then a mere girl—whether to get information or to warn her, does not appear—"Was that an owl that hooted then?" Her innocent reply was "Yes; and another one hooted a little farther up the river a while ago." Her father, who, like all the McAfee men, was fully versed in the tricks of the savages, said to her: "Hurry up your milking; that's Indians." His wife was sick in bed at the time, but he went at once into the cabin and told her to get up, as he had just heard Indians hooting across the river. She said he must be mistaken; and, furthermore, she was too ill to go out. He told her he was going at once, and would take the children. She saw he was sure of danger, and she quickly arose, and was soon on the only available horse with one child behind her, and another in her lap. Mary went afoot, carrying her three-year-old sister on her back. It was three miles to the fort, but they all got there in safety. The next day some men of the settlement found the unmistakable signs of Indians behind a fodder stack where they had hidden in order to kill anyone who should venture out of the house in that direction. Had the family attempted to remain that night in that defenceless cabin all of them would probably have been scalped or carried away into captivity. This is a sample of the conditions under which the pioneers settled Kentucky.

Miss Mary Vincent Turner, whom Mr. J. M. Armstrong married, passed through some remarkable vicissitudes in her early life. Her parents came from Alabama to Louisiana in 1857 and settled on the Calcasieu River, forty miles west of the town of Alexandria. During the Civil War she lost both parents, four uncles and three aunts. The male relatives died in the army. Thus she was left without a white relative to care for her, and she was sent to the Camp Street Orphan Asylum in New Orleans to be reared.

The children of James M. Armstrong and his wife Mary are the following: (a) Joseph Lapsley; (b) Richard Turner; (c) Lotta Hermenia; (d) James Mitchell, Jr.; (e) Rufus Vincent, and (f) Martha Ashley.

SKETCH 33.

MISS HARRIET L. McAFEE, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Mr. James Alexander McAfee, of Louisville, Kentucky, was the grandson of General Robert B. McAfee, who was the son of Robert, the pioneer. He was born in the old Stone House in Mercer County, Kentucky. His father, William A. McAfee, married Anna E. Crockett, who was a daughter of Anna E. Instone and Samuel Crockett. Samuel Crockett was a son of Colonel Anthony Crockett, of the Revolution.

Mr. James A. McAfee was a man of superior attainments, and had a strong personality. In every sphere of life he did his duty; no responsibility was shirked, but he never impressed you that duty was irksome. His manner, sympathetic and quiet, gave a strong assurance of the man's ability and sincerity. In appearance, the high cheek bones, broad forehead, blue eyes and dark hair, besides his height, 6 feet 2 1-2 inches, he had the characteristics of the McAfees. He married Stella Joyes, a daughter of Judge John Joyes and granddaughter of Major Thomas Martin, of the Revolution, and one of the original members of the Society of Cincinnatus. They had three children: Harriet Lanier; Annie, who married Robert Dalaney; and Leal. In his home life, the man showed at his best. They spent half of their time in Louisville and the rest in a suburb, Pewee Valley, about sixteen miles away. His nephew, John Woods, made his home with them. Mr. James A. McAfee was drowned while fishing in Florida.

GROUP THREE.

PATRONS DESCENDED FROM THE WOODSES ONLY.

SKETCH 34.

JAMES W. LAPSLEY, LATE OF ANNISTON, ALABAMA.

Judge James Woods Lapsley, who was among the earlier original subscribers to this publication, died before it was issued. He was a lineal descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through two of Michael's children, namely; his daughter Sarah, and his son Andrew. The *data* concerning his family and himself were all derived from him, and nearly all that appears in this sketch was from his own pen. He was the son of Robert Armstrong Lapsley and his wife Catharine Walker; and the said Robert A. Lapsley was the son of John Lapsley and his wife Mary Armstrong; and the said John Lapsley was the son of Joseph Lapsley and his wife Sarah Woods; and the said Sarah Woods was the daughter of Michael Woods of Blair Park and his wife Mary Campbell. This exhibits one of the lines of his descent from the old pioneer of Albemarle County, Virginia; the other will now be given.

The aforesaid Catharine Walker, who was Judge Lapsley's mother, was, like the man she married, a lineal descendant of Michael, of the fourth remove, as follows: She was the daughter of Margaret Woods by her husband John M. Walker; and said Margaret Woods was the daughter of James Woods by his wife Nancy Rayburn; and said James Woods was the son of Andrew Woods and his wife Mary Poage, and said Andrew Woods was the son of Michael Woods of Blair Park by his wife Mary Campbell.

The Lapsleys came from the North of Ireland to Pennsylvania, where some of their descendants still reside. The Joseph Lapsley who married Sarah Woods came to Virginia about 1734. July 6, 1742, he bought 338 acres of land from Benjamin Borden, near where Lexington, Virginia, now stands. June 18, 1752, he bought 400 acres more from James McDowell, adjoining the first named tract. His will bears date November 29, 1787, and in it his wife Sarah, and his sons John and Joseph are named as executors. John and Joseph were both in the Revolutionary Army. John was with "Morgan's Mounted Men," and was wounded at the Battle of Brandywine while carrying orders across the field. He married Mary Armstrong December 22, 1778, and moved to Lincoln County, Kentucky, about 1795, for in October of that year he sold his lands near Lexington, Virginia, and in the deed he is said to be then a citizen of Lincoln County, Kentucky.

To return to the original settler, Joseph Lapsley, Sr., in "Foote's Sketches of North Carolina" are quotations from the diary of the Rev. Mr. McAden, a young Presbyterian preacher, who in 1755 went from Pennsylvania to North Carolina on horseback, starting up the valley of the Shenandoah, on the 19th of June. He says: "Alone in the wilderness! Sometimes a house in ten miles, and sometimes not that." On July 13th, he preached at "The Forks" (*i. e.*, the forks of the James River), afterwards called Hall's Meeting House, then New Monmouth, and now Lexington. "Preached to a considerably large congregation, rode home with Joseph Lapsley two miles from meeting, where I tarried till Wednesday morning the 16th." Mr. McAden goes on: "Here it was I received the most melancholy news of the entire defeat of our army by the French at Ohio, the general killed, numbers of inferior officers and the whole artillery taken." (This was Braddock's defeat by the French and Indians.) On Wednesday the 16th, Mr. McAden left Mr. Lapsley's.

But we of this generation have closer connection with the Woodses, my mother's mother being Margaret Woods, wife of John Moore Walker, who was the son of Joseph Walker and Jane Moore. They had in their family an orphan niece, Mary Moore, the heroine of our Sunday-school book, "The Captives of Abb's Valley." Joseph Walker, my great-grandfather, was an elder in the church, a magistrate of Rockbridge County, a worthy and influential citizen. He was for thirty years, up to his death in 1815, connected as Trustee and Treasurer with Liberty Hall, afterwards Washington College, now Washington and Lee University, at Lexington. My great-grandparents were James Woods and Nancy Rayburn, of Montgomery County, Virginia. My great-great-grandparents were Andrew Woods and Martha Poage of Botetourt. My grandfather, John Moore Walker, with his wife Margaret Woods, moved from Buffalo Mills, seven miles South of Lexington, Virginia, to Kentucky, about 1812, and lived on a farm near Eddyville, Kentucky. My father, Robert Armstrong Lapsley, was born January 11, 1798, in what is now Garrard County, Kentucky. A talented and promising young preacher, educated at Princeton, he was offered a desirable pastorate in the older part of Kentucky, but chose the more needy and harder work offered in the South-west central part of the State. There he married my mother, Catharine Rutherford Walker, May 14, 1823. He preached and taught school, as so many other Presbyterian preachers did in those days, some ten or twelve years, and then moved to Nashville, where I was born, December 20, 1835. My father preached regularly, but was also constantly engaged in teaching, being president of the Nashville Female Academy, and afterwards of the Nashville Female College, founded by him. He was widely known and beloved, and his pupils were from the best families all over Tennessee and North Alabama. Not satisfied with these responsibilities, he was induced by some trusted friends to engage in a mercantile business in Nashville, and as partner became responsible for them. This, in a little while, ended in disaster, and everything was lost. There was a sale; the family servants were bought in for us by my mother's uncles, Robert, Joseph and James Woods, who were merchants and bankers in Nashville and New Orleans, and iron masters down on the Cumberland. My father was the first pastor of the second church in Nashville, and was a successful preacher and pastor. Under his pastorate of eight or ten years, the Second Church became a very flourishing church. His health failed, however, and he resigned and moved to the country about 1855 or 1856. Meantime he had married Mrs. Allen, widow of Colonel Robert Allen of Smith County, and he moved to Greenwood, her country home near Carthage, Tennessee. Her maiden name was Alethia Van Horn, and she was a native of Washington County, where Colonel Allen, then a member of Congress, met and married her. She was an elegant, high-spirited, good woman. She died in 1863. Shortly afterwards the Federal army came by and burned them out, and my father and sister Margaret came to a little farm I had in Shelby County, Alabama, and he took care of my wife and two children, till I came home at the close of the war, in June, 1865.

After peace was established, he returned to the old associations in Tennessee and Kentucky; and soon married Mrs. Mary Richardson of New Albany, Indiana. Louisville was then a kind of storm center for our churches, North and South; but my father retained the entire confidence and affection of both parties, and was a member of our Southern General Assembly in Nashville, in 1867, in which I was also a commissioner. He died in 1872. His widow survived him a few years; and, having no near relatives when she died, left her very large estate to the boards of the Church, and other charities. My father is buried in New Albany.

My oldest brother, Joseph, was educated at the University of Nashville, and from there went to Princeton Theological Seminary, but his health failed, and he never completed his course. He came back to Nashville, and for a while was em-

ployed as tutor or assistant professor in the University. My uncles joined him in buying the Tyree Springs on the Louisville turn-pike, some twenty miles from Nashville. It was a watering place in summer, and a stage stand all the year. I was a delicate, and rather precocious lad, and on account of my health, had been taken away from school, and sent one winter to my uncle's in Memphis and Arkansas; and for like cause was sent to study under brother Joseph. His failing health devolved considerable responsibility upon me. I kept the post-office, and acted as landlord, collecting the fares, and putting out on the sideboard the decanter of whisky, as was the custom of the times, for the free use of the stage passengers, who passed twice a day. Brother Joseph died in Nashville, in 1852, after I had come to Alabama. My brother Joseph left college after his sophomore year, went into a business house in St. Louis, of which my great uncle, James Woods, was the head, and was high in their confidence. He was a very popular "society" man, highly gifted as a singer, and so drifted into many dangerous courses. In 1861, he came South and joined a Tennessee regiment. He was badly wounded at Sharpsburg, and again at Second Manassas. He came, wounded, to my house in Shelby County, and was there when the war closed. He died in Selma, about 1868.

Brother Norvell was educated and practised as a physician; and was acting as surgeon in the Confederate Army, when in 1865, he was captured and confined at Ship Island, in the Gulf of Mexico. The privations and sufferings of those prisoners were very great. He was a man of delicate constitution, and seems never to have recovered from the effects of his imprisonment. He died in Selma shortly after the war.

The youngest of the family, Samuel Rutherford, was taken, on our mother's death, in 1844, to the home of our aunt, Mrs. Elsie M. Kay, wife of Reuben L. Kay, then a wealthy merchant of Memphis, Tennessee, and they raised him as their own son. While yet a boy, he went into the army, and was shot down at Shiloh, in 1862, with the colors of his regiment in his hand. He was moved home to Memphis, and died there from his wounds. Our only sister, Margaret, married Dr. James W. Moore, of Arkansas, a surgeon in the Confederate Hospital at Shelby Springs in 1865. Upon his death in Arkansas she returned to us in Selma, where she subsequently married Mr. James H. Franklin, with whom she is now living in New Orleans.

My brother Robert, upon his graduation at the University of Nashville, about 1851, went into business in Memphis. Subsequently he became cashier of a bank in Nashville, and a little before the war became cashier of a bank in Selma. In 1861, he went out with the Eighth Alabama Infantry, but afterwards was quartermaster of the Thirty-third Alabama until the close of the war. He was then a merchant in Selma several years, until he became treasurer for the receivers of the Selma, Rome & Dalton Railroad Company, and he remained a most trusted and valued officer of that railroad till his death in 1895. His first wife, Mary Alberta Pratt, died in 1866, without children. By his second wife, Mary Willie Pettus, daughter of Governor Pettus, of Mississippi, and niece of United States Senator Pettus, of Alabama, he had children: 1, Robert Kay; 2, John Pettus; 3, Edmund Winston, and 4, William Werdon. When I was a little past my sixteenth birthday, in 1852, I came from Nashville to Selma, Alabama, to enter the law office of my first cousin, John W. Lapsley, then at the head of the bar. Upon his retiring from his law practice in 1856, he made an advantageous arrangement for me with his successors, Messrs. Byrd and Parsons, afterwards Byrd and Morgan, with whom I worked until I became a member of their firm in January, 1858. In January, 1861, upon the call of the Governor, I went with the military company, of which I was a member, to Ft. Morgan, and was there some months. Afterwards, on the organization of the Fifty-first Alabama Regiment, I went into it as a private in Company I. Subsequently, for "acts of gallantry in the field," as my commission read, I was promoted to be First Lieutenant of

Company E, and I was in Forrest's and Wheeler's raids around Nashville, was in the battle of Murfreesboro and Chickamauga; and was captured in November, 1863, in a fight at Kingston, East Tennessee, and was taken to Johnson's Island, Lake Erie, where I was kept until June, 1865. In prison I busied myself with some of the handicrafts used there. I also taught some young men law and bookkeeping. I studied French very carefully and did a good deal of writing. I kept busy all the time. Having numerous kin and acquaintances inside the Federal lines I got all the books and papers I needed, and such food supplies as were allowed to be sent in. In 1865, I made a formal offer to the Government at Washington to give bond and security to go outside the United States, and stay out, if they would let me go without taking the oath of allegiance, but they declined the proposition. Colonel Hoffman, commander of prisoners, wrote back that he had no power to make such a bargain with me. My plea was to go to the Bahamas or Brazil, and make there a home for my family.

After the war, we resumed our law business in Selma, under the old name of Byrd, Morgan and Lapsley, which continued till Judge Byrd became Supreme Court Judge; and then General Morgan and I continued together (with W. R. Nelson), till he went to the United States Senate in 1876. I then determined to retire to the country to live, but did not get rid of my business for some time. We eventually shut up house in town and remained permanently at our home at Vine Hill, where for many years General Morgan, my brother Robert, Mr. Kay and I had spent our summers. We built a little church and school-house, and I hoped and expected to live and die there; but in March, 1883, Governor O'Neal telegraphed for me to come to Montgomery, and asked me to accept the office of Examiner of Public Accounts. I accepted the place and continued its duties till in October, 1886, I was appointed Judge of the Fifth Circuit, which I resigned in 1888 to take charge of the sale and distribution of the proceeds of the iron product of the three iron companies, Shelby, Clifton and Woodstock, which duties brought me to Anniston. The arrangement between the three companies expired by limitation in 1891, when I resumed practice, from which I was called by the Governor's appointment to the Judgeship of the City Court of Anniston in March, 1893, and was reappointed in 1897. I was elected to the State Legislature in 1886, but resigned before the session began. I was a member of the General Assembly of our Church in 1867, 1883, 1893 and 1897, and am now appointed for 1898. I was Moderator of the Synod of Alabama in 1892, and of the General Assembly in 1893. I joined the church in Selma in the spring of 1852, was made a deacon two or three years later, and was made an elder about April, 1866. We organized the Vine Hill church about 1879. We moved our membership to Anniston in 1889. In November, 1894, I changed my membership to the West Anniston church, a mission work needing my assistance.

The following are the names of such of my grandfather's descendants as I am able to gather.

John and Mary Lapsley, my grandparents, had children as follows: (a) (Priscilla and John A. are omitted from this list by Judge Lapsley—Editor). Joseph B. Lapsley, born October 5, 1779, graduated at Washington College in 1800, preached in Kentucky and East Tennessee. He married, first, Rebecca Aylett, September 27, 1804. He afterwards married his cousin, Sallie Lapsley.

By his first wife he had children: 1, John W., long time a successful lawyer in Selma, Alabama; died in 1889, leaving children, John B., living at Cave Spring, Georgia; Mary Deans, living at Calera, Alabama; Ammie Kellar, living in Florida. 2, William Fairfax, who died in Alabama without issue, and 3, Joseph M., who died in Selma, leaving by his first wife, two children: George H. Lapsley and Emma Baker, now living in Kansas City, Missouri. By his second wife, Sallie, said to have been his first cousin, he had two children, one of whom, 4, Margaret, married a Taylor, and is now in South-western Texas; and the other, 5,

Samuel, who married Mary Bronough, who is dead. The widow is said to be living at Pleasant Hill, Missouri.

(b) James F., born January 7, 1786, married Charlotte Cleland.

(c) Samuel, born September 22, 1789, married Sallie Stephens.

(d) Sarah W., born February 1, 1791, married William Walker. Their children were: 1, Catharine, unmarried. 2, Adeline, married General W. J. Landrum. They, and cousin C. with them, live at Lancaster, Garrard County, Kentucky. General L., a Federal soldier, also served in the Mexican War. They have a large family.

(e) William, born September 28, 1793.

(f) Mary C., born February 26, 1796, married James McKee and had four children.

(g) Robert Armstrong, born January 11, 1798. Married Catherine Rutherford Walker (daughter of John Moore Walker and Margaret Woods), May 14, 1823. Their children were the following, to wit:

(1) Joseph W., died unmarried.

(2) John D., died unmarried.

(3) Norvell A., died unmarried.

(4) Robert, born February 10, 1833, married first, Mary Alberti Pratt (no children). Married second, Mary Willie Pettus. Their children: Robert Kay, John Pettus, Edmund Winston and William Weeden.

(5) James Woods, the subject of this sketch, who was born December 20, 1835, married Sarah E. Pratt, June 9, 1857. Their children: *Robert Alberti*, now pastor Bethel Church, Greenville, Virginia, married Eugenia Brown. Their children: Robert A., Jr., Mary V., James W., Horatio Brown, Sarah Pratt and Eugenia. *James*, preaching in Dawson, Alabama, married Florrie Morrow. Their children, Samuel B., Elsie, Bessie, Kate and James Norville. *Samuel Norvell*, missionary to Congo Free State, died not quite 26 years old, at Underhill Station near Matadi, Lower Congo, March 26, 1892. *Mary Alberti* (died October 31, 1897), married Julian C. Keeth; their children: Lucian, Mary, Isham. *Isabel* married Rev. R. T. Liston, one child, Margaret. *Zaidee*, married W. C. Smith, one child, Cothran G. *Rutherford. Kate. Norvell.*

(6) Margaret, born June 4, 1838, married first, Dr. James W. Moore; second, James H. Franklin, no children.

(7) Samuel Rutherford, born June 25, 1842. Died at Memphis in 1862, having been shot down at Shiloh with the colors of his regiment in his hands. Sam McKee and Sam R. Lapsley, both died in 1862, one on one side, the other opposing him. Samuel N. Lapsley died in 1892; died leading a forlorn hope in Africa—that is, he knew the deadly climate which he was invading.

R. A. L. married second, Mrs. Alethea Allen; third, Mrs. Mary Richardson. The latter survived him. He died in 1872, she a year or so later. She lived and died in New Albany, Indiana.

(8) Harvey; died unmarried.

(9) Margaret; married Moses Jarvis. Their children: *Mary Jane*, married Sharp, no children. *John L.*, married Miss Sharp, five children.

[NOTE.—The manuscript submitted to me by Judge Lapsley had many erasures, and the designation of the several generations was not always clear, and I may have made some mistakes in deciphering, though I have tried to be accurate—The Editor.]

SKETCH 35.

DR. J. Y. LAPSLEY, KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI.

Dr. J. Y. Lapsley is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his daughter Sarah, who married Joseph Lapsley.

John Lapsley, son of Joseph Lapsley, Sr., and Sarah Woods, was born December 29, 1753. On December 22, 1778, he married Mary, daughter of Captain John Armstrong, a Virginian, who emigrated to Kentucky among the early pioneers. John Lapsley served in the Revolutionary Army under General Morgan.

Priscilla Catherine Lapsley, oldest daughter of John Lapsley and Mary Armstrong, was born June

23, 1781. She married Colonel John Yantis, of Garrard County, Kentucky, son of Jacob Yantis (or Yandes), a Revolutionary patriot of German birth. Colonel Yantis commanded a regiment in the War of 1812, and represented Garrard County in the Kentucky Legislature for many years. He lived near Lancaster until 1832, when he moved to Lafayette County, Missouri. Here he was nominated for Congress in 1834 by the Whigs of his district, but failed of election. He died three years later.

His oldest son, Rev. John Lapsley Yantis, D. D., was born September 14, 1804. He began the study of medicine with Dr. Paulding of Harrodsburg. His medical education was almost completed when, having become a member of the Presbyterian Church, he determined to consecrate his life to the ministry of Christ. He studied theology under his uncle, Dr. Robert Armstrong Lapsley, with the intention of completing the work of preparation for the pulpit at Princeton Theological Seminary. By too close application to books, his health was seriously impaired, and he was compelled to finish his studies in private. On August 21, 1828, he married Eliza Ann Markham Montgomery, daughter of Colonel James Montgomery, of Lincoln County, and grand-daughter of Markham Marshall, who was an uncle of the illustrious Chief Justice Marshall. Dr. Yantis was licensed to preach in April, 1829, and was ordained a minister of the Gospel in the fall of 1830. He preached at Stanford and Lancaster until 1833, when he removed to Missouri, whither his father and father-in-law had preceded him. Here he entered upon that career which has indissolubly linked his name with the history of Presbyterianism in Missouri, and made him celebrated throughout the State as a brilliant, earnest and fearless preacher of God's word. The pioneer of his church in Missouri for many years, his history is that of Presbyterianism in his adopted State. He organized the churches of Kansas City, Westport, Lexington, Fulton, Liberty, and many others in Western Missouri. From 1841 to 1848, he was pastor of the Lexington church, and during part of this time was register of the United States land office. On account of ill health he removed to the Sweet Springs, in Saline County, which he purchased, and in the fall of 1848, opened there a boarding school for boys. In 1852, Dr. Yantis, in company with his three brothers and his brother-in-law, Dr. Nathaniel Ostrander, undertook an overland journey with their families to Oregon. Dr. Yantis preached all over the Willamette Valley, and returned to Missouri in 1855, to assume the presidency of Richmond College. He also preached to the Richmond church. Four years later he accepted a call to the Presbyterian Church at Danville, Kentucky. Here he remained until the breaking out of the war in 1861, when he returned to his home at Sweet Springs. During the war he was an ardent Southern sympathizer, and three of his sons served in the Confederate army. In 1865 he took charge of the Westport church, and, soon afterwards of the church at Kansas City. During the stormy years that followed the close of the war, Dr. Yantis was one of the ablest champions of the Southern Presbyterian Church, and, in the unflinching courage with which he fought his battles, showed the splendid fighting qualities of his ancestors. A powerful debater, he always took a leading part in the proceedings of the Synods and General Assemblies. In 1867 he returned to his old home at Sweet Springs, where he continued to reside until his death on May 28, 1884. During this period he preached to the churches of Waverly, Marshall, St. Joseph, Brownsville and Prairie. The most conspicuous traits of Dr. Yantis' character were his frankness, modesty and courage. Never forgetting the sacredness of his calling, he was full of a quiet, comical humor that made him one of the most companionable of men. Imbued with the true spirit of Southern courtesy, he commanded the respect and admiration of friends and foes alike; while his classic grace of diction, his wonderful skill in debate, and his scholarly address made him one of the most popular preachers of his day. The two oldest sons of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza

REV. WILLIAM J. LAPSLEY.
[See Sketch No. 35.]

COL. JOHN P. LAPSLEY.
[See Sketch No. 35.]

REV. JOHN L. YANTIS, D. D.
(TAKEN IN 1861.)
[See Sketch No. 35.]

REV. EDWARD M. YANTIS.
(TAKEN IN 1884.)
[See Sketch No. 35.]

A. M. Montgomery, died in infancy. Their oldest daughter, Priscilla Catherine, married John Bennett Bean, a wealthy planter and slaveholder of Cass County, Missouri, who died shortly after the war. Five sons were the fruit of this marriage, only one of whom survives—William Yantis Bean, of St. Louis. The others were Lapsley Yantis, John Lapsley Yantis, Frank Gay and John Bennett.

William Lapsley Yantis, third son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza A. M. Montgomery, was educated at Centre College, Danville, Kentucky, and served in the Confederate army on the escort of General John S. Marmaduke. He married, first, Margaret Sloan, by whom he had one son, who died in infancy. Margaret Sloan was a daughter of Rev. Robert Sloan, a first cousin of Senator Cockrell's wife, and a grand-daughter of Rev. Finis Ewing, founder of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. William L. Yantis' second wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Samuel Taylor, a Confederate officer, a nephew of General Zachary Taylor and a first cousin of General Richard Taylor. They have one son, Taylor Yantis.

John Marshall Yantis, fourth son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, was also educated at Centre College and served on General Marmaduke's escort in the Southern Army. He studied law and, after being admitted to the bar, practised that profession for several years, after which he became editor of the Marshall *Democrat-News*. He died in September, 1886. His wife was Annie, daughter of Judge Luther Mason, of Kansas City, and a first cousin of Governor Crittenden's wife. Their only son, John Lapsley Yantis, lives in Independence, Missouri. Three daughters died in childhood. Four other children are yet alive, to wit: Martha Elizabeth, Florida Mason, Vesta Price and John Lapsley.

Rev. Edward Montgomery Yantis, fifth son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, was educated at Centre College and Missouri University. With his two older brothers, he was a Confederate soldier on General Marmaduke's escort. After the war he studied law, was admitted to the bar and, after a few years' practice of that profession, decided to study for the ministry. After being ordained he preached successfully for several years in Missouri, and then leaving the pulpit but remaining loyal to his Church, he accepted an appointment as chief clerk in the office of the Recorder of Deeds of Jackson County, which he held until his death in March, 1887. His first wife was Elizabeth Fauntleroy Martin, daughter of Samuel Martin, whose mother was a Miss Fauntleroy, of the Virginia family of that name. By her he had four children: Samuel Edward, Helen Kate, John Paul and Elizabeth Montgomery. His second wife was Mary Smith.

The second daughter of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, Eliza Ann, married her kinsman, Rev. William Johnston Lapsley. Mary Brown Yantis, the third and youngest daughter, died in childhood. Their son, Dr. John Yantis Lapsley, is the subject of this sketch and was born November 21, 1874. The sixth son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, Robert Franklin, an elder in his father's church and a man of singular purity of character, died unmarried at the age of thirty-two.

Judge Van Court Yantis, seventh son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, was educated at the University of Missouri, and was elected to the chair of mathematics in the Rolla School of Mines, a department of the University. He afterwards practised law for several years, and was elected to the State Legislature from Saline County. In 1885 he became private secretary and confidential adviser to Governor Marmaduke and was retained in that office by Governor Morehouse. In 1890 he was elected Probate Judge of Saline County, and re-elected in 1894. Judge Yantis married Sadie Kennedy, by whom he has one son, Van Court Yantis, Jr.

Colonel James Aull Yantis, eighth son of Dr. J. L. Yantis and Eliza Montgomery, graduated at the law school of the Missouri University, and practised law in St. Louis and Fort Smith, Arkan-

sas. While at the latter place he was made a Circuit Judge and Colonel of State militia. In 1886 he returned to Missouri and was elected a member of the faculty of Missouri University's law department. Colonel Yantis married Lucy, daughter of Major James H. Sparks, of Arkansas, a Confederate soldier and a leading lawyer of Fort Smith. They have four children: Sydney Markham, Edward Montgomery, James Sparks and Marshall Lapsley.

Besides Dr. John L. Yantis, Colonel John Yantis and Priscilla C. Lapsley were the parents of three sons and three daughters. Benjamin Franklin, the second son, married Ann Hall and emigrated with his two younger brothers to the Pacific Coast, where all three have a large number of descendants. The third son, Alexander Scott Yantis, married Sarah, daughter of Colonel Lewis Green, of Lexington, Missouri. James Yantis, the fourth and youngest son, married Sarah Ann Hamilton, a grand-daughter of Governor Owsley, of Kentucky. The oldest daughter of Colonel John Yantis and Priscilla C. Lapsley, Sarah Chrisman, married Judge Joseph W. Hall, of Lafayette County, Missouri, a native Kentuckian and a brother of Ann Hall, who married Benjamin F. Yantis. Sarah Yantis and Judge J. W. Hall were the parents of eight children, two of whom—John and William—fought for their native Southland in the Army of the Confederacy. Priscilla Yantis, second daughter of Colonel John Yantis and Priscilla C. Lapsley, married Dr. Worthington Larsh. The youngest daughter, Eliza Jane Yantis, married Dr. Nathaniel Ostrander, who emigrated to Washington in 1852, and has been for years a leading physician and politician in that State. They had eleven children: Priscilla Catherine, Mary Ann, Susan Charlotte, Sarah Teresa, Margaret Jane, Maria Evelyn, Isabella May, John Yantis, Florence Eliza, Fannie Lee and Minnie Augusta. Their only son, John Yantis Ostrander, is a prominent lawyer of Washington.

James Finley Lapsley, third son of John Lapsley and Mary Armstrong, was born in Lincoln County, Kentucky, January 7, 1786. In early manhood he went to Mercer County. He died April 15, 1819. His wife was Charlotte Adeline Cleland, grand-daughter of Thomas Cleland, of Virginia, and sister of Dr. Thomas H. Cleland, the eminent Presbyterian minister. By her he had two sons and two daughters.

Eliza Lapsley, the elder daughter, married her cousin, Lambert Darland Armstrong, and was the mother of six children: James Lapsley, William Lanty, Philip, Jennie, George Francis and Henry. The second son, William Lanty, served as orderly of General Marmaduke's escort during the war.

The younger daughter of James F. Lapsley and Charlotte A. Cleland, Sarah Jane, married William Robinson, and had two children, Charlotte and George Armstrong. Charlotte married James H. Holman and has three sons and two daughters —Sallie, Charley, Blanche, Price and Jesse, all of whom are living except Price. George A. Robinson married Ella Jones, by whom he had three children—Martha Linwood, William Lapsley and Lottie Estelle.

Colonel John Philip Lapsley, the elder son of James F. Lapsley and Charlotte A. Cleland, was born January 16, 1815, and lived, until his death in 1892, on the farm he inherited from his father. Colonel Lapsley was a planter all his life and a slaveholder and a Colonel of Kentucky militia before the war. During the so-called Rebellion he was an ardent Southern sympathizer, but took no active part in the conflict. He contributed liberally towards the establishment of Central University at Richmond. For many years an elder in the Providence Church of Mercer County, he was often sent as a delegate to the various councils of the Presbyterian Church. In politics he was a life-long Democrat. A man of well-balanced judgment and splendid business capacity, his character was in every respect upright and honorable. In 1836, Colonel Lapsley was married to Eliza Ann Johnston, daughter of Silas Johnston, a Woodford County planter. By her he had four sons

and two daughters. She died in 1866, and he afterwards married Mrs. Jennie Rule.

Hon. James Harvey Lapsley, oldest son of Colonel John P. Lapsley and Eliza Ann Johnston, was educated at Centre College and for several years conducted the McAfee Academy, in the vicinity of his father's farm. He afterwards served his county as school commissioner and representative in the Legislature. His wife was Emma Ferguson, of Columbia, Missouri, by whom he had one son and one daughter. The son, Dr. Frank Lee Lapsley, is a prominent physician of Paris, Kentucky. The only daughter, Martha Washington, married Edward Patton, of Virginia.

Dr. John Brown Lapsley, second son of Colonel John P. Lapsley and Eliza Johnston, also received his college education at "Old Centre," after which he graduated in medicine and began the practice of his profession at his old home in Mercer County, where he still resides. Dr. Lapsley married his second cousin, Eugenia Armstrong, by whom he had nine children: Mary Eliza, Dr. John Powell, William Robert, Helen Louise, Inez, Elizabeth, Allen Johnston, James Thomas and Addie Cleland.

Colonel Lapsley's third son, Rev. William Johnston Lapsley, graduated at Centre College and Union Theological Seminary, Hampden-Sidney, Virginia. His first regular preaching was in the pulpit of the Pine Street Presbyterian Church of St. Louis, which he occupied several months during the absence of the pastor, Dr. Beverly Tucker Lacy. His first pastorate was Des Peres, St. Louis County, and Mizpah Church, near Bridgeton, in the same county. Here he remained seven years, when he was called to the Troy Church, Woodford County, Kentucky. He preached to the Troy Church for several years and afterwards at Shelbyville, Kentucky, and Brownsville, Missouri. He died in August, 1890. His wife was his second cousin, Eliza Ann, daughter of Dr. John Lapsley Yantis, the pioneer of Presbyterianism in Missouri. By her he had two sons and four daughters: Elizabeth Blanche, Virginia Johnston, John Yantis, Robert Joy Van Court, Ida Louise and Addie Markham. The two oldest daughters died—one in childhood, the other in early womanhood.

Of the two daughters of Colonel John P. Lapsley and Eliza Johnston, the older, Mary Eliza, died in childhood. The younger, Mary Adeline, married Samuel Forsyth, of Mercer County. They have no children.

Colonel Lapsley's youngest son, *Thomas Cleland Lapsley*, married Stella Jones, in 1880, and died two years later.

Rev. James Thomas Lapsley, D. D., younger brother of Colonel Lapsley and the youngest child of James Finley Lapsley and Charlotte Adeline Cleland, was born in 1819, graduated at Centre College and Princeton Theological Seminary, and has been for many years one of the leading Presbyterian ministers of Kentucky. Dr. Lapsley has been married three times. His first wife was Fannie Ewing; his second, Elizabeth Brammel; and his third, Sallie Webster. By his second wife he had three daughters, one of whom, Bell Lapsley, became the wife of Thomas Bruce and died soon after her marriage. The other two daughters, Elizabeth L. and Mary H., died unmarried.

William Campbell Lapsley, seventh child of John Lapsley and Mary Armstrong, was born September 28, 1793. He married Sarah Redman Alcorn in 1826, and in 1837 moved to Clark County, Missouri, where he died. He had four children—one son and three daughters. The oldest daughter, Mary Ann Lapsley, was the only one who had issue. I do not know the names of the other three. Mary Ann Lapsley married a Colonel Bishop and had six children. She is still living at Eustis, Florida; her husband died several years ago. The children of Mary Ann Lapsley Bishop are:

1. Albert Willoughby, who married Carrie Day and has two children—Gertrude Bell and Bertha Cecilia.

2. Walter Humboldt (unmarried) lives at Kahoka, Missouri.

3. Maury Erskine married Ida Bell Henston and has three children—Mary Eliza, Dora Katherine and Maury Whipple.

4. Henry William married Eva Power and has two children—Mary Priscilla and Clayton Power.

5. Napoleon Clay, unmarried.

6. Mary Belle, also unmarried.

SKETCH 36.

DR. R. M. LAPSLEY, KEOKUK, IOWA.

Dr. Robert McKee Lapsley is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his daughter Sarah, who married Joseph Lapsley. He was born in Missouri, January 22, 1870. His father was David Nelson Lapsley, who was born in Woodford County, Kentucky, April 16, 1830. His mother was Miss Margaret Jane Jenkins, born April 23, 1840. His parents were married March 2, 1865, in Clark County, Missouri. The said David Nelson Lapsley was the son of John A. Lapsley, who was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, September 5, 1783. Said John A. was an officer in the regiment of Colonel Richard M. Johnson and took part in the War of 1812. He died December 13, 1859. Said John A. married Miss Mary Wear McKee, who was born November 20, 1783, and who married John A. Lapsley, August 10, 1805. Said Mary Wear died October 21, 1859. The Lapsleys and McKees migrated to Kentucky in 1793. Said John A. Lapsley was the son of John Lapsley, who was born in Virginia, September 29, 1753, who married Mary Armstrong, December 22, 1778, and was a Revolutionary soldier. Said John Lapsley was a son of the Joseph Lapsley who married Sarah Woods, daughter of Michael Woods of Blair Park and his wife, Mary Campbell.

Dr. Lapsley (son of David N. Lapsley and Margaret J. Jenkins) graduated from Rush Medical College, Chicago, in 1891, when about twenty-one years old. He was elected Professor of Ophthalmology and Otology in the Medical College of Keokuk, in 1894, which position he still occupies. He is also a practising oculist in Keokuk. His father, David N. Lapsley, graduated from Jefferson College, Pennsylvania, about 1856-7. He studied law and was admitted to the bar, but he soon gave up his profession and went to farming. He has been Circuit Clerk of Clark County, Missouri, and Judge of the County Court. He has two children, to wit: (a) Dr. Robert McKee Lapsley, the subject of this sketch; and (b) Miss Mary Elizabeth Lapsley.

SKETCH 37.

MRS. HELM BRUCE, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Mrs. Sallie Hare Bruce (*nee* White), wife of Helm Bruce, Esq., is the daughter of the late Professor James Jones White and his wife, Mary Louisa Reid, and was born in Lexington, Virginia. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his daughter Magdalen, whose first husband was John McDowell. She was married to Mr. Bruce December 17, 1884.

Mary Louisa Reid, the mother of Mrs. Bruce, was born July 20, 1832, at Lexington, Virginia, and died May 9, 1901, in Louisville, Kentucky. She married July 14, 1858, James Jones White. In the resolutions drawn up by the Colonial Dames of Kentucky at the time of her death, are these words: "Mrs. White, in her personality, stood for all that was fine and noble. Of a distinguished lineage, none of her race did more to ennoble it—a Virginia gentlewoman of the old regime, of culture, gentle dignity and gracious charm, her influence was not only felt in the historic old town, where her home was the center of a graceful and elegant hospitality, but, in other communities, she won and held the respect and love of those who came in contact with her. To those of us who were so fortunate as to know her in her declining years, it seems like a benediction, that in her own beloved city, and from her daughter's home, her spirit should have passed into the new and beautiful life which God had prepared for His own."

James Jones White was born in Nottoway County, Virginia, November 7, 1828, and died in Lexington, Virginia, April 29, 1893. He was the son of the Rev. Wm. Spotswood White, of Hanover County, Virginia, at whose death, November 29, 1873, it was said that "the Synod of Virginia lost one of its most distinguished members," and of

Jane Isabella Watt. He was of pure English descent on his father's side—was a man of magnificent physique, six feet four inches tall, and of gracious, courtly manners. He was a graduate of the University of Virginia, and Professor of Greek in Washington College (afterwards Washington and Lee University), from 1852 until his death. When the Civil War broke out he entered the service as Captain of the college boys, the "Liberty Hall Volunteers," a part of the immortal Stonewall Brigade. After the war he took up his educational work, devoting his cultured intellect, his ripe experience of men and things, his practical knowledge as an educator, and his great executive ability to the interests of Washington and Lee. This part of his life was deeply enriched by an intimate association with General Robert E. Lee and his family, and by the loyal devotion of the college boys.

Sallie Hare White (the subject of this sketch), eldest daughter of James Jones White and Mary Louisa Reid, was born at Lexington, Virginia, February 29, 1860, and married December 17, 1884, Helm Bruce, of Louisville, Kentucky.

Helm Bruce was born November 16, 1860, and is the son of Hon. H. W. Bruce, who was first a member of the State Legislature, then of the Confederate Congress, afterwards Judge of the Louisville Chancery Court, and, at the time of his death, General Counsel of the Louisville & Nashville Railroad Company, and of Elizabeth Barbour Helm, daughter of John L. Helm, twice governor of Kentucky, and grand-daughter of the famous Ben Hardin, of Bardstown, one of the most noted lawyers and public men that Kentucky ever produced. Helm Bruce graduated at Washington and Lee University in 1880, and is now a member of the law firm of Helm, Bruce & Helm. The children of Helm Bruce and Sallie Hare White are: James White, born October 27, 1886, and entered Yale University September, 1903; Louise Reid, born September 27, 1888; Elizabeth Barbour, born March 15, 1889; and Helm, born January 6, 1895.

Isabelle White, second daughter of James Jones White and Mary Louisa Reid, was born at Lexington, Virginia, July 17, 1862, and married November 14, 1895, Wm. George Brown.

Wm. George Brown was born November 5, 1853, in New-Castle-on-Tyne, England; came with his parents to Albemarle County, Virginia, in 1869, was educated at the Universities of Virginia, Harvard, and Heidelberg, and is at present (1904) Professor of Chemistry in the University of Missouri. The children of Wm. George Brown and Isabelle White are: Mary Louise, born December 5, 1896; Wm. George, born September 14, 1898; and Henry Clifford, born May 26, 1900.

Agnes Reid White, third daughter of James Jones White and Mary Louisa Reid, was born July 14, 1864, and married in October, 1884, Joel Walker Winston Goldsby, of Mobile, Alabama.

Joel Walker Winston Goldsby was born November 24, 1862, and is the son of Thomas Jefferson Goldsby and Agnes Winston, a daughter of John Anthony Winston, governor of Alabama for two terms beginning in 1853, and afterwards elected to the United States Senate. Joel W. W. Goldsby served two terms in the Alabama Legislature and was President *pro tem.* of the State Senate in 1903. He is now one of the attorneys for the Louisville & Nashville Railroad Company at Mobile, Alabama. The children of Joel Walker Winston Goldsby and Agnes Reid White are Mary Easley, born April 11, 1887; Louise Reid, born September 4, 1889; Isabelle White, born February 19, 1893; Winston, born September 11, 1896; Reid White, born February 13, 1898; Joel Walker, born January 21, 1901.

Reid White, son of James Jones White and Mary Louisa Reid, was born March 28, 1868, and graduated in medicine at the University of Pennsylvania in May, 1892. He received an appointment at once to St. Agnes' Hospital, Philadelphia, and at the close of the year, another at Johns-Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore. He married Lucy Waddell Preston, a daughter of Thomas Lewis Preston, and Lucy Gordon Waddell. Reid White is now (1904) practising medicine in Lexington, Virginia.

The children of Reid White and Lucy Waddell Preston, are Preston, born September 16, 1896; James Jones, born December 21, 1897; and Reid, born October 8, 1900.

SKETCH 38.

WILLIAM STONE WOODS, M. D.,
KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI.

Dr. William Stone Woods is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his favorite son, Colonel John Woods. He was born November 1, 1840, and on the tenth of July, 1866, married Miss Albina McBride. His father was James Harris Woods, and his mother was Martha Jane Stone. His father was born in Madison County, Kentucky, January 24, 1810, and died January 11, 1845, in Columbia, Missouri. His mother was born in Madison County, Kentucky, August 7, 1815, and died at Nebraska City, Nebraska, March 17, 1868. She was the daughter of William Stone and Nancy Harris, both of Madison County, Kentucky. The aforesaid James Harris Woods was the son of Anderson Woods and his wife Elizabeth Harris. Anderson Woods was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, January 18, 1788, and with his father moved to Garrard County, Kentucky, in 1796. He moved to Boone County, Missouri, in 1823, and died October 22, 1841. Elizabeth Harris was born September 30, 1791, and married Anderson Woods May 4, 1809, and died October 13, 1868. The said Anderson Woods was the son of James Woods, who was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, January 21, 1748, and died in Kentucky in 1823. Said James Woods married Mary Garland February 25, 1779. Mary Garland was born October 13, 1760, and died in 1835. Said James Woods was the son of John Woods and Susannah Anderson, and John was the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and Mary Campbell. Said James Woods was, according to the statement of Dr. William Stone Woods, his great-grandson, commissioned Colonel in the Virginia Revolutionary forces November 12, 1776.

Dr. William Stone Woods is the President of the National Bank of Commerce, of Kansas City, Missouri, and one of the most prominent financiers of the State.

Born in Columbia, Missouri, November 1, 1840, our subject was a son of James Harris Woods, a native of Madison County, Kentucky, who became a leading merchant of Columbia and died there in 1845. The Doctor was educated in his native town, graduated with the class of 1861 in the State University, afterward took up the study of medicine and attended a course of lectures in the St. Louis Medical College and the Jefferson Medical College, of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, being graduated at the latter institution in March, 1864. For four or five years he practised medicine at Middle Grove, Monroe County, Missouri, and then removed to Paris, where he resided for a year. At the expiration of that period he joined his brother in business at the terminus of the Union Pacific Railroad, which was then being constructed from Omaha westward. They engaged in the grocery trade, moving their store as the road was extended until it reached Ogden, Utah. This proved a profitable venture. Soon thereafter Dr. Woods moved to Rocheport, Boone County, Missouri, where he established the Rocheport Savings Bank, which he successfully conducted from January, 1869, until January, 1880. His residence in Kansas City dates from January, 1880, when he entered into business as a member of the firm of Grimes, Woods, LaForce & Company, wholesale dry goods merchants, doing the largest business of the kind in the city. The establishment is still carried on, under the name of the Swofford Brothers Dry Goods Company, and Dr. Woods yet retains an interest in the business.

It is probably in the line of banking, however, that the Doctor has become most widely known to the business public. A few months after his arrival in Kansas City he purchased an interest in the Kansas City Savings Association, and succeeded Mr. Powell as president, assuming the active management in 1882. This bank was organized in 1865, and had an authorized capital of $100,000,

WILLIAM STONE WOODS.

KANSAS CITY, MO.

[See Sketch No. 48.]

MRS. BINA McBRIDE WOODS.
WIFE OF WILLIAM STONE WOODS.
KANSAS CITY, MO.
[See Sketch No. 38.]

but only $10,000 was paid in. When Dr. Woods became president, the business of the bank was at once increased, and the capital stock, raised to $200,000, was all paid up. The name was changed to Bank of Commerce, under which operations were conducted for five years, when in 1887 this bank was liquidated and merged into the National Bank of Commerce, the old stockholders receiving three dollars for every dollar invested. The National Bank of Commerce was organized in 1887, with a capital of one million dollars, and from the beginning Dr. Woods has served as its president. His close and careful attention and able management have given it an enviable standing among the banking institutions of the West. The National Bank of Commerce ranks first among monetary institutions of the city, and its president occupies an equally high position in business circles.

Though the Doctor devotes the greater part of his attention to banking interests, he has interested himself in other enterprises. In connection with his brother, James M., he embarked in the cattle business in Dakota, of which his brother, a practical stockman, had the management. They took government contracts to supply beef to the forts and Indian agencies for about eight years and prospered in this undertaking, Dr. Woods continuing the partnership until 1894, when he disposed of his interest to his brother. He is now an extensive stockholder in the Kansas City, Pittsburg & Gulf Railroad, which was first perfected simply as an outlet for a tract of coal lands owned by W. S. Woods, E. L. Martin and others; but there seemed to be a demand for railroad facilities in this direction and the road was extended until it has assumed extensive proportions and now terminates at the Gulf of Mexico. The Doctor has also been extensively interested in real estate, and is to-day the owner of considerable valuable property, including some fine business buildings in Kansas City.

Through his own efforts Dr. Woods has achieved a success which numbers him among the successful business men of Missouri. Dr. Woods has also established in business a number of young men who to-day are prominent in commercial circles, and has given liberally of his means to charity and for the education of those not able to educate themselves. He is a member of the First Christian Church of Kansas City.

On the 10th of July, 1866, the Doctor was united in marriage at Paris, Missouri, with Miss Bina McBride, daughter of Judge Ebenezer McBride, a successful and highly respected citizen of Monroe County, Missouri. Mrs. Woods is a woman of fine education, charming social qualities, and broad and liberal in her ideas. She is interested in many charities, and in all the important questions of the day, and has done much to assist her husband to attain so high a position in the commercial and social world. They have one daughter, Julia, who was educated at a college for ladies in Baltimore, Maryland, and is now the wife of Arthur Grissom, of New York City, who devotes his life to literary work and is a contributor to many leading magazines.

SKETCH 39.

DR. FRANCES J. WOODS, RAPID CITY, DAKOTA.

Miss Frances Jane Woods (who is a regular physician) is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, through his son, Colonel John Woods. As her father is full brother to Dr. Wm. Stone Woods, whose sketch next precedes this one, the reader is referred to that sketch for Miss Woods's ancestral line. Her father is James Moses Woods, of Rapid City, South Dakota. Her mother's maiden name was Matilda Caroline Stone.

JAMES HARRIS WOODS was born January 24, 1810, in Madison County, Kentucky; was married May 28, 1835, in Boone County, Missouri, to Martha Jane Stone, who was also born in Madison County, Kentucky. The parents of each were pioneers in Boone and Monroe Counties, Missouri. James Harris Woods died January 11, 1847, at Columbia, Missouri. His widow reared and educated their children, whose names will now be given in order, as follows:

(a) James Moses, the eldest son, was his mother's chief helper. At his home she died. With him the youngest daughter, Martha Frances, made her home until her marriage at his house, June 1, 1858. James Moses Woods was married to Matilda Caroline Stone. With her there came into the family an influence that is valued by every member of the younger generation. Owing to the practical nature of her Christian character, and the superior fineness of her mind, she has furnished a moral, intellectual, and spiritual stimulus to all who know her. James Moses, driven by the reverses of the war and the spirit of his fathers, no doubt, left Missouri early in life, and became a pioneer in Nebraska. In 1865 he established a home in Nebraska City. At that time he was engaged in the lucrative business of freighting from the Missouri River to western points. In 1876 this took him to the Black Hills, South Dakota. Since then his main interests have been in that section, where he has been foremost among those who have developed the country. He established the first bank, located and helped develop mines, controlled large cattle interests, encouraged agriculture, demonstrated his faith in irrigation by forming companies to construct ditches, and thus made valuable large tracts in his own possession. As mayor of Rapid City, he encouraged railroad enterprises and all internal improvements. A staunch Democrat, he served his party as National Committeeman for South Dakota until advancing age made it impossible. He still lives in Rapid City, South Dakota.

James Moses Woods and Matilda Caroline have seven children now living, as follows:

1. Madison D. Woods was married in South Dakota. He has two children, Annie and Pauline.

2. Ann Elizabeth (Mrs. S. T. Garth) is now living in Larned, Kansas. She has two children, Matilda and Catharine.

3. Frances Jane was graduated from Christian College, Columbia, Missouri, June, 1882, and from the Woman's Medical College of Philadelphia, in 1894. She went with the first company of Red Cross nurses sent to Manila by that organization. In the hospitals of Manila she gave, gratuitously, a year of efficient service for her country and the suffering home-sick soldiers. She is a woman of intellectual power, tenderness, and broad sympathies.

4. Charles Edward, and 5, Paul Scott, are successful bankers and irreproachable citizens in Liberal and Kingman, Kansas, respectively. The six-year-old son of the former bears the first name of his grandfather and the full name of his great-grandfather, James H.

6. Matilda was graduated from Wellesly College, Massachusetts, in 1902. She is at present the only woman member of the faculty in the State School of Mines of South Dakota.

7. Martha, the seventh and last child of James M. and Matilda C. Woods, will be graduated from the University of Nebraska in the class of 1905.

(b) Ann Elizabeth, the second child of James H. and Martha Jane Woods, possesses a splendid, strong Christian character of the old stern Baptist school. In the family she is to nephews and nieces "the grand old woman."

(c) William Stone, the third child, is an eminently successful business man, having accumulated more money, as far as the present writer knows, than any other member of the family. He is president of the Bank of Commerce in Kansas City, Missouri.

(d) Minerva Anderson was the fourth child.

(e) Frances Jane, fifth and last child of James H. and Martha J. Woods, who is loved and honored, lives with her son, William Fallis, who is a very successful banker in Garnet, Kansas.

SKETCH 40.

REV. HERVEY McDOWELL, BILOXI, MISSISSIPPI.

Rev. Hervey McDowell is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his daughter, Magdalen, and by her first husband, John McDowell. He is a son of the late Dr. Hervey McDowell and his wife, Louise Irvine McDowell. His father died in 1901. His mother survives her husband and still resides at Cynthiana, Kentucky. Rev. Hervey McDowell was born in Cynthiana, Ken-

tucky, June 15, 1871, and was educated at the Cynthiana High School, and Washington and Lee University. He dedicated his life to the work of the Gospel ministry in the Presbyterian Church, and was graduated from the Presbyterian Theological Seminary of Kentucky in 1899. On the 29th of April, 1903, he was married to Miss Jane Kavenaugh Lusk, and in the fall of that year took charge of the Presbyterian Church at Biloxi, Mississippi. His connection with the Woods family is exceedingly close, for both of his parents, and also his wife, are descendants of Michael, of Blair Park, as will be shown presently. His wife (Jane Kavenaugh Lusk) was the daughter of William Lusk by his wife, Mary Faulkner; and Mary Faulkner was the daughter of John Faulkner by his wife Jane Kavenaugh; and Jane Kavenaugh was the daughter of William Kavenaugh by his wife, Elizabeth Miller; and William Kavenaugh was the son of Philemon Kavenaugh by his wife, Elizabeth Woods; and Elizabeth Woods was the daughter of William Woods by his wife Susannah Wallace; and William Woods was the eldest son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife Mary Campbell. The said Susannah Wallace was the daughter of Peter Wallace, Senior, whose wife was Elizabeth Woods, sister of Michael Woods, of Blair Park.

Rev. Hervey McDowell is, as above remarked, the son of the late Dr. Hervey McDowell by his wife, Louise Irvine McDowell; and Dr. McDowell was the son of John Lyle McDowell by his wife, Nancy Hawthorne Vance; and John L. McDowell was the son of Colonel James McDowell by his wife, Mary Lyle; and Colonel James McDowell was the son of Judge Samuel McDowell by his wife, Mary McClung; and Judge McDowell was the son of Captain John McDowell by his wife, Magdalen Woods; and Magdalen was the eldest daughter of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell.

Miss Louise Irvine McDowell (who became the wife of her distant kinsman, Dr. Hervey McDowell, and the mother of the subject of this sketch) was born in Sumter County, Alabama, and was the daughter of Alexander Keith Marshall McDowell by his second wife, Anne Haupt (his first wife was Priscilla, a daughter of General Robert B. McAfee, of Mercer County, Kentucky). Alexander Keith Marshall McDowell was the son of Samuel McDowell, Jr., and his wife, Anna Irvine; and Samuel, Jr., was a son of Judge Samuel McDowell and his wife, Mary McClung; and Judge McDowell was the son of Captain John McDowell and Magdalen Woods.

Hervey McDowell, M. D., son of John Lyle McDowell and his wife, Nancy Hawthorne Vance, was born in Fayette County, Kentucky, April 15, 1835; graduate of Kentucky Military Institute, 1856; studied under Drs. H. M. Skillman and Ethelbert Dudley, and graduated at Missouri Medical College in 1858; physician; elder in Cynthiana Presbyterian Church; Kentucky State Vice-President Scotch-Irish Association of America; member Kentucky Society of Sons of the Colonial Wars; Royal Arch Mason; for twenty-five years President of Cynthiana Board of Education. During the war between the States went out as Captain of a Company he raised in Cynthiana. At its close was Lieutenant-Colonel commanding the First Kentucky Infantry, C. S. A. (the famous "Orphan Brigade"); married Louise Irvine McDowell (his cousin), October 26, 1869; was the father of six sons and one daughter. Died November 6, 1901, beloved and honored by all who knew him.

John Lyle McDowell, son of Colonel James and Mary Paxton (Lyle) McDowell, was born in Fayette County, Kentucky, August 24, 1794; married Nancy Hawthorne Vance, October 1, 1817; died December 23, 1879. Farmer. Served in Trotter's Regiment in the War of 1812. Elder in Presbyterian Church in Lexington, Kentucky.

(Colonel) James McDowell, son of Judge Samuel McDowell and Mary McClung, his wife, was born April 29, 1760. Married Mary Paxton Lyle in 1779; died December 22, 1843. Farmer; built *the first brick house* in Fayette County, on a land grant given him for military service. Ensign in Revolutionary War. Came to Kentucky in 1783. Com-

manded a battalion under General Wilkinson in 1791. Major in the War of 1812. At the battle of Massissinewa (owing to temporary illness of Colonel Simrall) he took command of his regiment. Was a Revolutionary pensioner.

Judge Samuel McDowell, son of Captain John and Magdalene (Woods) McDowell, was born in Ireland October 27 (O. S.—Nov. 7, N. S.), 1735. Married Mary McClung January 17, 1754. Died September 25, 1817. Came with his father, Captain John McDowell, to Virginia in 1737, to Augusta (now Rockbridge) County. Educated at "Augusta Academy"—now Washington and Lee University. Was one of the first trustees of Washington College. Private in Captain Samuel Lewis's Company at Braddock's defeat, 1755. Commanded a company at Point Pleasant, 1774, in Colonel Charles Lewis's Regiment. Colonel of Augusta Regiment, which he commanded at Guilford C. H. Also raised a battalion at his own expense to aid in the repulse of Benedict Arnold's raid on Richmond, Virginia. Member of the House of Burgesses 1765, 1773, 1775; member of the Richmond Conventions of March, July and December, 1775, and of the Williamsburg Convention of May, 1776; member of the first House of Delegates of Virginia, October, 1775, which, under Governor Patrick Henry, framed "the first written Constitution of a free Commonwealth"; member of the State Council of Virginia. He came to Kentucky in 1783, presiding with Judge Floyd over the First District Court convened in Kentucky. Was chairman of the nine Danville Conventions, held to consider the erection of Kentucky into a separate Commonwealth. President of the first Constitutional Convention of Kentucky. He was an elder in the Presbyterian Church for many years. When eighty years of age, being named a Commissioner to the General Assembly convening in Nashville, Tenn., he rode thither from Mercer County on his famous saddle horse "Fox," returning the same way and making forty-one miles a day on the journey. Was appointed one of the first trustees of Transylvania University at Lexington, Kentucky. (See Henning's Statutes, Vol. XI, page 283.)

John McDowell, son of Ephraim McDowell and his wife Margaret Irvine, was born in Londonderry; was a land surveyor; married Magdalen Woods. (My grand-aunt, Mrs. Martha Buford, wife of General Abram Buford, of the Revolution, in her record of the McDowell family of Virginia says: "Her mother's maiden name was Campbell, of the Argyle Clan.") In response to a petition from the settlers Governor Gooch issued a commission, dated July 8, 1742, to John McDowell as Captain of a Company. In a fight with the Shawnees, at what is now known as Balcony Falls, John McDowell, with eight of his men, was killed on December 25, 1742.

Those eight soldiers and their Captain who were killed at Balcony Falls, December 25, 1742, were not buried "in one common grave." I have in my possession the coffin handles from Captain John McDowell's first coffin. Some years after Colonel James McDowell (Dr. Hervey McDowell's grandfather) removed to Kentucky, he returned on a visit to Virginia. While there he assisted at the disinterment and removal of John McDowell's remains from Timber Ridge to the McDowell family burying-ground, near Fairfield. The coffin was crumbling to dust, but the small brass handles were still intact, but were thrown aside in placing the remains in a new coffin. James McDowell asked to be allowed to have them, and no one objected. He brought them back to Kentucky. He had a sort of "chest of drawers" built in a recess between a chimney and side wall of a bedroom in the fine old brick house he built (about two and one-half miles from Lexington, on the Georgetown pike); on these drawers the coffin handles were put. When Dr. Hervey McDowell was a lad it was decided that this chest of drawers should be torn out, that a window might be cut in this recess. He was already in possession of his grandfather's (old Colonel James McDowell's) sword, captured at the battle of the Cowpens from one of Tarleton's troopers. The drawers were piled up in the garret (as

things often are, of no use, but too good to throw away)! He had heard the story of the handles many a time, asked for them, and they were given him. I have always heard among my kin in Rockbridge that John McDowell's body was carried home and buried at Timber Ridge.

Alexander Keith Marshall McDowell was born in Mercer County, Kentucky, April 19, 1806. Died in Cynthiana, Kentucky, June 15, 1892. Civil engineer, planter, Judge of the Probate Court of Marengo County, Alabama. Elder in Presbyterian Church. Was educated at Dr. Priestley's School, at St. Joseph's, in Bardstown, Kentucky; and at Nashville. He was the son of Samuel McDowell, Jr., of Mercer, and his wife, Anna Irvine (daughter of Abram Irvine, of Mercer County).

Samuel McDowell, Jr., of Mercer, son of Judge Samuel McDowell (who was the son of Captain John McDowell and Magdalen (Woods) McDowell) and Mary McClung, his wife. Born in Augusta County, Virginia, March 8, 1764. Married Anna Irvine, October 4, 1785. Died June 20, 1831. Farmer in Mercer County, Kentucky.

[The *data* relating to this branch of the McDowells were kindly furnished me by Mrs. Louise I. McDowell, widow of the late Dr. Hervey McDowell, and mother of Rev. Hervey McDowell.—Editor.]

SKETCH 41.

MRS. JESSIE NUTTY, PITTSBURG, PENNSYLVANIA.

Mrs. Jessie Nutty (*nee* McCoy) wife of Mr. Gale Richard Nutty, is the daughter of Pitt Y. McCoy and his wife, Nellie Woods, and was born at Salem, Kentucky, March 26, 1866. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Michael Woods, Jr.

The said Nellie Woods was the daughter of Henry William Woods by his wife, Nellie Hodge; and the said Henry William was the son of David Woods by his wife, Sallie Neal; and the said David was the son of William Woods (sometimes known as "Baptist Billy Woods") by his wife, Joanna Shepherd; and the said William was the son of Michael Woods, Jr., by his wife, Anne; and the said Michael, Jr., was the son of Michael Woods of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell.

The said Pitt Yandell McCoy, who married Nellie Woods, was the son of Dr. George Rice McCoy by his wife, Mary Ann Field; and the said Mary Ann was the daughter of Daniel Field by his wife, Elizabeth Daily; and the said Elizabeth was the daughter of Philip Daily by his wife Mary. Said Philip Daily was a Revolutionary soldier and served in the Third Maryland Regiment.

Jessie McCoy is the daughter of Pitt Y. McCoy and Nellie Woods. Born at Salem, Kentucky, March 26, 1866. Her mother died at their home in Columbus, Kentucky, May 13, 1871, after which Jessie McCoy made her home in Golconda, Illinois, with her Grandmother McCoy. In December, 1875, her father married Effie Carr, in Evansville, Indiana, when Jessie made her home with them, till her marriage, October 30, 1889, to Gale Richard Nutty, of Vienna, Illinois. Mr. Nutty was connected with the National Lead Company, of New York, for thirteen years, the last six as assistant general manager in Cincinnati. In 1902 he accepted a position in Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, as general manager of the Guffey Petroleum Company (of Texas), which place is their home, at present. Jessie McCoy was educated at Daughters College, Harrodsburg, Kentucky, and also at Hamilton College, Lexington. They have two children: Gale Richard Nutty, Jr., born in Evansville, April 18, 1891, and Pitt McCoy Nutty, born in Evansville, February 10, 1893.

Nellie Woods was the daughter of Nellie Hodge and Henry Williams Woods. He was born at Salem, Kentucky, March 30, 1841. Died there July, 1880. Nellie Hodge died there also, about 1845. Dr. Pitt Y. McCoy (Jessie's father) was born at Golconda, Illinois, June, 1841. He was educated at Franklin College, Indiana, which was founded by his grandfather, John McCoy (a Baptist preacher), in 1834. He was a graduate, also, of Rush Medical College of Chicago, in June, 1863. He married Nellie Woods at Salem, 1865, and lived at Columbus, Kentucky, till her death, 1871. He

settled in Evansville, September, 1873, where he soon became the leading physician and surgeon. Has been chief surgeon of the Louisville & Nashville Railroad for the past fifteen years. He was the son of Dr. George Rice McCoy, of Charlestown, Indiana, and Mary A. Field, of Golconda, Illinois.

1. James McCoy, orphan lad of ten years, came from Scotland in 1700. He landed at Baltimore. After a few years he emigrated to Kentucky, and subsequently married a member of the illustrious Bruce family, of Scotland, locating near Uniontown, Fayette County, Pennsylvania. He was blessed with six children, the third of whom was 2, William McCoy, born in Fayette County. He married Elizabeth Rice, and resided in his native county several years, where he was ordained to be a Baptist minister. In 1790 he moved with his family to Kentucky, as a pioneer preacher. At the beginning of the present century, he moved to the southern part of the territory of Indiana, where he spent his last days. He was blessed with six children, of whom, 3, John McCoy was the second, born February 11, 1782, in Fayette County, Pennsylvania. The third son, Isaac, was born in Pennsylvania also, June 13, 1784. He became the great missionary to the North American Indians. John McCoy married Jane Collins October 13, 1803, and located in Clark grant, Indiana Territory, about ten miles north of Louisville, on the east bank of Silver Creek. They had ten children, of whom the ninth was, 4, George Rice McCoy, born March 16, 1817, in Clarke County, Indiana, and married Mary Ann Field, April 15, 1838, in Golconda, Illinois. He died there December, 1848, leaving four children, the second of whom was, 5, Pitt Yandell McCoy, born in Golconda, June 29, 1841. He married June 20, 1865, Nellie Woods, of Salem, Kentucky, who died in May, 1871, at their home in Columbus, Kentucky, leaving one child, 6, Jessie McCoy, the subject of this sketch.

THE FIELD LINE.

The Field family, to which the Kentucky branch belongs, were of English and Virginia descent, and all spring from the same stock with the Fields of New Jersey and New England. They were a proud, aristocratic people, planters, slaveholders, and fox hunters. Their descendants are scattered over Virginia, Kentucky, the South and West. Many of them have occupied high places in society and the State. Among them, Judge Alex Polk Field, Judge Richard Field, of Culpeper, Virginia, and Judge A. R. Burnam, now of the Kentucky Court of Appeals, also Chief Justice Brewer. First was:

1. Henry Field, who came from England, in the ship "Expectation," and landed at Jamestown, Virginia, November, 1635, at the age of twenty-four. He prospered and obtained large grants of land from the Crown. Among other children were:

2. Abraham Field, born in Culpeper County, Virginia. Married Mary ——. Died Westmoreland County, 1674. Second son was:

3. Abraham Field, Jr. Born Culpeper County. Married Miss Byrd, whose parents owned a farm on James River. He was elected vestryman of the Great Fork Church, 1774, and served until his death, in September, 1775. He left eleven children, of whom the second was:

4. Colonel John Field. Born Culpeper County, Virginia. Married Anna Rogers Clark, sister of General George Rogers Clark. He was educated in England, and served as ensign in the British army, until promoted to Colonel of a regiment. He was a Lieutenant under Colonel George Washington, in the Braddock campaign. He also commanded the Virginia troops, in the battle at Point Pleasant, where he lost his life in this gallant fight, at the head of his regiment, October, 1774, for which services his heirs were granted a large tract of land in now Bourbon County, Kentucky, by Governor Lord Fairfax. He lived at his home, the "Field Manor," St. Mark's Parish, Culpeper County, which place is still owned by his descendants.

Colonel John Field was a member of the House of Burgesses from Culpeper, in 1765. His brother Henry was a Lieutenant in the Continental line of the Revolutionary army, and died in service, in

1778. Another brother, Reuben, was lieutenant in the Eighth Virginia Regiment, was promoted in 1781 to rank of Captain of the Fourth Regiment. He served seven years, and was at the surrender of Cornwallis.

Several of Colonel John Field's children came to Kentucky (Bourbon County) about 1794. He had eleven, of whom the eighth was:

5. Lewis Field, born in Culpeper County, Virginia, about 1764. Married ——. He emigrated to Bourbon County, Kentucky, and later to Jefferson County, where his seven children were born. He died in Pope County, Illinois, at the home of his oldest son, who was:

6. Daniel Field, born in Jefferson County, Kentucky, November 30, 1790. He married Elizabeth Daily, at Charlestown, Indiana. He settled in Golconda, Illinois, about 1810, dying there in 1855; was a man of great enterprise, engaged in merchandising, and became a large land-holder, farmer, and stock-grower, and extensive shipper of stock and produce to the lower Mississippi markets. He reared a large family, of whom

7. Mary Ann Field, was the second. Born in Golconda, Illinois, November 11, 1818. She married April, 1838, Dr. George Rice McCoy, of Charlestown, Indiana. He died in Golconda, December, 1848, leaving four children and his widow, where she resided till her death, March 5, 1902.

8. Pitt Yandell McCoy was their second child. Born in Golconda, June, 1841.

SKETCH 42.

MRS. GEO. B. MACFARLANE, COLUMBIA, MISSOURI.

Mrs. Macfarlane's maiden name was Alice Frances O'Rear. She was born in Rocheport, Missouri, June 14, 1849. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Colonel John Woods. Her father was William Tandy O'Rear, who was born at Mt. Sterling, Kentucky, June 20, 1818, moved with his parents to Columbia, Missouri, in 1835, married Elvira Frances Slavin May 5, 1846, and died May 30, 1883. He was a farmer and teacher. The father of said William T. O'Rear was Daniel O'Rear, who was born in Fauquier County, Virginia, November 15, 1777, moved to Kentucky after the close of the Revolution, married Elizabeth Bush, of Clark County, Kentucky, January 10, 1799, moved to Boone County, Missouri, in 1835, and there died April 15, 1861. The father of said Daniel was Jeremiah O'Rear, who was born in Fauquier County, Virginia, married Mary Catlett, and spent the latter years of his life in Montgomery County, Kentucky, where he and his wife died.

The aforesaid Elvira F. Slavin was born in Boone County, Missouri, November 23, 1828, married William T. O'Rear May 5, 1846, by him had four sons and six daughters, and died August 27, 1882. The father of said Elvira F. was William Slavin, who was born November 29, 1793, married Frances Woods October 14, 1817, in Garrard County, Kentucky, moved to Boone County, Missouri, in 1823, where he carried on farming till his death, May 1, 1848. The wife of said William Slavin (Frances Woods) was born in Garrard County, Kentucky, April 26, 1800, had six daughters and one son, and died February 11, 1836. The father of the said William Slavin was John Slavin, who was born in Virginia or North Carolina in 1754, served as a private in Captain Michael Bowyer's Company of the Eighth Virginia Regiment, having enlisted October 10, 1776. After the Revolution he moved to Garrard County, Kentucky, where he lived till his death, December 16, 1851. His wife was a Miss Graham, who was born in Virginia and died in Kentucky. The father of the aforesaid Frances Woods was James Woods, who was born January 21, 1743. In Part I of this volume, (page 101 *et seq.*) a sketch of James Woods is given, which need not be repeated here. This James Woods was the eldest son of Colonel John Woods by his wife, Susannah Anderson, and Colonel John was the favorite son of Michael, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell. Mrs. Macfarlane, the subject of this sketch, states that James Woods, the son of Colonel John Woods, was commissioned Colonel

of a Virginia Regiment November 12, 1776, and that his regiment was known successively as the Fourth, the Eighth, and the Twelfth. There was a Colonel James Wood (his name has no final s) who commanded a Twelfth Virginia Regiment in the Revolutionary Army, and he has been mistaken now and then for a James Woods. The reader is referred to pages 102, 146 and 147 of this volume, where this question is discussed. The James Wood who commanded one of the Virginia regiments designated as the Twelfth, was a different man from James Woods, the son of Colonel John Woods. These statements are made merely to guard the reader against a very natural and pardonable mistake. That James Woods, son of Colonel John Woods, did command some one of the Virginia regiments (1776-1782) is the belief of many of his descendants, and is not questioned by the author of this volume.

The eleventh child of James Woods and his wife, Mary Garland, was named Elizabeth Garland Woods, and she married Garland Reid in Garrard County, Kentucky, November 12, 1816. In October, 1836, Mr. and Mrs. Reid moved to Randolph County, Missouri. Mrs. Reid died in December, 1848, and Mr. Reid died July, 1859. They had eleven children, as follows:

(a) Mary A. Reid, who married John J. White in Missouri January, 1838, and left two children, to wit: Elizabeth, and Sarah J. (b) Clifton G. Reid, who was born in 1820, and died in 1844, in Ralls County, Missouri. (c) Caroline E. Reid, who was twice married. Her first husband was W. L. Brashear, whom she married June, 1842, and who died in 1851, leaving one son, Walter Q. Her second husband was Edward Halman, whom she married at Davenport, Iowa, in 1853, and by whom she had six children, as follows: 1, Lizzie D., who married G. W. Amsbury; 2, Carrie B., who married H. H. Skinner; 3, Edwin F., who died in childhood; 4, Glenn H.; 5, Edward H., and 6, Carl A. (d) The fourth child of Garland and Elizabeth was Sarah W. Reid, who married Dr. Martin Hickman in 1843, and left two children, as follows: 1, Nathaniel G., who died in 1881, unmarried; and 2, C. B., who married Mrs. Margaret Starr. (e) The fifth child was John B. Reid, who married Nancy Hocker in 1851, and left seven children, as follows: 1, Clifton; 2, Elizabeth; 3, Sarah; 4, John; 5, Lula; 6, Arthur; and 7, Luther. (f) The sixth child was Susan J. Reid, who married James Rurubald in 1852, and left the following children, to wit: 1, George O.; 2, Ellen J.; 3, Lizzie; and 4, Mary. (g) The seventh child was Dr. James A. Reid, who married at Rock Island, Illinois, in 1862, and left two children: 1, Clifton A.; and 2, Annie L., who married C. Cameron. (h) The eighth child was Miriam O. Reid, who married Easom S. Hickam in 1851, and left four children, as follows: 1, Lizzie; 2, Warren; 3, Homer; and 4, Lee. (j) The ninth child was William M. Reid, who married B. Jane Spiller in 1868, and left nine children, among whom were two pairs of twins, as follows: 1, Zulah; 2 and 3, Edward and Carrie; 4, Charles; 5, Frank; 6, John; 7, George; and 8, and 9, Ellie and Nellie. (k) The tenth child was Rachel W. Reid, who was twice married. Her first husband was Captain Jefferson Taylor, of Davenport, Iowa, whom she married in 1855, and who died in the army, leaving two sons: 1, John; and 2, Frank. Her second husband was the Rev. W. Davenport, whom she married in 1868, and by whom she had four children, as follows: 1, Minnie; 2, Burr; 3, Sylvester; and 4, Ida. (l) The eleventh and last child of Garland Reid and Elizabeth G. Woods was Nathaniel G., who, in 1874, married Nancy Goodall, and by whom he had three children, as follows: 1, Martha; 2, Bessie; and 3, Clifton.

Mrs. Macfarlane furnishes the following sketch of her late husband, who was an honored and distinguished jurist of Missouri:

Judge George Bennett Macfarlane was born in Calloway County, Missouri, near Fulton, January 21, 1837, and died in St. Louis, Missouri, February 12, 1898, aged sixty-one years. He was the son of George Macfarlane, who was born in Stewarton, Ayrshire, Scotland, and of Catherine Bennett, his

wife. His mother was a native of Boone County, Missouri.

George Bennett Macfarlane was a learned lawyer, graduate of Westminster College, Fulton, Missouri, an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and had served seven years as Judge of the Supreme Court of Missouri at the time of his death, leaving an unexpired term of five years. Since 1865 his home was Mexico, Missouri. He was a man of spotless character and integrity, and great ability, fairness and justness. He was a "just man," and a great loss to his family and to his State.

William Lawrence Macfarlane, our son, was born in Mexico, Missouri, June 30, 1879, and died in Jefferson City, Missouri, December 30, 1895, aged sixteen and one-half years. Our oldest son, Charles Roy, is a lawyer, living in St. Louis, Missouri. Our second son, George Locke, is a newspaper man in New York City. Our youngest son, Guy O., is attending the Missouri State University at Columbia, Missouri, where we (he and I) are living temporarily, while he is attending college.

The children of William Slavin by his wife, Frances Woods, were eight, as follows: (a) The first child was ELIZABETH SLAVIN, who married William McClure, and had five children: 1, Fannie; 2, Alexander; 3, Samuel; 4, Almira; and 5, Clark. (b) The second was JAMES RICE WOODS SLAVIN, who died in early life. (c) The third was MARY JANE SLAVIN, who married Robert Nichols, and had three children, as follows: 1, Overton; 2, Isaac; and 3, Mary. (d) The fourth was JOHN ADDISON SLAVIN, who married Emma Ruth Ross. (e) The fifth was ELVIRAH FRANCES SLAVIN, who married William Tandy O'Rear, and had ten children, who will be listed presently. (f) The sixth was SARAH MARGARET SLAVIN, who married Thomas Wright, and had eight children. (g) The seventh child was MARTHA RACHEL SLAVIN, and married Sidney Jackman, and had eight children. (h) The eighth and last child of William Slavin and Frances Woods was SUSAN OVERTON SLAVIN, who married Allen B. O'Rear, and had three children.

The before-mentioned William Tandy O'Rear married Elvirah Frances Slavin, as previously noted, and to this couple were born ten children, as follows: (a) The first was WILLIAM ALEXANDER O'REAR, who died in infancy. (b) The second was ALICE FRANCES O'REAR, the subject of this sketch, who married Judge George B. Macfarlane, as elsewhere noted, and by him had six children, as follows: 1, Elvirah, who died in infancy; 2, George Tandy, who also died in infancy; 3, Charles Roy; 4, George Locke; 5, William Lawrence, who died at the age of sixteen; and 6, Guy. (c) The third child of William T. O'Rear and Elvirah Frances was CHARLEY WAYMAN O'REAR, who died when twenty-nine years old. (d) The fourth was LORELLA O'REAR, who married Carleton J. Tannehill, and had six children, as follows: 1, Elvirah, who married Robert B. Rogers; 2, Sarah; 3, Ruth; 4, Hattie; 5, Mattie L.; and 6, Newton. (e) The fifth child was WOODS SLAVIN O'REAR, who married Flora Prewitt, and had two children, to wit: 1, Clyde; and 2, George Macfarlane. (f) The sixth was SUSAN ALLIE O'REAR, who died when twenty years old. (g) The seventh child was MATTIE O'REAR, who married P. E. Locke, and had two children, as follows: 1, Allie O'Rear; and 2, Emma Lydia. (h) The eighth child was MARY VARINA O'REAR, who married H. M. Clark and had four children, as follows: 1, Miller; 2, Alice; 3, Elva; and 4, Ruth. (j) The ninth was ROBERT, who died in infancy. (k) The tenth and last child of William T. O'Rear and Elvirah F. Slavin was ARANA O'REAR, who died in infancy.

SKETCH 43.

MRS. J. H. ROGERS, LEXINGTON, KENTUCKY.

Mrs. Rogers's full maiden name was Jane Woods Harris, being the daughter of the late John Woods Harris and his wife, Ann Mary McClure. She married John Johnson Rogers, who has been dead some years. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through Colonel John Woods, his favorite son. The account of Colonel John Woods and his descendants to be found in

Part I (pages 97-109) and much of the matter given in the sketches of several other patrons contain many items of interest to Mrs. Rogers's family. The most of these need not be presented in this sketch, as the very full index at the close of this volume renders it easy to find the name of nearly every person referred to herein. The said John Woods Harris (father of Mrs. Rogers) was the son of Judge Overton Harris by his wife, Mary Rice Woods; and said Mary Rice Woods was the daughter of James Woods and Mary Garland; and said James was the son of Colonel John Woods and Susannah Anderson; and Colonel John was the son of Michael, of Blair Park, and Mary Campbell.

A brief account of Judge Overton Harris, Mrs. Rogers's grandfather, is herewith presented.

Overton Harris was born in Madison County, Kentucky, November 24, 1789; emigrated to Boone County, Missouri, in 1817, and died there January 19, 1844. First Sheriff of Boone County, Missouri (1821), which office he held till appointed by the Governor Collector and Assessor, in 1822. His securities were Michael and Anderson Woods. It is officially stated that his accounts were kept with scrupulous exactness.

He served as Major in the Black Hawk War, Third Division, Missouri Militia; also as County Judge of Boone County for a number of years. Mr. Harris was a man of strong intellect and deeply religious nature, unusually cheerful and vivacious, and enjoyed the confidence and affectionate regard of all who knew him.

Mary Rice Woods, who was the tenth child of James Woods and Mary Garland, and who became the wife of Judge Overton Harris, was the grandmother of Mrs. Rogers. She was born in Virginia September 24, 1795, and migrated with her parents to Garrard County, Kentucky, where, on December 1, 1814, she was united in marriage to Overton Harris, with whom, in the autumn of 1817, she emigrated to Missouri, where she spent the remainder of her long and useful life. She was the mother of ten children, seven of whom lived to be grown.

When quite young she was converted, and in 1818 made a public profession of religion and was received into the fellowship of the old Bethel Baptist Church in Boone County. In a short time, however, she took a letter from this church to enter with others into the formation of the Bonne Femme Church. This organization was formed in her house. In it she lived a faithful and devoted member for more than half a century. When she died Bonne Femme Church lost the last one of that noble little band who had covenanted together to keep house for the Lord.

In 1844 she was left a widow to battle through long years the storms of life without the counsel and sympathy of the companion of her youth and partner of her early struggles.

Her life was marked by evidences of deep personal piety, devotion to the cause of Christ, and faithfulness in all the relations of life.

She manifested a growing solicitude to encourage in Christians devotion to Christ and to admonish the unconverted to seek the Lord.

For several years previous to her death she was greatly afflicted, but amid all her sufferings Jesus was the joy of her heart and Heaven the burden of her song.

During her last illness she often said to her friends, "I am just resting on the shore."

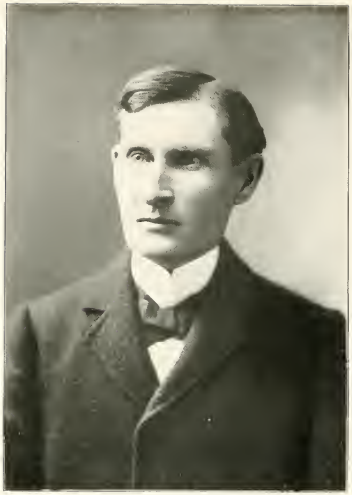
She was favored with wonderful manifestations of her personal acceptance in Jesus and for hours previous to her death seemed to be, as she positively affirmed, mingling with a host of sainted friends who had gone before. She died August 31, 1876, at the age of eighty, universally honored and loved by her acquaintances.

The children of Judge Overton Harris and his wife, Mary Rice Woods, were seven in number: (a) John Woods Harris, who married Ann Mary McLure; (b) James Harris, who married Sabra Jackson; (c) Martha Ryland Harris, who married John Mills Maupin; (d) William Anderson Harris, who married Elizabeth Robnett; (e) Sarah Elizabeth Harris, who married George Hunt; (f) Mary Frances Harris, who married

JOHN WOODS HARRIS.
(DECEASED.)
(See Sketch No. 43.)

MRS. MARY FRANCES HARRIS.
FULTON, MO.
(See Sketch No. 44.)

HON. JAMES P. WOODS
ROANOKE, VA.
(See Sketch No. 63.)



JUDGE JOHN W. WOODS.
ROANOKE, VA.
(See Sketch No. 62.)

HON J. D. GOODLOE.
WHITES STATION, KY
(See Sketch No. 49.)

HON. OLIVER T WALLACE
POINT LEAVELL, KY.
(See Sketch No. 79.)

Thomas Berry Harris; and (g) Overton Michael Harris, who married Amanda Wood.

Children of John Woods Harris and his wife, Ann Mary McClure:

(a) Martha Maupin Harris, wife of General William Jackson Hendrick, lawyer, New York City. Issue: 1, Anne Hendrick, wife of Robert Burns Wilson, poet, artist, Frankfort, Kentucky. Issue: Anne Elizabeth. 2, Sophie Kemper Hendrick, wife of Dr. Frederic Smith Pickett, physician, Cleveland, Ohio; 3, Jane Carlyle Hendrick; 4, John Harris Hendrick; 5, Jacqueline Hendrick.

(b) Frances Bond Harris, died when a child.

(c) Jane Woods Harris, now the widow of John Johnson Rogers (farmer). They had three children, to wit:

1, Martha Hendrick Rogers; 2, Mary Evelyn Rogers (died when an infant); 3, Virgil Johnson Rogers.

(d) Virgil McClure Harris, lawyer; married Isabel McKinley, St. Louis, Missouri. No issue.

(e) John Woods Harris, banker. Married Susan Oldham, of Nortonville, Kansas. Issue: 1, John Woods Harris, Jr.; 2, Mary Harris.

John Woods Harris, second child of Judge Overton Harris, and his wife Mary Rice Woods, was born August 31, 1816, in Madison County, Kentucky. He went with his parents to Boone County, Missouri, and the latter settled on Thrall's Prairie. This was the first settlement of any importance ever made in the county. Prowling Indians killed the only cow of the party, and log-rolling and feasts of wild game were features of that time.

At the age of fourteen he entered the mercantile establishment of General A. J. Williams at Columbia, Missouri. Attaining his majority, he embarked regularly in the business of merchandising, which he pursued with great success for thirty years at Columbia, Paris, and Rocheport, Missouri. Twice he was burned out, and had to begin anew.

During this long period he was recognized as one of the leading merchants of Central Missouri and a citizen of great public spirit.

Mr. Harris was frequently called to positions of trust, the duties of which he discharged with promptness and fidelity. He was director in the old Bank of the State of Missouri, and President of Rocheport Savings Bank. In 1860 and 1864 he was a member of the General Assembly of the State of Missouri from the County of Boone. This was a trying period, and Mr. Harris distinguished himself by acting the part of a loyal patriot and co-operating with the conservative members of the Legislature in holding Missouri true and steady to her National Constitutional obligations. In 1865 he was appointed by the Secretary of the Navy as one of the Board of Examiners to the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, Maryland. He was Commissioner to the Centennial in 1876.

For a number of years he served as a member of the State Board of Agriculture and of the Board of Curators of the State University.

He received the Degree of Master of Agriculture from the University and the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Missouri.

John Woods Harris was in many respects a remarkable man. He possessed an energy of character and executive ability that were extraordinary. His eminent social qualities gave him a warm welcome at every fireside, and his domestic virtues made him the beloved and honored head of an appreciative family.

His striking personal appearance was largely inherited from the Woods or maternal side of the family. His form was erect, his manners courtly, and his whole bearing that of a vigorous and capable leader of men.

On February 27, 1851, Mr. Harris was married to Miss Ann Mary McClure, daughter of Doctor William McClure, from whom he purchased the magnificent farm to which he moved, and on which he died. It was known as the "Model Farm," having been awarded the premium by the St. Louis Agricultural and Mechanical Association over all other competitors as the best "Model Stock Farm of Missouri." It comprised 1,800 acres.

The adornment and improvement of this farm was the crowning effort and sermon of Mr. Harris's life.

Where fifty years before the deer had been startled by the pioneer's gun, now was a park where a number of these graceful animals were at home.

John Woods Harris died May 3, 1876, and was buried at Columbia, Boone County, Missouri.

SKETCH 44.

MRS. MARY F. HARRIS, FULTON, MISSOURI.

Mrs. Mary Frances Harris did not have to change her name in marrying Mr. Thomas Berry Harris, for Harris was her maiden name, she being a daughter of the late Judge Overton Harris by his wife, Mary Rice Woods. Mrs. Harris is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Colonel John Woods, and is a near kinswoman of Mrs. Rogers, whose sketch next precedes this. In Mrs. Rogers's sketch will be found a great deal of matter of equal interest to her and Mrs. Harris, and which need not be repeated here.

Mary Frances Harris, sixth child of Judge Overton Harris and his wife, Mary Rice Woods, was born November 10, 1827, eight miles from Columbia, Boone County, Missouri. She was married to Thomas Berry Harris, July 25, 1852, by Rev. Noah Flood, Baptist minister. Mr. Thomas B. Harris was the son of Tyre Harris and his wife, Sarah Garland, and was born in Madison County, Kentucky, November 25, 1815. When an infant he went with his parents to Boone County, Missouri (1816).

Tyre Harris was an active spirit among the hardy pioneers. He afterward represented his county in the General Assembly several sessions. Thomas Berry Harris was about five feet four inches in height, had dark complexion and brown hair and eyes. He belonged to a people of strong character and individuality. He was a promoter of public and charitable enterprises, an extensive farmer and stock dealer and at one time was engaged in merchandising. He owned a large tract of land and many slaves. He never sold a slave, all were freed by the Emancipation.

He was Democratic in politics, and loyal to the Union. Was elected, from the Ninth Senatorial District of Missouri, a member of the Constitutional Convention, held at St. Louis, in 1865. The last great work in which Mr. Harris took a prominent part was the location of the Louisiana and Missouri River Railroad at Fulton, Missouri. The securing of this railroad was due more largely to his efforts and management than to any other citizen. Mr. Harris was a man of vigorous mind; thoroughly practical, he possessed the energy and aggressiveness that make leaders of men, and was, in all he undertook, emphatically a leader. By nature he was generous and companionable. He died of pneumonia, January 9, 1902.

Mrs. Harris was converted when thirteen years of age and was baptized by Rev. Robert Thomas. She was educated at Bonne Femme School, and in Columbia. She was tall and slender, with fair complexion, blue gray eyes, and brown curly hair. She assumed the responsibilities of life with womanly dignity and courage, and met its battles and trials with Christian fortitude. During long years of ceaseless activity she bestowed a bountiful hospitality, and governed her household with wisdom and firmness. At the bedside of the sick, beside the couch of the dying, wherever duty called her, she has not been found wanting. She is a living example of the truth that old age can approach gracefully. She is now, at the age of seventy-five, beautiful as in youth.

Surrounded and idolized by her family of sons and daughters, loved and revered by a large circle of kindred and friends, she is the picture of happiness and contentment. Such is the reward of a well spent life.

Thomas B. Harris and his wife, Mary Frances, had eight children. (a) The first was Martha Overton Harris, who resides at Fulton, Missouri; (b) The second was Sallie Tyre Harris, who married Judge A. M. Walthall, of El Paso, Texas, by whom she has four children, to wit: 1, Henry Vaughn Walthall, who practises law at El Paso, Texas; 2, William Maupin Walthall, who is dead; 3, Mary Miller Walthall; and 4, Sallie Tom Walth-

all. (c) The third child was SUSAN HARRIS, who resides at Fulton, Missouri. (d) The fourth was WILLIAM CHRISTOPHER HARRIS, who is President of the Calloway Bank, Fulton, Missouri. (e) The fifth child was MARY ELIZABETH HARRIS, who married Dr. J. A. Van Sant, of Mt. Sterling, Kentucky, by whom she has three children, as follows: 1, Thomas Harris Van Sant; 2, James Albert Van Sant, Jr.; and 3, Mary Frances Van Sant. (f) The sixth child was OVERTON THOMAS HARRIS, who is engaged in the wholesale dry goods business in St. Louis, Missouri. (g) The seventh child was TYRE CRAWFORD HARRIS, who is engaged in the wholesale hat business in St. Louis, Missouri. (h) The eighth child of Thomas Berry Harris and his wife, Mary Frances, is Miss ISABEL HARRIS, who resides with her mother at Fulton, Missouri.

SKETCH 45.

MRS. SUSAN E. CAMPBELL, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

Mrs. Campbell, whose maiden name was Susan Elizabeth Woods (called Bettie Woods), and who married Mr. Given Campbell, in 1865, is a daughter of the late Robert Kay Woods, by his wife, Susan Berry. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Andrew Woods. The said Robert Kay Woods was the son of James Woods, Jr., and his wife, Elizabeth Kay; and said James Woods, Jr., was the son of James Woods, Sr., and his wife, Nancy Rayburn; and said James Woods, Sr., was the son of Andrew Woods and his wife, Martha Poage; and said Andrew was the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and his wife, Mary Campbell.

In Part I (pages 119-126) will be found a pretty full exhibit of the Andrew Woods branch of the Woodses, which fact precludes the necessity of going into the same details at this point. Then the little booklet gotten out some years ago by Dr. Edgar Woods, of Charlottesville, Virginia, gives yet fuller particulars in regard to the same branch of Woodses, which publication has been widely distributed among the living representatives of Andrew Woods.

Mr. Robert Kay Woods, the father of Mrs. Given Campbell, of St. Louis (the subject of this sketch), was born in Elkton, Kentucky, on the fourth day of July, 1820. He grew to early youth in Nashville, Tennessee. He graduated at college at nineteen years of age, and was married at the age of twenty-one to Miss Susan Berry, daughter of Dr. Daniel Berry and Susan Farnam, his wife, who lived in their home, called Elmwood, a few miles out from Nashville, Tennessee, they having removed from Massachusetts, where they were born, to Nashville many years before. Dr. Berry was for many years President of the Nashville Female Academy. Miss Susan Berry was born in Russellville, Kentucky, in 1820. She was small in stature, and of a decided brunette type. Immediately after the marriage of Robert Kay Woods and Susan Berry, this young couple left the old homenest in Nashville, and located in St. Louis, Missouri, where they spent the remainder of their lives.

Mr. Robert Kay Woods became the head of a large wholesale dry goods business, the firm being Woods, Christy & Co. Mr. James Woods was also an owner in this business, and gave his son, Robert Kay Woods, an interest in the business to start him in life. When the war occurred between the States (1861-5) the money panic occasioned by it brought about a failure in the business of the firm of Woods, Christy & Co. Robert K. Woods's health became very much impaired, and he died at Enterprise, Florida, in the year 1874, where he had gone on account of his health. He was buried in the family lot at Belfontaine Cemetery in St. Louis, Missouri.

Mr. Robert Kay Woods was a man of rarely beautiful nature and fine principles, and handsome person. He was six feet and three inches in height and weighed, when he was about forty years of age, 215 pounds. He was extremely popular in social and business circles. At the time of his failure in business many of his friends came forward and offered him thousands of dollars as loans without any security whatever, so great was their confidence in him, and also their sympathy and friendship.

He was always a regular attendant at the Presbyterian Church, but never made a public confession of his faith in Christ until just before his death, when he told his wife that he had given himself to Christ, and that it was well with his soul. Mr. Robert Kay Woods and his wife, Susan Berry, had five children—four daughters and one son. The daughters were named Susan Elizabeth, Mary Pearson, who died in infancy, Annie Louisa, and Margaret; and the son, who was the youngest, was named Robert Kay. Of these children Susan Elizabeth, but always called "Bettie," was born at Elmwood, the home of her mother's parents, at Nashville, Tennessee, on the 16th day of July, 1842. At the age of twenty-two she married a young lawyer by the name of Given Campbell, a son of Judge James Campbell and Mary Given. Judge Campbell was a son of James Campbell, of Virginia, and Mary Given, his wife, was a daughter of Dickson Given, of Kentucky. Judge Campbell, the father of Given Campbell, lived in Paducah, Kentucky, and was a distinguished member of the bar in that State. The marriage of Bettie Woods and Given Campbell took place at Tuscaloosa, Alabama, at the residence of Mrs. Sam Kirkman, an aunt of Miss Bettie Woods. It was during the war, and under very romantic circumstances. The date of the marriage of Bettie Woods and Given Campbell is January 26, 1865, Mr. Campbell being at that time a Captain in the Confederate Army. About four months after the marriage the war ended and this young couple returned from Alabama to St. Louis, which was the home of Mrs. Campbell's parents. In the autumn of 1865 they settled in New Orleans, Louisiana, where they lived for eight years, then returning to St. Louis, they settled in that city permanently. Mr. Campbell stood at the head of the bar in Missouri, and many of the most honorable offices in the gift of the people of the city of St. Louis were offered to him and declined. He was a man of the highest sense of honor and devotion to duty, and of incorruptible principles, a brave gentleman and a Christian. Mr. Campbell graduated with high honors at the University of Virginia in the year 1857.

The children of Given Campbell and his wife, Bettie Woods, are Given Campbell, Jr., who is a physician and scientist, living in St. Louis. He was born in New Orleans, Louisiana, December 18, 1866. The second child is Susan Woods, born in Paducah, Kentucky, March 1, 1872, and James Campbell, born in St. Louis, Missouri, November 13, 1882. Of these three children only one has children, that is, the second child, Susan, who married Anthony Arnoux, of New York City, on the 22d of June, 1892, who has two children, a daughter called Cecila Laval, born in St. Louis, Mo., July 9, 1893, and a son named Given Campbell, born in New York City, January 13, 1895.

The following additional particulars in regard to Andrew Woods and his grandson, James Woods, Jr., are kindly furnished by Mrs. Given Campbell, and will be of interest to many of the Woodses:

Andrew Woods, the progenitor of the subject of this sketch, was born in Ireland about the year 1722. He received a fine education, and designed to enter the Presbyterian Church as a minister, but was prevented from so doing by ill health. About 1750 he married Martha Poage, the daughter of Robert Poage, of Augusta County, Virginia. His first home was in Albemarle County, close to his father's place, near the foot of the Blue Ridge, but in 1766 he removed to that part of Augusta County which afterwards became the county of Botetourt. His farm lay on both sides of the high road leading to the Holston River, nine miles south of Buchanan. It was sold by his executors to the family of Judge Simmons, of Botetourt. The house was furnished with loop-holes as a protection against the Indians, and stood intact until 1833. He took a very active part in public affairs, and was one of the first magistrates of Botetourt. He was one of the Commissioners with William Preston and others. Robert Breckinridge, in 1774, appointed him one of the executors of his will. Judge Simmons mentions having seen some of his papers (Andrew Woods's) which he says were elegantly written.

Andrew seems to have been the legal adviser and scribe for the whole neighborhood. He died in 1781, and was probably buried a few yards from his house. His wife, Martha Poage, survived him many years, and lived to be ninety years of age. She was a woman of most devout piety and uncommon strength of mind and was considered almost a perfect character.

The home of Mr. James Woods, Jr., grandson of Andrew Woods, was in Nashville, Tennessee. It stood on Broad Street, near the corner of Vauxhall Street and was a handsome, double, red-brick building, with porches in front of it, ornamented with white fluted pillars.

Mr. James Woods, Jr., was a tall man, and very erect. His hair was iron gray, and his face smooth-shaven. He dressed with extreme neatness. He usually carried a gold-headed cane. He had large iron works on the Cumberland River, where he employed about 1,500 slaves, all of whom he owned, to work out the iron, which was brought to Nashville. The firm in Nashville was Woods, Yeatman & Co. Mr. James Woods died very suddenly at eighty-two years of age.

SKETCH 46.

COL. J. W. CAPERTON, RICHMOND, KENTUCKY.

Colonel James W. Caperton, son of Colonel William H. Caperton and his wife, Eliza Estill, is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his eldest son, William Woods. The said William H. Caperton was the son of William Caperton, Sr., and his wife, Lucy Woods; and said Lucy Woods was the daughter of Captain Archibald Woods by his wife, Mourning Shelton; and said Archibald Woods was the son of William Woods and his wife, Susanna Wallace; and said William Woods was the eldest son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and his wife, Mary Campbell. In Part I of this volume (pages 60-67) the reader will find many interesting facts concerning William Woods, son of Michael, of Blair Park, and his numerous descendants, which should be read in connection with Colonel J. W. Caperton's sketch. Through Eliza Estill, wife of Colonel William H. Caperton, the subject of this sketch is directly descended from Captain James Estill, one of the most famous of all Kentucky pioneers, the said Eliza being the daughter of James Estill, Jr., and James, Jr., being a son of Captain James Estill, the pioneer, who lost his life in a battle with the Indians.

Mourning Shelton, the wife of Captain Archibald Woods, was the daughter of William Shelton and Lucy Harrison, his wife. William Shelton was the grandson of Richard Shelton, who came from England to America in 1680 with his brother, Daniel Shelton, and was the progenitor of the Shelton family in Virginia and the South.

The ancestral home "Shelton Hall" still stands in England. One of the descendants of Richard Shelton was Sarah Shelton, the first wife of Patrick Henry.

Daniel Shelton, the brother of Richard, settled in Connecticut, and from him is descended a long line of cultured men and women, prominent in New England and New York to-day.

Lucy Harris Shelton, the mother of Mourning Shelton Woods, was the daughter of Robert Harris and Mourning Glenn, of Albemarle County, Virginia.

Robert Harris and Mourning Glenn were the parents of seven daughters and four sons and from these have descended many useful, talented, and prominent people throughout the South, among whom may be mentioned: William Harris Crawford, the distinguished Georgian; Matthew Jouett, the celebrated portrait painter and artist of Kentucky; the Hon. James S. Rollins of Missouri; Colonel William H. Caperton of Kentucky; Hon. William C. Goodloe of Madison County, Kentucky, Judge of his Judicial District for a great many years, an eminent, just, and learned judge; he married a daughter of Governor William Owsley, was a near relative of Colonel William H. Caperton, and has a long line of most prominent and excellent descendants.

COL. JAMES W. CAPERTON.
RICHMOND, KY.
(See Sketch No. 40.)

COL. WM. H. CAPERTON.

(See Sketch No. 40.)

WOODS CAPERTON.

REV. J. P. WILLIAMSON.
(See Sketch No. 58.)

MISS NANCY H. LINDSAY
(See Sketch No. 58.)

REV. T. S. WILLIAMSON AND HIS WIFE, MARGARET.
(See Sketch No. 58.)

William Caperton, Sr., and Lucy Woods, daughter of Captain Archibald Woods, were married in 1790, in Madison County, Kentucky. William Caperton was the son of John Caperton of Monroe County, Virginia, the progenitor of the Caperton family in America, who came from a noble French ancestry, emigrating first from France to Wales, and then to America.

From this John Caperton has descended a line of highly talented citizens, some of whom have been distinguished in the counsels of the nation; among them may be mentioned: The Hon. Allen T. Caperton, a former United States Senator from West Virginia, and Hugh Caperton, several times elected to the Virginia Legislature, and Hon. Edward Echols, recently Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, his mother being Miss Caperton.

Colonel William H. Caperton, son of William Caperton and Lucy Woods, his wife, was born in Madison County, Kentucky, in March, 1798. At the age of sixteen years he volunteered under General Jackson in the Creek campaign, and was in the battles of Horse Shoe and Talladega.

On the restoration of peace he returned to the county of his birth, and studied law under his uncle, Archibald Woods, and was admitted to the bar in the year 1818. He at once entered into a large and lucrative practice; associated with the first lawyers of the State in the different courts of Central Kentucky, and in the Court of Appeals.

He was appointed United States District Attorney for the District of Kentucky, by President Fillmore, and discharged the duties thereof to the eminent satisfaction of the government.

Among Kentucky's eminent lawyers none were more gifted than Colonel William H. Caperton, in intellect and person. He was a born orator, and possessed brilliant talent; his features were handsome, and his form graceful; he was a great lawyer and a true and earnest advocate.

He was a contemporary of Henry Clay, John J. Crittenden, Ben Hardin, the Marshalls and other gifted Kentuckians, with whom he was associated in important cases at the bar.

Colonel William H. Caperton was married in 1819, to Eliza Estill, daughter of James Estill, by Mary Rodes, his wife, said Mary being the daughter of Judge Robert Rodes.

The children of Colonel William H. Caperton and Eliza Estill, his wife, are: (a) Woods Caperton; (b) Mary P. Caperton; and (c) James W. Caperton, now residing in Richmond, Kentucky.

(a) Woods Caperton was a brilliant young man, studied law but never practised, and died at an early age, unmarried.

(b) Mary P. Caperton married Leonidas B. Talbott, a brother of the Hon. Albert Gallatin Talbott, former member of Congress from Kentucky; she was a highly cultured lady, amiable and sweet in disposition, and loved and admired by her family and friends; she had one child, William C. Talbott, who was appointed by the United States Government to the United States Navy, and was educated at Annapolis and Newport; after several cruises at sea as a mid-shipman he resigned and returned to Kentucky, and was afterwards married to Miss Annie French, a most estimable and attractive young lady, the daughter of Dr. Robert French, of Madison County, Kentucky. They had one daughter, Clyde, a charming and beautiful young lady, who married Samuel Phelps Todd, and they have a son, William Talbott Todd, a very promising and handsome young boy.

Colonel James W. Caperton was educated at Centre College, Danville, Kentucky, and graduated at Transylvania Law School, Lexington, Kentucky, studying under Chief Justice Robinson, Thomas A. Marshall, Aaron K. Woolley and others. Soon after graduation he was granted license to practise law, and entered into partnership with his father, Colonel William H. Caperton.

Later, he was a law partner of the Hon. Curtis F. Burnam of Richmond, Kentucky. Colonel Caperton ranks among the first lawyers and financiers of Kentucky. He is a man of handsome appearance, great personal magnetism, and splendid intellect.

He is a forcible and original speaker, and before

juries in important cases he has few, if any, superiors. His speeches, full of wit, anecdote and humor, combined with lucid argument, are delivered in a quiet manner, with few gestures; and losing, entirely, consciousness of his own individuality in presenting the cause of his client, he becomes a powerful and convincing speaker.

He makes a model chairman of conventions, his decisions being fair, prompt and positive, and almost universally sustained. As a financier he is quick to grasp a correct view of business matters, and has for a number of years been president of the Richmond National Bank, of Richmond, Kentucky. He is also known as a man of "inflexible honesty, invincible courage and incorruptible patriotism." His sincere regard for his fellow-man gives him a peculiar hold upon his friends and acquaintances, and a dignity of bearing, combined with cordiality, has given him a great number of warm personal friends.

Colonel Caperton's large law practice and business interests have kept him out of politics, though he has been repeatedly offered prominent positions by his party. He was a delegate to the Convention at Philadelphia, when General Grant was nominated for the Presidency; at Cincinnati, when President Hayes was nominated; at Chicago, when President Garfield received the nomination; and at St. Louis, when the Convention nominated President McKinley.

Colonel Caperton is very fond of outdoor sports, and has for years kept a kennel of fine fox hounds, in which he takes great interest and pride. He is a fine shot on the wing or in the forest. Descended from an illustrious ancestry, he is a typical Southern gentleman, true in every particular to his day and generation, with reverence for all the sacred relations of life.

In October, 1890, Colonel Caperton was married to Miss Katherine Cobb Phelps, the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Phelps of Madison County, Kentucky. Mrs. Caperton (*nee* Phelps) is descended from a line of cultured ancestors, prominent in the Colonial and pioneer history of the country; and is herself a young woman of culture and education, being a graduate of the Bartholomew English and Classical School of Cincinnati, Ohio. Two lovely daughters, Mary James and Katherine Phelps, have been born to Colonel and Mrs. Caperton.

Colonel Caperton resides at Woodlawn, one of the noted places in Madison County, near Richmond, a Colonial residence, with a large landed estate attached. In the library of this stately old mansion are many rare volumes of over a century ago, published in Glasgow, London and Dublin, formerly owned by Archibald Woods, and Colonel W. H. Caperton, and brought over the Allegheny mountains by wagons. On the walls hang portraits of five generations back.

SKETCH 47.

E. W. FOSTER, NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE.

Mr. Edward West Foster, son of Robert and Julia Woods Foster, was born May 30, 1860. On the ninth day of January, 1889, he was married to Miss Susan Cockrill, daughter of Benjamin F. and Sarah Foster Cockrill. Mr. and Mrs. E. W. Foster have two children, to wit: (*a*) Ellen C. Foster; and (*b*) Robert Coleman Foster. Mr. Foster is the main partner in the well-known printing, engraving and blank-book manufacturing firm, of Nashville, known as Foster & Webb.

Mr. E. W. Foster is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Andrew. His father, Dr. Robert Coleman Foster, married Julia Hannah Woods on the 23d of December, 1851. Said Julia Hannah, who was born December 23, 1830, died June 28, 1890, leaving nine children. Julia Hannah Woods was the daughter of Robert Woods, by his wife, Sarah Browne West. Said Sarah B. West, who was born October 12, 1792, was the daughter of Edward West, and left seven children. Said Robert Woods, who was the son of James Woods, Sr., by his wife, Nancy Rayburn, was born December 25, 1786, married Sarah Browne West, May 19, 1818, and died January 25, 1843. The said James Woods, Sr., husband of Nancy Rayburn, and father of said

Robert Woods, was born in Virginia in 1751, married his wife, Nancy, in Montgomery County, Virginia, December 26, 1776, and died January 27, 1817, leaving ten children. Said James Woods, Sr., was the son of Andrew Woods by his wife, Martha Poage; and Andrew was the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell. The aforesaid Robert Woods was a brother of James Woods, Jr., and these two brothers were among the most successful and honored business men Nashville has ever had in all its history. Many particulars in regard to these brothers and their near relatives may be seen in Part I of this volume, and also in Sketch 45, that of Mrs. Campbell.

SKETCH 48.

MRS. J. G. GOODALL, CROZET, VIRGINIA.

Mrs. Goodall's maiden name was Julia Grayson Ellison, and her parents were James Monroe Ellison and William Benton Woods. The said Miss William Benton Woods, was the daughter of William Price Woods by his wife, Sarah Ellen Woods; and the said William Price was the son of James Woods, by his wife, Mildred Jones; and said James Woods was the son of that William Woods who was generally designated as "Beaver Creek Billy the Second," and whose wife was Mary Jarman; and said William Woods (otherwise known as "Beaver Creek Billy the Second") was the son of that other William Woods, who was called (for the sake of distinguishing him from several other Woodses whose Christian names were William) "Beaver Creek Billy Woods the First," and whose wife was Sallie Wallace; and said "Beaver Creek Billy the First" was the son of William Woods by his wife, (and first cousin), Susannah Wallace; and said William Woods (whose wife was Susannah Wallace) was the eldest son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell. It is thus shown that Mrs. Goodall is a lineal descendant of that noted pioneer of Piedmont, Virginia, Michael Woods, whose old plantation in western Albemarle County, at the base of the Blue Ridge, has been for more than a century known as Blair Park. Mrs. Goodall has the distinction, above all the other patrons of this volume, of having been born and reared within sight of Blair Park, which was settled by her distinguished ancestor in 1734, and in whose soil his dust has reposed since 1762.

The above-mentioned Miss Mary Jarman, who became the wife of "Beaver Creek Billy Woods the Second," was the daughter of the Thomas Jarman who, early in the eighteenth century, purchased the land on the summit of the pass in the Blue Ridge immediately overlooking the old Michael Woods plantation. That pass had been called, for at least three quarters of a century, "Woods's Gap;" but as the years passed, the name of Jarman gradually superseded that of Woods, and today it is called Jarman's Gap. It is under the very shadow of "Woods's Gap" (now Jarman's) that Mrs. Goodall and many of her ancestors have spent their lives—a locality as picturesque as can be found in all our country.

The Susannah Wallace who married William, son of Michael Woods, was not only William's first cousin, but three of her brothers married three of her husband's sisters—all first cousins. Susannah was the daughter of the Peter Wallace, who married Elizabeth Woods, Michael's sister, which explains the relationship of the children of Peter and Elizabeth to those of Michael and Mary. But, as neither the Word of God nor the English common law forbade such unions, there was no reason for disapproving intermarriages of cousins. When it is added that girls were not as abundant as men on the frontiers in Colonial days, and especially that the Woods and Wallace girls were, we doubt not, uncommonly attractive, we see nothing whatever to object to in the practice mentioned.

William Woods, son of Michael, and husband of Susannah Wallace, has already been treated of in Part I of this volume, and the reader is referred to that account. Mrs. Goodall states that he did not move from Pennsylvania to Virginia till early in the year 1745. This would make him a citizen of Pennsylvania for eleven years after the migration of his father to Virginia.

The author feels decidedly inclined to the view considered in Part I, namely: That William and Susannah came to Virginia in 1734, along with the Woods-Wallace colony.

William Woods's son William, called "Beaver Creek Billy the First," followed his father's example in the matter of marrying cousins. His first wife was Sallie Wallace, his cousin; his second wife, also, was a cousin, Annie Reid, daughter of his uncle John Woods, and Susannah Anderson. His third wife was a widow, whose maiden name, according to Mrs. Goodall, was Nancy Richardson, and her deceased husband's name, Jones. Dr. Edgar Woods gives her husband's name as Richardson (see his History of Albemarle, page 353). Beaver Creek Billy Woods the First was in the Revolutionary Army. In 1776 he was commissioned ensign, and then, soon after, lieutenant in the Virginia line. He was a man of marked individuality and force of character. He was born in 1744, and reached the ripe age of ninety-two, dying in 1836. "Beaver Creek Billy Woods the Second," was the only son of Beaver Creek First, and married Mary Jarman. He died in early life, but left several young children, the eldest of whom was James Woods, who inherited that portion of the original Michael Woods grant called "Lowland." His wife was Mildred Jones, the daughter of Captain William R. Jones, a distinguished officer in the War of 1812. James Woods, just mentioned, had a brother named William the Third, who also inherited part of the landed estate of "Beaver Creek the First," and who married Anne Richardson Jones, daughter of Col. John J. Jones. This Colonel Jones was a brother of the Captain William R. Jones, before mentioned, and was, like him, an officer in the War of 1812. The William Woods, just referred to, who married Miss Jones, had a daughter named Sarah Ellen Woods, and she became the wife of William Price Woods, who was her uncle James Woods's son. This couple were first cousins on one side and second cousins on the other. By such marriages the members of these families naturally grew to be very clannish.

William Price Woods inherited a part of the Lowland estate from his father—that portion of it known as "Highland." He was a soldier in the Civil War (1861-5), being a member of Company K, of the Second Virginia Cavalry. He received a wound in the fight at High Bridge, Prince Edward County, Virginia. He died August 8, 1900, leaving but one child, a daughter, William Benton Woods, who became the wife of James Monroe Ellison, the son of John Ellison and Martha Browne Pleasants. Mrs. Goodall (*nee* Ellison) married McChesney Goodall, and resides near Crozet, Virginia, almost within sight of Blair Park.

SKETCH 49.

HON. J. D. GOODLOE, WHITE'S STATION, MADISON COUNTY, KENTUCKY.

The Hon. John Duncan Goodloe was born in Boyle County, Kentucky, January 15, 1842. He is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park through Michael's eldest son, William Woods. Mr. Goodloe has been married twice. His first wife was Miss Jennie Faulkner White, to whom he was married February 18, 1873, and by whom he had six children, to wit: (a) HARRY, who was born May 4, 1874, and died December 5, 1894; (b) WILLIAM, who was born February 21, 1876, and died February 22, 1894; (c) JOHN DUNCAN, JR., who was born February 15, 1878; (d) GEORGE WHITE, who was born March 7, 1880; (e) PAUL MILLER, who was born June 26, 1882; and (f) MARGARET F., who was born December 17, 1885. The first Mrs. Goodloe, above named, died November 20, 1886. On the twenty-third of October, 1889, he married Miss Nellie Gough, of Lexington, Kentucky, and by her he has no children.

The father of J. D. Goodloe was Harry Goodloe, born October 7, 1807, and married Emily Duncan, November 27, 1831, and died October 1, 1848, leaving seven children, as follows: (a) ELIZABETH, born September 13, 1832, and died in infancy; (b) LUCY, born February 27, 1834, married Judge M. R. Hardin (afterwards Chief Justice of the Kentucky Court of Appeals), on the twenty-first of November, 1855, and died January 14, 1857,

leaving one child, who survived her only a short time; (c) WILLIAM, born April 22, 1837, who is unmarried and practises law in Danville, Kentucky; (d) EMMA, who was born January 11, 1840, and married George H. Simmons, January 20, 1867, by whom she has had two children, to wit: 1, Harry, and 2, Emily; (e) JOHN DUNCAN, the subject of this sketch; (f) HENRY, who was born November 9, 1844, entered the Confederate Army, and was killed July 4, 1863; and (g) DAVID, who was born October 14, 1846, and died November 5, 1855. The said Emily Duncan, wife of Harry Goodloe, was the daughter of John Duncan, by his wife, Lucy White, and was born October 30, 1811, and died May 25, 1866. Said John Duncan was the son of Benjamin Duncan, who died in Madison County, Kentucky, in November, 1796.

The before-mentioned Harry Goodloe was the son of William Goodloe and his wife, Susannah Woods, and said Susannah was the daughter of Archibald Woods, the pioneer, by his wife, Mourning Shelton; and said Archibald was the son of William Woods by his wife, Susannah Wallace; and said William was the eldest son of Michael Woods of Blair Park by his wife, Mary Campbell. The said William Goodloe was born in Granville County, North Carolina, October 23, 1769, came to Madison County, Kentucky, in the pioneer period, married Susannah Woods, February 23, 1796, and died October 24, 1856. Susannah bore to her husband thirteen children, and died October 2, 1851, in her seventy-fourth year.

Hon. John Duncan Goodloe is an honored citizen of Madison County, Kentucky, and in 1893 was sent to the State Senate by his constituents. He comes of the best pioneer stock on both sides. As shown in the foregoing exhibits, his paternal grandmother was Susannah Woods, daughter of Captain Archibald Woods, the famous pioneer, whose career was so intimately associated with the early history of Madison County. Captain Woods reached the ripe old age of eighty-eight, dying December 13, 1836, at the home of his son—Archibald, Jr.,—Fort Estill, Madison County, Kentucky. He was a fine specimen of the old Virginia gentleman, a man of splendid presence, and dauntless courage, and one whose life, both public and private, was an exemplification of the loftiest ideals of manhood and patriotism.

SKETCH 50.

SAMUEL B. ROYSTER, BEARD, KENTUCKY.

Mr. Samuel Bryan Royster is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through Michael's son William. He was born in Shelby County, Kentucky, August 22, 1861. He married Miss Lily Forwood, of Oldham County, Kentucky, and by her has one child, Samuel Bryan Royster, Jr., who was born at Beard, Kentucky, April 2, 1898.

His father was William Goodloe Royster, and his mother was Mary Bryan, of Fayette County, Kentucky. His parents, after residing for a short time in Fayette and Madison Counties, settled in Shelby County, Kentucky, where they lived until 1876. His parents had four children, to wit: (a) BETTIE, who married Malcolm Thompson, of Fayette County, Kentucky; (b) LAVENIA, who only lived about seven years; (c) ELLEN, who died in infancy; and (d) SAMUEL BRYAN, the subject of this sketch.

The said William G. Royster was the son of Mitchell Royster by his wife Mourning Shelton Goodloe. Said Mitchell Royster came from Virginia to Madison County, Kentucky. His trade was that of wagon-maker. Mitchell Royster and his wife left three children, as follows: (a) WILLIAM GOODLOE, who married Mary Bryan; (b) JOHN WOODSON, who married Anna Fleming, and settled on a farm near Bryan's Station, Fayette County, Kentucky, and reared a family of five children, to wit: 1, Mary; 2, Goodloe; 3, Celeste; 4, John Woodson, Jr., and 5, Florence.

The said Mourning Shelton Goodloe was one of the thirteen children of William Goodloe and his wife, Susannah Woods; and said Susannah was the third child of Archibald Woods and his wife, Mourning Shelton; and said Archibald (who was

SAMUEL BRYAN ROYSTER.
BEARD, KY.
[See Sketch No. 50.]

MRS. LILY FORWOOD ROYSTER
BEARD, KY.
[See Sketch No. [illegible]]

SAMUEL B. ROYSTER, Jr.
BEARD, KY.
[See Sketch No. [illegible]]

MRS. BETTIE ROYSTER THOMPSON
PAYNE'S DEPOT, KY.
[See Sketch No. [illegible]]

one of the earliest and most distinguished of the Kentucky pioneers) was the sixth child of William Woods and his wife, Susannah Wallace, and said William was the eldest son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and his wife, Mary Campbell.

SKETCH 51.

REV. EDGAR WOODS, PH. D., CHARLOTTESVILLE, VIRGINIA.

Dr. Edgar Woods is descended from Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Andrew. As some account of Andrew Woods has been given in Part I in treating of the children of Michael Woods we shall need to add here only a few items not heretofore presented:

Andrew Woods was born about 1722, and almost certainly in Ireland. He received a liberal education, and designed to enter the ministry of the Presbyterian Church; this purpose, however, he was obliged to relinquish on account of ill health. About 1750 he married Martha Poage, of Augusta County. His first home was in Albemarle, near the foot of the Blue Ridge, on a branch of Stockton's Creek, one of the tributaries of Mechum's River, close to Blair Park, his father's homestead. He removed in 1766 to that part of Augusta which afterwards became the County of Botetourt. His farm lay on both sides of the Great Road leading to the Holstein, nine miles south of Buchanan; and since it was sold by his executors, has remained in the family to which Judge Simmons, of Botetourt, belongs. The house indicated the dangers of the time, being furnished with loopholes as a means of defence against the Indians, and stood until 1813, when it gave place to the present structure of brick.

He took an active part in public affairs. He was one of the first magistrates of Botetourt. As a commissioner with Andrew Lewis, William Preston, and others, he assisted in locating a road from Crow's Ferry, on James River, to the County of Bedford, in 1772. Robert Breckinridge, in 1774, appointed him and William Preston, his two brothers-in-law, executors of his will. He was commissioned sheriff of Botetourt in 1777. Judge Simmons mentioned having seen a number of his papers, which were elegantly written, and by which he seemed to have acted as the legal adviser and scrivener of the whole neighborhood. He died in 1781, and was doubtless buried a few hundred yards from his house, but no memorial remains to mark the spot.

His wife survived him nearly forty years. In 1791 she joined the family of her son-in-law, James Poage, who at that time removed, by way of Wheeling and the Ohio River, to Clark County, Kentucky. She resided in his household, afterwards in Mason County, and then in Ripley, Ohio, until her death, which occurred April 15, 1818, in the ninetieth year of her age. She was a woman of uncommon strength of mind, and of earnest and devout piety. Her letters constantly breathe the spirit of the unseen world.

The family of Andrew and Martha was large. A number of their children died in infancy or childhood, but the following attained maturity, and had families of their own:

(a) James was born in Albemarle, and accompanied the family on their removal to Botetourt. He located on a farm in Montgomery County, on the North fork of the Roanoke River. He was there united in marriage to Nancy Rayburn in 1776. He was a man of devout spirit and unambitious temper. He was the only one of his father's sons who continued to reside in that part of the country. He died suddenly at his farm, January 27, 1817. He left five sons and four daughters. His second son, Joseph, an enterprising young man, removed to western Kentucky in 1802, and thence to Nashville in 1812, where he transacted a large and prosperous business, and became a wealthy man. In process of time he was followed thither by all his brothers and sisters.

(b) Robert Woods, the second son of Andrew and Martha, was born in Albemarle, and sometime previous to his father's death, about 1780, received the appointment of surveyor of Ohio County, which then largely covered the north-western portion of the State. He settled in Wheeling, and he

there married Miss Caldwell, and, after her death, Miss Eoff. By the first union he had one son, and by the second, one son and one daughter. He died about 1830.

(c) Andrew Woods, the third son of Andrew and Martha, was born in Albemarle. He went to Ohio County with his brother Robert, to assist him in the surveyor's office. In the early part of the present century he was postmaster in Wheeling. He was also engaged in merchandising and farming. He married Mary, daughter of John Mitchell, and widow of Major Samuel McCulloch, who was killed by the Indians at the mouth of Short Creek in 1782. He died in 1831, leaving four sons and three daughters.

(d) Archibald, the youngest son of Andrew and Martha Woods, was born in Albemarle, November 14, 1764. In his seventeenth year he entered the Revolutionary Army as sergeant in a company of Virginia riflemen, commanded by Captain John Cartmill. His company was first attached to the regiment of Colonel Otho H. Williams in Greene's army in North Carolina, was transferred to Wayne's Division under LaFayette, and participated in the affair near Jamestown on July 6, 1781. Prostrated by the malaria of the tide-water region, he was sent home with an honorable discharge from the hand of General William Campbell. He visited Kentucky after his recovery, and on his return joined his brother in Ohio County. His strong inclination was to settle in Kentucky, but it was never carried out. In 1787 he was a member of the Legislature, and continued to be at intervals through the decade of 1790. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1788. He was early appointed a magistrate in Ohio County, and acted as such until his death. He was first Major, then Lieutenant-Colonel of the Fourth Regiment of the Tenth Brigade of Virginia Militia. In the War of 1812 he was commandant of the troops from North-western Virginia, that marched for Norfolk as far as Cheat River, and were there met with orders to return. He was one of the founders of the North-western Bank of Virginia, and for many years its president. He died at his country seat near Wheeling, October 26, 1846, having attained, within a few days, to the age of eighty-two years. He was the father of thirteen children.

(e) Elizabeth, probably the eldest daughter, and one of the eldest children of Andrew and Martha Woods, became the wife of David Cloyd, who lived in Rockbridge County, Virginia. She lost her husband in 1789. An extant letter, written in 1790, indicates that she possessed a pious and sensible mind. She died in the winter of 1796-7, the first of the children to depart this life. She left four sons and five daughters. Martha, the eldest daughter, married Matthew Houston, who lived for many years near the Natural Bridge; and Rev. W. W. Houston and Rev. M. H. Houston were their grandsons. Margaret, the second daughter, married Rev. Matthew Houston, cousin of the Matthew just mentioned, removed with him to Kentucky, and with him also, amidst the religious excitement in the early part of the century, joined the Shakers, among whom they both died at Lebanon, Ohio, about 1830.

(f) Rebecca Woods was married to Isaac Kelly, and with him removed to Ohio County about 1786. There they spent their days. Their place in Botetourt joined that of her father. Their family consisted of five sons and four daughters.

(g) Mary Woods was born February 19, 1766, after the removal of the family from Albemarle. She was married to her cousin, James Poage, March 19, 1787. In 1791 she removed with her husband from his residence in Bath County to Clark County, Kentucky, then to Mason County, and finally to Ripley, Ohio, where, being left a widow in 1820, she died May 25, 1830. She was the mother of thirteen children. One of her daughters, Margaret, was married to Rev. Thomas S. Williamson, and they and another daughter, Sarah, who was afterwards married to Rev. Gideon Pond, spent their lives in Minnesota as missionaries to the Dakota Indians.

(h) Martha Woods, the youngest of the family, was born in Botetourt, and was married to

Captain Henry Walker, a citizen of that county. They resided on Craig's Creek, opposite the mouth of Barber's Creek. She lost her husband in 1803. She continued to live on Craig's Creek till her family was grown, when she made her home with her youngest son, George, who resided on John's Creek about four miles west of Newcastle. There she died December 14, 1834, and was buried in the family cemetery on the farm of John Walker, a mile or two from her old home down the creek. Her family consisted of eight sons and one daughter.

Rev. EDGAR WOODS, Ph. D., was born December 12, 1827, in Wheeling, West Virginia. Having resolved to devote his talents to the work of the Gospel ministry, he spent about twenty-seven years of his life in the active labors of his sacred calling, and abated his efforts only when admonished by a serious affection of the heart that his only hope for prolonging his days lay in relinquishing the duties of the pastoral office. His career as pastor was achieved in the following charges, to wit: (1) Presbyterian Church of his native city, Wheeling, West Virginia, from 1853 to 1857; (2) First Presbyterian Church of Columbus, Ohio, from 1857 to 1862; (3) Presbyterian Church of Charlottesville, Virginia, 1866 to 1877. In 1877, Dr. Woods founded a classical school of high grade for boys at Charlottesville, Virginia, known as Pantops Academy, an institution which has a reputation for excellence, such as but few schools of its class enjoy. To his accomplished son-in-law, Professor John R. Sampson, is due the credit of having taken hold of this institution when Dr. Woods's health necessitated his withdrawal from its management, and made it a school of national fame.

Dr. Woods's father was Thomas Woods, for a long time the cashier of the North-western Bank of Wheeling, West Virginia, and his mother was Mary Bryson, of Allegheny County, Pennsylvania. His parents had seven children, as follows:

(a) ANN ELIZA, who married James S. Polhemus, (b) SARAH M.; (c) THEODORE; (d) ARCHIBALD; (e) EDGAR, the subject of this sketch; (f) JOHN HENRY MCKEE; and (g) LYDIA B. The said Thomas Woods (husband of Mary Bryson) was the son of Colonel Archibald Woods by his wife, Anne Poage; and said Colonel Archibald was the son of Andrew Woods by his wife, Martha Poage; and said Andrew was the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell.

Dr. Woods married Miss Maria Cooper Baker, of Martinsburg, Virginia, September 7, 1853, and by her he has the following children, to wit: (a) ANN ELIZA, who married Professor John R. Sampson; (b) SAMUEL BAKER, who married Lucretia Derrick Gilmore September 1, 1881; (c) HENRY MCKEE, D. D., who married Miss Josephine Underwood, October, 1883, and is a missionary to China; (d) EDGAR, JR., M. D., who married Miss Frances A. Smith, daughter of Rev. Dudley D. Smith, at Shanghai, China, April 19, 1892, in which empire he (Edgar Woods, M. D.), has labored as a medical missionary; (e) JAMES BAKER, M. D., who married Miss Elizabeth Brown Smith, daughter of the Rev. Dr. James P. Smith, and, like his brother Edgar, is a medical missionary to China; and (f) MARY C.

Mrs. Maria Cooper Woods, *nee* Baker, was the daughter of Mr. Samuel Baker, an elder of the Presbyterian Church, by his wife, Eliza Strawbridge Reed. Eliza S. Reed was the daughter of Samuel Reed, a Revolutionary soldier and a distinguished lawyer, by his wife, Anna Kennedy. The said Samuel Baker was the son of James Baker, of "Federal Hill," Frederick County, Virginia, by his wife, Anne Campbell, who was a great beauty and an heiress. Said James Baker was the son of Samuel Baker, who came from England in 1750 as private secretary to Lord Fairfax. His wife was Elizabeth Brown.

Dr. Edgar Woods has placed the whole Woods family under lasting obligations to him by having published his History of One Branch of the Woodses, a small pamphlet; and his History of Albemarle County, Virginia, a neat octavo. Without these two publications at hand, the author of this volume could not possibly have given a great part

of the most valuable and reliable data to be found herein. No descendant of Michael Woods can afford to be without either of these publications. The present writer has drawn from them freely in the preparation of this work, and he desires, in this public manner, to record his grateful appreciation of the laborious researches Dr. Edgar Woods has made. The author of this volume knows from twelve years' labor what such researches mean.

SKETCH 52.

MRS. J. R. SAMPSON, CHARLOTTESVILLE, VIRGINIA.

The full maiden name of Mrs. Sampson was Ann Eliza Woods. She was the first child of the Rev. Edgar Woods, Ph. D., by his wife, Maria Cooper, *nee* Baker, and was born in Wheeling, Virginia, July 21, 1854. Being a daughter of Dr. Edgar Woods, she is, of course, a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through Michael's son, Andrew. In the sketch of her father, which immediately precedes her own, her genealogical lines are set out, and need not be repeated here. She was educated at the Mary Baldwin School at Staunton, Virginia, and was graduated thence with special distinction, taking the highest degree of that school, an honor which has been won by only a very few of the young ladies who have gotten their training there, and which is offered only by a few of the female colleges of the highest grade in the United States. She married Professor John R. Sampson, proprietor of Pantops Academy, Virginia, by whom she has had the following children, to wit: (a) EDGAR WOODS, who was born August 21, 1882, and lived but one month; (b) MARIE DUDLEY, who was born June 28, 1886, and lived only thirteen months; (c) ANNE RUSSELL, who was born December 28, 1889; and (d) MERLE D.' AUBIGNE, who was born April 30, 1893.

Professor John R. Sampson was born at Hampden Sidney, Virginia, June 15, 1850. His father was the late Rev. Dr. Francis S. Sampson, sometime Professor of Oriental Literature in Union Theological Seminary, Virginia, by his wife, Caroline Dudley. Three of the children of Rev. Dr. Sampson and his wife, Caroline, grew to maturity and married, to wit: (a) MARY BALDWIN, who married John James Dupuy, M. D., of the Confederate States Army, in May, 1865; (b) ALICE MERLE, who married Charles Baskerville in July, 1865; and (c) THORNTON RODGERS, who was an honored missionary of the Southern Presbyterian Church to the Kingdom of Greece, and who married Miss Ella Royster, of Memphis, Tennessee, in May, 1878.

The said Rev. Dr. Frances S. Sampson was the son of Richard Sampson, Jr., by his wife, Mary Rogers; and said Richard, Jr., was the son of Richard, Sampson, Sr., by his wife, Anne Curd; and said Richard, Sr., was the son of Stephen Sampson, Jr., of Goochland County, Virginia; and said Stephen, Jr., was the son of Stephen Sampson, Sr.; and said Stephen, Sr., was the son of Francis Sampson, who patented land in Goochland County in 1725.

Professor John R. Sampson has owned and conducted Pantops Academy, near Charlottesville, Virginia, for twenty years, and has proved himself to be one of the foremost educators of youth in the United States.

SKETCH 53.

J. A. R. VARNER, LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA.

Mr. John A. R. Varner was born in Lexington, Virginia, March 3, 1840. He was the son of Charles Varner and his wife, Sarah Lapsley Wallace. He was married to Miss Mattie Smiley, of Augusta County, October 15, 1874. He learned printing when yet a boy, and finally became an editorial writer of decided ability. He became interested in politics, and rendered the Democratic party most valuable services. He entered the Confederate Army in June, 1861, and was in the immortal "Stonewall Brigade" (Fourth Virginia Regiment). At the Battle of Gettysburg (July, 1863) he was made a prisoner, and for nearly two years was confined in Fort Delaware, whereby his health was hopelessly impaired. In 1885 President Cleveland made him U. S. Postmaster of Lexington, Virginia,

which office he filled till displaced in 1890 by President Harrison's appointee. In 1894 he was appointed United States Inspector of Chinese, with his office at Portland, Oregon. In the fall of 1894 his wife died, and one year later he also passed away. He left several brothers and sisters. He was descended from Peter Wallace, Sr., through his son, Peter, Jr., and from Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his daughter Martha.

Charles Varner, father of the subject of this sketch, was born in 1797, and died in 1860. His wife, Sarah Lapsley Wallace, was born in 1802, and died in 1852. Said Sarah L. was the daughter of Andrew Wallace (1784-1846) by his wife Jane Blair (1790-1836); and said Andrew Wallace (1784-1846) was the son of Col. Samuel Wallace (1745-1786) by his wife, Rebekah Anderson (1747-1798). Col. Samuel Wallace was an officer in the Revolutionary Army, and he had four brothers who also served the Patriot cause against the British, as follows: 1, Malcolm, who served under General Morgan at Boston, and died in service in 1775; 2, James Hugh, who was an ensign in the Third Virginia Regiment, and died of smallpox in Philadelphia in 1776; 3, Adam, who commanded a Rockbridge Company in the Tenth Virginia Regiment, and fell at the Waxhaws, May 29, 1780, bravely resisting Tarleton's Troopers. The sword with which he cut down several of the enemy on that bloody field was in Mr. Varner's possession in 1895. The name "Adam Wallace" is on the buck-horn handle in clear letters. 5, the remaining brother, Andrew Wallace, was a Captain in the Eighth Virginia and fell at Guildford Court House in 1781. The said Colonel Sam Wallace (and the four brothers just mentioned) was the son of Peter Wallace, Jr., and his wife, Martha Woods. The said Peter, Jr., was the son of Peter Wallace, Sr., and his wife, Elizabeth Woods. Said Martha Woods was the daughter of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife, Mary Campbell. Michael, of Blair Park, was the brother of Elizabeth Woods, wife of Peter Wallace, Sr. Hence Peter, Jr., and his wife, Martha Woods, were first cousins.

Mr. Varner was thoroughly versed in all the family lore of the Woodses and Wallaces, and took great pride in his Scotch-Irish ancestry. He rendered the author of this volume very great service in the way of information, and did so with the utmost courtesy and cheerfulness. He was, at the date of his death, a member of the Presbyterian Church, and his remains were interred in the Lexington Cemetery, in the midst of the region his worthy progenitors had settled a century and a half before.

The children of Col. Samuel Wallace and his wife, Rebekah Anderson, were the following: 1, Elizabeth, who was born in 1772, and married Charles Grigsby, of Tennessee, in 1790; 2, Andrew (first), who was born in 1776, and died very young; 3, James, who was born in 1778; 4, William, who was born in 1780, and died in 1808; 5, Martha, who was born in 1782, married John Ruff, and died December 30, 1828; 6, Andrew (second), who was born in 1784, married Jane Blair in 1812, and, after her death, Mrs. Mary C. (Blair) Poague, and died in 1846; and 7, Anderson, who was born in 1786, and married Mary Galbraith.

Mr. J. M. Perry, attorney at law, Staunton, Virginia, kindly furnishes some valuable information in regard to the Wallaces which became available to the author after the first chapters of this work were in print, and use of his notes is made herein. Mr. Perry's maternal grandmother was Susan Ruff Martin, daughter of the Martha Wallace, mentioned above, who was born in 1782, and became the wife of John Ruff. Mr. Perry had access to some family papers of an aunt of his, and one item he furnishes, which the author has not met with elsewhere, is the statement that Peter Wallace, Sr., on first coming to America, settled on Tybee Island, colony of Georgia, and that about 1734 he settled in Albemarle County, Virginia. There are no records in Albemarle, however, to indicate that Peter Wallace, Sr., ever was in that county; and the strong probability is that he died in Ireland prior to the date of the migration of

ROBERT WOODS WALKER.

MRS EULALIE V. WALKER.
LITTLE ROCK, ARK.

(See Sketches [illegible])

ELMWOOD, JEFFERSON CO., ARK.
HOMESTEAD OF R. W. WALKER, DECEASED

CREED T. WALKER
LITTLE ROCK, ARK.
(See Sketch 50.)

MRS. ALFRED D. MASON.
MEMPHIS, TENN.
(See Sketch 57.)

ALFRED D. MASON, JR.
MEMPHIS, TENN.
(See Sketch 57.)

the Wallaces and Woodses to Pennsylvania (1724). Peter Wallace, Jr., the son of the elder Peter, may have been confounded with his father in some of the statements quoted. Peter, Sr., was, beyond reasonable doubt, a Highland Scotchman, who was born and reared in Scotland, and then migrated to Ulster, Ireland. In the latter island he probably met and married Elizabeth, sister of Michael Woods, and died there prior to 1724, leaving his wife with a considerable family of boys and girls.

SKETCHES 54, 55, 56 AND 57.

MR. R. W. WALKER, MR. J. W. WALKER, MRS. E. V. WALKER, MRS. A. D. MASON.

The family of Walkers now to be considered are lineal descendants of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through Michael's son Andrew. Their line may be stated thus: Andrew Woods (son of Michael, of Blair Park, and his wife Mary Campbell) who married Martha Poage, had, among other children, a son named James Woods, whose wife was Nancy Rayburn; said James and Nancy had, among other children, a daughter named Margaret Woods, who married John Moore Walker; and said John Moore Walker and his wife Margaret had, among other children, a son named Robert Woods Walker, who married Miss Eulalie Vanjine Taylor. This Robert W. Walker was born near the Natural Bridge, Rockbridge County, Virginia, September 11, 1810. In 1812 the family moved to Caldwell County, Kentucky, where Robert's father died in 1816, when he was a child of six years. Robert continued to reside there till about 1826, when he began his business career in Nashville, Tennessee. In 1838 he moved to Jefferson County, Arkansas, and there he continued to reside till his death, which occurred November 20, 1867. On the 27th of January, 1842, he was married to Miss Eulalie V. Taylor. Soon after his marriage he moved to Elmwood Plantation and there laid the foundation of the delightful old Southern home which was for so many years the happy residence of his family. Here he and his wife dispensed a bountiful hospitality with gracious courtesy which is remembered by not a few to this day. Quiet and gentle in manner, Robert W. Walker was a man of deepest feeling and firmest principle. When the War of the Sixties came on he could not consistently leave his defenceless family to become a soldier, but he was a loyal friend of the South, and his eldest son (Creed Taylor), when yet but seventeen, enlisted in the Confederate Army, and served till the close of the war. In his lovely home, Elmwood—of which a picture will be found in this volume—were reared eleven children, to wit: (a) Creed Taylor Walker, who was born October 3, 1843, and married Miss Elizabeth Dillwyn Cox, January 4, 1866; (b) Margaret Eulalie Walker, who was born January 23, 1846, and was married to Benjamin Eustace Benton, April 15, 1863, and has a daughter, Eulalie Walker Benton; (c) Joseph Woods Walker, who was born August 18, 1852, and married Miss Beulah Burton, October 16, 1888; (d) Mary Agnes Walker, who was born July 25, 1855, and married Orlando Hallibarton, April 29, 1880; (e) Robert Woods Walker, who was born July 20, 1860, and married Miss Lynn Farwell, October 4, 1893; (f) Catherine Elizabeth II.; (g) Sarah Epps; (h) Samuel Taylor, and (j) James Mosby, all four of whom died in childhood; (k) James Norvell, who was born March 10, 1866, and died January 17, 1887; (l) John Moore Walker, who was born July 25, 1848, married Miss Nora Carroll, December 30, 1885, and died August 23, 1893, leaving his wife, and a son and daughter she had borne him.

Mr. Creed Taylor Walker, above mentioned (who lives in Little Rock, Arkansas), and his wife Elizabeth Dillwyn, *nee* Cox, had the following children, to wit: (a) Robert Dillwyn Walker, who was born in 1869, married Miss Mary Stuart Greer in August, 1897, and died in 1900, leaving two children (Mary Louise and Robert D.); (b) Reuben Kay Walker, who died in infancy; (c) Mary Eulalia Walker, who married Mr. Alfred D. Mason, a prominent insurance agent, of Memphis, Tennessee, by whom she has a son, Alfred D. Mason, Jr.;

(d) Creed Walker; and (e) Elizabeth R. Walker.

Mr. Joseph Woods Walker, above mentioned, who married Miss Beulah Burton in 1888, is a merchant at Corner Stone, Arkansas, and has six children, as follows: (a) Mary Virginia Walker; (b) Eulalia Walker; (c) Beulah Walker; (d) Robert Burton Walker; (e) Cornelia Walker; and (f) Joseph Woods Walker, Jr.

Mary Agnes Walker, above mentioned, who married Orlando Halliburton, has had the following children, to wit: (a) Agnes Halliburton; (b) Walker Halliburton; (c) Eulalia Halliburton; (d) John M. Halliburton; (e) Mary Halliburton; (f) Orlando Halliburton; and (g) Margaret Halliburton.

Mr. Robert Woods Walker, above mentioned, who married Miss Lynn S. Farwell in 1893, resides in Little Rock, Arkansas, where he is the principal member of the firm of R. W. Walker & Co., dealers in ice, coal and wood. His wife died in 1894.

In Part I of this volume will be found an account of the Andrew Woods branch of Woodses, the one to which the Walkers now under consideration belong, and to that account the reader is referred for many details of special interest to the subjects of Sketches 54-57.

SKETCH 58.

A. W. WILLIAMSON, ROCK ISLAND, ILLINOIS.

(For illustrations see page 311.

Professor Andrew Woods Williamson, who is a member of the faculty of Augustana College, Rock Island, Illinois, was the son of Rev. Thomas Smith Williamson, M. D., by his wife Margaret Poage. He was born January 31, 1838. He is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through Michael's son Andrew; and as Martha, the widow of said Andrew Woods, lived to be ninety years old, dying in Ripley, Ohio, in April, 1818, and Professor Williamson's own mother was contemporary with said Martha Woods for fourteen and a half years, and his mother's mother was contemporary with said Martha Woods for more than twenty-six years, and these ladies were all intimately associated, and all had remarkably good memories, it is safe to assume that the Williamsons had a very clear understanding of the genealogy of Andrew Woods, son of old Michael. It is out of the question to suppose the Williamsons were in any doubt as to who Andrew's parents were or as to who were his brothers and sisters. The author believes he has conclusively shown that Andrew Woods was one of the sons of Michael, of Blair Park, and a brother to Michael Woods, Jr., who lived on James River, only about fourteen miles north-east of Andrew's home; and also a brother to Archibald Woods, whose farm was only about twenty miles south-west of his own; but Professor Williamson's sketch of his parents throws some additional light on this question. His mother, as just stated, was a girl in her fifteenth year when Andrew Woods's widow died at, or close to, his mother's home. Moreover, Professor Williamson's grandmother was a woman fifty-three years old when Martha Woods died, and she lived twelve years thereafter. He shows that his mother and grandmother were perfectly familiar with the family traditions as they had been understood by the older Woodses in Botetourt County, Virginia, while Andrew Woods was yet alive, and often told their children about the old folks and their manner of managing the children, etc. And the distinct impression Professor Williamson and all the rest of the family derived, from all they heard his mother and grandmother and other relatives say, was that Andrew Woods, Michael Woods, Jr., Archibald Woods, of Catawba Creek, and Magdalen Woods were all children of one father—Michael, of Blair Park. No one in the whole family ever seems to have held any other view of this matter. To assert that such a clear and persistent family tradition could be a myth, and that, too, in the absence of all opposing evidence, would be extremely unreasonable, not to say absurd.

Andrew Woods and Martha, his wife, had, as above stated, a daughter named Mary Woods (Andrew's mother bore the same name), who was born in Botetourt County, Virginia, February 19, 1765.

She married James Poage March 19, 1787. Her mother's maiden name was Poage as was that of the man she married. Mary Poage (*nee* Woods) died at Ripley, Ohio, April 1, 1830. This lady was Professor Williamson's grandmother, who was contemporary to Martha Woods (Andrew's wife) for more than fifty years. Then the said James Poage and his wife, Mary, had, among other children, a daughter named Margaret, who was born in Mason County, Kentucky, September 10, 1803, and she married the Rev. Thomas S. Williamson (son of Rev. William Williamson, of Adams County, Ohio) on the 10th of April, 1827, and died at St. Peter, Minnesota, July 21, 1872. This Margaret Williamson, *nee* Poage, was the mother of Professor Williamson, and she was contemporary to the said Martha Woods (widow of Andrew Woods) for the first fourteen and a half years of her life (from September 10, 1803, till April 19, 1818).

The said Rev. Thomas Smith Williamson, M. D., and Margaret, his wife, had ten children. He was born in Union District, South Carolina, March 6, 1800, married Margaret Poage, April 10, 1827, and died at St. Peter, Minnesota, June 24, 1879. This couple were devoted missionaries to the Dakota Indians from 1835, till their work was cut short by death.

The following is a list of their ten children: (a) William Blair Williamson, who was born May 10, 1828, at Ripley, Ohio, and died at the same place March 27, 1830; (b) Mary Poage Williamson, who was born April 3, 1830, at Ripley, Ohio, and died there June 12, 1833; (c) James Gilliland Williamson, who was born January 25, 1832, at Ripley, Ohio, and died there one year later; (d) Elizabeth Poage Williamson, who was born at Walnut Hills, Ohio, October 30, 1833, married Andrew Hunter, April 19, 1858, and died at St. Peter, Minnesota, March 11, 1863; (e) Rev. John Poage Williamson, who was born October 27, 1835, graduated from Marietta College in 1857, and from Lane Theological Seminary in 1866, married Sarah A. Vannice, April 12, 1866, and has been a missionary to the Dakota Indians since 1860, making his home at Greenwood, South Dakota; (f) Andrew Woods Williamson (the subject of this sketch), who was born January 31, 1838, graduated from Marietta College in 1857, and from Lane Theological Seminary in 1866, and is unmarried, and is now a professor in Augustana College, Rock Island, Illinois; (g) Nancy Jane Williamson, who was born at Lacqui Park, Minnesota, July 28, 1840, never married, and gave her life to missionary work among the Dakota Indians, dying at Greenwood, South Dakota, November 27, 1877; (h) Smith Burgess Williamson, who was born at Lacqui Park, Minnesota, September 21, 1842, and was accidentally killed at Yellow Medicine, Minnesota, March 11, 1856; (j) Martha Williamson, who was born October 5, 1844, at Lacqui Park, Minnesota, and married William W. Stout, of Gresham, Oregon, September 3, 1861; and (k) Henry Martin Williamson, who was born March 1, 1851, at South St. Paul, Minnesota, graduated from the University of Minnesota, chose the profession of editor, married Helen M. Ely, of Portland, Oregon, and has two children: Sumner and William.

The above-mentioned James Poage, who married Mary Woods (daughter of Andrew Woods and Martha), was born near Staunton, Virginia, March 17, 1760, and married Mary, March 19, 1787. He was a prominent land surveyor, and died at Ripley, Ohio, April 19, 1820. To James Poage and his wife Mary, *nee* Woods, were born thirteen children, as follows: (a) Martha Poage, born February 17, 1788, married George Poage, and died about 1856; (b) John Calvin Poage, born April 19, 1790, married Mary Hopkins, and died August 14, 1838; (c) Rev. Andrew Woods Poage, born December 25, 1791, married Jane Gay in 1819, and died April 19, 1840, leaving six children: 1, Nancy McKee; 2, Jennie; 3, John Gay, M. D.; 4, Andrew; 5, Mary Jane; and 6, Margaret Eliza; (d) Mary Poage, who was born March 25, 1793, in Kentucky, and died June 2, 1822, having never married; (e) James Poage, Jr., who was born in Kentucky, and died December 20, 1820, having never married; (f) Robert Poage, born in Ken-

tucky, February 4, 1797, married Sarah Kirker, daughter of Governor Kirker, of Ohio, and died February 1, 1874, leaving issue; (g) ELIZABETH POAGE, born in Kentucky, April 30, 1798, married Isaac Shepherd, and died July 30, 1832; (h) ANNE POAGE, born in Kentucky, May 5, 1800, married Alexander Mooney, and died at Russellville, Ohio, about 1872; (j) REBECCA POAGE, born in Mason County, Kentucky, December 17, 1801, married John Knox, and died April 5, 1870; (k) MARGARET POAGE, born in Mason County, Kentucky, September 10, 1803, married Rev. Thomas S. Williamson and became the mother of the subject of this sketch, and died at St. Peter, Minnesota, July 21, 1872; (l) SARAH POAGE, born at Ripley, Ohio, March 4, 1805, married Rev. Gideon H. Pond in 1837, was a missionary to the Dakotas, from 1835 to 1853, and died in 1854; (m) THOMAS POAGE, born at Ripley, Ohio, June 1, 1808, and died, unmarried, at Ripley August, 1831; and (n) REV. GEORGE POAGE, born at Ripley, Ohio, June 18, 1809, married Jane Riggs, and died at Norfolk, Nebraska, January 6, 1896, leaving five children.

SKETCH 59.

MRS. J. M. WOOD, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

The maiden name of Mrs. Wood was Margaret McKee, and she was born in Clark County, Missouri, in 1864; she was the eldest child of Dr. Robert Samuel McKee, by his wife, Louise, *nee* Cleaver. She is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his daughter Sarah. Dr. Robert Samuel McKee and his wife, Louise, had six children as follows: (a) MARGARET, the subject of this sketch; (b) MAY, who married a Mr. Fore; (c) ROBERT; (d) THOMAS; (e) JOSEPH; and (f) SAMUEL. The said Robert Samuel McKee was the son of Robert A. McKee and his wife, Amanda, *nee* Lapsley; and said Amanda was the daughter of John A. Lapsley by his wife, Polly, *nee* McKee. John A. Lapsley was the son of John Lapsley, by his wife, Mary, *nee* Armstrong, and was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, in 1783, moved to Woodford County, Kentucky, in 1793, married Polly McKee in 1805, and, in 1836, moved with his son-in-law, Robert A. McKee, to Clark County, Missouri. Said John Lapsley was the son of Joseph Lapsley by his wife, Sarah, *nee* Woods; and said Sarah was the daughter of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, by his wife Mary Campbell.

Miss Margaret McKee was married to Judge John McKee Wood in 1886, by whom she has had three children, as follows: (a) CORDELIA; (b) LOUISE; and (c) ELEANOR.

Judge John McKee Wood was the son of Richard Julian Wood by his wife Margaret, *nee* McKee. He was born in Franklin County, Kentucky, and came with his parents to Clark County, Missouri, in childhood. One of his great-grandparents was Anthony Crockett, a Lieutenant in the Virginia troops in the Revolutionary War. One of his great-great-grandfathers was Dr. John Julian, who was a surgeon with the Virginia troops during the Revolution. Judge Wood has held the offices of Attorney-General and Circuit Judge and other important positions, and is now engaged in the practice of law in St. Louis, Missouri.

SKETCH 60.

COL. C. A. R. WOODS, KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI.

Col. Charles A. R. Woods is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his eldest son, William. There is probably no member of the Woods clan who has taken a more enthusiastic interest in the history of the family or who has labored more assiduously to make a complete record of all its scattered branches than has he. In the prosecution of his researches in America and Great Britain, Colonel Woods has been led to adopt views in regard to William Woods, eldest son of Michael, of Blair Park, and his children, which vary in some important details from those accepted by other investigators in the same field. He has also gathered some interesting items not presented in the brief account of William Woods hereinbefore given. It has, therefore, been deemed advisable to let Colonel Woods speak for himself in this place concerning these matters, as follows:

WILLIAM, eldest son of Michael Woods and Mary Campbell, was probably born at Dunshaughlin Castle, County Meath, Ireland, in 1707. After receiving a liberal education, he entered the army as an ensign in an Irish regiment. When the Woodses of County Meath determined to change their residence and become Colonials, he came with his father and brothers to the Pennsylvania colony, and settled upon grants of land obtained near Lancaster. Here he resided until the Woodses, with their kinsmen, the Wallaces, emigrated to Goochland, now Albemarle County, in the Dominion of Virginia. While a young man he married Susannah Wallace of the old Scotch family, famous in the history and traditions of Scotland, a family destined to play a very important part in American history, one whose military achievements have scarcely rivaled its civil distinctions. Of this union a large family was born. Five of the sons, Adam, William, Archibald, John and Michael, were Revolutionary soldiers; and two, Andrew and Peter, were Baptist preachers. One of whom, the latter, was a pioneer preacher—in fact, the earliest of his denomination—in three States; Kentucky, Tennessee and Missouri. His daughter, Sallie, married one of the wealthiest and most distinguished soldier-planters in Virginia, Colonel Nicholas Shirky, whose home on the James was long known as one of the handsomest and most hospitable in all the Tidewater region. Colonel Thomas Dabney Woods informed the writer that eighty years ago, his aunt Sallie and his uncle Nicholas Shirky were known, and often spoken of, as representatives of the highest types of the Colonial period of Virginia's gentility. Subsequent to the French and Indian wars William Woods moved to Fincastle County; and it was while living there (1773) that he disposed of his interest in the original home of his father—Michael Woods. The original homestead had been previously conveyed to him by his father. We find that on the 15th of September, 1773, he disposed of this estate, received from his father, together with some 1,300 acres which he had purchased on the 10th of June, 1737. He was at that time a resident of Fincastle County. On the same day the records show that he gave to his eldest son, Adam Woods, 294 acres of the original grant, and at the same time he also conveyed a tract of land lying adjacent to it, to his son, Archibald. A part of this conveyance of William Woods and Susannah Wallace, his wife, to their son Adam is worthy of preservation and we copy it as it was written: "294 acres called 'Mountain Plains' is hereby conveyed to Adam Woods by his father, William Woods, the same having been conveyed to the said William by his father, Michael." And, continuing, the deed reads as follows: "By this said conveyance right is reserved to enter the premises and graveyard in which are buried some of the relatives of William Woods and Adam Woods, his son. And it is further provided by the grantor that the said graveyard shall not be entered to dig, cultivate, build or occupy; and it is further provided that the said grantor and his heirs shall have the right of ingress and egress forever." This deed of conveyance is witnessed by Thomas Jefferson, of Monticello, third President of the United States, Randolph Jefferson, his brother, and Lieutenant-Colonel John Woods, and is recorded in Deed Book, Number 6, of Albemarle County. William Woods was a man of considerable wealth, and owned a great deal of land amounting to many thousand acres which had been granted to him in various parts of the Dominion. The records also show that he was one of the largest slave-holders in his particular section of Virginia. But he was more of a soldier than a planter. He had little if any ambition for civil preferment; and, from certain old papers and letters, the inference is plain that though he owned many thousands of acres of fertile land, and had many slaves, he was not a practical and successful agriculturalist, as were his brothers, John and Archibald. He lived to be a very old man and to see his children occupy places of prominence in the State. Several of them at the close of the Revolutionary War moved to Kentucky and they in turn became the progenitors of many of the distin-

guished families of the "Blue Grass State." Born to enjoy all the advantages of wealth and social station he was a proud, unbending man; possessing but little, if any, of that spirit of good-fellowship or jesting, mirthful nature, which characterized his posterity and made them rather remarkable for their companionableness and amiable, social qualities. His wife was sister to his sister Hannah's husband, William Wallace, progenitor of a race, which for a century and a quarter has adorned the brightest pages of our nation's history. She, like her husband (William Wallace), was a staunch Presbyterian, and reared her children in the practice of that faith.

ADAM WOODS, eldest son of William Woods and Susannah Wallace, was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, and was educated by a Presbyterian minister. On the 4th of June, 1737, his father obtained from Sir William Gooch a grant of twelve thousand, seven hundred acres of land, and when he became of age, September, 1763, his father gave him one-half of this estate. He served under General Amherst during the campaign in New York, which occurred at the very close of the French and Indian war. In early manhood he married Anna Kavanaugh, a descendant of one of the oldest families of Ireland, a kinswoman of the famous Bishop Kavanaugh, of Kentucky. His brother, the Reverend Peter Woods, married Jael Kavanaugh, sister to his wife. Prior to the Revolutionary War he and several of his brothers and cousins, the Wallaces and McDowells, took part in what is known as "Lord Dunmore's Rebellion in 1775." That is, they, with many other Virginians, brought the royal Governor to terms, when he endeavored to encroach upon their liberties and confiscated powder and other munitions of war that the Virginians were collecting. Of Adam Woods his grandson, Sidney Woods, has this to say, in a letter under date of February 25, 1895: "It was in the month of February, 1826, that my grandfather, Adam Woods, came to Missouri to visit father and my uncles, William, Peter and Archibald. I can recall the day and event very well, though I was only a small boy. One of the negroes saw him coming toward the house and cried out, 'Yonder is Marse Adam,' and ran to meet him. Father sent for my uncles and aunts, and the old man was joyously welcomed. He was a stout, compact, firm built man of medium height, clean-limbed and well-appearing. Erect in his bearing, and remarkably active for a man of his advanced age. In personal appearance he resembled his sons, my father and uncles, and most of our race, being of a florid complexion and having hair that was once brown. His manner was pleasing and agreeable to a remarkable degree. He was full of wit and humor and his anecdotes made him the delight of his army of grandchildren. Becoming ill while with us, he grew rapidly worse, and died in a few days." Speaking of the military services of his grandfather, he has this to say: "My grandfather, Adam Woods, like his brothers Michael, Archibald, John and Colonel William Woods, better known as 'Beaver Creek William Woods,' was a soldier and officer in the Intercolonial War, and in the War of Independence. His sword was given to his oldest son William, who gave it to his oldest son David, your grandfather, who in turn gave it to his youngest son Maupin, your uncle, who I am informed, gave it to the Masonic Lodge, of which he was Master." Anna Kavanaugh, wife of Adam Woods, is buried, it is said, in one of the old family burying-grounds near Richmond, Kentucky, the original homestead in this State (Kentucky) having been granted to him on December 18, 1781, and surveyed November 12, 1787. They reared a family of ten children. First, WILLIAM (the writer's great-grandfather) who married Susan B. Clark; second, PATRICK, who married, first, Rachael Cooper, daughter of Captain Cooper; and, second, Francis Dulaney; third, ARCHIBALD, who married his cousin, Mary Wallace, of the old Virginia family; fourth MICHAEL, who never married, but who served with distinction in Colonel Gabriel Slaughter's regiment of mounted Kentucky Volunteers in the War of 1812; fifth, PETER, who moved to Clay County, soon after coming to Missouri, in 1815, and

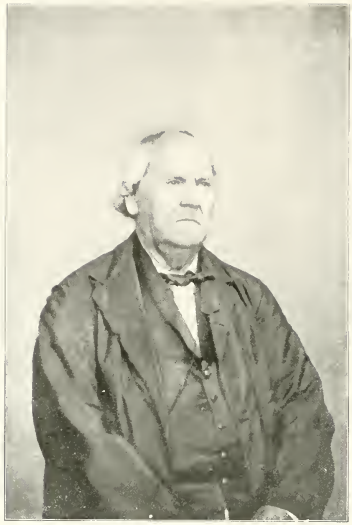
DAVID WOODS, JR.

DAVID WOODS, SR.

COL. CHAS. A. R. WOODS,
OF MISSOURI.

(See Sketch No. 60.)

HARRY E. WOODS.
OF MISSOURI.



DAVID WOODS.
(See Sketch No. 69.

THOMAS J. WOODS, M. D.
BATESVILLE, ARK.
(See Sketch No. 73.)

DAVID S. WOODS (DECEASED).
LATE OF BARSTOW, TEXAS.
(See Sketch No. 70.)

there reared a large family; sixth, JOHN, who went to California, at the close of the Mexican War; seventh, HANNAH, who married Colonel Barbe J. Collins; eighth, ANNA, who married a gentleman by the name of Browne, in Clark or Madison County, Kentucky; ninth, SUSAN, who married Colonel Mullins, who moved to California; and tenth, SALLIE, who married Judge Austin Walden. Born in Virginia, Adam Woods resided in the county of his birth until the Revolutionary War; after which, joining the great tide of emigration then moving toward the Kentucky country, he followed the fortunes of his brothers and their kinsmen, the Wallaces, McDowells, Goodloes, Millers and Maupins.

JUDGE WILLIAM WOODS.

Eldest son of Adam Woods and Anna Kavanaugh, was born in Virginia March 4, 1772, and died in Howard County, Missouri, March 10, 1846, aged seventy-four years and six days. In 1798 he married Miss Susan B. Clark, cousin to Major-General John B. Clark, for twenty-eight years a representative in both houses of Congress. Miss Clark was also a cousin to the famous General George Rogers Clark, the brave but eccentric hero of Vincennes. William Woods was educated for the bar and practised his profession until the breaking out of the War of 1812. But he volunteered and was given a commission in one of the regiments that joined the army of Maj.-Gen. William Henry Harrison. He was mustered into the volunteer army at Newport, Kentucky, August 31, 1813, as captain in Colonel Michael Taul's Regiment, the Third Mounted Volunteers; November 10, 1814, he was transferred to the regiment of Lieutenant-Colonel Gabriel Slaughter, and commanded (temporarily) the regiment during the campaign and battle of New Orleans. He was mustered out of the service May 10, 1815." In the interim between the Canadian campaign and the campaign at New Orleans he served with the Tennessee troops in their campaign against the Creek Indians, and it was while in this service that he first saw General Andrew Jackson. In June, 1815, he, with other members of his family, emigrated to Missouri, having received an appointment, through the President, to a position in the Territorial Judiciary of Missouri. He located near Fayette, where he continued to reside until his death March 10, 1846. To Judge Woods and Susan Clark were born six sons; David, Nicholas, Barnabas, William, Richard and Robert, and one daughter, Leantha.

DAVID WOODS, SENIOR.

Eldest son of Judge William Woods and Susan B. Clark was born near Richmond, Kentucky, September 9, 1800, and died near Fayette, Missouri, July 6, 1882. He was educated privately and in the school at Richmond until the summer of 1815, when he came with his father to Missouri. As a boy he had accompanied his father to New Orleans in 1815, and in that great battle in which the flower of the English Army had fallen before the unerring aim and dauntless courage of the Kentucky and Tennessee riflemen, had received his initial experience as a volunteer soldier. Fresh from such scenes, the boy was brought by his father to the Missouri Territory, many parts of which had not been entered by white men, save when an occasional hunter or trapper had been lured in pursuit of game. Early in 1820 he was commissioned by Governor Alexander McNair to take a company of volunteers and expel certain troublesome Indians of the western part of the State. At the age of twenty-two he was elected to the State Legislature. In 1823 he married Margaret Maupin, of Madison County, Kentucky, daughter of Cornelius Maupin, who had, with William and Adam and Archie Woods, and their kinsmen, the Wallaces and McDowells, been a member of the Albemarle Company which in 1774-1775 compelled Lord Dunmore to accede to the wishes of the Virginians. She was the grand-daughter of Daniel Maupin of Williamsburg. Margaret Maupin was a sister of Colonel Robert and Wash Maupin, of Madison County, Kentucky, who as soldiers in the War of 1812 and as members of the Legislature of Kentucky had a well-known local reputation. After the beginning of the Black Hawk War in 1832 he was an officer in the State militia. In 1837 he served in Florida

in the campaign which resulted in the defeat and expulsion of the Seminole Indians, which the government for twenty years had been endeavoring to accomplish, but which the regular army had failed to do. Later he served with General Clark in the Missouri Militia at the battle of Far West in which Colonel Hinkle, the Mormon leader and his troops were captured, and banished from the State. With the annexation of Texas, eventually came the Mexican War of 1846-47. He entered the service and was with General Taylor, his old commander in the Texas campaign, which resulted in the battles of Palo Alto, Rasaca de la Palma, Monterey and Buena Vista; for his services in this campaign he was brevetted a Lieutenant-Colonel. After the close of the Mexican War he remained in the regular army in the quartermaster's department until 1850, when he returned to his farm, where he continued to reside until the opening of the Civil War. Like his fathers he was loyal to the history and tradition of the old South, and believed that it was one of the inherent rights of a State to withdraw from the Federal compact whenever it believed it was to its interest to do so. He was too old to enter the service of the Confederacy and take part in the movements of the armies in the field, but all his sympathy and whatever influence he possessed was given to the South. To the South he cheerfully gave all—sons, land and fortune; and when the flag of the Confederacy was furled he, like many another gentleman of the old South, believed that the light of chivalry had gone out. The last fifteen years of his life were spent on his farm, from which he rarely emerged except to take some part in fraternal, educational or religious work in which he was deeply interested. In May, 1882, only a few weeks before his death he visited his son David, the writer's father; one evening he called the writer out on the veranda and told him the story of his ancestors; the rank and title of their ancestors in Ireland and England, and the part they had played in the history of the States in which they had lived; telling him that they had always been an honest, simple, country people. He spoke of the vast amount of family records that could be accumulated. Though the writer was then only a boy he urged him to gather the fragments of family history and embody them in concrete form. He told him where, and how, many of these records could be obtained, assuring him that some day the family would be grateful for their accumulation and preservation. Guided by this instruction and sustained by the thought of his approval, the writer has searched through the libraries of Europe and America, has hunted out the secrets of the Herald's College of Ireland and England, the Adjutant-General's office of Great Britain and Ireland, has gone through Government and State offices, has searched for the records and genealogies of families, and, in short, has spared neither time nor expense, not incompatible with his limited means and his more limited opportunities. It is now two and twenty years since he spoke, urging the writer to gather and publish the records of the old family. It has been twenty-one years since the spirit of David Woods, Sr., was gathered to his fathers and the writer has learned to appreciate the motive that impelled his grandfather. The writer has the record of his family for twenty generations and the names of nearly three thousand men and women who are descended from John Woods, and his sons. And all this labor has been given, this information gathered, as a direct result of his request. David Woods was a tall, handsome, graceful man, standing a little more than six feet in his stockings, and weighed about 220 pounds. His complexion was ruddy, his eyes large, dark brown and expressive. His hair was of a nut-brown color, his nose was large, strong; his chin was broad and firm; slow and deliberate in all his actions, he was a man of strong convictions, faithful in his attachments, dangerous in his anger, and possessing an iron will, dauntless courage and unswerving honesty. To him were born ten children, only five of whom married. They were: First, SAMIRA, born April 5, 1826, died June, 1901, married James Veal; second, ANGELINA, born April 13, 1828, and married Aaron Dysart; third, OVERTON, born January 7, 1830, and

died May 18, 1887; fourth, DAVID, born May 21, 1832, died September 5, 1900, married Mattie A. Robinson of Bourbon County, Kentucky, November 4, 1863; fifth, CORNELIUS MAUPIN WOODS, born May 4, 1834.

DAVID WOODS, JUNIOR.

Second and oldest surviving son of David Woods, Sr., and Margaret Maupin, was born in Boone County, Missouri, May 21, 1832. He was educated in the schools of his county and continued to remain at home and manage the estate until he had attained his majority. In the absence of his father he had control of the plantation and the negroes. He thus acquired a practical skill in agricultural affairs, and many years after, and in another county, earned for himself the reputation of the "best farmer in the county." But he was destined to spend the best and greatest part of his life in enterprises more active, and amid scenes more exciting than those connected with the pastoral life. In early manhood he united with the Yellow Creek Baptist Church and continued to be a member of this congregation until the close of the war. In 1853-54 he crossed the plains in command of a large party of gold-hunters. There were nearly a hundred young men in the party, many of whom afterward became prominent in the civil and military history of the Commonwealth. In 1855 he entered the government service, and while in it crossed and recrossed the plains several times going to, and coming from, Forts Laramie and Benton. In 1858-59 he was ordered to Texas across the Indian Territory by the way of old Forts Smith and Arbuckle. He remained in the government service until the spring of 1860, when he resigned and started home. On the 12th of March, 1861, he was arrested at Laclede by a lieutenant of the United States army, on the charge of treason. At the time of his arrest he was convalescing from an attack of typhoid fever and came near dying while being conveyed to the Federal prison in Illinois. Through the intercession of Governor Woods, of Illinois, he was released from prison and returned to Missouri, arriving just after the battle of Lexington. He was an ardent secessionist and cast his fortune with the Confederacy, doing what he could for the success of the Southern cause. In 1864 he was captured and sentenced to be executed, when the fact that he was a Master Mason becoming known to General Morgan of Iowa, commanding the brigade, execution was stayed, and he was finally paroled. At that time he was suffering from wounds that were never entirely healed and ultimately resulted in his being compelled to use both crutch and cane the remainder of his life. At the close of the war and during the Reconstruction period in Missouri he resolutely refused to take the "test oath"; and as a sequence was virtually disfranchised until the general election of 1876. November 4, 1863, he was married to Martha, the daughter of John R. and Nannie Robinson, of Bourbon County, Kentucky. By this marriage he again united his family with the well-known Kentucky family. The only brother of Martha Woods was a noted Confederate surgeon, while three of her first cousins, two of them her double first cousins, reared in her father's house, entered the Union service. Subsequent to the Civil War David Woods engaged in many business enterprises. Left at the close of the war without a dollar, deprived of his citizenship, wounded and crippled for the rest of his life, he took up the battle with adversity with the same courage and enthusiasm that had marked his every action. Though the social and labor conditions had changed since he had superintended his father's plantation, he soon acquired considerable property, and in a few years became locally known as "the best farmer in the county." In June, 1880, he moved to Norborne, Missouri, and was ever at the front of every endeavor to promote any enterprise that was intended to advance the best interest of the community. As a public official in many positions he was capable, energetic, resourceful and enterprising. Quick-tempered, impulsive, a dangerous man in his wrath, no man was ever more generous, forgiving and kind-hearted. To David Woods and Martha Robinson were born three sons, COL. CHARLES A. R.; HARRY E., and LEON E. WOODS, all of whom survive

him as does also his widow. He died September 5, 1900.

CHARLES A. R. WOODS.

Eldest son of David Woods and Martha Robinson, was born near Brunswick, Chariton County, Missouri, April 17, 1865. In 1870 his father moved to another estate in an adjacent county. At a very early age he evinced a natural aptitude for military affairs, and his elementary education was conducted along lines that would best fit him for that kind of a life. His life in High School and College prepared him for a place in the Cadet Corps in the University, where, under the supervision of a United States army officer, he received special attention. In June, 1883, he was a competitor for the cadetship to West Point, but for the first, and only time, in Missouri's history a negro was entered for the appointment. Young Woods and several other young men of Southern lineage remonstrated with the Congressman who was having the examination held. The Congressman was obdurate, so the eight young remonstrators withdrew from the examination. Through the kindness of a kinsman of his father young Woods received an appointment to West Point from another district. From that time until the beginning of the Spanish-American War he was intimately associated with military affairs. Particularly is this true of his relation to the National Guards, in which he held commissions of every grade from captain to colonel. At the beginning of hostilities with Spain he received a commission as Colonel of Volunteer Infantry. And upon the reorganization of the regular army, he, through the intercession of the officers of the Republican State Central Committee, and the most prominent Federal office holders in Missouri, was nominated for a commission in the regular army, but was unable, owing to physical disabilities, to pass the required physical examination. During these years he had also served on the military staff of the Governors of two Southern States. In the latter eighties he was admitted to the Bar. Colonel Woods, like all the members of his immediate family and his ancestors for the past four generations, is a Baptist, and an uncompromising Calvinist. He is a member of all the older and more prominent benevolent orders, and of several beneficiary organizations, in each of which he has "Passed the chairs," while in two of them he has served as a representative and officer in the Supreme and Sovereign Grand Lodge. Few men are better known in Missouri's fraternal world. As an editor of a country newspaper, and a member of the executive family of two State administrations, he has ever advocated, as the only correct theory of government, the supremacy of those principles enunciated by the fathers of Democracy. On the 11th of May, 1886, he married Miss Dora Lee Snoddy, daughter of John T. Snoddy and his wife, Sallie Hudson. She was graduated from the Carrollton High School in the class of '84. Her mother (nee Hudson) was descended from two prominent South Carolina families, her grandmother being a sister to General Wade Hampton, Senior, who distinguished himself in our second war with England. To Colonel and Mrs. Woods were born two children, Gladys Aubrey, July 10, 1887; and Archibald Douglas, June 7, 1890. After the death of his first wife (March 27, 1902) Colonel Woods married Miss Martha W. Clark, of Covington, Kentucky, only daughter of James M. Clark and Martha W. Pugh. She was born and reared at Covington, as was also her father and mother, her grandfathers Clark and Pugh each having come to Covington when they were boys. She, being one of the honor graduates in the class of 1897, won a fellowship in the University. For nearly three quarters of a century the Pughs have been identified with the political and commercial history of Covington. Mrs. Woods's mother having died about the time she was born, she was reared by her grandfather, John Barry Pugh, at the old family home.

HARRY E. WOODS.

Second son of David Woods and Martha Robinson, was born at Brunswick, Missouri, July 20, 1866. He received his education in the High Schools at Lexington and Norborne. Before he had attained

his majority he engaged in breeding and raising trotting and pacing horses. As professional judge of horses he has a national reputation. In many respects he is a typical descendant of the famous Irish "Squires"; for no one admires a good horse or hound more than he. November 23, 1903, he married Miss Mary Ellen Crumpacker, of Norborne, Missouri, daughter of the late Richard Crumpacker and his wife, Miss Mildred Leftwich, of Bedford County, Virginia. He and his wife reside at Norborne.

LEON E. WOODS.

Third and youngest son of David Woods and Martha Robinson, was born near Richmond, Ray County, Missouri, December 20, 1872. He was educated in the High School and subsequently read law for one year, after which he entered mercantile business. He is a Woods of the old style—jolly, rollicking, fun-loving, full of wit and humor.

SKETCH 61.

J. B. WOODS, NEW ORLEANS, LOUISIANA.

Captain James Brison Woods is the son of the late Andrew Woods, of Wheeling, West Virginia, and his wife, Rebecca, *nee* Brison, and was born in Belmont County, Ohio, September 12, 1824. He is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Andrew, whose wife was Martha Poage. Said Andrew and Martha had, among other children, a son, Andrew, Jr., who married Mrs. Mary McCulloch (widow of a Major McCulloch) *nee* Mitchell. And said Andrew, Jr., and his wife Mary had, among other children, a son, Andrew (No. 3), whose wife was Rebecca Huydekofer Brison. This pair had eight children, as follows: (a) James Brison Woods, the subject of this sketch; (b) Oliver Brison Woods, who married Anna M. Anderson. Said Oliver and Anna had two children, as follows: 1, James Brison Woods; and 2, Rosa Anderson Woods. (c) The third child of said Andrew, No. 3, and Rebecca, was Luther Todd Woods, who married, first, Mary Ellen Neel, and, second, Mary Hopkins. He left a son, 1, Samuel Neel Woods, who married Rebecca Woods, and a son, 2, Rev. John Young Woods. (d) The fourth child of Andrew, No. 3, and Rebecca, was John M. Woods; (e) The fifth child was Archibald Woods; (f) the sixth was Andrew Alfred Woods; (g) the seventh was the Rev. Henry Woods, D. D.; and (h) the eighth was the Rev. Francis M. Woods, D. D. The fourth child (John M. Woods), married, first, Martha Hale; and second, Rosa ———, and left six children, as follows: 1, John Woods; 2, Oliver Woods; 3, Mary Ellen Woods, who married E. T. Cook; 4, Estelle Woods; 5, Clara Woods; and 6, Alice Woods.

The fifth child of Andrew Woods, No. 3, and Rebecca (Archibald Woods) married Mary Matthews, and by her had five children, as follows: 1, Isabella Woods, who married Benjamin F. Edwards, and died in 1897; 2, Matthews Woods, who married Sue Miller; 3, Lucy Woods; 4, Flora Woods; and 5, Rebecca Woods.

The sixth child of Andrew, No. 3, and Rebecca (Andrew Alfred Woods) married Jeannie Railey, and had four children, as follows: 1, Alfred Woods; 2, Elizabeth Helm Woods; 3, Henry Woods, and 4, James Brison Woods.

The Rev. Henry Woods, D. D., who was the seventh child of Andrew, No. 3, and Rebecca, married Mary Ewing, and had four children, to wit: 1, Margaret Woods, who married Rev. Wm. B. Hamilton; 2, Mary Neel Woods; 3, John Ewing Woods, who married Mary Reed; and 4, Francis Henry Woods.

Rev. Francis Marian Woods, D. D., who was the eighth and last child of Andrew No. 3, and Rebecca, has been for many years the successful and honored pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Martinsburg, West Virginia. He married Julia H. Junkin, and has had six children, as follows: 1, the Rev. David J. Woods, now pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Blacksburg, Va.; 2, John Mitchell Woods, who married Eleanor W. Tabb; 3, Janet McCleery, who died in 1891; 4, Andrew Henry Woods, M. D., a medical missionary of the Presbyterian Church at Canton, China, and who married Fanny S. Sinclair; 5, Mary E. Woods; and 6, Rebecca F. Woods.

Captain James Brison Woods, the subject of this sketch, and the first of the eight children of Andrew Woods, No. 3, and his wife Rebecca Huydekofer, *nee* Brison, has been a citizen of New Orleans since 1866. Prior to that date he lived many years in St. Louis. No man prominent in affairs has been freer from any suspicion of conduct not in accord with the infallible standard of truth than he. His long business career has been marked by sterling has been married three times. His first wife was integrity, sound judgment and tireless energy. He Sarah Good, daughter of John A. Good and Mary Chapline, by whom he had three children, to-wit: 1, John G. Woods; 2, Rebecca, and 3, Mary, who are dead. His second wife was Lizzie A. Brevard, daughter of Albert Brevard and Juliet Gayle, by whom he had three children, to-wit: 1, Mary Woods; 2, Alice Woods; and 3, James Brison Woods, Jr., who is dead. His third wife was Leonora Matthews, daughter of John Matthews, Jr., and Mary Levering, by whom he has had five children, to wit: 1, Frederick Woods, deceased; 2, William Gayle Woods, deceased; 3, Leonora Woods; 4, Rebecca Woods; and 5, Edgar Woods.

SKETCHES 62 AND 63.

J. P. WOODS AND J. W. WOODS, ROANOKE, VIRGINIA.

(For Illustrations see page 304.)

Judge John William Woods and the Hon. James Pleasants Woods, who are full brothers, and residents of Roanoke City, Virginia, are the sons of William Woods by his second wife, Sarah Jane Edington. They are believed to be lineal descendants of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Archibald, whose wife's Christian name was Isabella; but certain ancient documents of undoubted authenticity and genuineness, now in the hands of the author of this volume, present some facts which are, to say the least, difficult to reconcile with the current beliefs of the Roanoke Woodses in regard to some of their Woods ancestors. The perplexity created by these documents will be discussed at the close of these two sketches.

JOHN WILLIAM WOODS.

John William Woods was born in Roanoke County, Virginia, July 27, 1858, and was a son of William and Sarah Jane (Edington) Woods. He attended the usual public and private schools of the country until January, 1874, when he entered Roanoke College, Salem, Virginia, and was there several sessions. His father's death occurring in 1882, he remained on the farm (the old original Woods homestead, Indian Camp) with his widowed mother, three brothers, and two sisters, until 1886, when he left home to take his law course at the University of Virginia under Prof. John B. Minor. While at the University he was chosen editor-in-chief of the "University Magazine," which is looked upon as quite an honor at the institution.

On leaving the University, in June, 1887, he located at Roanoke, Virginia.

In August, 1887, he formed a co-partnership with C. B. Moomaw (now city solicitor). In September, 1889, he was nominated by the Democratic party as its candidate to represent Roanoke City and County, and Craig County, in the House of Delegates, and was elected by an unprecedented majority. At the end of his term, however, he declined to again become a candidate, saying he preferred to take the advice of an old friend—that it was "a good thing for a young man to go to the Legislature *once*."

In June, 1893, Hon. Wm. Gordon Robertson resigned as Judge of the Hustings Court for Roanoke City, and John W. Woods was appointed by the Governor. Twice since this appointment the Legislature has elected Judge Woods to succeed himself. Judge Woods is also prominently connected in business circles, being President of the Roanoke Banking and Investment Co., and of the Farmers' Supply Co.; and, up to the time of his elevation to the bench, was on the directory of the National Exchange Bank of Roanoke. He is a busy man, but is always ready to give both time and means to the advancement of Christianity. While a member of the Methodist E. Church, South, it may be said of him that he is broad enough to lend a helping hand to any enterprise which makes for the furtherance of the Master's Kingdom. He is at present a member of the official board of his home

church, and was sent as a delegate to the last General Conference held in Baltimore, May, 1898.

JAMES PLEASANTS WOODS.

James Pleasants Woods was born at "Indian Camp," Roanoke County, Virginia, February 1, 1868. Graduated with first distinction from Roanoke College, 1892, and was that year elected to represent his college in the State oratorical contest. Took his law course the following year at the University of Virginia, and was admitted to the bar in 1893. Two years thereafter he was elected to the Common Council of the City of Roanoke, and was re-elected in 1897. The same year the State Democratic Convention elected him a member of the State Central Committee.

Was elected Mayor of Roanoke in 1898, which position he still holds, with what satisfaction to his constituents may be judged from the following editorial clipped from the *Roanoke World* of April 12, 1900:

"A MODEL MAYOR.

"Mayor Woods will retire from office at the end of his term with one of the best records made by any who have held this office. Never presuming on his prerogatives, but always ready to do his duty without fear, favor or affection, it was natural that his acts should sometimes be counter to the wishes of others, but the results for which he contended and the measures which he advocated always in the end vindicated his judgment and demonstrated his patriotism. Without constantly asserting himself and forcing his personality on the public, he has pursued the even tenor of his way with an eye single to the promotion of the public good and to the welfare of the municipality.

"Whatever the occasion, he has shown himself fully able to represent the city with credit and fidelity. In other words, he has made a model mayor, and Roanoke may well be congratulated if his successors fill the office with the same zeal and ability. He will retire from the position with the plaudits of his fellow-citizens, who will be ready to say, 'Well done, good and faithful servant,' and who ought to be ready to reward and honor him for the zeal which he has manifested in looking after the affairs of the city and the ability he has shown in the management of all the duties appertaining to his office."

Since the author prepared the matter to be found on pages 106-119 of this volume his attention has been called to some puzzling questions touching Archibald, the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, which will now be considered. Was the Archibald Woods, whom old Michael mentioned as his son and executor in his will, in 1761, the same Archibald Woods who lived on Catawba Creek, in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia, from 1771 to 1783? This is the point now at issue. Judge John W. Woods, of Roanoke, Virginia, does not feel as certain in regard to this question as once he did, owing to the fact that in one of the ancient Woods papers (dated July, 1768), now in the author's possession, it appears that a man named John Woods, then perhaps twenty to twenty-five years old, who was almost certainly a son of old Michael Woods's son Archibald, collected the legacy coming to him from the estate of said Michael, his grandfather. This John Woods could hardly have been born later than the year 1748. If he was born at any time prior to 1768, he could not have been the John who was a son of Archibald of Catawba Creek, for that John Woods died in 1841, and, according to the inscription on his tomb-stone, was born in 1768. This John Woods of Catawba Creek was the son of Archibald, of Catawba, and the grandfather of the two gentlemen whose sketches (62 and 63) have just been given. He must have been born at least twenty years later than the other John Woods just mentioned; and this, if true, would preclude the possibility of both John Woodsos being the son of the same father, unless their father had two sons born many years apart, both of whom were named John.

That Archibald, the son of Michael, of Blair Park, was the same man as the Archibald who lived on Catawba Creek, and there died in 1783, the author of this volume feels constrained to believe. There are so many established facts which go to prove this to be true that he sees no escape from the conclusion he has reached. These facts are the following: First, beyond dispute old Michael Woods, in his will of 1761, expressly mentions a son

of his named Archibald; leaves him ten pounds; bequeaths to Archibald's son, Michael, a great-coat; orders Archibald and another son to sell a certain tract of land and divide the proceeds thereof among the children of Archibald and John Woods, and William and Hannah Wallace; and constitutes Archibald one of his executors. (See copy of old Michael's will.) Second, this Archibald, son of Michael, was, in 1761, a man of family, and had one son named Michael, who was then old enough to warrant his grandfather (old Michael) in leaving to him his great-coat. When we reflect that at that date (1761) old Michael had several grandsons who were grown men, we may assume that the grandson to whom he left his great-coat was no mere child—he must have been at least sixteen to twenty years of age. And this would mean that Archibald was a married man as early as 1742, or thereabouts. (By some unaccountable oversight we failed to include this son Michael in the list of Archibald's children, hereinbefore given.) Third. Old Michael's son Archibald was yet alive in 1767, for he joined his brother John, his co-executor, in conveying to one James Manry the tract of land his father had instructed his executors, in his will, to sell for the benefit of his grandchildren. Fourth. In the year 1771 a man by the name of Archibald Woods, then a citizen of Albemarle County, Virginia, purchased the Indian Camp farm on the Catawba from the McAfees, on which he resided till his death in 1783. That the Archibald Woods who made this purchase in 1771 was the son of old Michael, of Blair Park, is so inherently probable that nothing but positive evidence to the contrary will avail to render it at all unlikely. No other man named Archibald Woods who was of mature age as early as 1771, and who could possibly have fit into the facts of the case, seems to have lived in Albemarle. It was about 1767 that Archibald (son of Michael) sold out his farm in Albemarle, though he did not effect his purchase in Botetourt (now Roanoke County) till 1771. It was just about this time that three of his brothers, namely: Michael, Jr., Andrew, and William, sold out their interests in Albemarle and settled down in what was then Botetourt County. Michael, Jr., settled on the James River, five miles below Buchanan; Andrew settled about fourteen miles south-west of Michael, Jr., and Archibald settled about twenty miles south-west of Andrew. William's exact location is not known, but it was in the lower end of Botetourt, which afterwards became Fincastle County. All of these Woods brothers, sons of old Michael, moved down into the same region of country. Their father was now dead, and his estate wound up, and they migrated to a region where settlements were sparser and lands cheaper than in Albemarle. It was precisely such a concerted move as one would expect of enterprising men who were the sons of one father. Fifth. Archibald Woods, son of old Michael, had a wife whose Christian name was Isabella. Sixth. In the summer of 1768 we find a grandson of old Michael by the name of John Woods, who was then a citizen of South Carolina, visiting Albemarle to secure the legacies due himself and five other grandchildren from the estate of old Michael. Two of these six grandchildren of old Michael were William Woods, and Isabella Woods, who were children of Michael's son, Archibald. This is gathered from original documents of the most unimpeachable character, copies or facsimiles of which will be found in one of the Appendices of this volume. William and Isabella and John were then citizens of South Carolina, as expressly stated in said documents. John had due authority, also, to collect the legacies of three married women—a Mrs. Brazeal, a Mrs. Cowan, and a Mrs. Trimble—and did collect them. These three married women were, as stated in said documents, grand-daughters of old Michael. That John and these three married women were children of Archibald, of Albemarle, seems almost certain. There was no other son of old Michael who could have been the father of this John Woods. Old Michael seems never to have had but three grandsons named John, namely: this one now under consideration; John, the son of William Woods; and John the son

of Colonel John Woods. William's son John went to Kentucky, and Colonel John's son John died while yet a boy. We are shut up to the conclusion that the John Woods, who came from Carolina in July, 1768, to collect legacies, was Archibald's child, as we certainly know William and Isabella were.

When we put all of these facts together we are compelled, in the absence of all opposing evidence, to conclude that old Michael's son Archibald was the man who settled on Catawba Creek in 1771 and there died in 1783. Objections to this conclusion have been raised, and these will now be considered. One is, that in the old receipt-book of old Michael's executors, now in the author's possession, no receipt from Archibald Woods for his separate legacy from his father is found; and that, inasmuch as the estate was wound up by the year 1770, we must infer that Michael's son Archibald had died before that date. But the answer to this is that it is evident the extant receipt book of old Michael's executors contains but a part of the original receipts. Sarah Lapsley, one of old Michael's children to whom he bequeathed ten pounds in his will, and several other children of old Michael, are not referred to in any of the receipts now extant. Many of the receipts have evidently been lost. Another objection is that the fact that legacies were paid by the executors of old Michael to the children of his son Archibald indicates that Archibald himself was then dead. This, however, is not valid because the will of old Michael provided that the proceeds of the land Archibald and John were to sell were to be given to the grandchildren, and such of them as were of age could take their portions direct without their father Archibald being a party to the transaction. The third and most formidable objection is that the John Woods who came to Albemarle in July, 1768, to collect the legacies, and who was then not less than twenty years old, could not possibly be the son of the same Archibald who lived on Catawba Creek (1771-1783) because the inscription on the tomb-stone of John Woods, son of Catawba Archibald, shows that he was born in 1768, and died in 1841, aged seventy-three years. But could not Archibald's first son, John, who was in Albemarle in 1768, have died that same year, and might not his parents have had born to them, that same fall, a baby boy whom they named John? This very thing occurs often. And it is a remarkable coincident fact that this very same John Woods, who died on Catawba in 1783, did this thing himself. As Judge John W. Woods, of Roanoke, Virginia, informs the writer, John Woods (born 1768 and died 1841) had two sons, born years apart, whom he named John, the first of the two dying early, and the second one being born not long after the death of the other. May not this be the solution of the problem? Is it not perfectly reasonable to believe that John Woods, of Catawba, was a younger brother of John Woods, of South Carolina, and that his father, Archibald Woods, set for him an example in the matter of giving one of his boys the name John; and then, that son dying, giving it to another one of his children? In other words, John Woods, of Catawba, took his cue from his own father, Archibald, in not only giving two of his sons, in order, one and the same name, but by choosing for this purpose the identical name John. Thus, the true story, we doubt not, is, that Archibald Woods, somewhere about 1713-1748, named one of his children John; and this son, when about grown, migrated, with his brother William, his sister Isabella, and the other three sisters mentioned, to South Carolina; in July, 1768, this son John comes back to the old home in Albemarle to collect what is coming to him and his brother and four sisters from the proceeds of the 680 acres of land which his grandfather had ordered, by will, to be sold for the benefit of his grandchildren, and which had actually been sold the year before, as we certainly know. That very year, most probably, John dies. The name he had borne was that of his distinguished uncle, Colonel John Woods, his father's brother—a name Archibald desired to honor—and when the untimely taking off of the first John removed that name from the family register, Archibald, having a little son born to him about the close of that year (1768), bestowed it on this child. This

last John Woods, son of Archibald, was a child of three years when, in 1771, his parents moved down on to the Catawba, and there he spent his days, dying there in 1841, at the age of seventy-three. Of course, we admit that this explanation is largely built upon circumstantial evidence which can not be considered absolutely convincing. But our contention is that it fits, with wonderful exactness, the known conditions of the problem; it does not contradict a single ascertained fact or do any violence to any known circumstances of the case; and, most convincing of all, it is the only possible explanation which gives proper consistency to the long chain of established facts in the life and career of Archibald, the son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park. We therefore believe we can say, with reasonable certainty, that Judge John W. Woods and his brother, James P., now residing in Roanoke, Virginia, are lineal descendants of old Michael through his son Archibald. N. M. W.

SKETCH 64.

HON. R. E. WOODS, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Robert Emmet Woods, son of Thomas James LaGrande Woods and his wife, Charity Elizabeth, *nee* Henninger, is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son, Archibald, Sr., and his grandson, Archibald, Jr.

Archibald Woods, Jr., grandfather of Robert Emmet Woods, was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, April, 1771, but was reared in what is now Roanoke County, Virginia. His father, Archibald Woods, Sr., died in 1783. In company with his brother, Andrew, he came to Kentucky about 1805, from Sevier County, Tennessee, whither he had emigrated from Virginia some time previously. It was there he married Mary McBeath. The two brothers first came to what is now Mercer County, Kentucky, and Andrew remained there; but Archibald, after remaining one year, moved to Wayne County, Kentucky. He resided there until 1853, when he moved to Grayson County, Kentucky, where he died in 1855. He was a man much esteemed in his community. He was a Justice of the Peace, and held court in those early days at his home. He and his wife were old-school Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, but he opened his home to the early Methodist Circuit Riders, and it was not only their home, but a regular "preaching-place." He was a soldier in the War of 1812, and was at the Battle of the River Raisin.

Archibald Woods, Jr., and his wife Mary, *nee* McBeath, had three sons: (a) ANDREW; (b) ARCHIBALD, THIRD; and (c) THOMAS J. L.; and four daughters: (d) SARAH, (who married Robert Kennedy); (e) ATHELIA (who married William R. Caffee); (f) MARY (who married William Henninger); and (g) MARGARET (twice married; first, to Lemuel Lockett; and, afterwards, to Michael Huffaker).

Andrew married Eliza Whitten, and Archibald, Third, married Elizabeth Honk. Both moved to Missouri.

Thomas James LaGrande Woods, son of Archibald, Jr., and Mary, was born in Wayne County, Kentucky, December 27, 1811, and was married to Charity Elizabeth Henninger, January 1, 1845. Of this union there were born six children, two of whom (a) and (b) died in early infancy, and one, (c) ELIZABETH ANN (Richey), in August, 1902, at the age of fifty-one years. Those now living are: (d) MARY C., (now MRS. D. R. WITT); (e) JENNIE M., (now MRS. J. H. SULLIVAN); and (f) ROBERT EMMET, the subject of this sketch.

Thomas J. L. Woods removed to Breckinridge County in 1853, and there died April 9, 1886. He was a man of sterling worth, intense convictions, and unwavering integrity.

Henry Henninger, maternal grandfather of Robert Emmet Woods, a son of Conrad Henninger, a Revolutionary soldier, who served under Washington, was born in Washington County, Virginia, in 1778, and came to Kentucky in 1810. He located at Mill Springs, Wayne County, Kentucky, where he continued to reside until his death in 1870. He had two brothers, Jacob and John, the latter of whom was a pioneer Methodist Circuit Rider, spending most of his life in Tennessee. He married

Elizabeth Greaver, and to them were born six sons: (a) Conrad; (b) John; (c) William; (d) Henry Harrison; (e) Samuel; and (f) Christopher G.; and four daughters: (g) Jane (Hines); (h) Mary (Dougherty); (j) Katherine (died unmarried); and (k) Charity Elizabeth (Woods). Of these only two, Christopher G. and Charity E. (Woods), are now (1904) living. Henry Henninger was a plain, unassuming man, industrious and frugal; and he acquired more than a competent livelihood. No man stood higher for integrity and uprightness. He was a devout Methodist, and reared his family in that faith. He was a lover of education, and instilled the same sentiment into his children, though the opportunities for its acquisition were most meagre.

Robert Emmet Woods, the subject of this sketch, was born in Breckinridge County, Kentucky, February 18, 1861. His early educational advantages were far from the best; but, such as he had, he made fairly good use of. He began teaching at the early age of seventeen, but did not pursue this continuously, except from 1882 to 1890.

During all these years he was anxious to fit himself for the bar, but the illness of a father extending over years before his death, the needs of an invalid mother and sister, and other hindering circumstances over which he had no control, prevented him from doing so. However, he had previously studied some privately, when in 1890 he accepted a position in the War Department at Washington, D. C. He there entered the Law Department of the Columbian University, pursuing his legal studies in addition to his regular duties, and graduating with the highest honors in 1892. He took a post-graduate course in 1893, again winning the highest honors, and receiving the Honorary Degree of LL. M.

He located in Louisville in 1893, and was Assistant County Attorney by appointment for three years from 1895 to 1898. In 1896 he was happily married to Miss Jennie Clyde Harrison, of Marion County, Kentucky. There have been born as the result of this union two children: (a) Robert Emmet, Jr.; and (b) Elizabeth Lisle. Robert Emmet, Jr., died June 19, 1901.

Mr. Woods enjoys the confidence of the community in which he resides, both as a man and as a lawyer. He is a modest, unobtrusive, home-loving man, quiet and rather undemonstrative in manner; but a man of great earnestness, intense convictions, and uncompromising integrity.

He is a member of the Masonic Order, which has honored him, and in which he takes a deep interest. He is a Republican in politics, but is always outspoken against evil and ready to lend his aid to any wise reform, irrespective of party affiliation. Like his maternal ancestors, he is, in religious belief, a Methodist; and, along with all his family, is an active member of that Church. Both in politics and religion he is tolerant.

His wife is a daughter of the late Charles B. Harrison and Eliza (Lisle) Harrison, of Lebanon, Marion County, Kentucky. She is the third of a family of six children, the others being: (a) Mrs. Elizabeth McChord; (b) Miss Annie Harrison; and (c) Mr. Waller Harrison, of Lebanon, Kentucky; (d) Charles B. Harrison, New Orleans, Louisiana; and (e) Rev. William B. Harrison, a Presbyterian missionary in Korea.

[Note.—Our information in regard to Archibald Woods, Sr., son of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, and his children, is rather meagre; and the accounts derived from various sources are in some respects, contradictory, and even irreconcilable. The reader is referred to pages 110-123 of this volume, and also to Sketches 62 and 63, which immediately precede this one.—N. M. W.]

SKETCH 65.

R. J. WOODS, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

Robert James Woods, son of Andrew Chevalier Woods (No. 1), and Elizabeth Edith Cobb, *nee* Bevall, was born March 29, 1872. He is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, through his son Andrew, whose wife was Martha Poage. The said Andrew Woods and Martha had, among other children, a son named James Woods,

whose wife was Nancy Rayburn; and said James and Nancy had, among other children, a son named Andrew Woods (No. 3), who was born in 1777, and died in 1832, and who married Lise Chauvin; and said Andrew Woods (No. 3) and his wife Lise had, among other children, a son named Andrew Chevalier Woods (No. 1), who married Elizabeth Edith Cobb, *nee* Devall. The said Andrew Chevalier Woods (No. 1) and his wife Elizabeth had three children, as follows: (a) ANDREW CHEVALIER WOODS, (No. 2), who was born December 6, 1865, and lives in Indianapolis, Indiana; (b) ROBERT JAMES WOODS, the subject of this sketch; and (c) BESSIE DEVALL WOODS, who was born February 22, 1861, and resides in Baton Rouge, Louisiana. The said Andrew Chevalier Woods, No. 2, married Leila Abi Leonard February 7, 1891, and by her has two children, to wit: (a) ANDREW CHEVALIER WOODS, No. 3, who was born August 2, 1894; and (b) MARGARET ROBERTS WOODS, who was born November 3, 1891. The said Bessie Devall Woods married William H. Reynaud, April 21, 1885, and by him has the following children: (a) ANDREW WOODS REYNAUD, who was born February 2, 1886; (b) CLAUDE FAYROT REYNAUD, who was born March 31, 1888; and (c) AUGUSTINE E. REYNAUD, who was born February 10, 1890.

Mr. Robert James Woods has for many years been engaged in the railway service. In 1892 he went to Cincinnati and was there five years with the C., C., C. & St. L. R. R. Co., when he was transferred to St. Louis. In 1898 he left the road just mentioned to enter the service of the Wabash Railroad Co., with which company he is still at work.

SKETCH 66.

HON. MICAJAH WOODS, CHARLOTTESVILLE, VIRGINIA.

Hon. Micajah Woods, who is one of the best known members of the legal profession in Virginia, is a native of Albemarle County, Virginia, and was born at "Holkham," on the 17th of May, 1844. His father, Dr. John Rodes Woods, was for many years considered the leading authority upon stock-raising in Virginia, and his mother was Miss Sabina Lewis Stuart Creigh. On both sides of his family he is descended from Scotch-Irish ancestry. His first American progenitor, Michael Woods, received a patent to a large tract of land from George II in 1737, in the western part of Albemarle County, which was then Goochland County, Virginia. William Woods, the great-grandfather of Micajah Woods, was a member of the Legislature of Virginia in 1798 and 1799, and his son, Micajah, was a member of the Albemarle County Court from 1815 to 1837, and was High Sheriff of the County, *ex officio*, at the time of his death. Through his mother he is descended from Colonel David Stuart, County Lieutenant of Augusta County, from 1755 on for several years. Mr. Woods is connected with the Lewises, Stuarts, Prestons, Creighs, Rodeses and other well-known Virginia families.

His early education was obtained at the Lewisburg Academy, the Military School of Charlottesville, taught by Colonel John Bowie Strange, and at the Bloomfield Academy. In 1861 he entered the University of Virginia, and like many of the other young men of the South, was soon a member of the Confederate Army. He first served when barely seventeen years of age as volunteer aide on the staff of General John B. Floyd, in the West Virginia campaign of 1861; then in 1862 as a private in the Albemarle Light Horse Company; in the Second Virginia Cavalry; afterwards First Lieutenant in the Virginia State line; and in May, 1863, he was elected and commissioned First Lieutenant in Jackson's Battery of Horse Artillery, Army of Northern Virginia, in which capacity he served until the close of the war. Among the battles in which he participated were Carnifax Ferry, Port Republic, Second Cold Harbor, New Market, Second Manassas, Sharpsburg, Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Gettysburg. At the close of the war he returned to the University, where he studied in the Academic department for one year, and then studied law, being graduated therefrom in 1868 with the degree of Bachelor of Law. He immediately began the practice of his profession in Charlottesville, Vir-

GENERAL MICAJAH WOODS.
CHARLOTTESVILLE, VA.

DR. JOHN RODES WOODS
LATE OF HOLKHAM, ALBEMARLE COUNTY, VIRGINIA

(See Sketch No. 161)

MISS MAUD COLEMAN WOODS.

BORN 23d AUGUST, 1877—DIED 24th AUGUST, 1901.

(SEE SKETCH No. 66.)

Died, at Clazemont, the childhood home of her mother, on August 24th, after a short illness, Miss Maud Coleman Woods, the beautiful and accomplished daughter of Captain and Mrs. Micajah Woods, of Charlottesville. The writer, who has counted both the father and mother among his life-long friends and knew the lovely daughter from her earliest childhood, is only one of many who will sorrow with her family in their great bereavement. In the long list of her beautiful daughters the State of Virginia never had one who by every gentle grace filled more fully the measure of that sweet womanhood, which we who are of the soil love to think the distinctive stamp of her endowment. Blessed as this young daughter was with the refined beauty that belonged to her by inheritance, she was to those who had the happiness to know her yet more distinguished by the sweetness and purity of her character, the loveliness of her nature, and the charm of her manner. No adulation changed her; no trace of self-consciousness marred her exquisite simplicity. She was as beautiful and as natural as a flower. When she was budding from girlhood into gracious womanhood she was selected by the officers of the United Confederate Veterans at the grand reunion held in Atlanta to stand as sponsor for the Department of the Army of Northern Virginia. It caused much embarrassment to one of her shy and retiring nature. The very modesty with which she shrank from publicity was the crowning grace that captivated all who met her.

Her portrait was again, without her knowledge, selected by the committee of distinguished men, who had the matter in charge, to typify North American beauty at the Pan-American Exposition; but with innate modesty she begged to be left alone. It was not in public, but in private, that she aspired to shine, and there she shone. In the circle of her home, surrounded by those who loved her, she shone with the radiance which beams only from a pure and gentle breast. One could not see her there and not think of a lovely rose making all of the house sweet with its fragrance. One can not recall her and not grieve in thinking

"How small a part of time they share,
That are so wondrous sweet and fair."

To her graces was early added the crowning beauty of simple and unaffected Christian piety, which had descended to her with her blood from generations of saintly women, and many of her young friends testified to the influence she had upon their lives.

At Clazemont, in Hanover, one of the old seats of boundless Virginia hospitality; where her mother before had played as a child, surrounded by those who knew and loved her best, she, on the day following her twenty-fourth birthday, sighed her gentle life away and passed without a pang into the blessed, white-robed company of the redeemed.

T. N. P.

ginia, and in 1870 was elected Commonwealth's Attorney for that county, which position he has filled for thirty-three years without having had opposition for the nomination since 1873; and at the November, 1903, election he was chosen for said office for another term of four years, commencing first of January, 1904. In 1872 he was made a member of the Board of Visitors of the University of Virginia, a position which he held for four years, having been at the time of his appointment the youngest member of that Board ever selected. In politics he is a Democrat. He has been Chairman of the Democratic party of Albemarle County for several years and representing as Elector the Seventh Congressional District of Virginia, was a member of the Presidential Electoral Board in 1888, which cast the vote of Virginia for Cleveland for President. He was permanent chairman of the Virginia Democratic State Convention which met in Staunton in 1896 to elect delegates to the National Convention. In two Democratic Congressional Conventions of the Seventh District he has received the almost unanimous vote for Congress of all of the Eastern counties in the Seventh District, and each time failed of nomination by only a few votes. In 1881 he was elected Captain of the Monticello Guards at Charlottesville, and commanded that famous old Company at the Yorktown Celebration in October, 1881. In 1893 he was made Brigadier-General of the Second Brigade of Virginia Confederate Veterans, which position he held until 1901, when he declined re-election.

While at the University he was a member of the Delta Psi Fraternity. He is a Mason, and a member of the Mystic Shrine, and of "The History Committee of the Grand Camp of Confederate Veterans of Virginia." Many of the leading newspapers of the State have prominently mentioned him as a suitable candidate for Governor of the State, but he has never allowed his name to be urged for the place.

On the 9th of June, 1874, he married Miss Matilda Minor Morris, daughter of the late Edward Watts Morris, Esq., of Hanover County, Virginia, and has had five children: (a) Edward Morris; (b) Sallie Stuart; (c) Maud Coleman, who died in 1901; (d) Mary Watts; and (e) Lettie Page Woods.

MAUD COLEMAN WOODS.

This beautiful young girl, daughter of Hon. Micajah Woods and of his wife, *nee* Matilda Minor Morris, was born on the 23d of August, 1877, and died of typhoid fever on the 24th of August, 1901. On the preceding page is appended the tribute paid to her memory by Dr. Thomas Nelson Page, two of whose brothers married sisters of Mrs. Micajah Woods.

Dr. John Rodes Woods, who was the father of the subject of this sketch, was born in Albemarle County, on the 15th day of January, 1815, and died at "Holkham" in said County on the 9th day of July, 1885. In 1836 he graduated in the School of Medicine at the University of Virginia, and settled at Helena, Arkansas. Owing to the death of his father, Micajah Woods, in 1837, he returned to Virginia and took charge of the large estate devised to him. From that time on he devoted himself to scientific agriculture, and his estate of nearly 2,000 acres became famed as one of the most productive and valuable in Virginia. He imported horses, cattle and sheep from England; and perhaps no man in Virginia was considered a higher authority upon the subject of stock than Dr. Woods. He was an enthusiastic Henry Clay Whig, and visited Mr. Clay more than once in Kentucky. He opposed the Secession movement in Virginia most earnestly, but when the State did secede, in 1861, he followed her fortunes, and permitted his oldest son, Micajah, to leave school and volunteer in the Confederate Army when he was only seventeen years of age. Owing to his public spirit and wide reputation as an agriculturalist and a stock-breeder, he was perhaps better known in Virginia than any private gentleman who was not a politician. Dr. Woods never practised medicine in Virginia, nor did he ever hold any public office, though in 1865 he was a candidate for Congress; but on finding that he would have to take the "Iron Clad" oath, if elected, in order to qualify, he retired from the contest. He

served from 1857 to 1868 as Director of The Virginia Central Railroad (now the Chesapeake & Ohio), and he was a member of the Board of Visitors of the University of Virginia from 1865 to 1872. In 1843 he married Sabina Lewis Stuart Creigh, by whom he had eleven children:

(1) Micajah Woods, born 17th May, 1844.

(2) William Shepherd Woods, born 3d June, 1847.

(3) Thomas Creigh Woods, born 12th September, 1850; died 13th August, 1863.

(4) Sallie Rodes Woods, born 3d of April, 1853; died 14th of August, 1863.

(5) John Rodes Woods, born 23d February, 1855 (merchant in Albemarle County).

(6) Jane Creigh Woods, born 9th March, 1857; died 6th of June, 1858.

(7) Jane Lynn Woods, born 4th of February, 1859; died 30th of July, 1859.

(8) Robert Harris Woods, born 11th November, 1860; educated at Annapolis, and now Paymaster in the U. S. Navy.

(9) Margaret Lynn Woods born 17th July, 1863, who married Warner Wood, of "Farmington," on the 5th of January, 1887, and has five children.

(10) Lynn Creigh Woods, born 27th of June, 1865; real estate and insurance agent, Charlottesville, Virginia.

(11) Charles Lewis Woods, born 2d of December, 1869, lawyer and editor, Rolla, Missouri.

Hon. Micajah Woods, as will appear above, is a lineal descendant of Michael Woods, of Blair Park, as follows: Said Michael had a son, Michael, Jr., whose wife was Anne. Said Michael, Jr., and Anne had a son William, whose wife was Joanna Shepherd. Said William Woods and Joanna had a son named Micajah, whose second wife was Sarah H. Davenport, *nee* Rodes. Said Micajah Woods and Sarah H. had a son, Dr. John Rodes Woods. Said Dr. John Rodes Woods married Sabina L. S. Creigh, and his first child was the distinguished lawyer who is the subject of this sketch, and one of Virginia's most prominent public men.

SKETCH 67.

DAVID WOODS, MARION, KENTUCKY.

David Woods (No. 3) is descended from Michael of Blair Park through his son Michael, Jr., whose wife was Anne; and from Michael, Jr., and Anne through their son William, whose wife was Joanna Shepherd; and from William and Joanna through their son David Woods (No. 1), whose wife was Sallie Neal; and from David (No. 1) and Sallie through their son Henry W. Woods, whose wife was Nellie Ann Hodge; and from Henry W. and Nellie Ann, who were his parents.

David Woods (No. 1), son of William Woods ("Baptist Billy," as his friends familiarly called him to distinguish him from a number of his near kinsmen of the same name), and his wife Sallie had six children, as follows: (a) Tavner; (b) Henry W.; (c) David (No. 2); (d) John N.; (e) Kitty, who married Richard Miles, and (f) Mariah, who married Peyton Craig. All six of the children just named are dead.

Henry W. Woods, son of David (No. 1), was born March 30, 1811, married Nellie Ann Hodge (a daughter of Robert Hodge and Nellie, *nee* Armistead) and died July 11, 1880, leaving four sons, to-wit: (a) Robert H., who is a farmer, and lives at the old Woods Homestead in Livingston County, Ky.; (b) David (No. 3), the subject of this sketch; (c) Joseph E., who was a physician, lived in Arkansas, and died in February, 1895, leaving a widow and three children; (d) Preston H., who is a merchant, and resides at Marion, Kentucky, and (e) Frank, who is a druggist, and lives at Kuttawa, Kentucky.

David Woods, whom we have, for convenience, designated as David No. 3, was born May 20, 1839, and married Havana E. Perkins, by whom he has had six children, as follows: (a) David Everett Woods, who was born at Marion, Kentucky, July 7, 1869, and married Miss Mattie Kevil on the 26th of December, 1895, and who is a rising and popular official of the Illinois Central Railway; (b) H. K. Woods; (c) Lena Woods; (d) Ina Woods; (e) Kitty Woods; and (f) Sallie Woods. Mr. Woods

has been the clerk of the Crittenden County Court since August 12, 1878. His wife was a daughter of Rev. George K. Perkins by his wife Elizabeth O., *nee* Gray. Mrs. Woods was born at Decatur, Alabama, August 16, 1840. She is descended, like her husband, from Michael Woods, Jr., and his wife Anne, but through Michael's daughter, Margaret, who married David Gray. Said Margaret Woods was the youngest of her father's children. She became the wife of David Gray somewhere about the year 1780, and by him had a son William, who, in 1812, married a Miss Kittie Bird Winn, and lived in Glasgow, and also Greensburg, Kentucky. The fifth child of this (Doctor) William Gray, by his wife Kittie B., was Elizabeth Catherine Ophelia, who was born February 23, 1823, and married the Rev. George K. Perkins, a Presbyterian minister, who was the father of Havana E. Perkins, now Mrs. David Woods, of Marion, Kentucky.

Mr. John N. Woods, above mentioned as one of the children of David Woods (No. 1) and his wife Sallie, was an uncle of the subject of this sketch, and was born at Salem, Kentucky, June 15, 1815. His father (David No. 1) had moved to Livingston County in 1813, with his parents, and died at Marion, Kentucky, in 1825. John N. Woods was one of the most prominent and substantial citizens of Marion where, through a long life, he was known and honored as a man of the noblest character. He made several moves and business changes during his life, but Marion was the town with whose history his own was mainly connected. In 1871 he was sent to the State Legislature by his county. In 1848 he was married to Mrs. Mary A. Marble, of Madison, Indiana. His death occurred December 27, 1896.

SKETCH 68.

MRS. S. H. SHELBY, LEXINGTON, KENTUCKY.

Mrs. Susan Goodloe Shelby, *nee* Hart, was born in Madison County, Kentucky, March 15, 1839, and on the 4th of December, 1858, was married to Edmund Pendleton Shelby, a grandson of Governor Isaac Shelby. Mr. Shelby was born in Fayette County, Kentucky, July 26, 1833. Mrs. Shelby is descended from Michael Woods of Blair Park through his son William Woods, whose wife was Susannah Wallace, and from said William and Susannah through their son Archibald Woods, whose wife was Mourning Harris Shelton; and from said Archibald and Mourning through their daughter Susannah Woods, whose husband was William Goodloe; and from said Susannah and William through their daughter Lucy Ann Goodloe, whose husband was David P. Hart (son of the noted Captain Nathaniel Hart, of the Transylvania Company). Said David P. and his wife Lucy Ann were the parents of the subject of this sketch.

Edmund Pendleton Shelby and his wife Susan Goodloe, *nee* Hart, had eleven children, as follows: (a) Thomas Hart Shelby, who is a farmer; (b) William Kinkead Shelby, who was graduated from Princeton University with honors in 1883, studied law at the University of Virginia, practised law for a time, then became a teacher, was principal of the Johnson High School, Lexington, and died in Lexington, Kentucky, September 20, 1900; (c) Lucy Goodloe Shelby, who is a graduate of Sayre Institute, Lexington, and now teacher of Latin in Johnson High School, Lexington; (d) Vily de la Fontaine Shelby, who was married to George Sea Shanklin, October 19, 1886, by whom she has three sons; 1, Shelby, 2, George Sea, and 3, Arthur; (e) Edmund Pendleton Shelby, who was graduated from Kentucky University, studied medicine at the University of Virginia, was graduated from the University of New York, and is now a member of the faculty of Cornell Medical College; (f) David Hart Shelby, who was educated at Kentucky University, and is now engaged in the lumber business in the West; (g) Isaac Prather Shelby, who was graduated from the Kentucky State College, on the 5th of January, 1900, married Augusta Pauline Taggart, and is now City Engineer of Pine Bluff, Arkansas; (h) Evan Shelby, who was graduated from Kentucky Uni-

versity, and the New York Law School, and is now a member of the law firm of Taylor & Shelby, New York City; (j) SUSAN HART SHELBY, who died in April, 1876, when only eleven months old; (k) MARY BULLOCK SHELBY, who was graduated from Sayre Institute, was a student at Wellesley College, married Samuel M. Wilson, and (l) ARTHUR SHELBY, who died July 23, 1898, in Lexington, aged seventeen years.

SKETCH 69.

HON. J. D. WOODS, HICKORY VALLEY, TENNESSEE.

(For illustration see page 332.)

John David Woods, of Hickory Valley, Tennessee, was born August 29, 1847, and was the only son of Samuel M. Woods by his wife Narcissa, *nee* Robinson. He is descended from William Woods, of North Carolina, through his son John Woods, whose wife was Ann Loney Mebane; and from said John and Ann Loney through their son Samuel Woods, whose wife was Jennie Allison; and from said Samuel and Jennie through their son David Woods, whose wife was Mary Robinson; and from said David and Mary through their son Samuel M. Woods, above mentioned, who married Narcissa Robinson, and was the father of the subject of this sketch. The said William Woods, of North Carolina, as shown in Part I of this volume (pages 132-139) was a brother of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and of the Elizabeth Woods who married Peter Wallace, Sr., and became one of the ancestors of all the Wallaces mentioned in this work. What has already been related in Part I of William and his children and grandchildren need not be repeated here, except so far as may be necessary to a lucid account of his remoter descendants now living. Six of his lineal descendants are among the original patrons of this work, as will appear from Sketches No. 69-74, inclusive.

Mr. Woods, the subject of this sketch, was married to Miss Annie E. McLarty August 3, 1879, by whom he has had two children, to-wit: (a) DAVID WOODS, who was born July 14, 1880; and (b) ELIZABETH WOODS, who was born March 7, 1883. Mr. Woods has represented his county in the Tennessee Legislature, and is honored as one of the most important and reliable citizens of his community. He is a member and an officer of the Presbyterian Church. He resides at the old Woods homestead, first owned by his grandfather, David Woods, and which was settled about 1824. There are but few plantations in Hardeman County which were settled as early as was his. Mr. Woods was the only child of his parents (Samuel M. Woods and Narcissa, *nee* Robinson).

Samuel Mebane Woods, just mentioned, who was the oldest of the four children of David Woods and Mary, *nee* Robinson, was born February 16, 1822. He was married to Miss Narcissa Robinson, January 14, 1844, and died May 5, 1849. Narcissa Robinson, whom he married, was a daughter of William B. Robinson, and Elizabeth, *nee* Boykin. William B. Robinson was a son of James Robinson and brother to the Mary Robinson who married David Woods. Hence, Samuel M. Woods's wife (Narcissa) was his first cousin. The beforementioned Elizabeth Boykin was a daughter of Dr. Elisha Boykin, who was the son of a native French Protestant who settled near Petersburg, Virginia. Narcissa Robinson was born March 28, 1824, and died November 3, 1890, and was buried in the Robinson cemetery, in Tipton County, Tennessee.

John R. Woods, the second child of David and Mary, died in early manhood, and unmarried. Mary Woods, the third child, married Walter M. Chenault, by whom she had one child, namely, Mary A. Chenault, who married Mr. T. A. McLarty, of Grand Junction, Tennessee. Mr. and Mrs. McLarty have two children, to-wit: (a) WILLIE MCLARTY; (b) LILLIE MCLARTY, who married Thurston D. Prewitt.

Margaret Woods, the fourth and last child of David and Mary, married Joseph S. McAnulty, by whom she had two children, as follows: (a) DAVID W. MCANULTY, who married Martha R. Moorman; and (b) ROBERT A. MCANULTY, who married, first, Sallie Cargile; and, second, Mary Spinks.

SKETCH 70.

DAVID S. WOODS, DECEASED, LATE OF BARSTOW, TEXAS.

(For illustration see page 332.)

Mr. David Sidney Woods, whose death occurred since the preparation of this work was begun, and of which he was one of the first patrons, was a descendant of William Woods, of Ireland, through his son John Woods, whose wife was Ann L. Mebane; and from said John and Ann L. through their son Samuel Woods, whose wife was a lady of his own name, Elizabeth Woods; and from said Samuel and Elizabeth through their son Samuel Ray Woods, whose wife was Zilpha E. McKuine. The said Samuel Ray Woods and his wife Zilpha were the parents of David S. Woods.

Mr. Woods was born near Hillsboro, Orange County, North Carolina, December 28, 1844, and with his parents came to Marion, Alabama, in 1848.

He enlisted as a private in Company K, Eleventh Alabama Infantry, in June, 1861, and served in that regiment in the first campaign of the Army of Northern Virginia. Having fallen a victim to pneumonia, and being a mere youth, he was discharged. Soon after reaching home he re-enlisted in Company E, Forty-first Alabama Infantry, and served as first sergeant of his company in the Army of the Cumberland under General Bragg from his retreat from Kentucky in 1862 to the battle of Chickamauga. He was promoted to second lieutenant in the army of the Gulf, and served in that department up to the fall of Fort Gains and Mobile Bay, when, on the 8th of August, 1864, he surrendered, with his company, which he had commanded during the engagement about the Bay and Dauphin Island, and for about five months was in prison at New Orleans and Ship Island. He was exchanged in time to participate in the closing scenes of the great war in and about Mobile, Alabama. After the storm of battle had cleared away he secured a position as salesman in a mercantile establishment, kept books, and for several years was a travelling salesman in the wholesale line. In 1872 he moved to Texas, and entered the field of civil and hydraulic engineering, and assisted in the construction of many of the large railway systems and irrigation canals in Texas and Mexico. Mr. Woods was never married. A fuller account of his family will be found on the pages devoted to William Woods, Part I, Chapter IV.

Said Samuel Ray Woods and his wife Zilpha left the following six children, to-wit: (a) WILLIAM SAMUEL WOODS, who was born December 1, 1831; (b) MARY ELIZABETH WOODS, who was born December 16, 1833; (c) SUSAN MCKUINE, who was born March 29, 1836; (d) JOHN RAIFORD WOODS, who was born October 13, 1838; (e) BARBARA ANN WOODS, who was born September 18, 1841; and (f) DAVID SIDNEY WOODS (the subject of this sketch), who was born, as above stated, December 28, 1844.

Samuel Ray Woods moved with his family from Orange County, North Carolina, to Marion, Alabama, in 1848. Here his wife (Zilpha Elizabeth) died April 13, 1877. He survived her a little more than thirteen years, dying July 30, 1890. The before-mentioned John Raiford Woods, who resides at New Berne, Alabama, married Miss Annie Jane Paul, by whom he has had three children, to-wit: (a) GEORGE SIDNEY, who was born March 1, 1877; (b) MARY ALICE, who was born July 13, 1879; and (c) ELIZABETH MCKUINE, who was born April 20, 1882. Susan McKuine and Barbara Ann have never married, and reside at Marion, Alabama.

SKETCHES 71, 72 AND 73.

J. H. WOODS, MELBOURNE, ARK.; T. J. WOODS, BATESVILLE, ARK.; S. W. WOODS, YELLVILLE, ARK.

(For illustration see page 337.)

These three individuals are sons of the late William Mitchell Woods and his wife Elizabeth E., *nee* Brown; and said William Mitchell Woods was a son of Thomas Woods and his wife Susannah, *nee* Baldridge; and said Thomas Woods was a son of John Woods and his wife Ann Louey, *nee* Mebane; and said John Woods was a son of the William Woods who was a brother of Michael Woods of Blair Park, Virginia, and came from Ireland to America in 1721 and settled in what is

now Orange County, North Carolina. For fuller details in regard to the Thomas Woods just mentioned, the reader is referred to Chapter IV of Part I of this volume.

William Mitchell Woods, above mentioned, was born May 16, 1820, and December 16, 1847, he was married to Miss Elizabeth E. Brown, of Fulton County, Kentucky, daughter of Archibald and Sarah (Culton) Brown. He made his home first in Obion County, Tennessee, but in 1855 he sold out and moved to Izard County, Arkansas. He died September 19, 1896, and his wife died March 15, 1899. He was a member of the Christian Church, and his wife was a Cumberland Presbyterian. William Mitchell Woods and his wife Elizabeth had eight children, as follows: (a) John Harvey Woods, who was born March 27, 1849, married Miss Mary Ella Powell, a daughter of Judge R. H. Powell, of Melbourne, Arkansas, on the 15th of May, 1879, and by her has had the following children, to-wit: 1, Irene Woods, born May 31, 1880; 2, Henry Mitchell, born August 11, 1881, and died April 15, 1883; 3, Mary Elizabeth (Bessie) born September 27, 1883, and died August 28, 1887; 4, Effie Jane, born March 7, 1885; 5, John Powell, born December 25, 1885; 6, Robert Thomas, born July 9, 1888, and died August 11, 1888; 7, William, born October 18, 1889; and 8, Susannah, born November 9, 1893. Irene, Bessie, and Effie all confessed Christ and united with the Christian Church early in life. Mr. John Harvey Woods was admitted to the bar in June, 1877, and is a successful lawyer.

(b) Thomas James Woods, M. D., second child of William M. and Elizabeth E. Woods, was born August 18, 1850. He studied medicine, and was graduated with honor from the Medical College of Louisville, Kentucky, in 1876. Dr. Woods practised his profession at LaCross, Arkansas, until 1890, when he moved to Batesville, in the same State. At the time he was growing up the best educational advantages did not abound in Izard County, Arkansas, his boyhood home, but he was ambitious and worked hard, and acquired a liberal education. December 27, 1876, he was married to Miss Mary F. Kinnard, of LaCrosse. Dr. Woods has given a very large share of his time and attention to surgical practice, and has achieved large success therein, and he is considered the leading physician and surgeon of his part of Arkansas. His wife was the daughter of William C. Kinnard, and was born August 4, 1853. He and his wife are members of the Christian Church. They have eight children, as follows: 1, Mary Ethel, born October 7, 1877, who is a highly educated young lady; 2, William Kinnard, born August 8, 1879, and died November, 1880; 3, I. Gaillard, born October 25, 1881, and died in 1882; 4, Lillian E., born April 15, 1883; 5, Edwin Onin, born January 22, 1885; 6, Shelby Watkins, born February 5, 1887; 7, Frederick Dains, born June 5, 1889, and 8, John Michael, born September 3, 1891.

(c) William Archibald Woods was the third child of William and Elizabeth, and was born April 12, 1852, and died December 6, 1852.

(d) Johnson Pierce Woods, who was the fourth child of William and Elizabeth, was born October 12, 1853. He graduated in medicine at Louisville, Kentucky, in 1878, and that same year married Miss Hattie Powell. He has practised his profession ever since his graduation at Salem, Arkansas, and is considered one of the finest physicians in his section. His wife died after having borne to him seven children, to-wit: 1, Robert; 2, Arch; 3, Grover; 4, Allen; 5, Winnie; 6, Tressie; and 7, Otho. He is a member of the Christian Church, as was his wife.

(e) Sarah Annabel Woods, the fifth child of William and Elizabeth, was born October 16, 1855. She married Mr. Hamp Wiseman, of Izard County, Arkansas. She was an invalid most of her life, but bore her sufferings with Christian patience. She was a Cumberland Presbyterian. She died April 16, 1899, leaving no children.

(f) Stephen Washington Woods, the sixth child, was born December 9, 1857. He attended the Law School at Louisville, Kentucky, graduating from thence in 1882. Up to 1890 he practised

GROVER CLEVELAND GOODWIN,
ST. JOHNS, NEWFOUNDLAND.
[See Sketch No. 74.]

MR. JAMES D. GOODWIN,
ST. JOHNS, NEWFOUNDLAND.
[See Sketch No. 74.]

MRS. JAMES D. GOODWIN,
ST. JOHNS, NEWFOUNDLAND.
[See Sketch No. 74.]

law at Melbourne, since which date he has followed his profession at Yellville, Arkansas. He has been remarkably successful as a lawyer, and has also made wise investments in various mining and manufacturing enterprises. He operates at Yellville the largest and best roller mill in North Arkansas. January 1, 1885, he was married to Miss Lillie Brown, daughter of David and Sarah J. Brown. He is a member of the Christian Church whilst his wife is a member of the Southern Methodist Church. Mr. and Mrs. Woods have one child, Gertrude, born September 30, 1886.

(g) Benjamin Franklin Woods, the seventh child, was born February 21, 1867, and died in October, 1870.

(h) Owen Shelby Woods, the eighth child, was born February 27, 1870. On the 24th of December, 1891, he was married to Miss Cornelia J. Faust, of Izard County, Arkansas, by whom he has had three children, to wit: 1, Lillie Anabel, born November 30, 1892; 2, William Thomas, born October 16, 1894; and 3, Bernice, born December 26, 1898.

SKETCH 74.

MRS. J. D. GOODWIN, ST. JOHNS, NEWFOUNDLAND.

Mrs. Viola Smith Goodwin, *nee* Woods, the wife of James Dennis Goodwin, was the daughter of Joseph Hammel Woods by his wife Rebecca Williams, *nee* Monk, and was born in Orange County, North Carolina, November 1, 1867. She is descended from the William Woods who was a brother to Michael Woods of Blair Park, Virginia, and settled in what is now Orange County, North Carolina, about 1730-1740, through his son John, whose wife was Ann Louey Mebane; and from said John and Ann Louey through their son Samuel whose wife was Elizabeth Woods; and from said Samuel and Elizabeth through their son Hugh Woods, whose wife was Elvira Jane Ray. The said Hugh and Elvira Jane were the parents of Joseph Hammel Woods, who was the father of Mrs. Goodwin.

Miss Viola Smith Woods was married to Mr. James Dennis Goodwin, son of Wesley Goodwin and Martha Jane, *nee* Williams, on the 12th of February, 1884, by whom she has had two children, to-wit: (a) Grover Cleveland Goodwin, born May 19, 1885; and (b) Brower G. Goodwin, born November 9, 1887, and died November 9, 1888.

Joseph Hammel Woods, Mrs. Goodwin's father, was born November 7, 1833. He was a Confederate soldier, and was severely wounded October 14, 1863. His home is in Durham, North Carolina.

Hugh Woods, the paternal grandfather of Mrs. Goodwin, and the fourth son of Samuel Woods (the *first* child by Samuel's *second* wife, Elizabeth) who married Elvira Jane Ray on the 26th of January, 1826, had a family of six children, as follows: (a) Samuel Robert Faucett Woods, born February 16, 1828, was a successful physician, and died May 31, 1855; (b) Margaret Jane Woods, born July 29, 1830, taught school, never married, and died September 26, 1857; (c) Joseph Hammel already considered; (d) Elizabeth Ann Woods, born August 19, 1837, married Samuel M. Wilkinson November, 1882, had no children, and now lives at Durham, North Carolina; (e) Hugh Phillips, generally known as Tyler, born January 15, 1840, purposed entering the Presbyterian ministry, but the Civil War interferred with his plans; entered the infantry service of the Confederate Army, and was killed in battle October 14, 1863, near Manassas, Virginia; (f) Mary Ellen Woods, born July 22, 1842, and died unmarried, September 22, 1882. All of these children of Hugh Woods, but one, were consistent members of the Presbyterian Church, and that one (Samuel) confessed Christ on his death-bed.

Hugh Woods was an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and died February 28, 1880. His wife, Elvira Jane, was also a devoted member of the same church, and died October 11, 1870. Joseph Hammel Woods, son of Hugh and Elvira Jane, was married to Rebecca Williams Monk March 31, 1864. She was born March 6, 1841. They lived in Orange County, North Carolina, till 1881, when they moved to Durham, North Carolina, their present home. To this couple eight children were

born, to wit: (a) MAGGIE LEE WOODS, born December 25, 1864, married William Thomas Speed, of Durham, North Carolina, by whom she has five children now living: 1, Julian Maurice; 2, Annie Pauline; 3, Irene Williams; 4, Mamie Lee; and 5, Willie Woods; (b) ADDIE PHILLIPS WOODS, born June 1, 1866, married (when sixteen) to Rufus S. Garner, of Durham, died April 7, 1887, leaving one son, Almond Lee, born July 14, 1883; (c) VIOLA SMITH WOODS, the subject of this sketch; (d) and (e)—twins—SAMUEL LARKIN and WILLIAM HUGH WOODS, born May 26, 1869, the latter of whom only lived to be twenty years old, dying a triumphant Christian death, and the other twin, Samuel Larkin, was married to Mollie Alice Warren, of Durham, February 6, 1895, in which town they now reside, he being superintendent of the Morris & Son Manufacturing Co.; (f) ELVIRA JANE WALKER WOODS (called "Jennie") was born April 8, 1872, lives with her parents in Durham, and is a lovely Christian. (g) HATTIE CAIN WOODS, born April 3, 1880, and who lives in Durham with her parents. (h) JOSEPH DARNELL WOODS, the eighth and last child of Joseph Hammel Woods and his wife Rebecca, was born in Durham May 26, 1886, and died June 6, 1888.

Mrs. Goodwin (*nee* Woods) removed to Durham, North Carolina, with her parents in 1881. At fourteen years of age she joined the Presbyterian Church, under the ministry of Rev. H. T. Darnell. She was married to Mr. J. D. Goodwin in 1884, as before stated, he being then superintendent of the Smoking Tobacco Department of Blackwell's Durham Tobacco Company. Mr. Goodwin being a Methodist, she joined his church. Mr. Goodwin invented several machines used in tobacco manufacturing, and in order to have them built he connected himself with the Cardwell Machine Company, of Richmond, Virginia, and moved to that city in 1891. Mr. Goodwin has for several years lived at St. Johns, Newfoundland, where he is manager of the Imperial Tobacco Company. He and his wife are active members of the Methodist Church.

SKETCH 75.

GEN. LEW WALLACE, CRAWFORDSVILLE, INDIANA.

Lewis Wallace—Major General Lew Wallace—was born at Brookville, Indiana, April 10, 1827. His father was David Wallace, and his mother was Miss Esther French Test. His father was Governor of Indiana in 1837-1839, and soon after became a member of the United States Congress, where, in 1840, he cast the deciding vote by which that body appropriated $30,000 to aid Professor Morse in perfecting the electric telegraph. David's parents were Andrew Wallace and Eleanor Jones. This Miss Jones is believed by General Lew Wallace to have been a native of Virginia. She was a niece of the immortal American naval officer, John Paul (Jones), and as a young girl was a great favorite with General Washington, and became a brilliant woman. Andrew and his wife were both born in 1778, and their marriage occurred in 1798. Andrew was born at Carlisle, Pennsylvania, and there he made his home for a part of his life. Here he was engaged in mercantile business. His father owned large landed interests in that region. While yet a comparatively young man he migrated with his little family to Ohio, settling first at Troy, and later on at Cincinnati. In some of the campaigns against the Indians during the War of 1812 Andrew Wallace was in service as quartermaster. At Cincinnati he engaged extensively in mercantile pursuits; but being an intellectual man, and a great lover of books, he established and edited a newspaper, called *The Liberty Hall Gazette*, which later became the *Commercial-Gazette*. From Cincinnati Andrew Wallace moved to Brookville, Indiana, and there he was residing and keeping a tavern in 1812, from which point he furnished cattle for the army of General William H. Harrison. It was at Brookville, as already stated, that General Lew Wallace was born in 1827. He married Miss Susan Arnold Elston, daughter of Isaac C. Elston and Maria Aken, May 6, 1852. By her he had a son, Henry Lane Wallace, who married Miss Margaret Noble, and Mr. and Mrs. Henry L.

Wallace have a little son who is named for his distinguished paternal grandfather—Lew Wallace, Junior.

When we come to deal with the paternal ancestry of General Wallace, remoter than the Andrew Wallace above considered, we encounter difficulty in reaching conclusions which are not open to some question. From all the information which the author has been able to gather from the General's own family, and from the Virginia records of the Wallaces who settled in that colony about 1734-1740, it is his opinion that General Lew Wallace is most probably descended from Peter Wallace, Sr., whose wife was Elizabeth Woods, a sister of Michael Woods of Blair Park; and that this descent was through Andrew, the son of said Peter Wallace, Sr., and through Margaret Woods, daughter of Michael of Blair Park, who was Andrew's wife. This question has already been discussed in Part I of this volume, Chapter II, to which the reader is referred. The reasons which seem to warrant the conclusion reached will now be briefly recapitulated:

(a) The paternal grandfather of General Lew Wallace was, beyond all question, named Andrew Wallace, a man of Scotch parentage, who was born at Carlisle, Pennsylvania, in 1778. (b) The Peter Wallace, Sr., who married Elizabeth Woods, was a Scotchman, and had a son named Andrew Wallace, who was born somewhere about the year 1712. (c) This Andrew Wallace migrated with his mother and uncle to Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, about the year 1724, married his first cousin, Margaret Woods (a daughter of Michael Woods of Blair Park), and reared a considerable family of sons and daughters in Albemarle County, Virginia. (d) This Andrew Wallace had a son Michael and a son Samuel, who were born about 1734 and 1736, respectively. (e) Margaret, the wife of Andrew Wallace, and mother of Michael and Samuel, was dead by the year 1761, as appears from her father's will, made that year. The exact date of her death is not known—she may have been dead five years by 1761, or longer. (f) If Margaret (Woods) Wallace died as early as 1756, her husband was about forty-four years old at the date of her decease, and her sons Michael and Samuel were about twenty-two and twenty years old, respectively. (g) It is very probable that Andrew Wallace, the father of Michael and Samuel, and six other children, by his wife Margaret, remarried not many years after Margaret's death. (h) It is known that, of the eight children Margaret bore to Andrew, all but one (a daughter) moved away from Albemarle County, though their father Andrew remained there to the end of his life, dying there in 1785. This circumstance is, to say the least, quite unusual; and it would have had a very rational explanation in the fact that Andrew had brought into his home a step-mother for a family of children nearly all of whom had reached sufficient maturity of years to be likely to resent their father's second marriage, except he had been remarkably wise in his choice. (j) The Wallaces had lived ten or fifteen years in Pennsylvania (1724-1739) before migrating to Virginia, in a region not a day's journey to the eastward of Carlisle, where we know General Wallace's grandfather (Andrew) was born in 1778. The French and Indian Wars closed about 1763; and if Michael and Samuel Wallace emigrated from Virginia any time subsequent to that date, and prior to 1780, the probabilities are immensely in favor of the supposition that they went to Pennsylvania. Kentucky and the West were not yet opened up; and the Wallaces had once lived in Pennsylvania. (k) If Michael and Samuel Wallace did migrate to the neighborhood of Carlisle, Pennsylvania, about 1764-1770, they were mature young men, and probably heads of families; and if they had sons born to them it would have been extremely natural for them to have named one of them Andrew, in honor of their own father. (l) As we know that the Andrew Wallace who married Eleanor Jones, was born in 1778, and we have excellent reasons for believing that Michael and Samuel (the sons of Andrew and Margaret, of Albemarle) were in that year about

MAJOR-GENERAL LEW WALLACE, U. S. A.
CRAWFORDSVILLE, IND.
[See Sketch No. 75.]

THE FAMOUS "BEN HUR BEECH,"
WITH GENERAL WALLACE SITTING UNDER IT
COMPOSING HIS MASTERPIECE.
CRAWFORDSVILLE, IND.
(See Sketch No. 75.

forty-four and forty-two years old, respectively, and know that Andrew Wallace, of Carlisle, was the youngest child of his father, the known facts of the case fit most exactly into the supposition that said Andrew of Carlisle was the son of either Michael or Samuel, who came from Albemarle. (m) Finally, as General Wallace informs the writer, when Andrew of Carlisle came to seek a wife, about the year 1798, he seems to have gone to Virginia to find her, which would have been not at all surprising if Andrew had a great company of uncles and aunts and other blood-kin in Augusta and Albemarle, whom he had doubtless visited more than once, and with whom he and his father had kept in close touch.

The writer is aware that the foregoing array of facts and inferences does not, by any means, constitute a demonstration; but it certainly does furnish a reasonable basis for a very strong presumption in favor of the opinion that General Wallace, of Indiana, is a lineal descendant of both Peter Wallace, Sr., and Michael Woods of Blair Park; and until some one can offer some substantial evidence by way of rebuttal we are justified in accepting this view as correct.

General Wallace, like many another man of real genius, did not follow the conventional lines marked out for the education of youth. He seems to have had but little fancy for the usual routine of the schools; and, after attending college for a time, he broke away from the set curriculum and followed his own plans for training and enriching his mind. He studied law, and for many years practised it successfully; but that was evidently not the real choice of his heart. He was by nature an artist and a soldier—a very rare combination. These two branches he seems always to have followed with eagerness and success. He was a gallant and efficient soldier in the war with Mexico, and saw there just enough service to fit him for the important part he was to play in our great Civil War as one of the most capable of the Federal commanders. When the Civil War closed he returned to the practice of law, which he had for a time abandoned to serve in the army. Later on he was sent to Turkey as the Ambassador of the United States, and there he served his country most ably whilst securing from the Sultan concessions which no one else had been able to obtain. But it is not as a lawyer, nor as a faithful civil administrator in New Mexico, nor as a soldier in Old Mexico or our late war, nor yet as a statesman and diplomat, that he will be chiefly known; but as the man of letters—the author of "The Fair God," "Ben Hur," "The Prince of India." These creations of his genius will live long after he has passed from the earth. The author of this volume realizes that he has neither the gifts nor the personal acquaintance with General Wallace to render it proper for him to attempt a just and adequate portrayal of his character; that will be amply done in other publications by more competent hands; but he has deemed it not out of place to set down these few facts concerning him who, by common consent, will doubtless be accorded the place of highest distinction in literature of any member of the clans mentioned herein.

(Note.—Since the above was penned Gen. Wallace has passed to his eternal reward, Feb. 15, 1905. —Editor.)

SKETCHES 76, 77 AND 78.

JUDGE WM. CYRUS WALLACE (Deceased), THOMAS BATES WALLACE (Deceased), THOMAS JOSIAH WALLACE (Deceased).

The three persons whose sketches are herein combined into one narrative (all of whom are dead) were closely related to each other, and are lineal descendants of Peter Wallace, Sr., and his wife Elizabeth, *nee* Woods, through their son William Wallace, Sr., and of Michael Woods of Blair Park and his wife Mary, *nee* Campbell, through their daughter Hannah, who became the wife of said William Wallace.

In Chapter Second of Part I of this work will be found a brief account of the Wallaces which need not be repeated here. Said William Wallace, Sr., and Hannah had, as is there shown, seven children, the youngest of whom was Josiah Wallace, Sr., who married a Susan Wallace. Whether

Susan was a cousin of Josiah, Sr., the writer does not know; but it is certain the Wallaces and Woodses often married first cousins. On this account the author has thought it possible that Susan may have been a daughter of one of the uncles of Josiah, Sr. We know Josiah, Sr., had two uncles, namely, Andrew and Peter, Jr., who had daughters named Susan, or Susannah.

The said Josiah Wallace, Sr. (born 1749), and his wife Susan had seven children, to wit: (a) William Wallace (3d), who never married; (b) Margaret Wallace, who married D. Guthrie; (c) John Wallace, Jr., who married Elizabeth Walker; (d) Hannah Wallace, who married Abner O. Kelley; (e) Sallie Wallace, who married a Mr. Eves; (f) Andrew Wallace, who married Ann Glasgow; and (g) Josiah Wallace, Jr., who married Elizabeth Glasgow.

The said John Wallace, Jr. (born 1785), whose wife was Elizabeth Walker (born 1783), had eight children, as follows: (a) Benjamin F. Wallace, who married Delia Smith; (b) Thomas Bates Wallace, the subject of Sketch 77, who married Lucy Briscoe Gaines, and a portrait of whom is to be seen on the foregoing page; (c) John Walker Wallace, who married Elizabeth Drake; (d) Celia Ann Wallace, who married John James; (e) Maria H. Wallace, who married Thomas R. James; (f) Erasmus D. Wallace, who married Celia Wear; (g) William Cyrus Wallace, the subject of Sketch 76, who married Mary Ewing, and whose portrait will be seen on next page; and (h) Andrew C. Wallace, who is unmarried.

The said Josiah Wallace, Jr. (born 1792), whose wife was Elizabeth Glasgow (born 1797), had eight children, as follows: (a) Rose Ann Wallace, who married J. McNair; (b) John G. Wallace; (c) William A. Wallace, who married Jane Switzler; (d) Mary M. Wallace; (e) Andrew F. Wallace; (f) Newton Wallace; (g) Elizabeth W. Wallace, and (h) Thomas Josiah Wallace, subject of Sketch 78, who married Martha Shannon Cockrell, and whose portrait and a view of whose late home (Ellerslie) at Bunceton, Mo., appear on the foregoing sheet.

The said Judge William Cyrus Wallace and his wife Elizabeth, *nee* Walker, who were married December 12, 1853, had three children, to wit: (a) William Cyrus Wallace, Jr., (b) Lee Ewing Wallace; and (c) Mary Belle Wallace, who on the 28th day of November, 1895, was married to Mr. Arthur Edward Coates, son of the Rev. Arthur Coates, of Newtown House, County Meath, Ireland, and of Clifton, England.

The said Thomas Bates Wallace (born 1813), whose wife was Lucy Briscoe Gaines (born 1825), has had three children, as follows: (a) Nettie Briscoe Wallace, who seems to have been the very capable chronicler of the family, and to whom the author of this volume is indebted for much valuable information in regard to the Wallaces; (b) Thomas Bates Wallace (II) (born 1858), who married Elizabeth Shelby Darnall (born 1870), by whom he has one child, Hugh Campbell Wallace (III); (c) Hugh Campbell Wallace (I), who was born in 1863, married Mildred Fuller (born 1869), by whom he has children, Mildred Fuller, Thomas Bates (III) and Melville Weston Fuller. Mr. Hugh Campbell Wallace (I) was recently elected to the responsible position of president of the Washington and Alaska Steamship Company.

The said Thomas Josiah Wallace (subject of Sketch 78, and born 1837), who married Miss Martha Shannon Cockrell (born 1840), has had six children, as follows: (a) John Chilton Wallace; (b) Edgar Thomas Wallace; (c) Arthur Andrew Wallace, who married Nannie Lincoln; (d) Martha Virginia Wallace; (e) Thomas Josiah Wallace (II), and (f) Wilbur B. Wallace, who was born August 26, 1881.

The before-mentioned William A. Wallace (born 1823 and died 1879), who was an older brother of Thomas J. Wallace, and married Jane Switzler, had five children, as follows: (a) Henry N. Wallace, who was born October 13, 1856, and married Carrie A. Merrill; (b) Mary S. Wallace, who was born March 18, 1856, and died December 28, 1861; (c) Lewis T. Wallace, who was born

ELLERSLIE FARM.
COUNTRY HOME OF THE LATE THOMAS J. WALLACE.
NEAR BUNCETON, MO.
[See Sketch No. 78.]

JUDGE W. C. WALLACE.
1823-1895.
AUBURN, CALIFORNIA.
[See Sketch No. 70.]

THOMAS J. WALLACE,
BORN 1837.
BUNCETON, MO.
[See Sketch No. 78.]

THOMAS B. WALLACE,
BORN 1818.
LEXINGTON, MO
[See Sketch No. 77.]

April 8, 1862; (d) William F. Wallace, who was born June 25, 1864, and (e) Charles L. Wallace, who was born October 2, 1866, and married Edna Johnson.

Judge William Cyrus Wallace, son of John Wallace and Elizabeth Walker, was born the 13th of November, 1823, near Lexington, Mo. He was licensed to practice in all the courts of the State when twenty-five years old. He continued the practice of his profession until the spring of 1849, when he joined the army of pioneers whose hopes were centered upon the gold fields of California. He arrived at Sacramento early in August of the same year. In seeking a new home he was not seeking simply adventure, nor was he carried away by the marvelous accounts of the gold discoveries, but relying upon the practice of his profession. He took with him across the plains his law library, and in a short time was engaged in an active practice at Sacramento. At the first election under the Constitution—the spring of 1850—he was elected District Attorney of Sacramento County. At a subsequent time, he was nominated by the Whig Convention of that county for the office of Public Administrator, and was elected by a majority of over five hundred, though the rest of the ticket was defeated. The office at that time was a very important one, and its duties very laborious on account of the many disputes arising from the Spanish titles and land grants. The following year he was elected City Attorney of Sacramento. In the autumn of 1853, Judge Wallace returned to his old home at Lexington, and the following December married Mary Barron Ewing, of Todd County, Kentucky. Mary Ewing was the daughter of Thompson McGready Ewing, and grand-daughter of the Rev. Finis Ewing, and great-grand-daughter of General William Lee Davidson, of Revolutionary fame.

Judge Wallace continued to reside in Sacramento until 1859, when, on account of sickness in his family, he moved to Napa County, where he remained until the winter of 1863, when he moved to the State of Nevada, engaging in mining enterprises and practising law at Virginia City. While in that State, he twice received the nomination of the Democratic party for Judge of the Supreme Court—in the years 1864 and 1866. He had received a like favor at the hands of that party in California in 1861. He returned to Napa County in 1867. In 1869 he was nominated by the Democratic party, and elected to the position of District Judge of the Seventh Judicial District, at that time embracing the counties of Marin, Sonoma, Mendocino, Lake, Napa and Solano. He was re-elected to the same position in 1875. The adoption of the new Constitution in 1879, by which the judicial system of California was changed, cut short his term as District Judge, but he was immediately put forward by all parties (there being four in the field) and elected without opposition to the position of Superior Judge. At the expiration of his term he was offered the nomination a second time, but declined, claiming that on account of ill-health he could not do his people justice. In 1886 he was obliged to leave Napa, and sought relief from asthma by going to Auburn, California, where he formed a partnership with J. E. Prewett, the present Superior Judge of Placer County. Judge Wallace died at Auburn, California, February 4, 1895, after a long and painful illness. His remains were taken to Napa, his old home, and placed by the side of his beloved wife, who had died May 5, 1882. His family consisted of three children, all of whom survived him: William Cyrus Wallace, the eldest, was born at Napa, January 10, 1869. He received his early education at the place of his birth, and at the age of seventeen entered the State University of California. He commenced the study of law in his father's office, at the age of twenty-one, and at the end of two years passed a brilliant examination before the Supreme Court of California. Out of thirty-two applicants for admission he passed the highest examination. He is now practising his profession at Madera, California.

Lee Ewing Wallace was born at Napa April 6, 1864. He received his education at "Oak Mound," the leading military academy of the State. After graduating he also decided to make

the law his profession, and entered his father's office as a student. At the end of three years he passed a most creditable examination before the Supreme Court of California, and was immediately taken into his father's office as a partner. He is still practising his profession at Auburn.

Mary Belle Wallace was born at Napa and November 28, 1895, was married at Sacramento to Arthur Edward Coates, Esq., of Clifton, England, and Newtown House, County Meath, Ireland.

There are few men who have been more thoroughly tried than Judge Wallace, and who at all times commanded the high confidence and esteem of the people. In private life he was benevolent, social, pure and true, and in official life efficient, honest, faithful and firm.

The first of the Wallaces to leave Virginia was Josiah, son of William Wallace and Hannah Woods. He married Susan Wallace, of Charlottesville, not related to him, but of Scotch descent. Their seven children were born in Albemarle County, but in 1790 the spirit of adventure and the fame of the fertile soil and resources of Kentucky induced him to leave his delightful surroundings and move with his family to Madison County, of that State. He was a man of sound judgment and experience, and they were called into service in his new home, where he took an active part in the formation of the city government of Richmond. But after living nineteen years in Kentucky, he longed for a breath of the still newer West, and moved in 1809 to Missouri territory, near St. Louis, where he died in 1811. He took with him all of his family except his second son, John. The latter married Elizabeth Walker, of Richmond, a descendant of the famous Huguenot refugees from France, Bartholomew Dupuy and the Countess Susanna La Villan. He is said to have been a man of perfect proportions, physically, and of fine intellectual powers. He remained in Kentucky until 1819, when he moved to Lafayette County, near Lexington, Missouri. The richness of the soil of Lafayette County induced John Wallace to buy a large tract of land near Lexington, which, with his great number of negroes to work it, he cultivated into a very profitable farm. But as his sons grew up and were educated, they inclined to more intellectual pursuits, most of them selecting the professions as their life work.

Thomas Bates Wallace was born March 31, 1813. He was only six years old when he came with his father to Missouri. In these early times the schools were not of the best, but with the aid of a tutor and close application to study he received an excellent education, and became a man of more than usual attainments. He studied law, but never practised, preferring a business career instead. Endowed with a fine mind and wonderful memory, he was considered for many years the best historian in the State. He was a man of high principles and strong convictions, and, though a large slaveholder when the Civil War broke out, he felt like Lincoln, that the Union must be maintained at any cost. During the war he held a high official position under the government. Few men after passing the threescore and ten years retain their faculties, both mental and physical, to such an extent. An earnest Christian gentleman, he was a most devoted member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. He was married twice—the first time to Rose Ann Elliott, of Howard County, Missouri, who lived but a few years. The second marriage was to Mrs. Lucy Briscoe Gaines, of Georgetown, Kentucky. He died July 3, 1887.

Lucy Briscoe Wallace was born November 25, 1825, near Georgetown, Kentucky, in one of those grand old country homes for which the "bluegrass region" is noted. She was the youngest child of James M. and Mary Bruner Briscoe and was educated at St. Catherine's Nunnery, Lexington, Kentucky, but was a life-long member of the Christian Church. She was married while quite young to Frank Pendleton Gaines, who lived only a few years, and at the age of twenty-one she was left a widow with one son, Briscoe Gaines, who now lives at St. Joseph, Missouri. In 1854 she was married to Thomas Bates Wallace, with whom she enjoyed a long and happy life in Lexington, Mis-

souri. In 1888, a year after his death, she decided to give up her cherished home there and go to Tacoma, Washington, to gratify her children and to be with them. In the delightful climate of the Pacific coast she became stronger, and in making a home for her sons, from whom she had been separated for several years, she found new joys. She had what, above all, her mother's heart most enjoyed, the love and admiration of her children. After a short illness of only one week she gently fell asleep January 31, 1897.

Thomas Bates Wallace, the second, is a worthy representative of the name and was born November 25, 1858. He was educated in Lexington and studied civil engineering. He followed this as a profession from 1879 to 1882, and during that time had charge of one of the government surveys of the Missouri and Mississippi rivers. The necessarily wandering life of a civil engineer led him to abandon the profession. He then went to Tacoma, Washington, and invested in real estate, and later engaged in the banking business. Subsequently, in 1889, the Fidelity Trust Company was organized with a capital of $500,000 and he became its president, which position he still fills. He was married April 28, 1896, to Elizabeth Shelby Darnall, of Lexington, Kentucky.

Hugh Campbell Wallace was born February 10, 1863. He was educated in Lexington, and being of an exceedingly enterprising nature he left home before he was of age to try his fortune in the West. When only twenty-two he was appointed by President Cleveland Receiver of Public Moneys at Salt Lake City—the youngest man ever appointed to such an office in the United States. In 1888 he resigned that office to go to Tacoma. There he engaged in business pursuits and was most successful. In 1892 he was elected a member of the National Democratic Committee for the State of Washington and took a conspicuous part in the presidential campaign of that year. He is the leader of the Democratic party in his State, and in 1894 he was the nominee of his party for United States Senator. He was married in Washington, D. C., January 5, 1891, to Mildred Fuller, daughter of the Chief Justice of the United States.

Thomas Josiah Wallace, youngest son of Josiah Wallace, Jr., and Elizabeth Glasgow, was born in Pettis County, Missouri, in 1837. He was educated at Chapel Hill College, and his life has been spent in bringing to perfection his great stock farm, comprising about two thousand acres under one fence, near Bunceton, Missouri. This beautiful country home fittingly bears the name of "Ellerslie," for the great ancestral castle in Scotland. The owner has prospered from his youth up, and with his prosperity has grown the esteem of his fellow-men. Honorable, kind, generous, charitable, he is beloved as neighbor, friend and citizen. He was married February 18, 1863, to Martha Shannon Cockrell, of Cooper County.

Edgar Thomas, the eldest living son, was born January 28, 1867, and was educated at the Kemper Military College at Boonville, Missouri, where he graduated. He also attended the Missouri State University for a time. In 1889 he went to Tacoma, Washington, where he has become engaged in real estate and mining interests in the Northwest.

Arthur Andrew was born April 14, 1871, and was also educated at Kemper Military College. He was married February 7, 1894, to Nannie Lincoln, of Kansas City. He makes his home with his father, where he is the manager of Ellerslie Farm.

Thomas Josiah, Jr., born December 12, 1876, is a promising young man, with refined, intellectual tastes and studious habits.

SKETCH 79.

O. T. WALLACE, POINT LEAVELL, KENTUCKY.

(For illustration see page 332)

Hon. Oliver Terrill Wallace, son of Salem Wallace and his wife, Eliza J., *nee* Turpin, was born in Madison County, Kentucky, on Paint Lick Creek, February 28, 1815. He is a lineal descendant of Peter Wallace, Sr., and his wife, Elizabeth Woods, through their son, William Wallace; and

he is a descendant of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and his wife, Mary Campbell, through their daughter Hannah, who became William Wallace's wife. The said Salem Wallace, father of Oliver T., was a son of William Wallace (second) by his wife, Sally Shannon. Said William Wallace (second) was the son of Michael Wallace, by his wife, Ann Allen; and Michael was the son of William Wallace (first), whose wife was Hannah Woods.

Salem Wallace was born in Garrard County, Kentucky, October 17, 1795. His farm was on Paint Lick Creek, where his life was spent. He owned and operated a grist and saw mill on his farm. He married Miss Eliza Jane Turpin. In 1846 he represented Madison County in the Kentucky Legislature. From 1825 to the time of his death, March 24, 1868, he was a ruling elder in the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church. His wife's father was William Turpin, a native of Culpeper County, Virginia. His wife's mother was a Miss Nancy Robertson, also a native of Virginia.

William Wallace (second), who married Sally Shannon, was born in Albemarle County, Virginia, the 12th of October, 1763, and migrated to Kentucky about 1785. He was a soldier of the Revolutionary Army and was with Washington at the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown in 1781. His wife, Sally Shannon, was born in Virginia January 16, 1771, and removed with her husband to Kentucky, and there resided until the year 1830, when she removed with several of her married children to Adams County, Illinois, where she died about the year 1860.

The Hon. Oliver T. Wallace was born, as above noted, in Madison County, Kentucky, February 28, 1845, and was reared on a farm. He enjoyed the advantages of a high school and college education, graduating in the scientific course from Monmouth College, Illinois, in 1866. He then turned his attention for a time to teaching in the public schools of his neighborhood whilst carrying on a small farm. This occupied him about eight years. About this time he began to engage in land surveying and civil engineering, and for the last thirty years has done the greater part of the work of this character that has been done in Garrard County. On the 24th of October, 1870, he was married to Miss Nancy E. Shearer, daughter of William Shearer and Elveree Chenault, by whom he has had six children. He has a productive farm of two hundred and nine acres at Point Leavell, Garrard County, on which he has now resided for many years. Since May, 1871, Mr. Wallace has been a ruling elder of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church. Mr. Wallace has clear and strong convictions in regard to the appalling evils of the liquor traffic, and for the last twenty years he has been a Prohibitionist in the full sense of that term, and has regularly voted with the Prohibition party, having cast his first vote for St. John, the nominee of that party for the Presidency in 1884. He sincerely believes that it is a grievous sin against God and humanity for the government, State or national, to legalize the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors as beverages, and he has given some of the best years of his life to a consistent and courageous fight against such legalization. In the fall of 1899 he was the nominee of his party for the governorship of Kentucky, and he has not given up the fight because of defeat. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Wallace are as follows: (a) William Anderson Wallace; (b) Annie Chenault Wallace; (c) Elveree Shearer Wallace; (d) Jennie Turpin Wallace; (e) Oliver Terrill Wallace, Jr.; and (f) Shannon Phillips Wallace. Mr. Wallace drew the chart of one branch of the Wallace family, to be found in Chapter Second of Part I of this work, for which he deserves the thanks of all concerned.

SKETCH 80.

M. B. WALLACE, ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI.

Mr. M. B. Wallace was among the earlier patrons of this publication, but the author much regrets that he has been unable to procure the necessary *data* for a sketch of Mr. Wallace's family, or even to ascertain with certainty his genealogical lines.

GROUP FOUR.

PATRONS DESCENDED FROM BOTH THE WOODSES AND McAFEES.

SKETCHES 81-93.

As was noted on a previous page, there are thirteen of the original patrons of this publication who trace their lineage back to Michael Woods of Blair Park, and also to James McAfee, Jr., the Kentucky pioneer. All of these persons are either the children, grandchildren or great-grandchildren of James Harvey Woods and Sarah Everett, *nee* Dedman. Inasmuch as a great part of the matter to be presented in treating of this group is of common concern to all of its members, the items of general interest to the group as a whole will be given first, and the separate sketches last. The thirteen persons referred to consist of the author of this volume, three of his own children, one of his brothers, three of his nieces, four of his nephews, and one of his great-nieces.

James Harvey Woods, son of Samuel Woods, Jr., by his wife, Mary, *nee* McAfee, was born at the old Woods homestead on Shawnee Run, Mercer County, Kentucky, September 12, 1792. That homestead was the fourteen hundred acre settlement and pre-exemption which his grandfather, Samuel Woods, Sr., entered in 1782. His father died when he was only ten years old, leaving his estate much involved, and his opportunities for obtaining a good education were probably not of the best. His mother's father, James McAfee, was his guardian, and young Woods must have lived for some time at the old McAfee stone house. He also made his home for a time with his uncle-in-law, Alexander Buchanan. He was probably apprenticed to a cabinet-maker to learn his trade before he was eighteen. We know he followed this trade, in conjunction with that of an undertaker, down to within a few weeks of the day of his death in 1860. In July, 1813, Governor Shelby called for two thousand Kentuckians to enlist and march to Canada to avenge the bloody massacre of the Kentucky wounded prisoners at the River Raisin a few months before, and Harvey Woods, then nearly twenty-one, was one of the twice two thousand sturdy men who gave a prompt response. He joined the company led by Captain John Hall, of Shelby County, which company was one of the six composing the Ninth Kentucky Regiment commanded by Colonel James Simrall. The Ninth Regiment, and the Tenth, commanded by Colonel Philip Barbour, made up the Fifth Brigade, under Brigadier General Samuel Caldwell. This brigade was attached to the Second Division, commanded by Major General Joseph Desha. General William Henry Harrison was in supreme command of all the forces composing the army which invaded Canada, and at the battle of the Thames, October 5, 1813, routed the allied Indian and British army under General Proctor and the great Indian chief, Tecumseh. Colonel Simrall's regiment, to which young Woods belonged, bore a gallant part in that campaign, which was as successful and decisive as it was brief. November 4, at Maysville, Ky., Harvey Woods and his comrades were honorably mustered out of the service they had entered a little more than two months before at Newport.

The "soldier boys" who returned home from Canada in the fall of 1813 were nearly idolized by the Kentucky people, and they must have been the special favorites of the fair sex. Harvey, however, does not seem to have been in a great hurry to marry, for it was nearly five years after his return from the war that he took to himself a wife. The portrait of him to be seen on page 407 was taken from a miniature of him painted

in water colors about the year 1816, when he was twenty-four. He enjoyed the violin in his young days, and played at the country balls for the young folks. On the first of August, 1818, he was married to Miss Sarah Everett Dedman, of Versailles, Kentucky. He was then nearly twenty-six and she was not yet seventeen. The young couple removed at once to Harrodsburg, Mercer County, where they spent the remainder of their lives. The Rev. Dr. Thomas Cleland, long since gone to his reward, was then pastor of the little Presbyterian Church in the town. Harvey Woods and his young wife had not yet united with any church, but it was not a great many years till both were soundly converted and received into Dr. Cleland's church—she in 1822, and he in the year following. About six years later—February 21, 1829—Harvey was made a ruling elder of the church, an office he filled with the utmost fidelity till his death in 1860. The Rev. Dr. John Montgomery, who was his pastor for eighteen years, testified, in a letter to the present writer, to the consistent, exemplary piety of Harvey Woods.

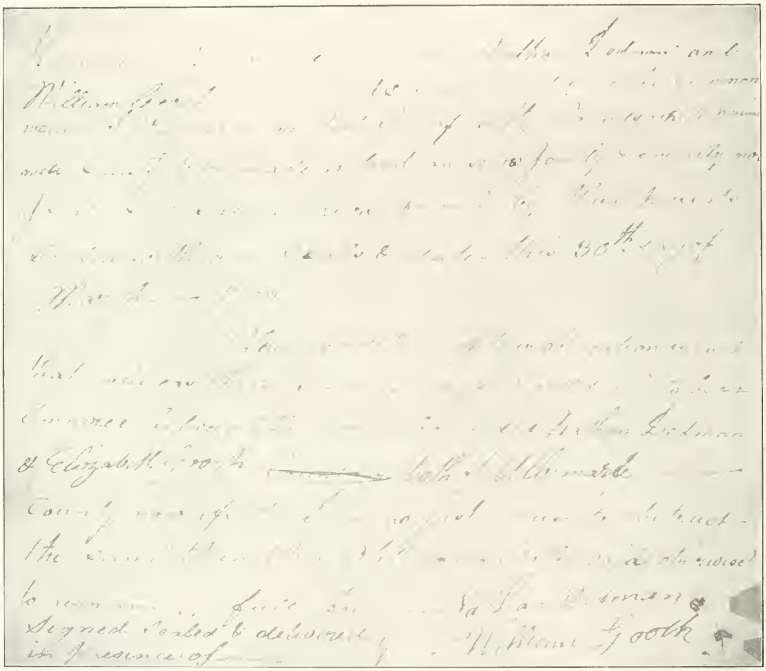
His distinguishing characteristics were humility, solemn dignity of manner, evenness of temper, self-poise, firmness, and his courageous but quiet devotion to what he thought to be his duty. He was never a noisy man; never was known to exhibit ostentation or conceit; was a lover of peace and order, but not afraid to face danger when duty called him to do so. A poor man all his life, and having a large family to support and educate, he toiled hard at his calling, never even stopping to ask what frivolous and haughty people might think or say. He reared six sons and three daughters, who grew to mature age, and every one of them received good educational advantages, and several of them were graduated with credit from the better class of colleges of that period. He did not require any of his six sons to follow the trade he had toiled at all his days, but did what he could to help them on to higher positions in life than he had been able to reach himself. Three of his sons became lawyers, two of them entered the Presbyterian ministry, and another was educated for the sacred office, but was providentially prevented from seeking ordination. In January, 1860, he contracted a cold which resulted in an attack of pneumonia, and he died February 3, 1860. He was conscious to the end, and his death was calm and hopeful—just such as might have been expected of a humble, devoted Christian man. His body and that of his beloved wife sleep in the old historic burial-ground of New Providence Church, in the midst of the dust of many of his McAfee and Woods relations, and within a stone's throw of the spot where once stood the little church building in which he and his wife heard Dr. Cleland preach some of those searching Gospel sermons which brought them to confess Christ as their Saviour more than eighty years ago. Harvey Woods was about five feet, eleven inches high, and rather slender. His hair was brown, with a tendency to curl; his eyes blueish gray, and of a very kindly expression. His nose was somewhat sharp and of Roman type, as is seen in his portrait on a preceding page—a feature very generally preserved among his descendants. His gait in walking was slow, measured and dignified. Few men ever had a kinder heart than he, though he was not particularly demonstrative in his disposition. If he ever had a personal encounter with any one in his life the writer has not heard of it, and when he died he probably did not have an enemy in the world. And it may be truthfully said that there has probably never lived a man in the town in which he spent nearly the whole of his mature life about whose integrity and Christian consistency so few people had a particle of doubt.

Sarah Everett Dedman, who became, in 1818, the wife of James Harvey Woods, was born in Versailles, Kentucky, January 30, 1802. She was a daughter of Nathan Dedman and his wife, Elizabeth, *nee* Gooch. Her father's home was at the northwest corner of Morgan and Water streets—the place which Senator J. S. C. Blackburn owned and occupied for many years. The writer

NORTHERN SIDE OF NEW PROVIDENCE BURIAL GROUND, MERCER COUNTY, KY.

FIRST GRAVE OPENED IN 1803.

[See Sketch No. 90—James Harvey Woods.



DEDMAN-GOOCH.

YE ANCIENT MARRIAGE BOND OF 1786.

[See Sketch No. 90—Sarah E. Dedman.]

obtained a good photograph of the house in 1895, which has been reproduced for this work as an engraving. The fine spring, which constitutes the head of one fork of Glenns Creek, and whose existence no doubt determined the location of the town of Versailles, is just below the Dedman place to the north.

Of Sarah's childhood we know but little, beyond the fact that she was bereft of her father about the end of the year 1813, when she was not quite eleven years old. Her mother did not survive her father but a few years at best. Her brother-in-law, Mann Butler (who in after years wrote a history of Kentucky) became her guardian prior to 1814, and with him she lived a while in Frankfort or Louisville. Another brother-in-law, Mr. Johnson Malone, was occupying her father's old home in 1818, and there she was married to James Harvey Woods August 1, 1818. She at once went with her husband to live in Harrodsburg, and there the remainder of her life was spent.

From what some of her old friends have told the writer Mrs. Woods was beautiful as a young woman, and she was certainly attractive even at fifty years of age. She was about as completely the opposite of her husband as a woman could well be. He was quiet, reserved and solemn; she was vivacious, talkative, outspoken, and full of wit and fun. He was humble, cared not a straw for mere appearances, and had scarcely any worldly ambition; she, on the other hand, was proud, ambitious, sensitive to public opinion, and determined to secure for all her children the highest places she possibly could. He was always calm, self-poised, and slow to anger; she was easily ruffled, excitable, and sometimes irritable. But in some respects they were alike—both were devoted Christians, tender-hearted towards the poor and suffering, and completely in love with each other. Poor, themselves, their hearts went out to others in need, and to minister to the sick and sorrowing was their delight. That she was the stronger character of the two, and was mainly responsible for the good educational advantages all their children enjoyed, and did most to stimulate them to high endeavor, does not admit of much doubt.

When her husband died in February, 1860, Mrs. Woods was herself in bed, laid up with a badly sprained ankle; and after his death she never was well another day. Life seemed to have lost its charm for her when called to walk without her husband's firm arm to lean upon. The death of Mr. Woods caused considerable changes in the home, besides his own departure. The home in which she had so long been a happy wife and mother was henceforth lonely and full of sad reminders of a past which could never return. Her indisposition gradually increased as the year wore on, and by the latter part of August it became apparent to her friends that she was destined very soon to follow her husband to the other world. Her disease was called "congestive fever" by her daughter, Mary, who wrote her obituary, but a loved neighbor, who was present with her at the end, told the writer that it was "congestion of the brain." Her death occurred August 24, 1860. She was wholly unconscious for some time before the end came, and gave no parting message to her loved ones. But for those who knew and loved her, no rapturous death-bed experiences were needed to assure them of her preparation for her change. That she died in the faith of Jesus Christ, and passed into glory whither her husband had preceded her, is one of the things about which her children and near friends had not a shadow of doubt.

THE DEDMANS AND GOOCHES.

Mrs. Woods's father was a Dedman, and her mother was a Miss Gooch, and a brief account of the families of her parents will now be given.

The records of Louisa County, and especially those of Albemarle County, Virginia, furnish a good deal of information in regard to the families now to be treated of, but only the briefest reference to most of those records can here be made. In

1749 Samuel Dedman, the father of Nathan Dedman, bought a farm in Louisa County, but we have no means of knowing where he had hitherto resided. In March, 1769, Samuel and his wife Mary sold that farm and moved over into Albemarle into what is known as Ragged Mountain, four miles southeast of Charlottesville. There they lived and reared a large family. There Samuel died in the year 1800, but his wife survived him till 1819. The writer has visited their old home and seen where they were buried near the family residence. Samuel was evidently a prosperous man, if we may judge from the numerous purchases and sales of lands he made, and which the county records show to this day. His will, dated January 2, 1800, when he was probably nearly eighty years old, mentions lands, negroes, ready money, tobacco, etc., to be disposed of, and the inference is that he died possessed of a considerable estate. We have good reason to believe that he was a Christian, and that he was connected with the Baptist Church. He seems to have carried on a small distillery on his farm, and found use for a fine punch-bowl, mentioned in his will. In that day there were even ministers of the Gospel, not a few, who deemed it proper to brace their nerves occasionally with a toddy, and accordingly kept well-filled decanters on their sideboards for all emergencies, great and small.

The following children were mentioned by name in Samuel Dedman's will, January 2, 1800, to wit: (a) John; (b) Samuel, [Jr.]; (c) Richmond; (d) Bartelott; (e) Nathan; (f) Dixon; (g) Sarah; (h) Mary; (i) Susannah, and (j) Ann. Of some of these children we know almost nothing.

(a) Of the first child, John, we can affirm nothing with entire certainty; but we know that in that same year (1800) a man of this name was a citizen of the adjoining county of Orange, and that John Everett, a son-in-law of Samuel, sold him some land, which land this John conveyed to one William Dedman, of Orange.

(b) In 1796, four years prior to the death of Samuel, husband of Mary, we find a Samuel Dedman executing a deed for land in the Ragged Mountain; and as no woman signed the deed as wife of the grantor, and the wife of Samuel the elder was living, we infer this grantor was Samuel, Jr., son of the testator of 1800. In 1808 there was a Samuel Dedman residing in Fleming County, Kentucky; and as we know Samuel, the testator of 1800, had a married daughter—Ann, who married a Mr. Clack, and was living in that county in 1819—we infer that Samuel, Jr., son of the testator of that name, was this man, Mrs. Clack being his sister.

(c) Richmond Dedman was living in Montgomery County, Virginia, in 1819, and that year joined his brothers-in-law, Sims, Everett, and Clack, and his brother Bartelott in a conveyance of some land to his brother Dixon, of Albemarle County, Virginia.

(d) Bartelott Dedman, Samuel's fourth child, was alive in 1819, and that year joined in the deed just referred to in the notice of his brother Richmond, but his place of residence is not given in the deed. His wife was named Betsy, and is so given in a mortgage he gave to one Nickolas in 1797. He probably never migrated from Albemarle. His name is, in some of the records, spelt Bartlett, and sometimes Bartelott.

(e) Nathan Dedman, who was the father of Mrs. James Harvey Woods, was probably born in Louisa County, Virginia, about 1760-1765. In March, 1786, he was married to Elizabeth Gooch, daughter of William and Lucy Gooch (see fac-simile of his marriage-bond). In 1794 he migrated to Versailles, Kentucky, where the remainder of his life was spent. His full name was no doubt Nathaniel, and for him his daughter Sarah, wife of James Harvey Woods, named one of her sons—Nathaniel Dedman Woods. The proper spelling of the Dedman name, as we find it in many original documents and most court records, is as here given, but now and then we find copyists spelling it "Deadman," by mistake. Nathan, whilst never a man of wealth, was undoubtedly a man of some

FORMER HOME OF NATHAN DEDMAN, VERSAILLES, KY., FROM 1796 TO 1813

The frame ell was probably erected by Nathan Dedman about 1796.

estate, and lived well. There was, undoubtedly, a streak of family pride and aristocracy in both his family and that of his wife. When Nathan brought his wife and several small children to Kentucky it was still, for the most part, a wilderness, and all of it in quite a primitive condition. Beyond all reasonable doubt they came on packhorses by Cumberland Gap. Versailles had but recently been laid out, and probably numbered only about twenty families at most. There were only one hundred and seventy-two people residing there in 1800—six years after his arrival. In February, 1795, Nathan purchased a town-lot (No. 42) at the corner of Morgan and Water streets, and lots 113 and 115 on Morgan street, near Locust. On the first named lot he erected a frame dwelling house. In after years a brick addition was erected, and the frame portion of earlier date was set behind it as an ell to the new part. It was the first brick house ever built in Versailles, as the author was informed in 1895 by Judge Graves, one of the oldest citizens of the town. Whether Nathan Dedman had the brick addition built or not can not be affirmed by the writer, but the Judge Graves just mentioned seemed to think such was the case. An excellent picture of the house as it appeared in 1895 will be found herein. Here most of the children of Nathan and Elizabeth were born. Here Nathan died about the close of the year 1813. His wife survived him only a few years. The old homestead was sold, finally, by his administrator and the numerous heirs about 1820, and the writer has the original deed, signed by all the parties in interest. A complete list of his eleven children and a brief notice of each will be given on subsequent pages.

(f) The sixth child of Samuel mentioned in his will of 1800 was Dixon, who was one of his father's executors. He seems never to have moved from Albemarle. He was twice married, but seems never to have had any children. His first wife was Sarah Buster, whom he married in 1785. In 1823 he married a widow, Mrs. Sarah Drumheller, who had a family of children by her first husband. This marriage was an unhappy one, and a separation was the result. In 1848 Dixon Dedman died. He seems always to have spelt his name "Dixon," but his brother Nathan named one of his sons for him, who preferred the spelling "Dickson." The writer met an old gentleman in Charlottesville in 1875 who had known Dixon for nearly forty years, and he described him as a gentleman of the most courtly manners and fastidious taste.

(g) The seventh child of Samuel and Mary Dedman was Sarah. Some time prior to 1781 she was married to a John Everett. It may be that for her Nathan named his daughter Sarah Everett Dedman, the present writer's mother. But it is perhaps more likely that Nathan's daughter was named in honor of a certain "Sally Everett" who married one Elijah Dedman in Albemarle County, Virginia, January 19, 1802, just about eleven days before Nathan's daughter was born. Who these people were we do not know, but they were doubtless near and dear friends, if not kinspeople, of the Dedmans. John Everett and Sarah were citizens of Albemarle as late as 1800, but by 1819 they were living in what is now Cabell County, Virginia. Later on the children of this pair moved on down into Kentucky, and some of their descendants now reside at Catlettsburg, Mount Sterling, and Spring Station, Kentucky. Mrs. Laban Moore of the first named place, and Mrs. James Blackburn of the last, have kindly favored the author with some information in regard to the Everetts. John and Sarah had seven children, as follows: 1, John Everett, Jr.; 2, Richmond Everett; 3, Nathan Everett; 4, Samuel Dedman Everett; 5, Peter Everett, and (6 and 7) two daughters whose names we could not learn. John Everett, Jr., married Sallie Woodson, of Albemarle County, Virginia, and one of his daughters was Sarah Everett who married Hon. Laban Moore, and in 1895 was a widow of advanced age and residing at Catlettsburg, Kentucky. Mrs. James Blackburn, who in 1895 was living at Spring Station, Kentucky, was

a daughter of Samuel Dedman Everett, one of the sons of John and Sarah above noted.

(h) The eighth child of Samuel and Mary Dedman was Mary, who in 1783 was married to John Simms. In 1819 she and her husband were living in Montgomery County, Virginia.

(j) Susannah was the ninth child. In 1784 she was married to William Sandridge.

(k) Ann Dedman, the tenth child, was married to Moses Clack (or Clock) in 1792. She was sometimes called Nancy. In 1819 she and her husband were residing in Fleming County, Kentucky.

The mother of Mrs. James Harvey Woods, as before noted, was Elizabeth Gooch, the daughter of William and Lucy Gooch, of Albemarle County, Virginia. We have to depend almost exclusively on the Albemarle court records for information in regard to this family. The first item is a deed of 1764 by which William Gooch acquired a farm on Hardware River, and as the word "Junior" is appended to his name we infer that his father was also named William, and was then alive. Whether this family was related to Sir William Gooch who was the Colonial Governor of Virginia while this William Gooch was a young man we do not know.

William Gooch made his will in March, 1796, and was dead before the end of August, following. There is not a word in his will which would lead one to infer he was a devout man, and no reference to the life beyond. It is a very cold, business-like document, devoid of all sentiment. Whilst we know he had a large family of children, of sons and daughters, he does not mention any of his daughters, and only some of his sons. A deed executed by his widow six years after his death makes mention of at least four of his children to whom no reference occurs in his will, and one of the four was his own namesake, William, Jr. Here we have an example of the kind of will which was made by Michael Woods of Blair Park in 1761, in which five of his children are not alluded to, one of them being his namesake, Michael, Jr. This mode of making a will is fully discussed in Chapter III of Part One of this work.

William Gooch and Lucy, his wife, left at least nine children, as follows: (a) Jesse Gooch; (b) Nicholas L. Gooch; (c) Thomas W. Gooch; (d) Phillip Gooch; (e) Matthew Moore Gooch; (f) Dabney C. Gooch; (g) William Gooch, Jr.; (h) Elizabeth Gooch, and (j) Martha Gooch. When the executors of William Gooch came to qualify before the court, they were required to give bond in the sum of $10,000, which would indicate that the estate was one of considerable value.

(a) Of Jesse, the first named of the children of William and Lucy, we know very little. When Nathan Dedman died in Kentucky, in 1812, one of his assets was a bond Jesse Gooch had executed to him for the sum of $500. Perhaps Jesse had purchased his sister Elizabeth's interest in her father's estate, and this bond was part of the price still unpaid.

(b) The second child to be mentioned in this list was Nicholas L., though he was probably one of the younger of the children of William and Lucy. In 1796, when his father made his will, he was not yet through school. He was of full age by 1805, as he joins his brothers and sisters in a deed to one John Nicholas.

(c) Thomas W. Gooch, another of the sons of William and Lucy, is called simply "Tommy" in his father's will, but various records give his full name as above. His wife was named Nancy. He made his will in 1838, and in it he mentions seven children by name, and he refers to the late Dr. Wm. F. Gooch, of Ivy Depot, as "my nephew." Dr. Wm. F. Gooch married the daughter of Dabney C. Gooch, a niece of Thomas W., and his first cousin. The Doctor had a brother, Claiborne Gooch, who died in Richmond, Virginia, prior to the Civil War. William F. and Claiborne were probably sons of one of the brothers of Thomas W., and grandson of William and Lucy.

(d) Another of the sons of William and Lucy Gooch was Phillip. He was witness to deeds in 1775 and 1778, and in 1805 joined with other heirs of his late father in a deed to John Nicholas.

(e) Matthew Moore Gooch was made one of his father's executors in the will of 1796, at which date he was a practising lawyer in Charlottesville. He probably migrated to Lexington, Kentucky, very soon after his father's death, for in September, 1798, he attested at that place a power-of-attorney which his brother William gave to Nicholas L. Gooch. In July, 1807, he executed a power of attorney, himself, to his brother Dabney C., and was then a citizen of Lexington, Kentucky. No doubt if he had a family he was the ancestor of some of the Kentucky Gooches of this day.

(f) Dabney C. Gooch, another of the sons of William and Lucy, was not mentioned in his father's will, but in 1805 he joined other heirs of William in a deed already often referred to. The lady he married was named Elizabeth.

(g) William Gooch, Jr., was another of the children whom his father failed to refer to in his will, but he was his son and namesake, nevertheless, for Will Book No. 1 (page 64, of the Albemarle records, shows that he was paid a legacy from the estate of William Gooch, his father. In 1798 he, like his brother Matthew, was a citizen of Lexington, Kentucky. The deed of 1805, already repeatedly referred to, shows him not only as a son of William and Lucy, but as a married man whose wife was named Susan.

(h) Elizabeth Gooch, who, in 1786, became the wife of Nathan Dedman, is not mentioned in the will of William, but she was almost certainly his daughter, nevertheless. She had been living in Kentucky a couple of years when her father wrote his will. When Nathan Dedman executed his marriage bond, in March, 1786 (a fac-simile of which appears in this volume), her father, William Gooch, signed it as the young man's surety. One of the assets left by Nathan Dedman in 1812 was a bond (already referred to), for $500, executed by Jesse Gooch, son of William, and brother of Elizabeth. Possibly Jesse had bought his sister Elizabeth's interest in her father's estate, and had given the said bond in part payment of the same. When their father died he was probably living in Albemarle, and she was a citizen of Versailles, Kentucky. The only circumstance known to the writer which could cast any doubt upon the supposition that Elizabeth was William's daughter is the fact that she is not known by him to have signed any documents in the settlement of William's estate, which could prove that she was one of his heirs. But this fact might be explained by her having sold her interest to her brother, and some record of this may now be found in the Albemarle County books.

(j) Martha Gooch, another daughter of William and Lucy was married to William Thurmond "December ye 4th, 1787." The written request for a license addressed to the county clerk for this marriage was signed by her father, William Gooch, and by her brother-in-law Nathan Dedman. The present writer has inspected the original document, and the signatures are both those of men who wrote well. She and her husband signed the famous deed of 1805 by which seven of William's children conveyed to one Nicholas their interest in their father's estate.

Having given some account of the Dedman and Gooch families in Virginia, we will now return to Nathan Dedman, of Versailles, Kentucky, and consider the large family of children which he and his wife Elizabeth reared. They had eleven children to wit: (a) JOHN DEDMAN, who was born in Virginia, March 22, 1787, and died in early infancy.

(b) MARTHA DEDMAN, the second child, was born in Virginia June 15, 1788. She was generally called "Patsy." August 10, 1805, she was married to Mann Butler, who wrote a history of Kentucky, and who was then a lawyer and living at Lexington. The father of Mann Butler was a native of England who came to Baltimore in 1783. His mother was also English, her name being Mary Mann. Their son, Mann (Edward Mann was his full Christian name, but in course of time he dropped the "Edward," and wrote it simply Mann Butler), was born in Baltimore, Maryland, July 22, 1784. His father died there in 1787, and his mother re-

turned to England with her infant son. For years Mann attended school at Chelsea, England; but his mother having married a Captain Lee, of Baltimore, in 1798, he accompanied his stepfather and mother back to America. He took the literary course at Georgetown College, D. C., and he also graduated from thence in both law and medicine. He began to practise law in Lexington, Kentucky, in 1806, but that profession was distasteful to him because he was nothing of an orator. He soon turned his attention to teaching, and afterwards to editing a newspaper. He moved rather frequently, and made several changes in his vocation. In 1824 he went back to Lexington, after a residence of many years in Louisville and Frankfort, to accept the chair of Mathematics and Languages in Transylvania University. By 1827 he was back in Louisville, and began to prepare his History of Kentucky. He published the first edition in 1834, and the second in 1836. In 1841 he moved to St. Louis, Missouri, and was afterwards elected to an important city office, which he was holding when, in 1855, he and a large number of prominent men of St. Louis perished in the awful disaster at the Gasconade River as the train bearing an excursion was on its way to Jefferson City to celebrate the opening of the first division of the Pacific Railway, just completed. Mrs. Butler only lived about one year after his sudden and shocking death. Mr. and Mrs. Butler had thirteen children born to them, all but one or two of them now being dead. President Roosevelt, in his Winning of the West, compares the several prominent historians of Kentucky and pronounces Butler the most impartial of them all.

(c) Mary Dedman was the third child of Nathan and Elizabeth, and was born in Virginia February 26, 1790. Like most women having that Christian name in that early day, she was familiarly called "Polly." In 1808 she was married to Johnson Malone. She and her husband and family occupied the old Dedman homestead in Versailles for some years after both of Mrs. Malone's parents had died, and they were living there in 1818 when Sarah E. Dedman was married to James Harvey Woods. Mrs. Malone died before 1820, and he died in 1855. They had four children.

(d) Lucy (or Lucinda) Dedman, the fourth child, was born in Virginia February 26, 1792. She was probably named for Lucy Gooch, her mother's mother. In 1811 she was married to Thomas Hardesty, of Danville, Kentucky. They lived in Danville and Lawrenceburg, Kentucky; Peoria, Illinois; and Cape Girardeau, Missouri, at which latter place Mrs. Hardesty died in 1855. This couple had twelve children, one of whom, a daughter named Amanda, married a Mr. Braden.

(e) Anderson Dedman, was born in Virginia June 23, 1793, and when but a boy of ten years was accidentally killed by falling from a tree.

(f) Dickson Gooch Dedman was the sixth child of Nathan and Elizabeth, and was born in Versailles March 17, 1795. He was a young man of most lovable and attractive character, and was generally beloved. He enjoyed good school advantages as a boy, and studied medicine, taking the regular course in the Medical Department of Transylvania University, Lexington, graduating from thence about 1816. On the 26th of July, 1818, he was married to a lady of a fine old Virginia family—Miss Elizabeth Brown Wallace, a daughter of Captain William B. Wallace, of Falmouth, Virginia. Reference to this branch of Wallaces and the probable close connection of it with the one treated of in Part I, Chapter Second, of this volume will be found in that part of this work. Dr. Dedman probably began his career as a physician in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, about 1817, and there he spent the remainder of his life. He was elected a ruling elder of the Lawrenceburg Presbyterian Church August 13, 1828, and this office he filled with credit till his death. His home was the glad abode of nearly all the visiting ministers of this church. In 1827 he became one of the charter members of the Anderson Lodge, No. 90, Free and Accepted Masons, of which body he was the first Senior Warden, and several times the Master. He had a pleasant old homestead in Law-

FORMER HOME OF DR. DICKSON GOOCH DEDMAN, LAWRENCEBURG, KY., WHERE HE DIED IN 1850.

renceburg, a picture of which will be found herein.

Dr. Dedman was twice married. His first wife, already mentioned, died October 16, 1843, leaving several children, four of whom lived to mature years. 1. One of the four was William Dedman, who was born September 18, 1824, and died in 1881. He was, like his father, a physician. He, also, was married twice. His first wife was Fannie McBrayer, and his second a Miss Easly. William Dedman left four sons and a daughter. 2. A second of the children of Dr. Dickson Dedman by his first wife was Henry Dedman, born January 21, 1828. He became a lawyer and practised law in St. Louis. He married his first cousin, Mary Malvina Butler, daughter of Mann Butler and his Aunt Patsy Dedman. He died in 1868, leaving a widow and two daughters. One of his daughters was named Martha Alleine, who was called "Birdie." She still lives in St. Louis. 3. The third child of Dr. Dickson Dedman by his first wife was named Anna Daviess Dedman, who was born July 15, 1829. Left motherless when not fourteen years of age, her father idolized her, and did all he could to make up for the loss she had sustained in the death of her mother. She was an uncommonly beautiful and attractive young lady. April 17, 1851, she was married to a Doctor William Twyman, who died in 1853. She remained a widow until June 4, 1861, when she was married to Rev. J. B. Harbison, a worthy minister of the Presbyterian Church, then living in Shelbyville, Kentucky. Soon after their marriage Mr. and Mrs. Harbison moved to Pleasant Hill, Missouri. There Mr. Harbison died in September, 1872, leaving one son and one daughter. Their son, Albert Harbison, was born in 1863, and is now in business in Kansas City. Their daughter, Miss Agnes, is living with her widowed mother in Pleasant Hill, Missouri. 4. The fourth and last of the children left by Dr. Dickson G. Dedman was a son, James Gustavus, who was born January 4, 1831. He was universally known as "Gus Dedman." He was a most refined and courteous gentleman. He married a noted beauty of Lawrenceburg, a Miss Josephine Hickman. At the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861 Gus enlisted in the Confederate service, and was made Captain of a company of Anderson County men. His company was attached to that splendid body of soldiers, the Second Kentucky Infantry, commanded by Col. Roger Hanson. He served with his regiment faithfully until the Battle of Chickamauga, when he was killed on the field. His remains, after reposing for many years where they were interred by his comrades in arms, were taken up and removed to the beautiful cemetery of his native town, where they now rest. He left but one son, William Dedman, who lives in the West. His widow married a Mr. Walker, and is still living.

Dr. Dickson G. Dedman, after remaining a widower for about six years, was married to a widow, Mrs. Mary Sea, *nee* McBrayer, who had two sons by her former husband, to wit: Andrew, and Robert. The only child born to Dr. Dedman and his last wife was a son, Charles M. Dedman, who has been one of the original promoters of this publication, and who now resides at Harrodsburg, Kentucky. Some account of himself and his mother's family will be found in Sketch No. 6 of this volume. On the 15th of April, 1870, Dr. Dedman departed this life, and was buried in the old Wallace burial-ground in the edge of Lawrenceburg.

(g) The seventh child of Nathan Dedman and his wife Elizabeth was SUSANNAH DEDMAN, who was born July 15, 1797. She married William Grimsley, and with him lived at Lebanon, Kentucky, St. Louis, Missouri, and Alton, Illinois. She left one daughter named Eleanora, who married Caleb Stone; and another named Eliza Beverley, who married Horatio McClintock.

(h) The eighth child of Nathan and Elizabeth was called ELOISA, and ELIZA, and ELIZABETH by different persons and at different times. She was born March 18, 1799, and died at Mann Butler's home in Frankfort in 1821.

(i) SARAH EVERETT DEDMAN, the ninth child, was born January 30, 1802, an account of whom will be found on a preceding page.

(k) Bartelett Samuel Dedman was born June 8, 1803, and died a few weeks later. The family Bible of his parents presents a confused record of this child's name, and the writer is not sure he has given the same correctly.

(l) Julia Anderson Dedman, the eleventh and last child of Nathan and Elizabeth, was born January 6, 1805 (possibly 1806). On the 24th of March, 1824, she was married to a Mr. William Tanner. She and her sister Sarah were deeply attached to each other. Mrs. Tanner had but two children, and died two months after the second one was born, April 26, 1829. Her first child, William Attiens, was born in 1825, and died in 1848. The second, Julia Butler, born February 23, 1829, married a Mr. McChesney, of Frankfort, who died in St. Louis in 1852. Mr. Tanner, after the death of his first wife, married a second, by whom he had a daughter, Isadore, and a son, John. During the Civil War Mr. Tanner was at the head of the telegraph system of the Confederacy, and lived in Mobile, Alabama.

THE CHILDREN OF JAMES HARVEY WOODS BY HIS WIFE SARAH EVERETT, *nee* DEDMAN.

(a) Samuel Dickson Woods.
(b) Elizabeth Hannah Woods.
(c) William Harvey Woods.
(d) Thomas Cleland Woods.
(e) Nathaniel Dedman Woods.
(f) Mary McAfee Woods.
(g) Butler Woods.
(h) Alice Butler Woods.
(j) Charles Walker Woods.
(k) Edward Payson Woods.
(l) Fannie Everett Woods.
(m) Neander Montgomery Woods.

(a) Samuel Dickson, the first child, was born May 19, 1819, at which time his aged great-grandfather, Samuel Woods, Sr., was living with Harvey and Sarah in Harrodsburg, and for him, doubtless, the baby got part of his Christian name. The name "Dickson" was given, we feel sure, in honor of his mother's brother, Dr. Dickson Dedman, of Lawrenceburg. This first-born child of Harvey and Sarah died in June, 1826, when only a little past seven years of age, the same year in which passed away the old Revolutionary veteran whose first name he bore.

(b) Elizabeth Hannah, the second child, who has two daughters and a granddaughter among the original patrons of this work, will be considered in Sketches 81, 82 and 83, to which the reader is referred.

(c) William Harvey, the third child, is represented among the original patrons of this work in Sketch 84, to which the reader is referred.

(d) Thomas Cleland, the fourth child, has two sons, who are among the original patrons of this work, and in their sketches (87 and 88) an account of him will be found.

(e) Nathaniel Dedman, the fifth child, was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, May 20, 1829. In 1844, when a boy of fifteen, he confessed Christ and united with the Presbyterian Church. He received his scholastic training at Bacon College, Harrodsburg, and concluded his course there in 1849. For a while he was a clerk in the drug and book store of Mr. James A. Curry, in his native town. In 1851 or 1852 he entered the Law School of Transylvania University, Lexington, Kentucky, from which institution he was graduated with distinction in 1854. In December, 1854, he was married to Miss Susan Doneghy, of Danville, Kentucky, daughter of James and Lucy T. Doneghy. Miss Doneghy was a lady of culture, and her family was prominent and wealthy. After practising law for a few years Nathaniel moved to Missouri with his brother-in-law, Mr. James M. Jones, purchased a farm, and abandoned the legal profession. This move was probably prompted by the fact that his wife had inherited from her father a large number of slaves. Then there was just at that time in progress a very extensive migration of Kentuckians to the splendid virgin prairies of Missouri. His new home was in Saline County, within sight of the Pettus County line, and near the Longwood neighborhood. Here Nathaniel prospered until,

during the Civil War, his slaves were set free by the Federal Government, and the whole system of domestic and farm labor was radically altered and demoralized. After several years of unsuccessful effort to cope with the new conditions thus created he sold out his farm, and in the fall of 1868 settled at Fort Smith, Arkansas, where he hoped to resume his former profession—that of the law—but finding this undertaking one full of difficulties after eleven years of farming experience, he embraced an opportunity of engaging in the drug business at the town of Salem, Sebastian County, Arkansas, where for many years he resided. Later on, he followed his sons into the Indian Territory, and finally settled at Webber's Falls. There his wife died May 7, 1897, and he followed her November 17, of that year, being sixty-eight and a half years old. Nathaniel and Susan had three children, as follows: 1, Grace Southern, born November 28, 1855, and died August 16, 1891, unmarried; 2, Nathaniel Dedman, Jr., of whom we shall speak presently; and 3, Eugene Templeton, born January 20, 1869, and died August 16, 1894. The second child, Nathaniel D., was born October 11, 1857, in Missouri. In July, 1893, he was married to Miss Irene Ora Gaar, of Newton County, Mississippi, by whom he has had two children, to wit: *Sue*, born July 2, 1897; and *Leo Bennett*, born August 12, 1899, and died February 1, 1901. Nathaniel, Jr., studied medicine at the Medical College of Louisville, Kentucky, and has practised his profession at Webbers Falls, Indian Territory, where he now resides, and where he holds the position of United States Postmaster. Nathaniel D. Woods, Senior, was one of the most popular young men ever reared in Harrodsburg, and was a favorite in all the circles in which he moved. He was a Presbyterian all his life, and died in the faith of Jesus Christ. His was, in a very marked degree, a life of sorrow and peculiar trials; but he bore up bravely, held fast to his religion, and set a worthy example of fortitude and Christian consistency for all who knew of his career. A more devoted and happily mated couple than he and his wife the writer has never known.

(f) Mary McAfee, the sixth child, had a daughter (now deceased), who was one of the original patrons of this work, and in her sketch (No. 89) an account of both the mother and her daughter will be found.

(g) Butler, the seventh child, was born May 22, 1834, and lived but two months. Mann Butler, the Kentucky historian, who was the uncle-in-law of this little baby boy, was just issuing the first edition of his history, and the name Butler was undoubtedly bestowed by his parents in honor of Mr. Butler.

(h) Alice Butler was the eighth child, born September 5, 1835. In her name, also, it was no doubt hoped by her parents to honor Mann Butler, but her life was even briefer than that of the baby brother who preceded her—she lived but two weeks.

(j) Charles Walker, the ninth child, was born June 2, 1837. He was named for a Mr. Walker, of Harrodsburg, a warm friend of his father. He received a good classical education at Bacon College—then in its last days—and at a classical seminary conducted by a Professor Hatch. After leaving school he engaged in teaching for a number of years. He taught a school in his native county, in the Salt River Settlement, one in Green County, Kentucky, and one in Missouri, near the home of his brother, Nathaniel D. Woods. While teaching he read law, having the legal profession in view. When his father died, early in 1860, he returned to Harrodsburg to be with his now widowed mother, and at once opened a law-office. The death of his mother in August of that year, and the removal of his younger sister (Fannie) to the home of her brother, Rev. William H. Woods, at Greensburg, Kentucky, broke up the home entirely, his two younger brothers (Edward and Neander) having previously gone from their native town to reside.

Charles was naturally of poetic temperament and decided literary tastes; and within certain lim-

its he was a young man of extensive culture. He wrote a good many little poems for various newspapers, and spent much time in reading standard authors. He confessed Christ and united with the Presbyterian Church in 1854, when about seventeen; but, after he grew up and left home, he became careless in regard to his religious vows, and the last few years of his life were marked by much inconsistency, though there is good reason for saying that he never entirely gave up his faith, or utterly lost his hold on the godly teachings of his parents; and when the end of life drew near he gave good assurance to the loved ones about him that he was a penitent believer.

When the Civil War opened in the spring of 1861, it found him with all his sympathies on the side of the South. He was just twenty-four, and a young man of vigorous, athletic frame, and possessed of the very qualities of mind and body requisite to an efficient soldier. He closed up his law-office at Harrodsburg in July, 1861, and proceeded to Northwestern Arkansas to join the command of Sterling Price and Ben McCulloch. He enlisted as a private in the Second Arkansas Mounted Riflemen, Col. James McIntosh commanding. He took an active part in the Battle of Wilson's Creek (Oak Hill) August 10, 1861, in which General Lyon (Federal) was killed and the army he and Siegel commanded was routed. From the tenth of October, 1861, up to the very day before he received his fatal wound at Stones River, at the close of 1862, he kept a diary in which the principal events of his life were recorded. That little diary is now in the possession of the author of this volume, and it contains a pretty full history of his regiment for the period mentioned. The spelling and punctuation to be found in this diary are almost faultless; and the classical allusions and quotations reveal a degree of culture rarely seen in one of his age, due allowance being made for the fact that he wrote in camp, far removed from books and the various literary helps so essential to accuracy in composition. In this diary we see clearly revealed his fondness for natural scenery, and close observation of its varied forms and phases; his decided admiration for the fair sex, and delight in the company of ladies; his keen sense of humor, and his readiness to discern the amusing and ridiculous situations of life; and, finally, the enthusiasm and dauntlessness with which he faced the real perils of war. He was in the battle of Pea Ridge, Arkansas, so disastrous to the Confederates, where both McCulloch and McIntosh were killed; and these losses deeply distressed Charlie, as his diary shows. In the spring of 1862 his command was transferred to the east of the Mississippi, with Van Dorn's command. About that time he was made adjutant of his regiment, a position he held with credit till shot down at Stones River. He was in the Kentucky campaign of July-October, 1862, under Kirby Smith. He was in the Battle of Richmond, Kentucky, August 30, 1862, and marched to near Covington, but his command was not at Perryville (October 8). Towards the close of December, 1862, he gives, in his diary, detailed accounts of the preliminary movements which led up to the great conflict near Murfreesboro, Tennessee (Stones River). In that battle Lieutenant-Colonel J. A. Williamson commanded the Second Arkansas Regiment (of which Charlie was Adjutant), and it was part of the brigade commanded by Brigadier-General Evander McNair. The Brigades of McNair, Ector and Raines made up the Division of Major-General J. P. McCown. This Division reported for duty 4,414 men Wednesday morning, December 31, and lost, in killed and wounded, 962 men—about twenty-two per cent of the whole. Opposed to this Division was that of Major-General McCook (Federal), which was attacked as soon as it was light enough to see well, on Wednesday morning, December 31. It was in this first attack of Wednesday, the thirty-first, that Charlie fell. McNair's Brigade was in line of battle all day Tuesday, and also all of Tuesday night. The two armies were now within a few hundred yards of each other, and the fearful carnage was about to begin. McNair and Ector were destined to

open the battle early next morning by charging the six-gun battery which McCook was to locate among the cedars on the Overall Farm. The last lines Charlie ever pencilled in his little diary were written early Tuesday morning, when the men were fully expecting to go into battle that day, though the battle did not really begin till next morning. These were his last written words: "December 30th. On the lines to the front and left of Murf.—Last night we lay in line of battle, taking a scattering rain. This morning the clouds are breaking, and the sun shines at intervals. No firing as yet. To-day the Feds will either get into a general engagement or will have to retire. We feel ready for them, and if they take their supper in Murf. many a Rebel will lie on these corn and cotton fields wrapt in his last sleep."

In 1899 a map of this bloody field was published by the "Stones River Battlefield and National Park Association," which indicates pretty clearly the position of all the various commands of both the opposing armies for December 30 and 31. With this map in hand the present writer carefully inspected the more important localities of the area traversed by the two contending armies. The place where Charlie fell can be located with reasonable certainty within one or two hundred yards. Tuesday McNair's Brigade lay in line of battle at a point one thousand feet to the west of Stones River, and about three hundred feet to the south of the Murfreesboro and Franklin pike. Early Wednesday morning—as soon as it was light enough to see distinctly objects at a little distance—McNair's Brigade, under orders, moved a few hundred feet to the westward. This move brought McNair close up to Ector's Brigade, and also not far from Raines's Brigade. General McCook had a battery of six guns posted in the cedars a few hundred yards further west on the Overall Farm. Now came the order to McNair and Ector to charge that battery, which they did most gallantly on the double-quick. McCook's infantry were at hand to support the six guns. As McNair and Ector advanced rapidly the battery opened on them with shell and grape and the infantry of McCook chimed in. The battery was captured, and McCook's Division was forced back in retreat for three quarters of a mile. This Rosecrans admitted in his report of the battle. It was in the early part of this charge that Charlie fell, a minnie ball having passed clear through his body, coming out by his spine. Bleeding and helpless, he was tenderly borne from the field by his old friend, Tom Edwards, and his days of warfare were forever ended. Later he was removed to a Federal hospital at Nashville; and, as his case seemed desperate, his brother Tom got permission to remove him to his own home at Lebanon, Kentucky, where, after a long and most painful illness, during which his wound never healed, he died of sheer exhaustion, August 12, 1863. In Volume 20 of "The War of the Rebellion," published by the U. S. Government, Series I, page 950, we find the following official report from Lieutenant-Colonel Williamson of the Second Arkansas Mounted Riflemen, on the events of Wednesday, December 31: "I regret to report that Adjutant C. W. Woods was dangerously wounded in the first engagement in the morning, and I was thus deprived of his valuable services for the remainder of the day."

That last, long illness, in spite of a devoted brother's every effort, resulted in Charlie's death soon after he had passed his twenty-sixth year. But that illness had its blessed compensation—it was one means, under God, of causing this wayward young Christian to realize how far he had been wandering from his Heavenly Father. It enabled him to look seriously at the everlasting issues of the life we live on this earth, and gave him ample leisure in which to confess his sins and seek forgiveness anew. He told his brother, as he fully saw death was near, that he could now thank God for having spared him the need of going back to meet the temptations of army life, and he died in the hope of pardon and life eternal through Jesus Christ, the Lord.

(k) Edward Payson, the tenth child, was born

February 7, 1840. From early childhood he gave evidence of religious seriousness; and in 1852, when but twelve years old, he was received into full communion in the Presbyterian Church. He was always a studious boy and fond of his books, and obedient to his parents and teachers. There were also some little peculiarities of disposition which made him to differ in some respects from the normal boy. He attended Centre College, Danville, and was graduated from that institution in 1858, when only about eighteen years of age. He engaged in teaching school and in colportage for a time in order to enable him to take a regular course in divinity, he having dedicated himself to the work of the Gospel ministry. After a year or two he entered Danville Theological Seminary to prepare for what he deemed his God-appointed profession. But his well-meant plans were doomed to disappointment; for while at the Seminary, in 1861-2, he developed melancholia and decided symptoms of mental disturbance; and after a time it became manifest to his loved ones that he was incapable of further study. He died in the Asylum for the Insane at Lexington in 1877, of typhoid fever, in his thirty-eighth year.

(4) Fannie Everett, the eleventh child, was born June 1, 1842. She received her education mainly at the Presbyterian Female College, Harrodsburg. She also studied under her brother, the Rev. William H. Woods, while he was conducting a female seminary at Greensburg, Kentucky. In 1854, when a girl of twelve years, she confessed Christ in the Presbyterian Church. Brought, early in her girlhood days, under the influence of a very lovely Christian lady who was an Episcopalian, Fannie became interested in her friend's church, gave up the church of her parents, and was in due time received into the Episcopal fold. It would be difficult, however, to find a nature less suited than was hers to the form of faith and worship which prevails in the Episcopal Church; and in a few years after she had moved away from her childhood home, and had gotten beyond those influences which had controlled her at home, she united with the Southern Methodist Church, in Franklin, Kentucky, where she was at the time residing. The fervor of the Methodists seemed better suited to her nature than anything she had yet known, and from that day to this she has been a Methodist.

After the death of her mother (in August, 1860), Fannie made her home with her brother William, who was then carrying on his female seminary at Greensburg, Kentucky. Here she formed a liking for the profession of teaching—a vocation she has followed continuously since the year 1861, except during the ten years she was a married woman.

As a teacher she has not been content with merely instructing the mind with secular truth; her great aim has been to reach the hearts and consciences of her pupils with the saving truths of religion. Having, years ago, embraced that phase of perfectionism represented by the modern Holiness Movement, she has felt called on to inculcate her views in the school-room. Her work as a teacher has been done in Kentucky and Arkansas, and more recently in Texas, where she now resides.

When her brother William settled in Franklin, Kentucky, in 1860, and there opened a school, and took charge of the Presbyterian Church, Fannie accompanied him, and soon became identified with that community. While there she met Napoleon B. Suddarth, M. D., a leading physician of Franklin, who was a widower, with two little girls by his first wife. Dr. Suddarth was an able and successful physician, and a gentleman of winning character. She was married to him December 28, 1863. By him she had seven children, to wit: 1, Neander, who was born December 26, 1864; 2, Charley, who was born November 26, 1865; 3, Beulah McAfee, who was born October 26, 1866; 4, Howard LaRue, who was born December 28, 1867; 5, Lena Wickware, who was born December 25, 1869; 6, Twyman Hogue, who was born April 17, 1872, and 7, Heber N. B., who was born April 22, 1873. Of these seven children four died within less than ten

days of their birth, and two others died under ten years of age. The only one who grew to mature years was Howard, the fourth child. Dr. Suddarth died a martyr to his profession on the first day of July, 1873. The community was at the time terribly suffering from a visitation of the cholera, and he stood loyally at his post, visiting, as called upon, the rich and the poor of both the white and colored race. He contracted the disease while attending a negro woman, and died after an illness of only twenty-four hours.

Left a widow with three little children, and not having means sufficient to enable her to live without engaging in some kind of work, she resumed her profession as a school teacher, which she had not followed for ten years, and has continued in this vocation to the present time. She now has a school in Texas.

(m) Neander Montgomery, the twelfth and last child of James Harvey and Sarah Everett Woods, will be considered under Sketch No. 90, (which see).

SKETCH 81.

MRS. ADNE TAYLOR, GREENSBURG, KENTUCKY.

Mrs. Taylor's full maiden name was Ariadne B. Mitchell. She was the first child of Basil B. Mitchell by his wife Elizabeth Hannah, *nee* Woods, and was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, July 30, 1842. Before speaking further of her, a brief notice of her parents will be given. Her father, Basil Bard Mitchell, was born June 10, 1810, and died February 10, 1846, in his thirty-sixth year. He had married Elizabeth Hannah Woods September 1, 1841, and by her had had two children, as follows: (a) Ariadne B., who was born, as above stated, July 30, 1842; and (b) Virginia Wallace, who was born January 14, 1844. For an account of the latter, see Sketch 83.

Elizabeth Hannah Woods, the second child of James Harvey and Sarah Everett Woods, was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, May 1, 1821. On the twenty-fourth of August, 1834, when in her fourteenth year, she confessed Christ before men and was received into the full communion of the Presbyterian Church under the ministry of Dr. Thomas Cleland. From the late Mrs. Mary Eliza Moore, *nee* Robertson, who was a schoolmate of Elizabeth's, and a bosom friend, we learn that she was a most attractive and lovable girl, and very fond of reading. She had a good mind, and received as good an education, no doubt, as was to be enjoyed in her native town in that early day. She was noted for her amiability and piety. On the first day of September, 1841, she was married to Basil B. Mitchell, and she lived with him happily till his death, February 10, 1846, nearly five and a half years. Mr. Mitchell was a merchant in Harrodsburg up to the time of his death. After she was left a widow, Elizabeth and her two little girls boarded at Mr. Sam Bunton's for a time, but later on she moved out a few miles into the country to a farm she had inherited from her late husband, and this farm she carried on at least one season, or longer, very successfully. Her late husband's mother made her home with her on the farm. By the year 1848 she was making her home with her uncle, Dr. Dickson G. Dedman, in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, and engaged in conducting a school there. On the sixteenth of October, 1849, she was married to Mr. James M. Jones, a widower with one son by a former wife—John Sanford Jones. Mr. Jones's first wife was a Miss Woods, a distant relative of hers, a grand-daughter of David Woods, and a grand niece of Samuel Woods, Sr., the Revolutionary veteran, who died in 1826, at the home of Elizabeth's parents. Mr. Jones lived on his farm four miles east of Harrodsburg, where the town of Burgin now is, and there Elizabeth lived the few remaining years of her life. By Mr. Jones she had a daughter named Elizabeth Everett, born December 7, 1850. She was called "Evie" by the family. This daughter, after making her home for about eight years with her grandmother, Mrs. James Harvey Woods, was taken by Mr. Jones to his Missouri home, he having married a third wife. Mrs. Woods had died in August, 1860. Evie grew to maturity, and became a bright and lovely young woman. She was graduated from the Columbia,

Missouri, Female College in June, 1871; and on returning to her father's home, in Pettus County, was under an engagement to return to that institution in the fall as a teacher, but she very shortly after contracted typhoid fever, and her promising young life was cut short by death August 23, 1871.

Mrs. Elizabeth Jones lived only about a year and a half after the birth of her daughter, Evie. She died September 1, 1852, about the time of the birth of the second child she bore to her second husband. This last named child only lived a short time. Her body was laid to rest beside that of her first husband, Mr. Mitchell, in New Providence Churchyard, only about a hundred yards west of the spot in which the remains of her parents were deposited in August, 1860.

Adne Mitchell and her sister, Virgie, after their mother's death in 1852, went to Green County, Kentucky, to live with their uncle, the Rev. William H. Woods, who was teaching a school there. In 1854 Mr. Woods moved to the county-seat, Greensburg, and began a female boarding school, which he maintained for many years. When Mr. Woods moved from Greensburg to Franklin, Kentucky, Adne went to the Stuart and Reed Female College, at Shelbyville, and from that institution she was graduated about 1861. Her sister Virgie did not enjoy good health about this time, and she did not complete the full course with Adne. When Rev. Mr. Woods, their uncle, returned to Greensburg in the fall of 1861, Adne and Virgie went with him. On the eighteenth of June, 1863, Adne was married to Col. Aylett Buckner Taylor. Col. Taylor was born August 26, 1831. Six children were the fruit of this union, to wit:

(a) Thomas Wallace Taylor, the first child, was born April 29, 1864. Thomas married Miss Flora Alma Buchanan October 15, 1889, and this couple have had the following children, to wit: 1, Nellie, who was born September 10, 1890; 2, Mary Louise, who was born June 12, 1892.

(b) Elizabeth Winn Taylor, second child of Aylett and Adne, was born February 8, 1867, and will be considered in Sketch 82.

(c) Basil Mitchell Taylor, the third child, was born November 5, 1869. He studied medicine, and after his graduation began practice in Greensburg, Kentucky, where he now lives, being considered the leading physician of his county.

(d) Sarah Francis Taylor, the fourth child, was born August 28, 1872, and several years ago married a Mr. Buchanan.

(e) William Woods Taylor, the fifth child, was born July 11, 1877. He studied dentistry, and after his graduation in Louisville he opened an office in Greensburg, where he already enjoys a lucrative practice.

(f) Virginia Everett Taylor, the sixth and last child of Aylett and Adne Taylor was born March 11, 1883. She attended school at Bellewood Seminary, Kentucky, and was graduated from thence with distinction in June, 1902. She is at present (1904) a member of the faculty of Caldwell College, Danville, Kentucky.

Mrs. Adne Taylor has for some years made her home in Greensburg, Kentucky, with her three unmarried children. She has from her childhood been a consistent member of the Presbyterian Church, and commands the universal confidence and esteem of those who know her.

Col. Aylette Buckner Taylor was born in Greensburg, Kentucky, August 26, 1832, and there he was reared. He carried on a farm about six miles from Greensburg and the same distance from Campbellsville, until the close of 1880, when he moved to a farm on Green River a few miles nearer the town of Greensburg. Here he lived until his death, March 16, 1897. He was twice married, his first wife being a Miss Williams, to whom he was married September 15, 1853. He was married to Ariadne B. Mitchell June 18, 1863. He was for many years a ruling elder of Bethel Presbyterian Church, and was loved and honored as a man of sterling Christian character. He was in his sixty-seventh year at the time of his death. His father was a practising physician—Dr. Richard

Aylette Taylor, of Greensburg, Kentucky. Dr. Taylor's wife was the widow of a Dr. Gray, her maiden name being Catherine Byrd Winn. She was born February 22, 1795, and died September 14, 1840. The father of Dr. Richard A. Taylor was John Young Taylor, who was born January 11, 1765, came to Greensburg from Fauquier County, Virginia, about the year 1802, and died October 6, 1845. His wife was Catherine Buckner, born April 19, 1773, and died April 10, 1849. She was a sister of Judge Buckner, of Greensburg, and an aunt of Judge Buckner, of Lexington, Kentucky. The father of the aforesaid John Young Taylor was Richard Taylor, who came from England to Virginia, and married a Miss Aylette.

SKETCH 82.

MRS. A. W. CRAWFORD, HEREFORD, TEXAS.

Mrs. Crawford's full maiden name was Elizabeth Winn Taylor, and, as shown in the preceding sketch, was the second child of Col. Aylette B. Taylor and his second wife, Ariadne B., *nee* Mitchell. She was born February 8, 1867. She was educated at a school taught near her native place at Bethel Church, and at Rome Female College (1885-7), Rome, Georgia. On the 15th of October, 1889, she was married to Rev. A. W. Crawford by whom she has had the following children: (a) Adne Mitchell Crawford; (b) Irvine Craig Crawford; (c) Robert Taylor Crawford; (d) Lawrence Crawford; and (e) Margaret Crawford.

Rev. Alexander Warwick Crawford was born at Dunmore, Pocahontas County, West Virginia, September 15, 1857. He was reared in Louisville, Kentucky, and was educated in the public schools of that city. He chose the ministry of the Gospel as his life-work, and received his theological training at Union Theological Seminary, Virginia, in 1884-87. On the 13th of May, 1887, he was duly licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Transylvania, at Stanford, Kentucky. He was called to the pastorate of Bethel Presbyterian Church, Taylor County, Kentucky, and was ordained to the full work of the ministry by Transylvania Presbytery in that church on the 16th of July, 1887. He was installed pastor of Bethel Church and of the church at Campbellsville, which churches he served until December, 1890. From May, 1891, till October, 1893, he was pastor of Woodlawn Church, Birmingham, Alabama. There his health was so poor that he remained but a few months, and in April, 1894, became pastor of Paint Lick Church, Garrard County, Kentucky. In the spring of 1902 he accepted a call to Hereford, Texas, his present home. There Mr. Crawford has done a splendid foundational work in a new and rapidly growing country.

The father of Rev. A. W. Crawford was Robert Irvine Crawford, who was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, October 12, 1821. He was educated at Washington College (now Washington and Lee University), and was married to Margaret Ann Craig, June 14, 1853. Margaret Ann was born in Rockingham County, Virginia, December 15, 1825. She died at the home of Rev. A. W. Crawford, Birmingham, Alabama, March 19, 1892. Her husband (Robert I.), who had been a merchant in Louisville, Kentucky, nearly all his life, died in Franklin, Kentucky, October, 1901, at the home of his son, Rev. A. W. Crawford, who was then living at that place. The said Margaret Ann Craig was a daughter of George Evans Craig by his wife Matilda, *nee* Guthrie. Said George Evans Craig was a son of George Craig by his wife Elizabeth, *nee* Evans, and said Matilda Guthrie was a daughter of John Guthrie by his wife Margaret, *nee* Gilkerson. Said George Craig, who married Elizabeth Evans, was a son of James Craig, of Ireland, by his wife Mary, *nee* Laird. The aforesaid John Guthrie, who married Margaret Gilkerson, was a son of William Guthrie by his wife Esther, *nee* McClelland. And the aforesaid Margaret Gilkerson was a daughter of Hugh Gilkerson, of Scotland, who married Elizabeth, *nee* Guthrie, a sister of the aforesaid William Guthrie. The before-mentioned Robert Irvine Crawford, who married Margaret Ann, *nee* Craig, was a son of Robert

Crawford by his wife Nancy Gamble, *nee* Irvine. This Robert Crawford was born in Rockbridge County, Virginia, in 1791, on Walker's Creek, and there he died February 13, 1852. His wife Nancy Gamble was born November 2, 1802, and died January 29, 1837. The said Robert Crawford was a son of Alexander Crawford, Jr. His mother was a Mrs. McClure (a widow) when Alexander married her. Alexander, Jr., was the fifth son of Alexander Crawford, of Ireland, and his wife Mary, *nee* McPheeters, and was born in Augusta County, Virginia. He participated in the wars against the Indians prior to the Revolution, and was a soldier with the Virginia troops at Point Pleasant October 10, 1774. He was for many years an elder in the New Providence church, and died January 19, 1830.

Alexander Crawford, before mentioned, came from North Ireland and settled near the North Mountain in Augusta County, Virginia, between 1725 and 1750. There he married Mary, the third daughter of William McPheeters (the grandfather of S. B. McPheeters, D. D.). (See memoir of Rev. S. B. McPheeters, D. D., by Rev. John S. Grasty, page 12.) To this Alexander Crawford and Mary, his wife, were born eleven children, three of whom were preachers: 1. Edward, lived near Abingdon, Virginia. 2. James, pastor for many years of the Walnut Hill Church in Fayette County, Kentucky, near Lexington; died 1803; buried Walnut Hill Cemetery. 3. John; do not know where he lived. One of the eleven children of Alexander and Mary was himself named Alexander. To this Alexander, Jr., was born a son, Robert, who settled in Rockbridge County, Virginia. To this Robert was born my father, Robert Irvine, October 12, 1821. The family were members of the New Providence Church in Rockbridge County, into the full communion of which my father was received in his boyhood. He was educated at Washington College, Lexington, Virginia, now Washington and Lee University, and settled in Louisville about the year 1852, where he has for forty years been engaged in an honorable business career. Soon after he went to Louisville he was elected deacon in the First Presbyterian Church and again, after a few years, was made elder. He served as elder in the First Church all the best of his manhood days. In the fall of 1878 he went as an elder into the organization of the Central Church, Rev. William E. Young, pastor, and then again afterwards took part in the new organization at Parkland, the Woodland Church, in which he has one son an elder and one a deacon. To this new and thriving church in the suburb of Parkland, he gave the counsels, the prayers, the efforts of a ripe old age.

In 1853, my father married, in Augusta County, Virginia, Miss Margaret Craig, sister of Rev. I. N. Craig, D. D., and daughter of George E. Craig—the great-grandson of William Craig and Jean his wife, who came from North Ireland to America in 1722 with three sons—Robert, James and John. My mother was the great-granddaughter of James. Dr. Willis G. Craig, of the Chicago Seminary, late moderator of the Northern General Assembly, is the great-grandson of John.

To my mother and father were born six children, the youngest of whom died in infancy. The oldest of the children, the only daughter, married Rev. A. S. Moffett, now of Midway, Ky. I am the third child, the second son. My brothers—one older, George, and two younger, Newton and Brown—are in business in Louisville.

(Signed)

ALEXANDER WARWICK CRAWFORD.

SKETCH 83.

MRS. WILL PHILLIPS, LEBANON, KENTUCKY.

The full maiden name of Mrs. Phillips was Virginia Wallace Mitchell. She was the second child of Basil B. Mitchell by his wife Elizabeth Hannah, *nee* Woods, and was born at the old Mitchell homestead near Harrodsburg, Kentucky, January 14, 1844. Sketch No. 81, devoted to Mrs. Taylor,

contains much relating to Mrs. Phillips which need not be repeated here. Her father died when she was only a little more than two years old, and when less than nine years of age she lost her mother. As she and her sister went to live with their uncle, Rev. William H. Woods, in Green County, and made their home with him until they married, they naturally came to think of him as almost their father. While living in Greensburg she was taught by her uncle William, her Aunt Mary Dedman, Miss Alice Ward and Miss Henrietta Goalder. After finishing the course with her uncle she was for a time a pupil at the Stuart and Reed Female College, Shelbyville, Kentucky, but her health was not good at that time, and she did not remain to graduate. On the 22d of December, 1864, she was married to Mr. William Castleman Phillips, who is connected with one of the most prominent families of Marion County, Kentucky, and is a son of Mr. James G. Phillips, Sr., by his wife Laura, *nee* Castleman. Mr. and Mrs. Phillips are members of the (Southern) Presbyterian Church at Lebanon, Kentucky, near to or in which town the whole of their married lives has been spent. Mr. Phillips was born April 5, 1842, and has nearly all of his mature life been engaged in planting and stock-raising, but ill-health has recently compelled him to dispose of his beautiful farm, located three miles from Lebanon, and move into town.

The children of Mr. and Mrs. Phillips are the following:

(a) ARIADNE IOLA PHILLIPS, the first child of William C. and Virginia W., was born August 25, 1868. On the 15th of December, 1892, Adne was married to Mr. Lee Atwell Scearce, by whom she has a son, Richard W., born November 25, 1893. Mr. Scearce has a nice home in Lebanon. He is engaged in the insurance business, and is one of the most popular citizens of Marion County.

(b) LAURA CASTLEMAN PHILLIPS was the second child of William C. and Virginia W. She lives with her parents in Lebanon, and is unmarried. Neither of her parents has had good health in recent years, and she has been to them an unspeakable comfort and help.

(c) EVERETT DE HART PHILLIPS, the third child, was born April 26, 1873. On the 18th day of December, 1895, she was married to Mr. Joseph W. Irvine, of Lebanon, Kentucky. Mr. and Mrs. Irvine have two children, as follows: 1, Gabriel; 2, Phillips. Mr. Irvine is an active and successful business man, and now resides in Knoxville, Tennessee.

(d) MARY PHILLIPS, the fourth and last child, was born September 23, 1880. She resides with her parents in Lebanon, and is employed as bookkeeper and cashier by the Cumberland Telephone Company.

SKETCH 84.

REV. WILLIAM H. WOODS (Deceased).

WILLIAM HARVEY WOODS, the third child of James Harvey, and Sarah Everett, Woods, was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, November 26, 1823. He was a young man of studious habits, scholarly tastes and exemplary character. February 27, 1842, he made a public profession of religion and united with the Presbyterian Church in his native town under the ministry of the Rev. Dr. John Montgomery. He attended the schools in Harrodsburg for many years and then was sent to Danville, Kentucky, to attend Centre College, from which institution he was regularly graduated in June, 1843. He took the classical course and was proficient in mathematics, Latin and Greek. His acquirements in these branches and others fitted him for the work of teaching, a calling which he followed for more than twenty years of his life. On leaving college in 1843 he seems to have taught school a year; and, having chosen the sacred office as his life-work, he entered Princeton Theological Seminary, New Jersey, in the fall of 1844, and was regularly graduated from thence in 1847. Only a few weeks after he began his course there, and probably while engaged in the study of one of the works of the celebrated German divine, Dr. Augustus Neander, his youngest brother

—the present writer—was born, and William sent home the name "Xeander" to his mother and asked that it be given the baby, which was done. The class to which he belonged at Princeton contained sixty members, among whom were many who became distinguished as Presbyterian ministers, to wit: Dr. Thomas W. Cattell, Dr. Elijah R. Craven, Dr. John T. Duffield, Dr. Edward Eells, Dr. Caspar R. Gregory, Professor Joseph J. Halsey, Dr. Moses A. Hoge, Dr. John M. K. Hunter, Dr. Addison V. Schenck, Professor Charles W. Shields, and others.

When William graduated in the spring of 1847 he set out for Kentucky with an assortment of good books, and paid his way home by selling them, for his father was a man of small means and had a large family to support and educate. June 23, 1847, he was licensed as a probationer for the Gospel ministry by Transylvania Presbytery; and after a few months' trial of his gifts, he was duly ordained to the full work of the ministry as an evangelist by the same body, and assigned work in Green County, Kentucky. His first field of labor was at Greensburg, where he preached for about three years. For about a year (1850-1) he supplied Six-Mile Church; and for a year (1852-3) he preached at Ebenezer Church. In 1853 he started a school of high grade for young ladies at Greensburg, which was carried on till the fall of 1860, when he moved to Franklin, Kentucky, and began to teach a school and act as supply of the Presbyterian Church of that place. The Civil War began in the early days of 1861, and he was located on the border of the territory likely to be the scene of bloody contests between the two great armies—Northern and Southern—and he moved back to Greensburg about the fall of 1861. On the 14th of June, 1849, while serving a church near Greensburg, he was married to Miss Sarah Catherine Lisle, of Green County, who was his devoted and efficient help-meet until her death, which occurred June 9, 1862, in Greensburg. By Catherine—his first wife—he had six or seven sons, only three of whom survived him, namely: 1, William Harvey, Jr.; 2, Joseph Lisle; and 3, Cortlandt Barret. These three sons are among the original patrons of this volume, and sketches of them will follow this. For a couple of years after his first wife died Mr. Woods continued to teach and preach in Green County; but the confusion and disorder incident to the Civil War then in progress produced general demoralization in all lines of professional work. The death of his wife also had increased the difficulty of carrying on his school at Greensburg; and in the fall of 1864 he moved to Shelbyville, Kentucky, and opened a classical school for boys, taking with him his three motherless little sons, and giving his personal attention to their education. On the 20th of June, 1865, he was married to Miss Elizabeth Jane Lee Logan, of Shelby County, Kentucky. Not long after his second marriage Mr. Woods began to develop symptoms of the same disease (tuberculosis) of which his first wife had died in 1862; and now he began a series of moves, undertaken in the hope of bettering his health. In the fall of 1865 he moved to Indianapolis, Indiana, where his youngest brother was then living, and purchased an interest in a drug house being carried on by Dr. J. W. Smelser. It did not require more than a year for him to see that this move was a mistake, and in the summer of 1866 he returned to Kentucky, and opened a boys' school at Horse Cave, Hart County. This undertaking gave every promise of success from the start; he had a good attendance, some of the pupils being from a distance. But early in the year following he found his strength was so far depleted, and his disease so far advanced, that he could teach no longer. He realized that God's plans for his life were not such as he himself would have chosen—his earthly course was nearly run. In this dark hour his heart turned to the neighborhood in which he had passed so large a part of his mature life—Green County. He and his wife and his little sons went to the hospitable home of Colonel Aylette Taylor, whose wife was Mr. Woods's niece, and to whom he had been a father for many years of her orphanage.

REV. WILLIAM H. WOODS,
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No. 84.]

MRS. LIZZIE (LOGAN) WOODS,
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No. 84.]

REV. WILLIAM H. WOODS, D. D.
BALTIMORE, MD.
[See Sketch No. 85.]

JOSEPH LISLE WOODS,
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No. 84.]

In that home loving hands ministered to his wants, and all that could be done was done eagerly for his comfort; but on the thirtieth of April, 1867, he exchanged the weariness and sorrows of earth for the endless joys of heaven. His body was laid to rest by the side of his first wife's remains in the old Lisle family burial plot in Green County.

Though Mr. Woods had early in life dedicated himself to the Gospel ministry, his career was that of a school-teacher rather than that of a preacher. He was successful to an unusual degree as a teacher; but he was not at home in the pulpit. He lacked oratorical gifts. He had no natural fitness for the platform. He spoke always as if embarrassed in the presence of an audience. He had a logical mind, was a fine classical scholar, and had been thoroughly trained in theology, and would have made a distinct success as a professor in a college or theological seminary. He was a man of singularly pure life and fervent piety. He was of smaller stature than his father, but was strikingly like him otherwise. He had his father's sharp features, prominent nose, slender build, pale blue eyes, and slightly brownish hair. He was more of a Woods than a Dedman.

Sarah Catherine Lisle, the first wife of Rev. William H. Woods, was a daughter of Mr. Thomas W. Lisle, of Greensburg, Kentucky (a lawyer and farmer), by his first wife, Eliza, *nee* Creel. She was born in Greensburg July 31, 1830. Her mother had but one child besides herself, a son named Joseph D. Mr. Lisle's second wife had seven children, as follows: 2, William J., a lawyer of Lebanon, Kentucky; 2, Eliza, who married Mr. Charles Harrison; 3, Mary, who married a Mr. Carlisle; 4, Lou, who married a Mr. Schooling; 5, Dollie, who married a Mr. Baker; 6, Sophie, who married a Mr. Byrd, and 7, J. T., who has been dead many years. Catherine Lisle—"Katie," all her friends called her—was a woman of cultivated mind, refined and winning manners, and devoted piety. She contracted tuberculosis, and died June 9, 1862.

Miss Elizabeth Jane Lee Logan, who became the second wife of Rev. William H. Woods, was born in Scott County, Kentucky, while her father (who was a Presbyterian minister) was pastor of Bethel Church. Her father was the Rev. James Harvey Logan, and her mother was, before her marriage, Miss Mary Venable. Both Mr. and Mrs. Logan were natives of Shelby County, Kentucky. Mr. Logan was for years pastor of Bethel Church in Scott County, and of Mulberry Church in Shelby County. Mrs. Logan survived her husband a great many years, attaining her eighty-first year, and dying in 1891. To them were born seven children, as follows: 1, Rev. James Venable Logan, D. D., an able and learned divine, who for a long period has been a member of the faculty of Central University of Kentucky, and resides at Danville; 2, Elizabeth Jane Lee Logan, the subject of this sketch; 3, Mattie, who married Rev. Andrew Irvine; 4, Mary Frances, who resides in Shelbyville, Kentucky; 5, Sallie A. Logan, who resides with her sisters, Mary Frances and Nettie, in Shelbyville; 6, Joseph A. Logan, who resides on his farm in Shelby County, and is an elder of Mulberry Presbyterian Church; and 7, Nettie, who lives with her two sisters, Mary Frances and Sallie A., in Shelbyville.

Elizabeth Jane Lee, who was married to Rev. William H. Woods in June, 1865, was his faithful companion and helper in the several moves he made in the years 1865-6-7 after his health began to fail, and nursed him with tenderest care down to the end of his life in April, 1867. Left a widow, she took her youngest step-son, Cortlandt B. Woods, and went back to Shelby County to reside. There she lived till her death, which occurred August 4, 1899. She bore to her husband one child, who lived but a short time. She was a woman of the kindest nature, gentle, considerate and uncomplaining. She had exceedingly clear views of the Bible and its plan of salvation, and followed Christ with unswerving devotion to the end of her days.

SKETCH 85.

REV. DR. W. H. WOODS, BALTIMORE, MARYLAND.

Dr. Woods was the eldest of the children of the Rev. William H. Woods to reach mature years. His father's sketch next precedes this. He was named for his father, but has usually spelled his middle name "Hervey" instead of "Harvey," though the latter spelling was that which both his father and his paternal grandfather followed. Dr. Woods was born in Green County, Kentucky, November 17, 1852. His mother, as was shown in Sketch 84, was Sarah Katherine, *nee* Lisle. He was with his father until the latter's death in 1867. On losing his father, he and his brother, Joseph Lisle Woods, made their home with Mr. Charles Harrison, an uncle by marriage, who lived near Lebanon, Kentucky, on a farm. In the fall of 1872, when about twenty years of age, he entered Hampden-Sidney College, Virginia, and from that institution he was graduated in 1874. Having dedicated himself to the work of the Gospel ministry, he entered Union Theological Seminary in the fall of 1874, and was regularly graduated in 1877. In the fall of 1877 he was licensed by Winchester Presbytery to preach, and at once was chosen to be assistant to Rev. Dr. H. M. White, of Winchester Church. In the following spring (1878) he was ordained to the full work of the ministry and installed pastor of the Cedar Cliff and Cedar Creek Churches, located in Frederick County, Virginia. In 1882 the Presbyterian Church at Strasburg was added to his existing charge, and he made his home in that town, and served the three churches till November, 1887, when he was called to the pastorate of the Franklin Square Presbyterian Church, Baltimore, which church he still serves.

On the eighth of October, 1879, Dr. Woods was married to Miss Alice May Lupton, daughter and only child of Thomas Neill Lupton by his wife Mary Janny, by whom he has had five children, as follows: (a) Leslie Neill Woods; (b) William Lisle Woods, who is dead; (c) Mary Lupton Woods; (d) Jamison Hervey Woods, who is dead; and (e) Joseph Lisle Woods. Dr. Woods, besides being a man of scholarly tastes and attainments, and a fine preacher, has won considerable reputation as a writer of poems and stories for such journals as the Youth's Companion, New York Independent, Sunday School Times, Scribner's Magazine, the Southern Magazine and the Century Magazine. He is considered one of the leading ministers of the Synod of Virginia.

SKETCH 86.

C. B. WOODS, MEXICO CITY, MEXICO.

Cortlandt Barrett Woods, son of Rev. William H. Woods by his first wife, Sarah Catherine, *nee* Lisle, was born in Greensburg, Kentucky, August 21, 1859. His mother died before he reached three years of age, and he was for a year or two after her death cared for very largely by his cousins, Adne and Virgie Mitchell, and a Mrs. James Anderson. In the spring of 1867 he lost his father, and he was then taken to live with his step-mother in Shelby County, Kentucky, whilst his brothers, William and Joe, went to live with their uncle-in-law, Mr. Charles Harrison, near Lebanon, Kentucky. From childhood he was troubled with catarrh, and in 1876, when seventeen, he was sent to St. Louis for treatment by a noted specialist. He was benefitted by the treatment, and in the fall of 1877 entered Hampden-Sidney College, Virginia. He completed the full course in that institution with the exception of mathematics, remaining there till June, 1880—three years. By the fall of 1880 he had a return of the former catarrhal symptoms, and returned to St. Louis for further medical treatment. He undertook school-teaching that fall, but his health forbade his continuing the work, and he took a position with N. K. Fairbanks & Co., St. Louis, by whom his brother Joe was then employed. By the end of 1880 his disease had made alarming progress; and, after being treated by Dr. H. N. Spencer, of St. Louis, for a month or two, acting on his physician's advice he went to San Antonio, Texas, and engaged in open-air employments for about six years. His health having

improved in the mild and dry atmosphere of Southwest Texas, he once more attempted to engage in business in a more northerly clime, and took a position with Fairbanks & Co., in Omaha, Nebraska. His experience in that region proving unfavorable to his health, he again moved to Texas in the fall of 1887. In December, 1889, he moved down into Old Mexico, and entered the milling business in the city of Monterey, being in partnership with a Mr. Geddes. In 1892 he bought out Geddes, and his step-mother, Mrs. Woods, became associated with him. Later on, Mr. Woods met with some reverses in Monterey, and closed out his business there and settled in the City of Mexico, where he still resides.

On the thirteenth of June, 1890, Mr. Woods was married to Miss Anna Sophia Houser. To them six beautiful little daughters have been born, to wit: (a) Catherine Lisle Woods; (b) Anna Sophia Woods; (c) Elizabeth Lee Woods; (d) Mary McAfee Woods; (e) Cortlandt B. Woods, born 1902; and (f) Frances S. Woods, born 1903. They have never had any boys.

Anna Sophia Woods, *nee* Houser, was the second child of Anthony Houser by his wife Catherine, *nee* Riggs, and was born at Mapleton, Wisconsin, November 15, 1863. Mr. Houser was a native of Baden, Germany, and born in 1839. He migrated to the United States in 1854 and settled in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. In 1855 he moved to Mapleton, where he engaged in merchandising until 1858, when he was appointed postmaster of Mapleton by President Buchanan. This position he held for twenty-five years. He moved to Dakota in 1883. In April, 1861, Mr. Houser was married to Miss Catherine Riggs, of Mapleton. David Riggs, the father of Catherine, was born and educated in Scotland, but moved to County Antrim, Ireland, where he married Ann, a lady of the McLean family. Some time after 1830 David Riggs and wife emigrated to Canada, where their daughter, Catherine, was born in 1840. The family afterwards settled in Wisconsin, and Catherine was a teacher in the public schools of Mapleton when she became engaged to Mr. Houser. Mrs. Houser died in 1869, and her body rests in the Catholic Burial Ground at Mapleton.

Anna S. Houser, wife of C. B. Woods, having lost her mother when a child of six years, was sent the next year to the Madames of the Sacred Heart, Chicago, where she remained two years. In 1875 she entered St. Mary's Institute, Milwaukee, the Mother House of the Sisters of Notre Dame, and there she continued for six years, graduating in 1881. St. Mary's was considered one of the finest private schools in that part of the country. From 1881 up to the time of her marriage in 1890 Miss Houser was almost continuously engaged in teaching school. She taught two years at the High School of Oconomowoc, Wisconsin, and three years at the High School of Sioux Falls, South Dakota. In 1887 she went to San Antonio, Texas, to be a companion for her sick brother, Mr. John Houser, and there she was appointed the teacher of English in the San Antonio High School, which position she filled up to the date of her marriage to Mr. C. B. Woods.

Joseph Lisle Woods, hereinbefore mentioned as one of the three children of Rev. William H. Woods and Sarah Catherine, *nee* Lisle, who reached mature years, was born in Green County, Kentucky, March 13, 1855. Losing his mother when he was about seven, and his father when he was about twelve, he and his older brother, William, went to live with their uncle-in-law, Mr. Charles Harrison, of Marion County, Kentucky. Some time thereafter he made his home with his uncle, Joseph Lisle, at Independence, Missouri. October 15, 1885, he was married to Miss Leila Smelser, daughter of Dr. James W. Smelser by his third wife, Letitia, *nee* Boone. He was in the employ of the N. P. Fairbanks Company, meat packers and lard manufacturers, for many years, and he was an uncommonly brilliant and capable business man, commanding a high salary. It was while supervising the starting of a new factory for that concern at Hutchinson, Kansas, that he met with the terrible accident which terminated his life. An immense vat of boiling lard exploded,

MR. AND MRS. CORTLANDT B. WOODS,

MEXICO CITY, MEXICO.

[See Sketch No. 88.]

CATHERINE LISLE WOODS,
MEXICO CITY.

ANNA SOPHIA WOODS,
MEXICO CITY.

ELIZABETH LEE WOODS,
MEXICO CITY.

MARY McAFEE WOODS, Born 1901.
CORTLANDT B. WOODS, Born 1902.
FRANCES SERAPHICA WOODS, Born 1903.
MEXICO CITY.

[See Sketch No. 86]

and he was fatally scalded, dying June 7, 1889, in his thirty-fourth year. Joe and Leila had but one child, Joseph L. Woods, Jr., who was born in April, 1887, and died three months later. Joe Woods was a man of high intelligence and remarkable business capacity; and had he lived out the ordinary measure of life, he would no doubt have distinguished himself in the commercial world. His widow survives him, and now resides with her mother in St. Louis, Mo.

SKETCH 87.

W. C. WOODS, LAWRENCEBURG, KENTUCKY.

Mr. William Cleland Woods was the eldest of the three sons of Thomas C. and Mary Ann (Jackson) Woods who survived their parents, and was born in Lebanon, Kentucky, December 2, 1853. About the year 1859 he went to a school in his native town taught by his uncle, Charles W. Woods. Later he attended the classical school of Professor J. C. Fales, to whom Mr. Woods considers himself mainly indebted for whatever education he received in youth. He attended Centre College, Danville, one year (1870), and in 1873 entered Georgetown College, Kentucky, and took a scientific course. For a number of years Mr. Woods was the Deputy Clerk of the Marion County Circuit Court under his uncle, Thomas Cleland Jackson. Mr. Jackson was a remarkably fine business man and possessed a wonderful memory. He needed no index of the papers in his office, but could instantly lay his hands upon the documents relating to a case when called on. Chief Justice Alvin Duval considered him one of the ablest clerical officers in Kentucky. When Mr. Jackson died in 1876 his deputy, Mr. Woods, who was a capable man and familiar with all the duties of his position, and his friends also, naturally expected that he would receive the appointment, but the Judge appointed a gentleman who was a relative of his, without clerical experience, to serve till the next election. There were six candidates for the place, Mr. Woods being one of them. One of the candidates, a Mr. Vancleave, was allied by marriage to influential Catholic families in Marion County, and made a formidable rival. Mr. Woods agreed with this gentleman to withdraw from the race, upon certain conditions, and Mr. Vancleave was elected. In January, 1880, Mr. Woods settled in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, and began to travel for a wholesale firm at that place, and this position he held for six years at a good salary. On the third day of January, 1883, he was happily married to Miss Annie Boyle Bond, a daughter of Mr. William Franklin Bond, one of the most prominent and wealthy citizens of Anderson County, Kentucky. Mr. Bond was an old friend and a comrade of Mr. Woods's father during the Mexican War. The marriage took place at Versailles, Kentucky, the Rev. Dr. G. V. Ront of that town performing the ceremony. Mrs. Woods had been reared in the Christian Church, but she entered the Presbyterian Church of Lawrenceburg when Mr. Woods confessed Christ in June, 1893. The author of this volume (an uncle of Mr. Woods) had the pleasure of witnessing this important step, and counts it one of the greatest privileges of his life that he had some little share in bringing it to pass. By the appointment of President Cleveland during his first term, and later on during his second term, Mr. Woods was commissioned United States Gauger under Hon. Atilla Cox, Collector of the Fifth Kentucky Collection District. For a few years past Mr. Woods has held a responsible position in the service of the Southern Railway at Lawrenceburg. Mr. and Mrs. Woods owns a beautiful home in that city, a picture of which is given, along with a portrait of Mr. Woods, on pages 399 and 400. Mrs. Woods's father, William Franklin Bond, was born in Anderson County, Kentucky, in 1826, and her mother, Susan Mary, *nee* Hanks, was born in the same county in 1829. Three children—all sons—have been born to Mr. and Mrs. Woods, as follows: (a) Joseph Bond Woods, born in Lawrenceburg, Kentucky, May 2, 1884, and now a promising young civil engineer; (b) William Clarence Woods, who was born in Lawrenceburg November 16,

1885, and now at school; and (c) Ellis Jackson Woods, who was born in Lawrenceburg May 7, 1889, and now at school.

Thomas Cleland Woods, the father of the subject of this sketch, was the fourth child of James Harvey and Sarah Everett (Dedman) Woods, and was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, April 9, 1826. His education was received at the schools of his native town, including Bacon College. February 13, 1842, when in his sixteenth year, he confessed Christ as his Saviour, and was received into the full communion of the Harrodsburg Presbyterian Church under the pastorate of the late Rev. Dr. John Montgomery, of precious memory; and from that time until his death in 1868 he was a consistent Christian. His father, as has been shown on a previous page, was a cabinet-maker by trade, and a man so circumstanced as to need the aid of at least some of his sons in making a support for his large and growing family; and yet Thomas was the only one of the six brothers of the family who lived to maturity that seems to have worked for any considerable time in his father's shop. Their parents both preferred to afford them the best opportunities possible for professional careers. Thomas had a good mathematical mind, and was also of a mechanical turn; and for a few years he rendered his father most valuable assistance at the work-bench. This experience rendered him expert in both cabinet-making and carpentry, and he was equal to making furniture and building houses in a workmanlike manner. This vocation, however, was destined to be his for only a time. When the Mexican War broke out in the spring of 1846, and Congress authorized President Polk to call for fifty thousand volunteers to march to Mexico, Thomas C. Woods was one of the six times fifty thousand men who offered their services. He was a member of the Harrod Guards, Phil. B. Thompson, Captain. He was with General Taylor in his several engagements in Northeastern Mexico, ending with his notable victory at Buena Vista February 23, 1847, when Santa Anna's large army was routed and his power in that part of the country completely broken. The Harrod Guards belonged to the famous Second Kentucky Infantry, whose Colonel (McKee) and whose Lieutenant-Colonel (Clay) fell in that battle. Mr. William C. Woods now has in his possession a map of the Battle of Buena Vista, drawn by his father on the field after the Mexicans had retreated, showing the topography of the country and the positions occupied by the several commands. On his return home from Mexico in 1847 he studied law, and August 7, 1848, he, in company with his bosom friend, Charley Smedley, was duly admitted to the bar at Harrodsburg. It is likely he had had the law in view for some time before he went to Mexico. Had he chosen as his vocation some such calling as architecture, or civil or mechanical engineering, he would no doubt have achieved very high distinction in either sphere. When, about 1860, he came to build for himself a residence in Lebanon, he selected with intelligent care all the materials for the house, drew his own plans, and supervised the whole undertaking. Had he cared to do so, he could easily have put up the building himself, with the aid of a few ordinary laborers. That dwelling, after about forty-four years of constant use and occupation, is now in fine condition, and is the beautiful home of Dr. McChord. The weatherboarding is still even and plumb, and all its timbers testify to the skill and care of him who had it erected. Thomas must have settled in Lebanon within a few months after his being licensed—probably in the fall of 1848. On the fourteenth of August, 1849, he was married to Miss Mary Ann Jackson, of Lebanon, and in that town he continued to practise law for the remaining nineteen years of his life. He was now and then solicited by friends to enter political life, but he had the good sense to stick to his chosen profession, in which he was eminently successful. His wife inherited some estate from her father, and Thomas made money at the law; and in spite of some very heavy losses he suffered during the Civil War (1861-5) he left a very fair estate to his fam-

RESIDENCE OF MR. AND MRS. WILLIAM C. WOODS,
LAWRENCEBURG, KY.
[See Sketch No. 87.]

THOMAS C. WOODS AND WIFE.
(DECEASED.)
LATE OF LEBANON, KY.
[See Sketch No. 87.]

CLARENCE E. WOODS,
RICHMOND, KY.
[See Sketch No. 88.]

MAMIE MILLER WOODS,
RICHMOND, KY.
[See Sketch No. 88.]

WILL C. WOODS,
LAWRENCEBURG, KY.
[See Sketch No. 87.]

JOHN D. WOODS,
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No. 87.]

ily. When the Civil War came on in 1861, and every man in Kentucky was taking sides, Thomas was placed in a painful position. He conscientiously believed secession to be a fearful blunder, and he could not think of destroying the Union. On the other hand, he abhorred abolitionism, and he saw two of his brothers leave Kentucky to enter the Confederate service (Charlie and the present writer); and he knew that two others of them were strongly Southern in their sentiments (William and Nat). He remained a conservative Union man throughout that fearful struggle; and though offered the command of a Kentucky Federal regiment by the Union authorities, he refused to have anything to do with the war. He was a manly, gallant man, and naturally of a fearless, martial spirit where his convictions were clear, but he could never bring himself to take up arms against the South and be arrayed against his own brothers whom he dearly loved. His home was for many months the military headquarters of Major General George H. Thomas and staff, prior to the spring of 1862, but he remained a non-combatant. His brotherly feelings toward the present writer, however, triumphed over his loyalty for once; for only a few days before the Battle of Perryville he purchased for that young "Rebel" brother a fine horse in Lebanon, which that brother rode over the hills in and around Perryville all day and half the night of October 8, 1862, and then out of the State with General Bragg to Tennessee. Not long after settling in Lebanon Thomas entered into a copartnership with Mr. John Shuck, an able lawyer, and the law firm of "Shuck & Woods" was one favorably known throughout Kentucky for ability and sterling integrity. This copartnership was dissolved about 1864, when Mr. Shuck became completely disabled by paralysis and retired from practice. Not many years thereafter Mr. Woods's health also began to show signs of decline. He had never been a very robust man, though he had enjoyed good health with the exception of some dyspeptic symptoms. The wife of his brother William had died of tubercular disease in 1862 and William himself died of the same ailment in 1867. As neither of the parents nor brothers nor sisters of William and Thomas had ever had that disease, it is possible that William may have contracted it while nursing his wife; and as William was rather intimately associated with Thomas from time to time about this period, it is also possible that the latter derived it from William. Thomas tried various health resorts, and sought the aid of different physicians of note, but to no good purpose; and after an illness of about two years he passed away on the 30th day of July, 1868, when in his forty-third year. His wife followed him July 2, 1869. They had seven children, all sons, four of whom died in infancy. The following grew to manhood: (a) W. C. Woods; (b) John D., who is now dead; and (c) Clarence E.

Thomas C. Woods was strikingly like his father in his physique and in his temperament. He was rather slender, and not much under six feet in height. His eyes were blue, and his hair was brown with a decided tendency to curl. He had the Woods nose. He had a broad and intellectual forehead, and was a handsome man. His manner was exceedingly courteous, kindly and dignified. He was one of those gallant, self-forgetting and practical men who was always ready to render timely assistance to people in trouble. Wherever he happened to be he was sure to be found ministering to the comfort and safety of those about him who were in peril or who had met with accidents. He seemed to know just what to do in emergencies, and did it quickly and well. It may be doubted if there has ever lived a man in Lebanon who was more generally trusted and liked. No one ever seems to have questioned his uprightness or his goodness of heart. He had much of his father's deliberation and self-poise, and rarely ever became involved in personal difficulties with other men; and yet he was high-spirited and not afraid to maintain his rights. He was one of the truest Christian gentlemen this writer has ever known.

Miss Mary Ann Jackson, the second child and

only daughter of Thomas Jackson by his wife Nancy Rogers, *nee* Rodman, was born January 5, 1830. Mr. Jackson was born in Washington County, Kentucky, December 25, 1798. In 1812, when the soldiers were mustering at Springfield, Kentucky, preparing to enter the service against England—he being then not fourteen years old—Thomas Jackson acted as drummer for the troops; and the large Bible which the soldiers then presented him in recognition of his patriotic services is now in the possession of his grandson, Mr. Will C. Woods. He began the trade of blacksmithing about 1817, and December 20, 1821, was married to Miss Nancy Rogers Rodman, daughter of David Rodman, of Washington County, Kentucky, and soon after he moved to Lebanon, which town, after the formation of Marion County (in 1834), became the county seat. About 1860 he ceased to work at his trade, though he still had his shop carried on, and during the Civil War secured remunerative contracts from the United States Government. When he died, on January 8, 1876, he left a considerable estate. His wife had preceded him some years, she having died October, 1872. This couple had celebrated the fiftieth anniversary of their marriage December 20, 1871.

Thomas Jackson was the son of John Jackson (born November 21, 1770) and his wife Susannah, *nee* Thomas (born February 24, 1775). John and Susannah married February 24, 1795, and made their home in Washington County, Kentucky. John Jackson died February 26, 1833, and Susannah survived him only a few months, dying June 27, 1833. Thomas Jackson and his wife Nancy had but two children that reached mature years, namely: 1, Thomas Cleland, who was born December 2, 1827; married Miss Eliza Greene, and by her had a daughter, Mollie, who married a Buckner; a son Thomas C., Jr., who is married; and a son Charles Greene, who lives in Chicago. The second child of Thomas and Nancy Jackson was a daughter, Mary Ann, of whom mention has already been made.

The wife of Thomas Jackson, as above noted, was Miss Nancy Rodman, a daughter of David Rodman by his wife Elizabeth, *nee* Head. Said David Rodman was born in Pennsylvania in 1776; came to Washington County, Kentucky, in the early pioneer period; was a soldier in the War of 1812; was sheriff of Washington County in 1825; and died in 1859. David Rodman had a sister Catharine Jane, who married Charles Murray and had by him a large family of children. The Rodmans and Murrays came to America from County Antrim, Ireland. They intermarried in Ireland and afterwards in America. David Rodman came to Kentucky down the Ohio in a flatboat in the year 1777 (1779?), and on that trip Indians attacked the party and David's father was slain in the fight. The Miss Head whom David married was a half-sister of the distinguished Methodist preacher, Rev. Jesse Head.

SKETCH 88.

C. E. WOODS, RICHMOND, KENTUCKY.

Mr. Clarence Everett Woods, seventh and youngest child of Thomas Cleland Woods and Mary Ann Jackson Woods, was born in Lebanon, Kentucky, July 31, 1865, attended the Louisville city schools, receiving the highest honors in all his studies in his class of sixty pupils. Attended Central University, Richmond, Ky., 1884-6, and married Miss Mamie Patterson Miller, eldest child of Judge Wm. C. and Susie White Miller, of Richmond, Ky., October 13, 1886; she died August 7, 1890, and is buried in the Col. R. N. White lot in the Richmond Cemetery. C. E. Woods founded the Lebanon Enterprise in 1886, but a year later accepted the associate editorship of the Richmond (Ky.) *Register*, later became its editor and manager, and from 1896 to 1900 edited the Richmond *Climax*. Concerning his talented and efficient work upon the *Register* the following from the president of the National Editorial Association is sufficient testimonial:

"I assure you that we have no exchange that is more valued than the *Register*, for there is cer-

tainly no truer journalistic type of what is noblest in the State in which it is published, and that is saying a great deal."—E. W. Stephens, Publisher Columbia (Mo.), *Herald*, President National Editorial Association.

August 5, 1896, was married to Miss Mattie McDonald Chenault, third daughter of William Overton and Caledonia Miller Chenault, of Richmond, Ky. One child, Mamie Miller Woods, born August 16, 1897, named for his first wife and for her maternal aunt, Mrs. Mamie Chenault Smith, a woman of exalted piety, and loveliness of character, whose counterpart he could wish his child to be.

In 1894 the subject of this sketch was unanimously elected Grand Recorder and Editor of the *Delta* of the Sigma Nu Fraternity of the United States; re-elected to the position five times. In May, 1903, he was appointed assistant secretary to United States Senator McCreary, of Kentucky. Is a member of the following orders: Independent Order of Good Templars (1878); Sigma Nu Fraternity (1885); Kentucky Press Association (1887); Masonic Fraternity (1895); Ancient Order of United Workingmen (1899); Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks (1900); Independent Order of Odd Fellows (1903); Daughters of Rebekah (1903). Joined the Presbyterian Church 1888, and made a deacon 1890. The following from the Richmond *Climax* (A. D. Miller, Editor), December, 1903, is republished:

"The latest accession to the colony of Richmond citizens at Washington is Mr. Clarence E. Woods, who has assumed the duties of Assistant Secretary to United States Senator James B. McCreary, of this city, who, with Mrs. McCreary, left here on November 3 to take up his residence at the splendid new Hotel Willard, so we see by the Washington dispatches to the *Times*, to remain there until the close of Congress, some time next June.

"Mr. Woods will be missed in many ways, for he was identified with nearly all the best activities of the city, in capacities that always called for service or sacrifice upon his part. His talents and purse were ever at the command of worthy objects, so much so that it has been said that Richmond has no more truly public-spirited citizen than Clarence Woods. For about fourteen years he edited the papers here with a skill that gave him an enviable reputation at home and throughout the State. He once received a letter from the President of the National Editorial Association saying his paper 'represented all that was truest and noblest in the inland journalism of Kentucky.' We have often heard Mr. Woods say, in discussing the prevalent habit of people asking free service of editors, that he had given gratis more of his time and talent than any member of any other profession of his acquaintance, 'for,' said he, 'people ask an editor and a preacher to do free that which they would not think of imposing upon a lawyer, a doctor, a merchant or a mechanic.' And yet he never refused a request—and his editorial brethren all know that since he temporarily left active journalism he has been ever responsive to their appeals for assistance. This fact warrants our personal tribute to gratitude now.

"There are many men in the community equally fitted for the countless positions Mr. Woods was constantly called upon to fill, but selfishness, or indifference, or laziness on their part and willingness upon his, made him subject to calls for services here or there. Not only for the living but for the dead he gave his time and talents.

"He has filled four pulpits here during the temporary absence of the pastors; at the graves of fraternal dead he has frequently performed the office of chaplin in the absence of the regular officers. At celebrations of the Odd Fellows and Daughters of Rebekah Lodges he has delivered addresses, and at the alumni banquet of the public school. The charity committee of the Elks Lodge can testify to his devoted services to the order, as well as having constantly served on its laborious committees on resolutions. The Prandial Club lately elected him secretary for the fourth time, he having displayed the highest capacity for preserving in interesting form the history of the meetings

of that excellent organization of professional and business men. Church celebrations, the Y. M. C. A., the Infirmary, public entertainments, regardless of denomination, always demanded his aid, and he entered into them with spirit and vigor.

"Recognizing the dominant element in his composition—fidelity to friends—and his fitness and devotion to the order, the national fraternity of Sigma Nu, with half a hundred lodges and thousands of members, has elected Mr. Woods five successive times Grand Recorder and Editor of its magazine, the '*Delta*,' the rival of the finest Greek fraternity magazines in America.

"As secretary of nearly every Democratic county convention here for fifteen years, as a fearless and effective champion of Democracy, and as the lifelong supporter of Hon. James B. McCreary, from his second race for Congress to the present hour, Mr. Woods commended himself to the graces of the Senator, whose action in making him his assistant secretary met with approval here and wherever he was known.

"As Mr. Woods's friend, and in the endeavor to repay some of the services he so freely performed for the *Climax* and its staff, this tribute is printed, believing it to be better to whisper in a listening ear than to sound it above a coffined form."

SKETCH 89.

MRS. MARY T. EUSTIS (Deceased).

The full maiden name of Mrs. Eustis was Mary Miller Creel, the first child of Henry E. Creel by his second wife, Mary McAfee, *nee* Woods. She was born in Louisville, Kentucky, February 26, 1860. Her mother died January 22, 1862, when Mary was not quite two years old. Her father died a few years later. She, therefore, probably had no recollection at all of her mother, and but little of her father. For about three years she lived in Lebanon, Kentucky, with the family of her uncle, Thomas C. Woods; and for about a year and a half with her uncle, Neander M. Woods, in St. Louis, Missouri. In June, 1871, she went to live with her half-brother, Mr. Buckner M. Creel, of Louisville, Kentucky, with whom she made her home until her marriage to Mr. Henry S. Tyler, June 7, 1882. She received her education principally at the private school of Miss Belle Peers, of Louisville. By Mr. Tyler she had three children, as follows: (a) HENRY GWATHMEY TYLER, who died March 11, 1887; (b) NANCY THOMPSON TYLER, who resides in Brookline, Massachusetts, with her step-father, Mr. J. Tracy Eustis; and (c) JOHN TIP TYLER, who also resides in Brookline with Mr. Eustis. Mary was left a widow about the close of 1895 by the death of Mr. Tyler, who was then the Mayor of Louisville. June 8, 1898, she was married to Mr. Joseph Tracy Eustis, of Brookline, Massachusetts. By her second husband Mary had one child, namely: WILLIAM TRACY EUSTIS, Second, who was born November 16, 1899, and lived but one week. Mary's own death occurred at Brookline only one day after this child was born—November 17, 1899—when nearly forty years of age. Her mother before her had surrendered her own life under precisely the same sad circumstances when only a little past thirty years old. Mary was a woman of handsome face and form, and of unusually attractive character. She was a professing Christian from early womanhood, and a member of the Episcopal Church. Her body, together with those of her mother, her first husband and her first-born child, rests in beautiful Cave Hill Cemetery, Louisville.

Mary McAfee Woods, whose second husband was Mr. Henry E. Creel, who was the mother of the subject of this sketch, was the sixth child of James Harvey and Sarah E. Woods. She was born in Harrodsburg, Kentucky, September 22, 1831. In 1844, when about thirteen years of age, she confessed Christ as her Saviour and was received into the Presbyterian Church of Harrodsburg under the ministry of the sainted Rev. Dr. John Montgomery. The testimony of those who knew her well is that she was uncommonly brilliant and beautiful as a young woman. She was high-spirited, and rather quick-tempered; and,

MRS. MARY TYLER EUSTIS
(DECEASED.)
[See Sketch No 89.]

NANCY THOMPSON TYLER.
[See Sketch No. 89.]

JOHN TIP TYLER
[See Sketch No 89.]

when conscious of being wronged, could be vindictive. She was graduated from Greenville Institute, Harrodsburg, when only sixteen. That school was presided over at the time by a Professor Mullins; and in after years it became Daughters College, and was conducted by the late John Augustus Williams for a long series of years. Mary Woods was undoubtedly named for the mother of her father—Mary McAfee, a daughter of James McAfee, the old pioneer who led an exploring and surveying party into Kentucky in the summer of 1773. For a few years after her graduation Mary taught school. On the nineteenth day of December, 1850, she was married to a Mr. Richmond Dedman, of Fayette County, Kentucky. Several of the sons of Samuel Dedman, of Albemarle County, Virginia, had settled in Kentucky about 1795-1810. One of these sons was Nathaniel Dedman, of Versailles, who was Mary's maternal grandfather. The Richmond Dedman who became Mary's first husband was, almost certainly, either a son or a grandson of one of Nathaniel Dedman's brothers, and hence a cousin to Mary. This marriage was a most happy one (so far as concerned the relations which existed between herself and her husband), but Mr. Dedman's life was cut short by death in less than one year after their marriage, leaving her a widow before she had reached her twentieth year. She did not have any child by this marriage.

Mrs. Dedman remained a widow for more than nine years after her first husband's death, during which period she was, for about six years, occupied with the duties of a teacher in the female school which her brother, the Rev. William H. Woods, was carrying on at Greensburg, Kentucky. While there she was more than once addressed by Mr. Henry E. Creel, of Louisville, a widower with several children, three of whom were grown. On the twenty-second of June, 1859, she and Mr. Creel were married, and she went with him to live in Louisville, his two younger children, both sons, coming under her care in the home. Mr. Creel was a man of kind heart, and endeavored to make his home a pleasant one for his second wife. By him she had two children, to wit: Mary Miller Creel, the subject of this sketch; and an infant, born but a few days before its mother's death, and which survived her only about ten days. Mrs. Creel passed away January 22, 1862, when but a little past her thirtieth year. Beautiful, accomplished, and attractive; and blessed, apparently, with the most vigorous health, and known for her merry and vivacious temperament; one would certainly have predicted for her not only a long, but a happy, life. And yet her career was not only brief, but mainly one of trial. She was called, in more ways than one, to drink the cup of humiliation and bitterness. But she died, as she had lived, a believer in Christ, and a member of the Presbyterian Church; and we doubt not she found, as she passed into the presence of her Lord, that earth hath no sorrows that heaven can not heal.

Mr. Henry S. Tyler, the first husband of Mary Miller Creel, was a member of one of the most prominent families of Louisville. He was born September 20, 1851. His father was Henry S. Tyler (whose name he bore) and his mother was Miss Rebecca Gwathmey. Mr. Tyler was well educated, and a man of high intelligence and great force of character. He entered commercial life on leaving school, and gradually rose to high position. As executor of the large estate of his deceased father he showed fine business capacity. For years he was prominently engaged in the insurance business. He finally drifted into political life, and was for two terms a member of the General Council of Louisville. In 1889 he stood for the mayoralty of the city, and was elected. In 1891 he was elected Mayor a second time, and for the third time in 1893. It was about the close of his third term that death claimed him for its own, he dying in his forty-fifth year. It was said of him by one who wrote of him at the time of his decease that Mayor Tyler "was one of the few men who are most liked by those who know them best." His two surviving children, Nancy Thomp-

J. HARVEY WOODS.
1792-1860.
FROM MINIATURE PAINTED IN 1816.
[See Sketch No. 90.]

SARAH E. (DEDMAN) WOODS,
1802-1860.
FROM PHOTO TAKEN IN 1858.
[See Sketch No. 90.]

SALLIE H. (BEHRE) WOODS.
LOUISVILLE, KY.
FROM PHOTO TAKEN IN 1898.
[See Sketch No. 90.]

ALICE (BIRKHEAD) WOODS.
1845-1883.
FROM PHOTO TAKEN IN 1869.
[See Sketch No. 90.]

REV NEANDER M. WOODS, D D.

LOUISVILLE, KY.

[See Sketch No. 90.]

son and John Tip, reside with their step-father, Mr. J. T. Eustis, in Brookline, Massachusetts, to whom they are devotedly attached.

SKETCH 90.

REV. NEANDER M. WOODS, LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY.

Rev. Neander M. Woods, the author of this work, was the last child of James Harvey and Sarah Everett Woods, and was born September 4, 1844, at Harrodsburg, Kentucky. He was educated at the schools of his native town, including Kentucky University, which had not yet been removed to Lexington. His father dying when he was young, he was thrown on his own resources while yet in his teens. For a time before the Civil War, and for several years after its close, he was engaged in the drug business. During the war he was in the Confederate Army (Cavalry Service). For a time he served in the First Tennessee Battalion, and later in the Sixth Kentucky Regiment; and for about six months was confined in Federal military prisons. After the war he took a special course at Michigan University (Ann Arbor) and graduated in the class of 1867, he having previously married Miss Alice Birkhead, January 3, 1866. During the last year of his experience in the drug business he read law in private, having for years preferred the legal profession to any other. As soon as it was practicable, he entered the Law Department of Washington University, St. Louis, and attended the lectures. In due time he was admitted to the bar of St. Louis. After practising law in that city for a time, he became convinced that he ought to enter the Gospel ministry; and, acting on the advice of Rev. Drs. James H. Brookes, Robert G. Brank and Robert P. Farris, he abandoned the law, and repaired to Union Seminary, Virginia, to study divinity. He had confessed Christ and united with the Presbyterian Church before attaining his twentieth year, but the question of entering the ministry had not received his special attention until a year or two before reaching his final decision. In the spring of 1873 he finished his course in the Theological Seminary, and was at once called to the pastorate of the Second Presbyterian Church, Norfolk, Virginia, where he labored nearly eight years. In March, 1881, he accepted a call to the First Presbyterian Church, Galveston, Texas, but his wife's health at once gave way there; and, acting on the urgent advice of her physicians, he resigned his charge at the close of 1881, and accepted a call to the Second Presbyterian Church, Charlotte, North Carolina. Here his wife died in June, 1883. In June, 1886, he was called to the First Presbyterian Church, Columbia, South Carolina. In June, 1887, the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by Central University, of Richmond, Kentucky. In the spring of 1889 he received a call from the Second Presbyterian Church, of Memphis, Tennessee, and here, perhaps, the largest and best work of his life was accomplished. In May, 1901, the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States met at Little Rock, Arkansas, and he was chosen Moderator of that body without opposition, by acclamation. During his Memphis pastorate, which continued for more than thirteen years, his church moved from its former location (corner of Main and Beale streets) and erected a new church at the corner of Hernando and Pontotoc streets. The lot and building and furnishings cost $115,000, and it was his privilege to see the whole paid for, and the church free of debt, before he left Memphis. In the early summer of 1902 the Second Presbyterian Church, of Louisville, Kentucky, gave him a hearty and practically unanimous call to become its pastor, and he began his pastorate in that field July 20, 1902, where he is still laboring.

After the death of his first wife he was married May 20, 1885, to Miss Sallie Henderson Behre, of Walterboro, South Carolina. By his first wife he had four children and by his last wife he has had five. One little daughter by each marriage died in infancy. The other seven children are now living, the three older ones being married and having families of their own. The children borne to him by his first wife were the following: 1, Emma

Birkhead, who married David Bell Macgowan, and resides in St. Petersburg, Russia; 2, Florence Boone, who married Henry H. Wade, and resides in Memphis, Tennessee; 3, Alice Dedman, who died when about four years old; and 4, Neander Montgomery, Jr., who married Miss Tallulah Gachet, and lives in Memphis, Tennessee. The three married children, above mentioned, are all original patrons of this work, and have sketches herein. See Sketches 91-92-93.

By his second marriage he has had the following children: 1, Alice Behre, who is now (1905) in the Senior Class of the Girls' High School, Louisville; 2, Annie Howe, who lived but a few months; 3, Everett Dedman, who is now (1905) in the Freshman Class of the Male High School, Louisville; 4, Carrie Webb, who is now (1905) in Grade No. 7 of the Kentucky Street School, Louisville; and 5, James McAfee, who is now (1905) in Grade No. 5 of the Kentucky Street School, Louisville. All of the seven living children are communicants of the Presbyterian Church, and the partners of the three married ones are also Presbyterians.

ALICE BIRKHEAD AND FAMILY.

Alice Birkhead, who was the first wife of Rev. Neander M. Woods, was born in Louisville, Kentucky, May 11, 1845. She was the first child of Mr. John Quinten Birkhead and Letitia, *nee* Boone. Her father's father was William Birkhead, and her father's mother was Miss Hannah Walker. William and Hannah had the following children: 1, Joseph, and 2, Charles, both of whom died in infancy; 3, William, Jr., who was for a time a locomotive engineer, and, later, a farmer; 4, Wallace; 5, John Quinten, who married Letitia Boone, and became the father of Alice; 6, Blackburn; 7, Elizabeth, who married Mr. Robert G. Kyle, lived many years in Louisville, and then moved to California, leaving two sons (William and Robert) and one daughter (Annie); and 8, Laura Holman, who moved with Mr. Kyle's family to California, there married a Judge Carr who has died, and now lives in East Oakland, California. John Q. Birkhead married Letitia Boone in 1844, and by her had two children, namely: 1, Alice, of whom this sketch treats; and 2, Emma, who married William R. Smyth (now dead), had by him a son, Albert, and a daughter, Alice. Mrs. Smyth and her daughter reside in St. Louis. Mr. Birkhead was for many years associated in business with Mr. R. G. Kyle, above-mentioned, in Louisville, where the firm carried on an iron and stove foundry. Mr. Birkhead died December 7, 1848, when only about thirty years old. He was buried in the old Eastern Cemetery, Louisville, in the Boone lot, and a neat monument marks his grave.

Alice Birkhead was educated, in part, in the Louisville public schools, partly in a school taught by a Mr. Gilchrist in Shelby County, Indiana, and partly at Science Hill, Shelbyville, Kentucky, under the care of Mrs. Julia Tevis, the famous educator. Alice boarded with Mrs. Tevis and attended her school for three years, and graduated from thence in June, 1863. She lived in Louisville till 1857, when her mother married Dr. James W. Smelser and moved to Shelby County, Indiana. About the year 1863 Dr. Smelser moved to Indianapolis and opened a drug store. January 3, 1866, she was married to Neander M. Woods at Indianapolis, then her home. She had confessed Christ early in life, and all her days was a conscientious and consistent Christian, as well as a person of the gentlest, kindest and most lovable disposition. While living in Norfolk (1873-1881), she showed slight symptoms of failing health, and one object her husband had in view in his removal to Galveston—under the advice of her physicians—was to benefit her physical condition. But the climate of the Gulf Coast proved injurious, and she soon began to fail. When she settled in Charlotte, North Carolina, in January, 1882, it was her hope, and her husband's, that the more bracing air of Carolina would suffice to arrest the progress of her disease. This, too, was but a vain hope; and after a long struggle with her ailment, and in spite of the best available medical attention, she steadily grew worse, and on the eighteenth of June, 1883,

she passed away after having bidden her children farewell and solemnly committed them to the covenant-keeping God. One of the highest testimonies to her loveliness of character was rendered by Dr. Smelser, who said, after having lived in the home with her for about ten years as her stepfather, that in all those years she had never, in a single instance, given him an unkind or disrespectful word or even look. He loved her as if she were his own child. Her characteristic traits were unfailing gentleness, abhorrence of strife, tender consideration for the feelings of others, modesty, self-depreciation, and absolute sincerity of soul. Her face and form were, by all who saw her, considered beautiful. Her eyes were blue, her hair nearly black, and her skin exceedingly fair. Her face nearly always wore a peculiarly pleasant smile when in the company of others. Shortly before her death, and fully aware that her case was absolutely hopeless, she wrote her beloved sister, Emma, that she had everything to live for, and then added—"But, when I think of what a Saviour I have in heaven, I have everything to die for." One of her last intelligible sentences was uttered while her dying hand rested on the head of her latest born, saying: "God will care for you, my son"—at once a prophecy and a mother's last prayer.

Letitia Boone, who married, first, Mr. Birkhead, and later on, Dr. Smelser, was born in Louisville, Kentucky, November 13, 1827. She was a daughter of William Boone by his wife Julia Ann, *nee* Settles, and her father was most probably descended from one of the brothers of Daniel Boone, the famous pioneer. Letitia had several brothers and sisters, to wit: 1, Jennie; 2, Henry; 3, Carrie; 4, Florence; and 5, Blanche. The native State of William Boone is not positively known, but it is reasonably certain it was Pennsylvania, if it was not Kentucky. He lived in Bourbon County, Kentucky, some years prior to his coming to Louisville. He and Julia, his wife, were citizens of Bourbon County when their marriage took place, which was about the year 1825. The parents of William were Jonathan Boone and Mary De-Haven. Jonathan probably migrated from Chester County, Pennsylvania, about 1785-1790, and he seems to have lived for a time at Maysville, Kentucky, and later at Lexington. He was a school teacher, but was rather dissipated, and very careless about his property rights. He once owned a fine body of land, a part of which is now covered by the city of Maysville, a gift from his father; but he allowed himself to be deprived of his inheritance, either through his failure to pay the taxes on it, or as the result of dishonesty on the part of some sharper. Jonathan and Mary had the following children, to wit: 1, James, who lived in Bourbon County, Kentucky, married and had issue; 2, William, who was born in 1789, married Julia Ann Settles, and became the father of Letitia and other children, as before noted; 3, Jonathan, Jr., who was born about 1795, lived most of his life in Bourbon County, Kentucky, married a Miss Sarah Nesbit, moved to Indianapolis, in 1865, and there died in 1866; 4, Nancy, who married a Mr. Shrader, and had issue; 5, Rebecca, who married John Messick, of Shelby County, Kentucky, and had issue; 6, Kate, who married a Mr. Lamb, and had issue; and 7, Mary, who married John Smelser, and had, among other children, James W. Smelser, who, in 1857, married Mrs. Letitia (Boone) Birkhead, and had by her one daughter, Lela, who married Joseph Lisle Woods, and now lives, a widow, in St. Louis, Missouri. It thus appears that Dr. Smelser's mother was an aunt of Letitia Boone, and hence that he and Letitia were first cousins. The father of the before-mentioned Jonathan Boone was Hugh Boone, of whom nothing very certain is known, but of whom it is believed that he was either a brother or nephew of Daniel Boone, the famous pioneer. Dr. Smelser was a man of excellent character, and successful in business. He moved from Indianapolis in March, 1869, to Memphis, Tennessee, and a few months later to Fort Smith, Arkansas, where he carried on a drug store. He died there early in the year 1873. He had been married three times,

and by each marriage had one child. By the first wife he had a son named Marshal, who died in Memphis, Tennessee. By the second he had a daughter named Mollie. By the third and last wife, Letitia, *nee* Boone, he had, as stated, a daughter Leila, who grew to be a highly cultured woman, married Mr. Joseph L. Woods, was left a widow in 1883, and now lives with her mother in St. Louis, Missouri.

SALLIE HENDERSON BEHRE AND HER ANCESTORS.

Sallie Henderson Behre, second wife of Rev. Neander M. Woods, is a daughter of Frederick Gustavus Behre and Caroline, *nee* Webb, Henderson. She was born and reared at Walterboro, Colleton County, South Carolina. She was educated partly at the schools of her native town, partly in Charleston, South Carolina, and partly at the Charlotte Female Institute, at Charlotte, North Carolina. May 20, 1885, she was married to Rev. Neander M. Woods, who was at the time pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church of Charlotte, North Carolina, by whom she has had three daughters and two sons, as elsewhere listed. Since her marriage she has lived in Charlotte, North Carolina; Columbia, South Carolina; Memphis, Tennessee; and Louisville, Kentucky, which is her present home. The portrait of her which is here given represents her as she appeared some years ago.

Frederick Gustavus Behre, the father of Sallie H., was born at the military barracks at Stoeda, on the River Elbe, Hanover, January 7, 1837. He was the only child of Brigadier-General Christian Behre by his wife Johanna Sprammman. General Behre was a soldier in the artillery service of the Kingdom of Hanover for about thirty years, and was with the Prussians under Blucher, who saved the day at Waterloo, in 1815. For his long military services he received from the king (Blind King George, of Hanover) a handsome gold medal, which is now in the possession of his son, Mr. Frederick G. Behre, of Walterboro, South Carolina. The inscription mentions "Thirty years of faithful service" as the ground of this honorable distinction. General Behre was probably born about the year 1785, and his wife in 1802. They were married in 1836, while he was living in barracks as a soldier. About 1844-5, the Revolution having begun, and King George having been deposed, General Behre resigned his place in the army and migrated to America, settling first at Charleston, South Carolina. He was a man of culture, a linguist, and a fine classical scholar, and he naturally chose teaching school as his vocation in his new home. In Charleston, however, he failed to find a good opening; and after some efforts in that city, he left his wife and son there and went to the North in search of a position. There he succeeded, but his career was suddenly cut short by death about 1847, at the age of about sixty-two. He was of French extraction, and possibly of Huguenot blood. Both he and his wife were devoted members of the Lutheran Church. His wife survived him nearly forty years, dying at the home of her son in Walterboro, about 1886. Gottingen was her native city.

Mr. Frederick G. Behre was left fatherless when in his eighth year. His mother and he were still in Charleston, General Behre not having completed his arrangements for removing his wife and son to the North, when he was cut off by death. Mrs. Behre was obliged to work in order to support herself and son, and to give her son a good education. He attended various schools in Charleston, graduating from the City High School. She then sent him to the South Carolina College, at Columbia, and from that institution he was duly graduated about the year 1857. For a year or two after his graduation he occupied his time in studying law and teaching in Charleston and elsewhere. At the outbreak of the Civil War (1861) he had begun to practise law. Enlisting in the Confederate service at the beginning of the war, he served in the Commissary Department with the rank of captain till the war ended. While the war was in progress he was married to Miss Caroline Webb Henderson, of Walterboro, whom he had become acquainted

with while teaching school in that place. Captain Behre was a man of liberal culture and decided literary attainments. He learned to read and speak both German and French with ease. Most persons would take him for a Frenchman. He was very successful in the practise of law until the failure of his health some years ago, when he was obliged to forego all professional labor.

Caroline Webb Henderson, the wife of Captain F. G. Behre, and the mother of Sallie H. Behre, was born in Walterboro, South Carolina, January 11, 1843. She was the daughter of Daniel Sullivan Henderson by his first wife, Caroline Rebecca Webb. She was sent to school to Charleston, South Carolina, where she enjoyed fine educational advantages at the female seminary conducted by the late Rev. Dr. Ferdinand Jacobs, of precious memory. As already noted, she became the wife of Captain F. G. Behre, of the C. S. Army, and by him she had five children, who lived to maturity, as follows:

(a) Florence Gustavia Behre was born in Charleston, South Carolina. She attended the schools of her native town, and also the Charlotte, North Carolina, Female Institute, from which school she graduated. She married Mr. Allen C. Izard, of Walterboro, a young gentleman belonging to one of the most prominent families of Carolina. Mr. Izard has for many years been an official in the freight department of the Southern Railway, and owns a beautiful home in Rock Hill, South Carolina, where he has long resided. The only child of Mr. and Mrs. Izard is a daughter, Alma De Lancy.

(b) The second child of Frederick G. and Caroline W. Behre was Sarah Henderson, who married Rev. Neander M. Woods, in May, 1885, as appears from the account of her given on a preceding page.

(c) The third child of Frederick G. and Caroline W. Behre was Joanna. She was educated in the schools of her native town, and at the Charlotte (N. C.) Female Institute. For some time she has been engaged in teaching at the Presbyterian Orphanage, located at Anchorage, Kentucky, one of the suburbs of Louisville.

(d) The fourth child of Frederick G. and Caroline W. Behre was Susan Webb. Her education was gotten partly in the schools of her native town, partly at the Winthrop Training School of Columbia, South Carolina, and partly at the University of Chicago. She chose teaching as her life-work early in her career, and has taught in a number of schools in her native State, and two years at Bellewood Seminary, Kentucky. She is now (1904) a member of the faculty of The Higbee School for Young Ladies, the most important educational institution in Memphis, Tennessee.

(e) The fifth child of Frederick G. and Caroline W. Behre was Daniel Henderson. He was trained in the schools of his native town, and at the University of Georgia. For a time he taught school, and for two years edited a paper in his native town—*The Colleton Press*. The law, however, was his chosen profession; and after preparing himself for it, and being duly licensed, he concluded to settle in a new county of his State just established (Dorchester), and made his home in its county seat, St. George. A young man of high Christian character, lovable disposition and bright mind, he was just entering upon what looked to his friends to be a most prosperous career. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention which met in 1901 to frame a new Constitution for South Carolina, and he was spoken of as a candidate for Lieutenant-Governor of his native State. By one of those strange, shocking providences, which now and then come to blast the highest of human hopes and try the faith of the strongest Christian, this beautiful and promising young life was brought to a sudden close. While alone in his office, late at night, about the middle of February, 1902, getting ready for the session of court to begin next morning, he was attacked with an ordinary spell of vertigo, which, for the instant, rendered him unconscious. In this condition he fell forward into a hot fire, and ere he could regain consciousness his face and head were fear-

fully burned beyond all hope of recovery. When rescued from his dreadful situation it was too late to prevent fatal injury. He had the best of care and professional attention, but in a few days it was apparent his end was near. During the night just before he passed away, as his sister was sponging his once handsome, but now mutilated, face and eyes, he said to her, in Christian faith and submission: "To-morrow you will see the light of the sun, but I shall behold the glory of God." And it was even so—the morning on earth broke bright and fair, but ere the sun had fully risen his noble spirit had gone to be with Christ, March 1, 1902. Like his mother and all his sisters, he had early in life given his heart to God, and the only sorrow of the loved ones was for themselves and not for him.

(f) F. G. and C. W. Behre also had a sixth child, a son named EDWARD PALMER, who lived but two years. Besides, there were two other children born to Mr. and Mrs. Behre, but neither lived more than a few weeks.

Mrs. Behre's father, Daniel S. Henderson, was a successful lawyer, and an elder of the Walterboro Presbyterian Church. Her mother, Miss Caroline Rebecca Webb, came of a most excellent family, and was reared an Episcopalian; but after her marriage she connected herself with her husband's church, and all of her children were brought up in the Presbyterian faith. The home in which Mrs. F. G. Behre got her training was one of moderate wealth, godly influences, and liberal culture. All of her life she has been an active and useful Christian, and devoted to reading. Naturally of a gentle and refined nature, of strong intelligence, dignified bearing, and sympathetic heart, she has throughout life occupied a high place in the affections and esteem of her acquaintances. Few ladies are so well informed on the Bible, general history, and the best class of fiction. The type of educated, low-country South Carolinians, of which she is a representative, has no superior in any part of our country. Among her ancestors (presently to be considered) are to be found some of the most distinguished and honored names which adorn the early Colonial and Revolutionary history of South Carolina.

Daniel Sullivan Henderson, the father of Mrs. F. G. Behre, was of Scotch-Irish extraction, and was born in Charleston, South Carolina, in 1801. He was twice married, and left five children of the first wife, and five of the last wife. His father was Daniel Henderson, who was probably from North Ireland, and he came to America after the Revolution. He was engaged in iron manufacturing in Charleston, and there are now in that city iron fences which were constructed in his establishment. He had a brother, Lieutenant-Colonel Wm. Henderson, who was a gallant soldier in South Carolina. He married Mrs. Jessie Kirkwood (*nee* Melville), the widow of William Kirkwood, who had one son, by her first marriage, namely; William, Jr., and two by her second, namely: Daniel S., and Edward, who was a physician. Wm. Kirkwood, Jr., was for many years Collector of Customs for the Port of Charleston, and died in Walterboro at an advanced age, about 1886. He left one daughter, Jessie, who became the wife of Hon. Campbell G. Henderson, of Walterboro. Both Mr. and Mrs. Campbell G. Henderson still reside in Walterboro, and have the following children, to wit: (a) CARRIE, who married George Fraser, and is now a widow, and living in Walterboro; (b) LOTTIE, who married Rev. T. P. Burgess, and now resides at Edgefield, South Carolina; (c) LE ROY G., who is a Presbyterian minister, and has charge of a church at Griffin, Georgia; and (d) LILLY, who is single, and lives with her parents. The first wife of Daniel Sullivan Henderson, and the mother of Mrs. F. G. Behre, was Caroline Rebecca Webb, who was born December 13, 1815. She died May 6, 1849, in her thirty-fourth year. She was descended from the distinguished Pinckney family, of which we shall presently give some particulars. The following children were born to Daniel Sullivan Henderson and Caroline Rebecca Webb, his first wife, to wit:

(a) The first child of Daniel S. Henderson and

Caroline R. Webb was Sarah Webb, born in 1835. She has never married, and lives in Walterboro, South Carolina, her native place.

(b) The second child was named Jessie Melville, who was born about 1837, married her cousin, William Henderson, and died in 1879, leaving one daughter, Eva, who married Edmund Rivers. Mr. and Mrs. Rivers have three daughters, and now live in Charleston.

(c) Campbell Gilchrist Henderson was the third child, and was born about 1838. He married Jessie Kirkwood, as above stated, by whom he has four children now living, as previously shown. Mr. C. G. Henderson studied law, and all of his mature life has been engaged in the practice of that profession, or in fulfilling the duties of offices of his native county and State. He is a ruling elder of the Walterboro Presbyterian Church.

(d) The fourth child of Daniel S. and Caroline (Webb) Henderson was Caroline Webb, who was born January 11, 1843, and of whom some account has already been given.

(e) The fifth child was named William, who did not reach maturity.

(f) The sixth child was Daniel Sullivan Henderson, Jr., who was born in Walterboro, South Carolina in 1849. He graduated at the College of Charleston with first honors, taught school for a time, studied law with Hon. Perineau Finley, of Aiken, South Carolina, and was, later, by him admitted to partnership in the practice of law. He married Miss Lilly Ripley about 1874, by whom he has three sons living, to wit: Perineau Finley, who is a lawyer, and who married Miss Grace Powell; Daniel Sullivan (third); and Ripley. Hon. D. S. Henderson, of Aiken, is a lawyer of eminence, and stands among the first members of the bar in his native State. He has been for many years one of the attorneys of the Southern Railway. He has been solicited by friends to become a candidate for several of the highest offices in the gift of his State, and some of these offices he has filled. He is an elder in the Presbyterian Church of Aiken, and a man of sterling character and ability. He is not a typical politician whom corrupt men could use, but a gentleman of honor and cultivation who stands for principle. His half-brother, Hon. Edward Palmer Henderson, is his law partner.

The second wife of Daniel S. Henderson was Charlotte Matilda Fraser, who bore to him six children, as follows:

(a) The first child of Daniel S. Henderson and his second wife was Alexander Fraser, who was born about 1853, married Miss Alice Neyle, and died in 1885, leaving the following children: 1, Campbell Gilchrist, who resides in Tennessee; 2, Alice, who resides with her widowed mother in Walterboro; 3, Charles, who is a mechanical engineer and lives in Columbia, South Carolina; 4, Julia, who lives with her mother; and 5, Alexander F., who lives with his mother.

(b) The second child by the second wife was Edward Palmer, who was born about 1855, studied law, married a Miss Johnson, and is a partner of the Hon. Daniel S. Henderson, at Aiken, South Carolina, as above noted. He has several children. He is an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and a gentleman of the highest standing, and greatly esteemed by all who know him.

(c) The third child by the second wife was Charles, who died early in life.

(d) The fourth child by his second wife was Franklin Elmore, who was born about 1859. He married Miss Kate Crawford, and resides at Bath, South Carolina, where for many years he has been the superintendent of the extensive kaolin works located at that place. He is an active member of the Presbyterian Church. He has several children.

(e) The fifth child by his second wife was Charlotte Matilda, who is unmarried, and lives in Walterboro.

(f) The sixth and last child of Daniel S. Henderson by his last wife was Sophie, who married R. Ludlow Fraser. Mr. Fraser resides in Walterboro, where he is cashier of a bank, and an elder in the Presbyterian Church. Mr. and Mrs. Fraser have two children, Henderson and Ludlow, Jr.

Caroline Rebecca Webb (born in 1815, married

Daniel S. Henderson, and died in 1849) was the daughter of Charles Webb by his wife Sarah S. Webb. The said Charles Webb was the son of Benjamin Webb by his wife Anna Pinckney; and his wife Sarah S. Webb was the daughter of William Webb (No. 1) and Margaret D'Oyley. The said Benjamin Webb, who was the father of Charles Webb and the husband of Anna Pinckney, was the son of William Webb (No. 2) and his wife Sarah Miles. Anna Pinckney, wife of Benjamin Webb, was the daughter of William Pinckney and Ruth Cotesworth. And the William Webb (No. 1), who was the husband of Margaret D'Oyley and the father of the Sarah S. Webb who married Charles Webb, was the son of a Mr. Webb whose wife was, as is supposed, a Miss Brewton. And the Margaret D'Oyley, who married William Webb (No. 1), was the daughter of Daniel D'Oyley by his wife Rebecca Pinckney. The writer has no means of knowing how this Rebecca Pinckney was related to the other Pinckneys noted herein. The William Pinckney, who married Ruth Cotesworth, and was the father of Anna Pinckney, was the son of Thomas Pinckney (No. 1). Said Thomas Pinckney (No. 1) married a Miss Cotesworth, an aunt of the Ruth Cotesworth just mentioned as the wife of William Pinckney. Hence, William and Ruth were first cousins. The Webbs were people of high Christian character, members of the Episcopal Church, and closely related to some of the most prominent families of South Carolina. Charles Webb, who married a Miss Sarah S. Webb, and who was the father of Caroline Rebecca Webb, was also the father of two sons (Edward and Benjamin), who were Episcopal ministers of the anti-ritualistic type, godly, consecrated and evangelistic. Mr. Charles Webb, now living in Charleston, a dry goods merchant, and a gentleman of high character, is a son of the Rev. Benjamin Webb just referred to.

The head of the celebrated Pinckney family in America was Thomas Pinckney (No. 1), who was born and reared and married in England, and migrated to South Carolina in 1687. His wife was a Miss Cotesworth. Thomas (No. 1) had three sons of whom we know, as follows:

(a) Charles Cotesworth (No. 1), who returned to England without taking any specially prominent part in public life in America.

(b) The next son of Thomas (No. 1) was Thomas Pinckney (No. 2), who was Chief Justice of South Carolina, and a distinguished lawyer. He had two sons, to wit: 1, Charles Cotesworth (No. 2), who was, perhaps, the most distinguished member of the family. He was sent to Paris in 1783 by President Washington to adjust the delicate questions connected with the treaty with Great Britain which ended the Revolution. His memorable words—"Millions for defence; not one cent for tribute"—will be remembered as long as the American Republic lives in history. 2, The other son of Thomas (No. 2) was Thomas Pinckney (No. 3). He was born in Charleston in 1750, and he and his brother, Charles Cotesworth (No. 2), were educated at Westminster and Oxford, England. He got his legal training in The Temple, and was admitted to the English Bar in 1770. Returning to Charleston, he began to practise law there in 1772. In 1775 he entered the Continental Army as a Lieutenant. He served on the staffs of General Lincoln and Count d'Estaing. He was severely wounded at Camden, and was thereby compelled to forego further service in the field, and resumed the practise of law. President Washington appointed him minister to the Court of St. James in 1792, and to Spain in 1794. In 1799 he entered the United States Congress. In the War of 1812 he was made a Major General by President Madison and served with distinction in that conflict. His brother, Charles Cotesworth, was the third president of the Society of the Cincinnati, and he succeeded him as the fourth.

(c) The youngest son of Thomas (No. 1) was William Pinckney, who was born in 1703, and married Ruth Cotesworth. He was educated in England, and on returning to South Carolina entered on merchandising and planting. He was for years Commissioner in Equity. He died in

1766. William had one daughter and three sons, to wit: 1, Anna Pinckney, who married Benjamin Webb, and became the mother of Charles Webb, and the grandmother of Caroline Rebecca Webb, and the great-grandmother of Caroline W. Henderson. 2, Charles Pinckney, who was a distinguished jurist, and one of the framers of the original U. S. Constitution. 3, Thomas Pinckney (No. 4) was the third child of William and Ruth. He was a gallant soldier in the French and Indian Wars, and in the Revolution. At the storming of Quebec he was present, having the rank of Colonel, and possibly a staff officer. When the gallant English commander, General Wolfe, received his fatal wound in that famous conflict, Colonel Pinckney caught him, and he expired in Colonel Pinckney's arms. 4, William Pinckney, Jr., was the fourth child of William and Ruth. He was a soldier in the Revolutionary Army. His plantation on the Ashepoo River was called "The Dawn of Hope," and beneath the grand old live oaks on the spacious lawn President Monroe, as he passed through Carolina, partook of an elegant entertainment given by Mr. Pinckney in his honor.

SKETCH 91.

MRS. D. B. MACGOWAN, ST. PETERSBURG, RUSSIA.

Emma Birkhead Woods was the first child of Rev. Neander M. Woods by his first wife, Alice, *nee* Birkhead, and was born in Indianapolis, Indiana, where her father was then living and engaged in the drug business. She went with her parents in their several moves—to Memphis, Tennessee; Fort Smith, Arkansas; St. Louis, Missouri; Norfolk, Virginia; Galveston, Texas; Charlotte, North Carolina; Columbia, South Carolina; and again to Memphis, Tennessee. She was a child past six years of age when her father moved to Norfolk to take charge of the Second Presbyterian Church in that city, and here she spent nearly eight years of her girlhood. While there, when twelve and a half years old, she made a profession of religion. There she studied in the Leech-Wood School, and in the Norfolk Female College. She attended Sayre Institute, Lexington, Kentucky, in 1882. She went to Charlotte about six months after her parents had removed thither, and there she attended the Charlotte Female Institute for two years, graduating in June, 1884. After graduating she taught school in Charlotte for nearly two years; and after her parents moved to Columbia she engaged in the same vocation there for a time. She also taught for a while in Memphis in the girl's school conducted by a Mrs. Tucker. On the fifth day of April, 1894, she was married at the Second Presbyterian Church, Memphis, Tennessee, by her father, to Mr. David Bell Macgowan, and went with him at once to reside in St. Louis, where he had been for a short time with the *Post-Dispatch,* employed in newspaper work. From St. Louis Mr. Macgowan removed to Chicago about the year 1896, to accept a position with the Chicago *Tribune.* In October, 1899, Mrs. Macgowan went, with her three children, to Berlin, Germany, whither her husband had preceded her a few months, to be the special correspondent of the Chicago *Tribune.* After a residence of more than two years in Berlin, she removed with her husband to St. Petersburg, Russia, where he had been engaged to represent the American Associated Press. In Russia they remained about two years, when, in December, 1903, Mr. Macgowan was sent back to Berlin by the Associated Press. During her five and a half years' residence in Europe Mrs. Macgowan, along with her husband, has enjoyed exceptional opportunities for seeing Europe and learning a great deal, at first hand, about Germany, Russia, Finland and other countries, and for becoming versed in the languages and customs of the several nationalities with which she has been thrown. Quite recently Mr. Macgowan has again moved to St. Petersburg to represent the *London Standard.* The following exhibit presents the names of the five children of Mr. and Mrs. Macgowan in the order of birth, as follows: (a) BIRKHEAD, who was born September 6, 1895, in St. Louis; (b) EVERETT, born January 6, 1898, and (c) MARY LOCKE, born June 30, 1899,

in Chicago; (d) Basil Finis, who was born May 25, 1901, in St. Petersburg, Russia; and (e) Carrick Bell, who was born December, 1903, in Berlin.

David Bell Macgowan is a son of Evander Locke Macgowan by his wife Mary Jane, *nee* Burrows, and was born in Shelby County, Tennessee, near Memphis. In January, 1881, his parents moved to Memphis, and in the schools of that city he received his earlier training. He attended Washington and Lee University, and was graduated therefrom in 1890. Later he went to Europe and studied in the University of Halle, and in that of Berlin. Before going abroad he engaged in newspaper work in Memphis. Very early in his college course he seems to have determined upon a literary career, and newspaper work fell in with his general aim. It has been remarked by men in Memphis, who watched his career, that he was one of the few young men connected with reporting who devote themselves seriously to their work and keep free of the common vices of that class. He was sober, industrious and upright; and early in life made a profession of religion and united with the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, of which his father was a ruling elder. In the fall of 1893 he returned from Germany, and soon afterwards made an engagement with the St. Louis *Post-Dispatch*. He also worked for the St. Louis *Republic* for a time. In 1896 Mr. Macgowan went to Chicago and took a position with the *Tribune*, of that city. In May, 1899, the *Tribune*, needing a special correspondent at the German capital, sent him to Berlin in that capacity. In 1901, the *Tribune* composed its differences with the American Associated Press, and discontinued its special agencies in the several European capitals, and the latter organization employed him to represent it at St. Petersburg. There he resided until December, 1903, when he was transferred back to Berlin. While doing his work for his regular employers, Mr. Macgowan was a diligent student of the history and literature of both Germany and Russia, and now and then he has been called on by journals of the highest class in America and England to write special articles on various living topics of the day. Owing to the character of his employments he was necessarily brought into close touch with men of high official and literary character, which gave him excellent opportunities for advancement and improvement. His knowledge of internal conditions in Russia, Finland, Poland and Germany is the result, not of flying trips on fast railways trains, or mere tourist opportunities, but of the most careful study, for years, while actually on the ground. On this account journals like *The Century Magazine* often employ him to furnish articles upon the social, industrial and political situation in the countries where he has spent the last six years of his life. December 1, 1904, Mr. Macgowan resigned his connection with the American Associated Press, and soon afterwards accepted the position of special correspondent of the London *Standard* at St. Petersburg, to which city he has gone to live a second time. Very recently he has been granted personal interviews with Count Tolstoi, and has also been most cordially entertained by some of the leading Polish noblemen at Warsaw, while engaged in literary work there.

John Macgowan, the great-great-grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born in Edinburg about 1726. He was successively a Methodist, an Independent and a Baptist preacher. From December 15, 1766, till his death, November 25, 1780, he was the pastor of a Baptist chapel in Devonshire Square, London. He was buried in the famous old Non-conformist cemetery of Bunhill Fields. One of his sons, Ebenezer Macgowan, came to Virginia in 1783, when a boy of sixteen. About 1817 he moved to Rutherford County, Tennessee, and died there at an advanced age. Thomas, the son of Ebenezer Macgowan, was born in 1801, and moved to Shelby County, Tennessee, in 1836, and died there in 1880. Evander Locke Macgowan, son of Thomas Macgowan, and father of the subject of this sketch, was born August 22, 1835, and now resides in Memphis, Tennessee. Evander and his

only brother, David, served in the Confederate Army throughout the Civil War. The mother of Evander L. Macgowan was Miss Martha Jones Locke. Her family were among the early settlers of Shelby County, Tennessee. The Lockes migrated to America prior to the Revolution of 1776, and two of Martha J. Locke's brothers served with General Jackson in the War of 1812. Mary Jane Burrows, who became the wife of Evander L. Macgowan, was born February 19, 1838, and on the nineteenth of December, 1856, she was married. Her father, Rev. Reuben Burrows, D. D., was one of the pioneers of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, and was born in North Carolina, and moved to West Tennessee when a young man. The mother of Mary Jane Burrows was Elizabeth Bell, a daughter of John Bell. Said John Bell was a soldier in the War of 1812, and was with General Jackson at the Battle of the Horse Shoe. All of the brothers of Mrs. Evander L. Macgowan were soldiers in the Confederate Army during the Civil War.

SKETCH 92.

MRS. H. H. WADE, MEMPHIS, TENNESSEE.

The full maiden name of Mrs. Wade was Florence Boone Woods. In giving her the name of "Boone" her parents desired to recognize the relationship which her mother's mother sustained to the family of which Daniel Boone, the famous pioneer, was a member. Letitia Boone, who married, first, John Q. Birkhead, and, later, Dr. J. W. Smelser, was a descendant of one of the brothers of Daniel Boone, as is reasonably probable. This is fully shown in a foregoing section devoted to the Boones. Florence Boone Woods was the second child of Rev. Xeander M. Woods by his wife Alice, *nee* Birkhead, and was born at Madison Court House, Virginia, July 18, 1872. Her father was then pursuing his course of preparation for the ministry, and was spending the summer vacation of Union Theological Seminary in Madison County, Virginia, in missionary work, under the direction of West Hanover Presbytery. Florence was baptized when only a few months old by the late Rev. Dr. R. L. Dabney in the chapel of Union Seminary, Prince Edward County, Virginia. It would therefore seem well-nigh impossible for her to be anything but a Presbyterian. When her father settled in Norfolk, Virginia, as pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church, she went along as "the baby" of the young pastor's little family. There she resided nearly eight years, and there she began her school days. In March, 1881, she went with her parents to Galveston, Texas; and in January, 1882, to Charlotte, North Carolina, where she attended the Charlotte Female Institute, an excellent school conducted by the late Rev. W. R. Atkinson. This school she attended about four years. While living in Charlotte she lost her mother—June 18, 1883. The last of June, 1886, she moved, along with her father, to Columbia, South Carolina, which was her home till May, 1889. While living in Columbia she attended the public schools of that city. In the fall of 1889 she entered the Clara Conway Institute, Memphis, from which institution she was graduated in June, 1891. On the eleventh of June, 1896, she was married to Mr. Henry Harrison Wade, of Memphis, Tennessee, by her father in the Second Presbyterian Church. She has had three children, all sons, as follows: (a) Xeander Woods Wade, who was born March 19, 1899; (b) Henry Harrison Wade, Junior, who was born July 21, 1901; and (c) Munson Lang Wade, who was born October 11, 1903.

Mr. Henry Harrison Wade was born in Memphis, Tennessee, May 4, 1869, and was the youngest child of the late Henry Wade by his wife Susan, *nee* Lang. Henry Wade was born in Bridgeport, Connecticut, August 25, 1813, and was a son of Nathaniel Wade by his wife Ruth, *nee* Somers. Henry Wade settled in Memphis when it was a small town noted for its unpaved, muddy streets, and its promise of rapid growth in the near future. The Second Presbyterian Church, Memphis, had been organized Saturday, December 28, 1844, and Henry Wade was one of the first persons to be re-

ceived into the new church after its organization. When the congregation began, in 1846, the erection of their first house of worship at the corner of Main and Beale streets, Mr. Wade was one of the four members who gave a thousand dollars each towards its construction. In July, 1849, he was made a ruling elder of the Second Church, an office which he filled with credit till his death, nearly thirty-one years thereafter. He was the superintendent of the Sunday-School from 1856 to 1874. For a long period he carried on a book store in Memphis. His death occurred January 6, 1880. He left three children, as follows: 1, Susie L., the wife of Mr. E. Witzmann; 2, Belle, who now lives with Mr. and Mrs. Witzmann, in Memphis; and 3, the subject of this sketch.

Susan, *nee* Lang, the mother of Henry Harrison Wade and wife of the late Henry Wade, was born in Bath, New Hampshire, January 25, 1823, and died in Memphis July 4, 1895. Her father was Sherburn Lang, born July 25, 1782, and died October 5, 1857; and her mother was Mehetabel Ricker, born April 5, 1797, and died in 1866. Mehetabel Ricker's mother was Susan Salter, who was born in England, and came to America when quite young, both of her parents dying on the ship coming over. The before-mentioned Sherburn Lang's father, named Samuel Lang, who served as a soldier in the Revolutionary Army, built one of the first houses ever erected in Bath, New Hampshire, and died November 8, 1828.

Mr. Henry Harrison Wade was educated in the Memphis public schools. For a number of years he has been engaged in the well-known music house of E. Witzmann, his brother-in-law, at Memphis. He and his wife are connected with the church of which his father was for so many years an honored member and officer.

SKETCH 93.

N. M. WOODS, JR., MEMPHIS, TENNESSEE.

Neander Montgomery Woods, Jr., was the fourth child of Rev. Neander M. Woods by his wife Alice, *nee* Birkhead, and was born in Norfolk, Virginia, May 11, 1876—his mother's thirty-first anniversary. The first five years of his life were spent in Norfolk. He accompanied his parents to Galveston, Texas, in March, 1881; and to Charlotte, North Carolina, in January, 1882. In June, 1883, when he was a little past his seventh year he lost his mother. He was with his father in his move to Columbia, South Carolina, at the close of June, 1886; and to Memphis in the spring of 1889, when he was about thirteen years old. His education was begun in Charlotte, and continued in Columbia and Memphis. About 1890 he went to St. Louis and entered the Manual Training School of Washington University, making his home for the time with his grandmother, Mrs. Smelser, who lived in St. Louis. He was there about a year and a half, but the climate of that city, in winter, was too severe, and he was sent to Vanderbilt University, Nashville, Tennessee. Having developed considerable liking for mechanical lines of work, he took the course in civil engineering. He spent the last two years of his college training at the Alabama Polytechnic Institute, Auburn, Alabama, from which institution he was duly graduated in June, 1898, having chosen architecture as his life-work. In November, 1898, he was married to Miss Tallulah Gachet, of Auburn, Alabama. For a time he worked in the office of a prominent architect in Chicago, and later on formed a partnership with Mr. B. C. Alsup, an experienced and well-known builder and architect of Memphis, Tennessee, with whom Mr. Woods is still associated. The firm of Alsup & Woods has planned and erected a great many of the most important buildings in and around Memphis, and no firm in that growing city stands higher than theirs, and none is kept more steadily employed. Mr. Woods is a student of all the various branches of work relating to the profession, is constantly adding to his architectural library, and aims to keep abreast of the times.

Miss Tallulah Gachet, who became the wife of Mr. Woods in 1898, is the only daughter of Captain Charles Gachet by his wife Tallulah, *nee*

Lampkin, and was born and reared in Auburn, Alabama. On her mother's side she is descended from Colonel Joshua Houghton, John Crutchfield, and Lieutenant Thomas Wagnan, all of whom were Revolutionary soldiers from Georgia. On her father's side she is descended from Harrison Jones, of Virginia, who was the first soldier to be voted a pension by the United States Congress, he having suffered the loss of one of his legs at the Battle of Guilford Court House, March 15, 1781. Captain James Scott, of Prince Edward County, Virginia, and his father, Thomas Scott, who were patriots in the Revolution, were of the ancestors of Mrs. Woods's father. She also claims descent from the Colonial families of Baytop, Strachey, Collier, Cox and Major Lawrence Smith. The Strachey family can be traced back for nearly six hundred years, Sir John Strachey, one of its members, having been one of the twenty knights made such by the investiture of Edward, The Black Prince, in 1337. John Cox was a member of the Court appointed by Virginia to settle all disputed questions between the Indians and Whites in Lancaster County, and he became the husband of the only daughter and heiress of William Strachey. Dr. Charles Gachet, Mrs. Woods's paternal grandfather, came to America after the Revolution, and was on the Island of Santa Domingo at the time of the insurrection of 1791, and his life was saved by his body servant.

Mr. and Mrs. Woods have two children, as follows: (a) Charles Gachet Woods, who was born July 12, 1900; and (b) Tallulah Gachet Woods, who was born May 10, 1904.

WOODS-MCAFEE MEMORIAL

PART FOUR

THE APPENDICES

A—JOURNALS OF JAMES AND ROBERT MCAFEE
KEPT IN MAY–AUGUST, 1773

B—THREE ANCIENT PIONEER ROADS OF INTEREST
TO BOTH WOODSES AND MCAFEES

C—SOME ANCIENT DOCUMENTS OF SPECIAL
INTEREST TO THE WOODSES

APPENDIX A.

JOURNALS OF JAMES AND ROBERT McAFEE, AND NOTES BY THE AUTHOR.

The tour of the McAfee Company from Botetourt County, Virginia, to the wilderness of Kentucky in the summer of 1773, had, in some degree, a causal connection with the settlement of the latter region; and no complete history of Kentucky could be written without taking it into account. Marshall, Butler, Collins, etc., in their histories of the State; President Roosevelt, in his valuable and entertaining work, The Winning of the West; Davidson, in his History of the Presbyterian Church in Kentucky; and a multitude of other historical writers, have treated of it more or less at length. Gen. R. B. McAfee, who was a son of the Robert McAfee who kept one of these Journals, and a nephew of the James McAfee who wrote the other, left behind him an autobiography, in manuscript, in which he not only gave a narrative of the tour of 1773 based upon the two Journals, but also embodied a number of additional items concerning the tour which he had gotten from the lips of his uncle James. These two Journals, however, constitute our principal basic authorities for that tour, they being the written records of two of the main actors in the events to which they refer, made at the time. For this reason it has been deemed highly important that these ancient documents should be put in print for permanent preservation, they never having been published before.

Inasmuch as the exploring and surveying tour recounted in these Journals was made one hundred and thirty years ago, when there were no roads or settlements of white men anywhere in Kentucky, and when only a dozen or more of its numberless water-courses had as yet received names, it is easy to understand that the route travelled by these men could not be intelligible to the average reader. The author of this volume has given the spare moments of about a year to locating, as exactly as possible, the precise route travelled by the McAfees in going to, and returning from, the Kentucky wilderness. By careful study of the excellent large-scale maps of the United States Geological Survey, by personal visits to some of the localities traversed by the McAfee Company, and especially by a voluminous correspondence with persons now residing along the line of the route believed to have been followed by these explorers, the author has been able to locate, with almost entire certainty, all of the more important places referred to in the Journals. The results of his labor he has, to a great extent, embodied in a series of maps to be found in this work.

The two Journals will here be given side by side in parallel columns; and by means of copious notes, recorded on the pages of this volume next following the Journals themselves, the records made by these two men will be fully elucidated. The reader is asked to study the notes as he goes along, making frequent reference, also, to the several maps which are valuable commentaries on the Journals, and helpful, likewise, to a clear understanding of the notes themselves.

It will be seen that the Journal of James McAfee begins abruptly, apparently on the 9th of June, and as though some of its pages were wanting. It is likely James and Robert both began their Journals on the 27th day of May, when they probably left the Salt Spring on the Great Kanawha River a few miles above where Charleston, W. Va., now stands, and embarked on that stream in the canoes they had built at that point. The loss, however, is inconsiderable, for the first few days of their journey by boat were not especially important, so far as known. Besides, the Journal of Robert supplies us with a record of their movements almost from the very day of their embarkation at the Salt Spring, which is still to be seen five miles above the city of Charleston, West Virginia.

Several things which will strike the attentive reader of these Journals are worth noting here. For one thing, there are no such allusions to the points of the compass as would indicate that any one of the five men of the party had a compass with him. There are many remarks on the directions which they went, but all seem to be only the hasty guesses of men accustomed to judge by the sun and other heavenly bodies. We may therefore rightly expect to find their estimates of direction not always quite accurate, for they were

continually turning about and changing their course, and often times the sky would be overcast with clouds, thus leaving them in doubt for a season. Much light is thrown by these records upon the temperaments and aptitudes of the writers. Both of them were evidently intensely practical men, with scarcely any poetic sentiment or sense of humor. They constantly note the character and possibilities of the soil, the weather, the streams, the timber, and the springs, but not a word do we find about either the esthetical or humorous side of life. They must have looked upon some uncommonly lovely water scenes and landscapes in both the mountains and the more level regions, but not a single sentence do they devote to such things. Then there must have been many an amusing incident, and many a ludicrous situation, during the eighty days covered by the Journals, but not one word is to be found in the entire records to suggest that any one of the party cracked a smile in all their wanderings. More to their credit, however, is the fact that we may look in vain through the whole of both the Journals for a single symptom of conceit or boastfulness. There is not only no bragging, and no dramatic posing, but not even a pointed mention of anything which could have been intended to awaken in those who read their narratives a feeling of special admiration for the writers. The well known propensity of the average sailor or fisherman to spin yarns concerning his real or imaginary adventures and achievements found no place in their souls. James could make a detour of thirty miles away from the Company, absolutely alone, for two days and nights in a howling wilderness which his feet had never trod before, and where he knew wild beasts and yet more cruel savages might be encountered any moment, and Robert could do the same thing; and yet when we examine their Journals we find only the briefest and most prosaic allusion to these really perilous and remarkable excursions, the full significance of which would scarcely have dawned on us had not Gen. R. B. McAfee talked with his uncle James a generation after it all occurred, and wormed the facts out of the old hero. James could bring down a splendid buck-elk with his rifle up there on the North Fork of the Kentucky River above the site of "Bloody Jackson," on the 8th of July, 1773, furnishing the only food the party had for the next four days, but we have to go to the narrative of his nephew to find out about it. Then both James and Robert could pass through the unspeakable horrors of August 12, when, in an almost starving condition, they climbed the lofty peaks of the Big Black Mountains, in what is now Harlan County, Kentucky, under a scorching August sun, and from those far summits beheld the sun sinking in the West while they themselves were sinking from sheer starvation to the barren and blistered earth, and yet be saved from death by a merciful Providence—they were able to pass through all of these thrilling experiences; and yet, when, at the close of that never-to-be-forgotten day, they jotted down in their note-books the record of their journey over those desolate mountains, they scarcely made an allusion to its almost tragic details; and it is only because Gen. R. B. McAfee, in after years, drew the facts from his uncle James's reluctant lips that we can know the whole story to-day. If these men had in their souls any love for the beautiful in nature, any appreciation of life's humorous incidents, any conceited estimate of their own heroic qualities, or any ambition to pose before posterity, we look in vain for any tokens of these characteristics in the Journals they have left us. They were simply men of practical common-sense, great shrewdness, and almost unlimited resource, who could face with calmness the worst perils, and meet with fortitude the most appalling conditions of life in the wilderness, and yet never lose their wits or their simple faith in God.

Whilst the autograph narratives themselves seem to have been lost, and we have to be content with copies, we have every reason to believe that in these copies we possess documents which are unquestionably genuine, and which have undergone no material alterations of form or verbiage in the process of transmission. Careless or officious copyists may possibly have effected slight changes here and there, but the documents, as we now have them, bear on their faces the strongest evidence of being substantially the very records which James and Robert McAfee made in 1773. In these Journals we have two independent accounts of the same occurrences, marked by those slight variations which only tend to prove their genuineness. Both write like sensible, truthful men. Scrutinizing their grammar, orthography and forms of expression, we find that they compare favorably with that of the better class of educated farmers now to be met with in Virginia and Kentucky. They were, beyond all

question, no ignorant backwoodsmen, but had enjoyed fair educational advantages as respects the English branches. In both Journals we find an occasional misspelt word, faulty punctuation, and some of the crude colloquialisms in common use at this day among plain farming people; but if we compare these documents with those left us by the early explorers and pioneers of the best class, such as Dr. Thomas Walker, Col. Christopher Gist, and Isaac Shelby, we shall find they lose nothing thereby. Their Journals stand very far above the original letters and diaries of men like Boone and the great majority of the pioneers. That of James reveals, in several instances, his familiarity with Biblical language. But the Journals will now be given just as they are, and may therefore speak for themselves. The notes will serve to explain all matters needing elucidation.

JAMES' JOURNAL.

(Note.—It seems very evident that the earlier pages of James's Journal became detached, and were lost. N. M. W.)

The channel of Ohio and all the creeks are mostly sandy, entirely free stone where any appear in the creeks or rivers. On both sides of the Ohio the hills join the bottoms in every five or six miles, coming close to the river in points, first one side, then on the other, at these points the bottom is not a hundred yards wide; the hills and ridges of considerable height running up the creeks on both sides of the Ohio river as far as we could see; a great many of them well timbered, very fine food for cattle; others of them in places barreny, full of pine and stony and bushy; sufficient quantity of free stone appear in many places to make the best of grind stones for all America. There appears conveniency for mills on these creeks in places, though in great danger of floods; there may be exceeding fine meadows made on the river and these creeks.

June 10th, we proceeded thirteen miles farther to the mouth of Sandy river, camped one night, some men hunted seven or eight miles up Sandy river; it appears about 100 yards wide in general. The land appears much like what I said before and the hills likewise.

ROBERT'S JOURNAL.

1773.—May the 29th in the morning we got to the Ohio[1] (month of Kenhawa) where we found Capt. Bullit & his company;[2] & in the evening there came five Delaware Indian canoes & their families going down to the Big Falls to hunt. After day the 29th of May we came to the mouth of New River[3] where we lay till Tuesday the first of June, & the surveyors measured the Ohio & the New River—the Ohio was 400 yards across, & the New River was 200 yards across. June the first we took the Ohio River with a boat & four canoes, & left Capt. Bullitt to go to the Shawnee town to see what was to be done there, & we went down the river about 20 miles & camped to kill meat—& we went out to see what sort of land there was there, but there was not much land that was good on this side of the river,[4] & the water was not at all good. June 2d we lay by, & June 3d we moved Camp about four miles down the river to an old Indian camp where there was fine bottom land on both sides of the river, & we lay there until June the 7th, & I hunted a part of three days on this side of the river; up a large creek & on the ridges & the hills was very broken & brushy for about ten miles from the river & the Creek there was about one or two plantations—& on both sides of the river there were two large ponds of water about one mile long each, & about four hundred yards wide for this length. The river keeps its breadth & runs in general S. W. course. June 7th we came to a large Creek, & that day we hunted up that creek about 12 miles where there was very fine land on both sides; & on the 8th we hunted down the river about three miles & there was good land on the river, but there were some large ponds between the bottom & the hills; & I left the river & took out from it about five miles across the woods where there was some good upland, to a large creek, about 8 miles from the river, where there was not any good land to the mouth. The 9th day we went over the Big River[5] about six or seven miles up & down. There was good land on the River & out about one mile very big high hills & middling good water. The most of the water this length, in the creeks & branches seems to go dry in a dry spell. The 10th we took the river which was high & rough with the wind; we went about four miles from Sandy Creek to Sandy River where we lay all night; & the Ohio seemed to run from that a N. W. course

James' Journal.

June 11th, we left Sandy river, sailed 45 miles[6] and got to the mouth of Sciota, and 9 canoes of Delaware Indians[7] with us; we passed a great many creeks that day, most of them on our side of Ohio. The other side the hills appear closer to Ohio than before, facing the river middling high, full of rocks, cedar and pine trees till within three miles of Sciota. In the fork of Sciota a large bottom appears. We lay at camp till June the 15th at the mouth of Sciota where we saw 17 horses swim over the Ohio by four Indians just then brought with saddles and pack-saddles; but no lumber appeared to us, they having opportunity to hide it before we came; we believed the whole to be white men's and lately taken from them.[8]

Captain Bullitt came to us on Sunday, the 13th with his proceedings amongst the Shawnees, which I have taken copies of in another place.[11] White men were with Captain Bullitt; one of our company to the Nation says that it is 100 miles from the mouth of New river across to the Nation; the hills continue for 60 miles along that path; some good land in places; the water middling scarce; after that the land level to the Nation, and the best ever they saw; many thousands of acres about the Nation clear without a stick or bush on it, they say some hundreds of acres of meadow without a bush on it; the grass then to their chin, a kind of rough natural grass, the water much better than that of the river. Captain Bullitt, three white men, and three Delaware Indians with him, got to the Nation undiscovered which the Indians thought very strange. They were obliged to stay at a wigwam under the care of some Indians that evening and next day till ten o'clock, in that time the rest giving notice to all the Nation concerning his business with them. About ten o'clock Captain Bullitt and the white men were ordered to the town, where 115 warriors, spears and fixed bows and arrows, painted in the most frightful manner. Some of them rolled in the sand and mud in the way just before the town. Captain B. not knowing what they meant his approaching them nigh was surrounded with them. One of them running with a tomahawk drawn apparently to strike him; the whole 115 warriors with shouts and hideous cries, some firing off guns over his head, some alongside, some amongst his feet, nigh powder burning of him, arrows drawn in a violent manner, first against his back some of them cut through his coat,

Robert's Journal.

The 11th we took the river & it went about 25 miles a N. W. course & seems to make large low grounds on both sides of the river, & then it went a S. W. course about 3 miles & then it falls into its old course till it goes to the mouth of Sciota bounded on both sides of the river with sharp ridges. Sciota seems to come in the same course of Ohio & there are sharp hills join the Ohio below the mouth of Sciota & on both sides of Big River there seems to have been old Indian towns[9] where there is a small branch of very good water & seems to have been very good land but it has been all overflowed with the river, which seems to be the case of all the bottom land that I have seen yet.

June 12th I went out at the mouth of the Sciota to see the land & I went to the top of a high hill, & I could see about 6 miles up the Sciota, & at the mouth there seemed to be a flat of land about 2 miles wide as far up the river as I could see & high ridges on each side of the river. Both up & down & on this side of the Ohio, as far as I could see, there was nothing but high brushy hills at the mouth of Sciota there was on this side of the river, there appears to have been an old French town[10] with about 19 or 20 houses in it, compactly built together in the compass of about 2 acres of ground in it & a good deal of cleared land & fruit trees which has been about the time of the first wars.

James' Journal.

he not knowing well what they meant, walked up to the town through them, they then left off, and some of the head warriors shook hands with him, told him that was their manner of treatment of a nation at their first coming to make peace with them, and afterwards seemed very friendly with him, and afterwards entered on their business. Captain Bullitt staid five days in the Nation waiting before he got his business settled with them; in two and one half days he came in a canoe down to us. The Sciota is a small river running exceeding crooked about 100 miles from the Nation to the month; about 20 miles level from the Nation and good land, the other eighty miles hilly the nigher the Ohio the hills on both sides exceeding high, rocky and full of pine in places, though good bottom on the river, and some good land in places up the small creeks.

At the mouth of Sciota on our side Ohio has been a small town, and some ground cleared about the time of the war, by the buildings we take to be the French[10]—some of them square logs, large and well built, with doors and chimneys, clapboard covering, and some covered with bark.

June 14th, Monday. We went five miles to get meat; got some.

15th, Moved camp two miles to a large creek,[12] staid two days, hunted, got meat, searched the land, found little on the creek, the hills exceeding high, bushy, rocky, and full of stones as any I ever saw.

June 17th, we moved camp ten miles to the mouth of a creek,[15] the hills continued on both sides of the river to that creek; up it half a mile from the river is a salt pond, about six feet wide at top, eighteen inches deep, the water brown colored, free from turf or grass or weeds or any living thing in the waters, such as is common in other ponds of water. The water is very salt tasted in that pond, none running out of it above ground—the creek within 30 yards of it. It has been greatly made use of by buffalo and deer: The Indians are there often and made salt many times, the traders tell us.

June 21st, Abraham Hampenstall [Haptonstall] and James McMahan laid officers rights of 2000 acres of land on that salt pond and up that creek.

Robert's Journal.

Monday 14th June—We left the mouth of Sciota & went about 5 miles before the batteaux to get meat & lay all night & found none; & the 15th we moved camp about 2 miles further to a large Creek[12] & hunted that day & found meat & lay there 2 nights. The Creek made very little good land to what one would expect according to its size; & on the river the land is much the same as I remarked before, with high ridges on each side.

The 17th went down the river about 10 miles to a small Creek[13] where there was a Salt Lick about one mile from the river. The size of the spring is about five feet square & affords water about the full of a hogshead at once, & is sharp salt as brine, & there is no current runs from it nor to it, but it appears that it will be of great use if it continues & don't go dry. On the Creek which it is on, there is a great deal of good land & fine limestone water. Down the Ohio to where we lay that night is some good land where they began to survey—where we lay from Thursday the 17th till Monday the 21st about 45 miles below the mouth of Sciota,[15] & from that we went down the river 16 miles to a creek & encamped that night[16]—The lands still appear good in places along

James' Journal.

I walked three days in that part of the country;[14] off the river there the land begins good though high ridges on both sides of the creek. I walked up that creek and down another 30 miles, observing the land as I went—the lands, water, and timber exceedingly good for farming; the best of meadows may be made on all those creeks, not hard to clear, Captain Bullitt left his batteaux there, and Mr. Kennedy, surveyor, and twelve men to lay off a town on the river— 100 acres for the townsite, the survey to be divided into halfacre lots—600 acres around the town, each lot having ten acres of that land to raise corn on. If you choose to live in the town for fear of the Indians. I have two entries on that creek,[17] 400 acres each, eight miles up it—all that creek entered and surveyed by Kennedy & Company.

June 22d, Captain Bullitt and twenty men went farther down the Ohio[18] in order to view and take up more land; we campt in 15 miles one night.[19] I saw the land off the river grew better and water as good as in our part of the country—mostly limestone. Opposite our camp on the other side of the Ohio bank, for two miles is the finest cedar timber at Lariane's [Lawrence's] Creek.[21]

June 23d, We moved eight miles farther to the mouth of Brecken's Creek,[22] surveyed two tracts of land, one for Brecken—one for Herrard [Harrod]; The land out from the river there for 7 or 8 miles seemed hilly and poorer.

June 24th, Thursday. We moved down six miles to Wilper's Creek,[23] laid off land for the second town, a large bottom on the river. The hills out from that six or seven miles, high, rough and poor, not worth surveying, called Wilper's folly.

June 25, Friday. We sailed 36 miles down Ohio not looking [at] land, to the mouth of Little Meyome a creek about 100 yards wide at the mouth. It comes in the other side Ohio. Two miles below that a small clean gravelly island in the Ohio six miles below that the mouth of Licking Creek on our side, about 80 yards wide at the mouth.[25]

June 26th, Sunday [Saturday] Monday [Sunday], 27th We left Mr. Douglas, surveyor there and part of the company to survey 7000 acres as an officer's claim. John Fox owner. The bottom on the river Very good; the upland broken and scarce of water, but rich and vastly full of beech timber; for 20 miles up that creek the land broken and so full of beech timber and water bad,[26] we

Robert's Journal.

the river, with high hills on each side & out from the river there is very fine land as can be for corn, wheat, hemp, tobacco, or anything that man can put in the ground.

The 22d We went down the river about 20 miles[20] to a large creek— the hills begin to fall flat on both sides of the river; & I hunted out from the river where the land & water still appear to get better;

& the 24th of June we came down the river about 8 miles to a large Creek, & I left the Company & went to the woods to see the country,[24] & I went about 10 miles up the creek & there was not much good land—then I went down another creek, about 8 miles; there was some good wheat land & the creek went into a small river, & I went down the river about 25 miles; there was a great deal of flat land, & I left the river & crossed the ridges about 13 miles where there was still good wheat land; & came to the river to look for my Company, & they were gone by, & I was forced to make a bark canoe & went down the river till the moon set, & lay at the shore— & in the morning I went down the river till about ten o'clock & found the Company at the mouth of Licking Creek, which was the 27th of the month (June) On that creek I made one entry of land;[27]

James' Journal.

passed by them—only that officer's claim. Robert (McAfee) was 40 miles up that creek,[27] the land is middling good in places and level—the water scarce, that Licking Creek 100 yards wide 40 miles up it, appears to be a long ways from the Mountains, and may afford a vast good land on it, unknown to us; some entries made 40 miles up it.

June 28th. We went 20 miles farther to the mouth of a small branch, 6 miles above the mouth of Big Meyome, laid off 450 acres for the 3d town.[28] We staid three days there, hunted out 5 or 6 miles, found the land very good, but very much broken, with branches and gullies, and scarce of water, etc. What is very good, very little low grounds on that part of the river. The largest bottom we saw for 80 miles we there found five miles long, by three fourths of a mile wide; no pond of any bigness in that bound; mostly hilly and rich ground for 5 or 6 miles out. There Mr. Hite and 6 men, in two canoes, came to us from Pittsburg. Mr. Hite surveyor in that company.

June 30th. We set sail down; in four miles we got to the mouth of Big Meyome a little river about 100 yards wide at the mouth, appears the best land we have seen on all Ohio. In going ten miles farther down there came in four creeks—Some a mile, some two miles apart; some of them 50 yards across; up these creeks and along the river were the largest low lands I ever saw. On the heads of these two Meyomes the Pecks live, a nation of Indians. The traders tell us up those two rivers is the best land ever they saw on all Ohio. From the mouth of Big Meyome the Ohio, in going 14 miles, turns from south west to south east in the bend of a gravelly island about one mile long;[29] at and in that bend old Wilper[30] laid an officer's claim of some thousands of acres. The river turned and run a little south west about about 6 miles; thence Wending, running South east about 12 miles in a great bend to the north of a large creek. In that second bend was two large ponds of brush and water; the land vastly full of beech timber appears unhandy to make use of. Clear off the river the hills very high and poor.

(Note.—For some reason James McAfee's Journal has no record of the first seven days of July. —Editor.)

Robert's Journal.

The 28th we went down the river about 25 miles to a large bend of the river where there was good bottom land & a great deal of broken upland, where we intended to make a survey. The 29th we viewed the land to see how it lay, & there came another surveyor & his company to us;

& the 30th of the month we went to survey the land & went one square & quit it by reason we could not get it surveyed as we would have it.

The first day of July we went on down the river about 8 miles & we went by the mouth of the Big Miami, & then the river begins to run to the south east for about 18 miles where we lay all night.[31] The 2d we went down the river still

James' Journal.

July 8th, Thursday, we set sail down the Ohio with eight men,[37] Mr. Taylor surveyor, in order to go to Levisa river to survey our land as we had made choice of that part of the country; the mouth of it is 30 miles above the big falls on the Ohio. Sailed 44 miles to the mouth of Kentucky river—7 miles above the falls.

July 9th, Friday, We sailed to the mouth of a creek and went up it to a lick.[39] Mr. Brecken one of our company that was through the Shawnee Nation with Captain Bullitt got notice of that lick from some of the Indians, promised one of them a rifle gun to tell him where it lay. Mat Brecken and Jack Drennon left our company the Saturday before, went across the woods and found the Lick before we got there; claimed it as property and laid in 400 acre survey. We travelled round the Lick, 10 or 12 miles upland, very good, mostly oak

Robert's Journal.

turning to the south east about 25 miles & lay all night;[32] the lands on both sides appear to be much more flat & rich, but not much water—for it appears that the creeks & branches go dry in anything of dry weather. The river begins to turn to the west from this. The 3d we lay there,[33] & the 4th we came up the river about 10 miles to the Big Bone where Capt. Bullitt intended to make a station & survey land. On the 5th we went to see the Big Bone,[34] which is a wonder to see the large bones that lie there, which have been of several large big creatures.[35] The lick is about 200 yards long & as wide, & the waters & mud are of a sulphur smell. There are several other licks on the same creek, & the same taste & smell; & there is very fine land on the same creek which was surveyed that day.

The 6th we lay by, & the 7th we intended to set sail down the river, & there came down the river a trading canoe which told us that above the mouth of the Canaway that they came by a man lying in the edge of the water that appeared to have been drowned; but did not draw to shore to see whether he was drowned or killed by the Indians. He appeared to be bloody on the back as he lay in the water. In the evening [afternoon] we left Capt. Bullitt & went to look for Levisa to get our lands surveyed;[36] & about 25 miles on our side of the river the hills began to fall very low, & fall into a large bottom about 16 miles in length. We went till 8 o'clock at night & put to shore & lay in our canoes all night. About one hour before day, on the 8th, we took to the river & got to the mouth of Cantucky or Levisa at day break, & went up the river about 18 miles to the mouth of a creek that came from towards the Big Bone.[38] The lands seemed to be full of beech—only one bottom at the mouth of the creek on the other side of the river, where we lay all night. The 9th we went up the river 5 miles to the mouth of a creek where the river was shut up with a stone bar that came across the river all to about 10 feet of water which is a little remarkable that a river of 100 yards across & 10 feet in depth of water, should be stopped. Up the creek, that comes in there, one mile is a salt lick which is a wonder to see. The Lick is about one mile in length & one hundreds yards in breadth, & the roads that came to that lick no man would believe till he saw the place; & the woods round that place are trod for

James' Journal

timber; a great many small creeks and branches; scarce as much water among them all as would save a man's life while he travelled across them.

We lay at the Great Salt Lick from Friday 9th to Wednesday 14th. The company surveyed several tracts of land there;[40] we travelled about six miles up the river above the Lick; there are some high ridges on the river all rich and well timbered, in other places a little off the fine upland well timbered with oak & hickory. It may afford a vast good land towards the head unknown to us. In what we see about 26 miles from the mouth[41] there is no conveniency for mills on Cantucky river. I had forgot above the mouth of Cantucky on the Ohio river a bottom about 15 miles long on our side; against it a small timber island 8 miles from the mouth of Kentucky.

The 15th July we left the Great Salt Lick, took a path to the right of the river up a creek[42] a south course about 30 miles and camped that night.

The 16th. In five miles we crossed the Cantucky river to the east side along the path; five miles in a piece of black oak timber land; we stopped and surveyed one track of land for Robert McAfee containing 600 acres about 100 of that meadow ground.[43]

Friday 16th, left an axe, tomahawk and fish gig in the spring.[44]

Saturday 17th, We kept the path[45] on the east side of the river about 8 miles, in good land; we left that path, went to the south west, in six miles we crossed the river at high hills and cedar banks[46] —no bottom in that part of the river. We left the river and travelled that evening across the woods 12 miles[47] still through good lands but scarce of water. The land well timbered—we camped that night.

Sunday 18th, We camped on a small creek about 5 miles on the west side of the river,[48] that creek about 15 miles above Robert McAfee's survey at the great meadow on the river.

Monday 19th July, I surveyed 800 acres on the head of that creek about five or six miles from the river.

Tuesday, 20th. Robin McAfee and me travelled up the river six miles on both sides the land still good but very little water or springs in that part.

Robert's Journal

many miles that there is not as much food as would feed one sheep; & there seems that there may be a great deal of salt made there; & the land, a deal of it, is flat & good for farming; but there is no water—which will be hurtful to that place.

The 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th & 14th we lay there till there was some land surveyed.[40]

Thursday the 15th took a small buffalo path[42] which was about 50 and a hundred yards wide in common about 30 miles across low flat ridges, middling good land & timber, but no water.

The 16th we went about 3 miles, & came to the same river—Cantuck— & crossed it to the sunrise side, & then 2 miles across to another bend. The land on the river seemed to be very full of beech; & from that bend I made two surveys[43] near joining to the river, with about 50 acres of meadow now ready made, & there can be made 50 acres more with a little trouble; with bottom & upland sufficient, with very good water in different places of it. The 17th we set off for Levisa & crossed the river about 7 miles from my survey,[46] through as fine land as could be & timber, but not much water. There we left the river to the left hand across the woods about 12 miles,[47] through as good land as can be, but still the water is scarce —where we lay all night, which was on Saturday.

The 18th we went towards the same river across about 8 miles to the head of a spring[48] & lay all night—through good land, where there were two surveys made.

The 19th we were a little surprised by a gun that we took for Indians;[49]

the 20th we looked for more land across the river, but saw none that would suit us. There is not any good land for five or six miles on each side of the river, for the river is bounded with very high cedar hills, that it is hard to get into the

James' Journal

Wednesday, 21st, we went from the Cove Spring at two miles across to the Crooked Creek[50]—four miles down that creek made two surveys for James McCoun Junior, 400 acres each.[50a]

July 23rd, Friday—Made 3 surveys in the creek above James McCoun Jr. for Saml. Adams. 3 more for George McAfee above that; 3 more for James McCoun Sr. above that in a brushy fork on the east side of Crooked Creek full of swamps, black oak timber and hazel brush; made also two surveys for myself, 400 acres each,[51] joining James McCoun brushy, a large spring in the bank of the creek in each survey on the east side. Made also a survey of 400 acres for John McGee joining that one; for James McAfee Sr. 400 acres joining that one; for Sam Adams 400 acres—all on sd. creek.

July 30th, above that made 3 surveys for Wm. McAfee, one for James McCoun, and one for Jeremiah Telford &c.

July 31st, Saturday, We left Crooked Creek where we got our lands surveyed and set off up Cantucky river for home. Mr. Taylor our surveyor, and two men with him set off for the Falls of the Ohio, about fifty miles from that, where we expected to meet Capt. Bullitt again and company.[53] That evening very wet. We came about 7 miles, part of it through cane breaks, to a large creek; camped that night under a rock at the foot of a high cedar hill.[54]

August 1st. We left Rock Camp, travelled mostly an eastern course about 16 miles amongst broken ridges covered with cane and clover—amongst these ridges we crossed two creeks and camped.[55]

Robert's Journal

river or out from it. But there seems to be a great deal of fish in the river. The 21st we went across from James' survey about 3 miles to a large creek, & a little down that creek, & made one survey for James McCoun of 400 acres.[50a]

The 22d we [made] one survey for his brother John [McCoun] joining to James, & went up the creek about five miles & camped for to survey some more land, & made two for Sam Adams on the 23d;

the 24th we made six surveys more—the 25th was Sunday. The 26th we moved our camp up the creek four miles to survey more land. 27th we made five surveys more which made 2000 acres of land. The 28th we moved our camp up the creek 4 miles further to survey the rest of our land; & lay all day the 29th to plot what was surveyed. The 30th we moved up the (creek) two miles, & made the last of our surveys[52]—one for Wm. McAfee, & one for James Curry, & one for Jeremiah Telford; & we parted with the surveyor & two more men that intended to go back to the Ohio to Capt. Bullitt at the Falls.[53]

The 31st of July we set out [on] our journey for home which was on Saturday about 2 o'clock in the morning [afternoon] which was cloudy and like for rain, & did rain very hard. We came about 7 miles across & came to one fork of the river, through fine cane land, as good as can be for any use, & we lay all night by the side of the river under the very high rocks to shelter the rain, & dry our things—for it was exceeding wet.[54]

And the 1st day of August rained some showers, & we travelled over high ridges, full of cain, & very rich; so that we had hard getting along.

James' Journal.

August 2d, We travelled an east course about 20 miles through rich woods and mostly cane—a great many branches mostly dry—we camped at a Lick.[56]

August 3d, We left that Lick and travelled a south east course mostly through black oak timber woods and bold hills, about 20 miles and crossed Cantucky river within 8 miles of [at] pine hills and broken mountains.[57] We left the river that 8 miles amongst the pine Knobs—a great many small licks—and east of these licks near a little pine mountain 16 miles into the level woods; we camped amongst these licks; came 28 miles that day.[58]

August 4th, we travelled three miles to the south and struck the river again; took up it about 20 miles that day and camped.

August 5th, We still kept up the river, in 8 miles we passed a Salt lick under the side of a great rock[59] on the east side of the river; five miles farther up comes in a large creek on the west side; 15 miles farther up comes another large one on same side— no good land on that part of the river. We came 40 miles that day and camped.[60]

August 6th, we travelled up the river, passed one big creek on the east side;[61] we travelled about 20 miles and camped—the day being wet. no good land still.

August 7th, Saturday, We travelled up the river six miles and it forked,[62] we took the left hand; about 20 miles it forked again and we camped.[62] Some good bottoms seen in the river that day.

August 8th, Sunday, We travelled up the river about 20 miles, the hills very high and full of green briar and some laurel.[64]

Monday 9th August. Very wet, we travelled up the river about 20 miles further through high hills worse with green briar and laurel.

Robert's Journal.

And the 2d we came from morning till about the middle of the day through high rich cane woods, across several creeks, & in the after part of the day we came to where the woods grew flatter & more fit for farming—where we lay all night at a Lick,[56] & it looked like for rain. Tuesday the 3d—was very fair and clear, & we [saw] several creeks of good land, but the ridges were but middling; & about the middle of the day we crossed some high bold hills, & we came in sight of the mountains, about 8 miles distance where we found the river,[57] & we came about 5 miles further to where there were a great many mud licks, where we lay all night.[58]

The 4th was clear, & we came up the river, which ran very crooked, & there was some good bottom land for about the half of that day's travel, & the hills came close on both sides, where we lay all night.

Thursday 5th, was clear, & we came up the river, it was still close on every side with hills, & we came to a high bank of rock[59] that was hollow under, & there was standing water in some of the holes of the rocks that was very good & salt, but these were not much for a public use; & about five miles from that the river forked, & we took the left hand & came about 15 miles farther & it forked again & we took the left still, & came about 12 miles & camped at a small branch:[60] the woods came close to the river, with rough green briar hills: The 6th rained some all day, & we came up the river about 20 miles through very bad ground that we had hard getting along, & we had the river to raft once across. The 7th we came 25 miles, the river forked about 6 miles from where we lay, & we took the right hand[62] & came about 20 miles further, & it forked, where we lay all night. The river was something opener that we had good coming that day, & we took the right hand fork.[63]

Sunday the 8th we came up the river about 25 miles— The river was very crooked so that we had to cross near 20 times & very often to our middle.[64] We killed a buck Elk & lay all night.[65] The 9th was wet almost all day, so that we had very bad travelling; there was some open land for a while in the morning, & then the river was very close till night, & it run very crooked, & we had it to cross every bend, for 20 miles,[66] which we travelled for that day.

James' Journal.

Tuesday 10th August. Travelled still up the river about 20 miles, the hills exceeding high and close to the river.

August 11th, we kept the river about 8 miles further and then left at a short bend—it run north west; we took up a creek towards the south about 6 miles to the head of it in a high hill;[68] we crossed some high laurel hills that evening and camped.

August 12th, Thursday, We travelled through the laurel hills six miles further and struck a large creek at a big fork at the falls of it,[69] we took the south fork in about two miles we came to some big Elk Licks on it and very big paths up it runs straight into the north side of an exceeding high mountain we came over that mountain that evening and camped on a small creek at the foot of it.

August 13th, Friday. We left that camp and travelled 8 miles across the head of Powell's Valley to the hunter's path.[71]

August 14th Saturday. We took that path, crossed two little mountains over to Clinch water;[72] travelled 25 miles that day.

August 15th, Sunday. We travelled that path about 15 miles and struck the ford of Clinch at Castlewood's, 12 miles below James Smith's;[73] we came eight miles that night to the ford to David Gees.[74] [Guest]

August 16th, Monday. We came but five miles to Capt. Russell's. Our feet were much scalded and so lame that we could not travel.[75]

Robert's Journal.

The 10th we came still up the river till about 10 o'clock, & we went to leave it but could not, it was so bad,[67] & we took the river & kept it that day, which was about 20 miles.

The 11th we kept the river till about 2 o'clock, & we left it[68] & came across the worst Laurel Mountains that I ever saw, about 20 miles that day.

The 12th we were all day in the worst mountains that ever I saw, which seemed to us that we should never get out of—& there was but little to kill, & our provision was almost done—began to look a little discouraging to us, but in the evening we came to some better ground which give us more hopes, & we got meat that night plenty at the side of a laurel branch[70] where we lay all night.

The 13th we travelled about 8 miles in exceeding bad laurel mountains, which seemed to be hard to get out of—and it rained very hard.

The 14th we got in the head of Powell's Valley on the Long Hunter's road, & we had two mountains to cross on a small path,[72] & the 15th we got to a house in the morning, which was a glad sight to us.[73]

(NOTE: The mission of Captain Thomas Bullitt to the Shawnee Nation at Chillicothe, in June, 1773, mentioned above by Robert McAfee in his Journal under date of June 1, and by James in his Journal under date of June 15, was deemed by both James and Robert to be of such interest and importance as to warrant their taking copies of the proceedings of the same in the back of their respective Journals. Captain Bullitt had with him, on that mission, one Matthew Bracken, besides two other white men, and three friendly Indians. This man Bracken was, in a sense, a member of the McAfee Company. It seems that the McAfees, before leaving the mouth of the Great Kanawha on their way down the Ohio, entered into an agreement with Hancock Taylor, the surveyor, to accompany them and lay off land for them while in Kentucky, and Taylor had for his assistants this man Bracken and a Jacob Dremmon, of whom mention is made by James McAfee in his Journal July 9.—The three documents are well worth a careful reading. They shed light upon the Indian character, and on the conditions prevailing in the West in that early day. Capt. Bullitt is here seen to have been a man of no small skill as a diplomatist, as well as a soldier of the most dauntless courage. See the description of Captain Bullitt's remarkable reception at Chillicothe by one hundred and fifteen warriors, as given in James McAfee's Journal June 15.—N. M. W.)

POOR FORK OF THE CUMBERLAND RIVER AT THE MOUTH OF CLOVER LICK CREEK, IN HARLAN COUNTY, KY

CROSSING PLACE OF THE M'AFEES, AUGUST 12, 1773.

CAPTAIN BULLITT'S SPEECH.

To the Chiefs of the Shawanoe Nation, Made in the Council House.

Chillicothe, June 9th, 1773.

"Brothers, I am sent with my people to settle the "country on the Ohio River as low as the Falls, the "King has bought of the Northern and Southern "Indians; and I am desired to acquaint you and "all the people of this great country, that the Eng- "lish are, and intend to live in friendship with you "all, and expect the same from you and them; and "as the Shawanoes and Delawares are to be our "nearest neighbors, and did not get any of the pay "given for it, it is proposed and agreed by the prin- "cipals of those who are to be the owners of the land "to contribute to make your two tribes a present "to be given you the next year and the year after. "I am appointed to live in the country; I am sent "to settle it in order to keep proper regulation, and "as I expect some more principal men out of my "country in a short time, there will be something "more to say to you. And the Governor was to "come through this country last year, had he not "been taken sick, so that he may be out this or next "year, as he is desirous of seeing you and the coun- "try. I will have a belt of wampum when we have "anything more to say. As the King did not buy "the country for any other purpose than his people "to live on, and work to supply his country, there- "fore we shall have no objection to your hunting, or "trapping on it. We shall expect you will live "with us as brothers and friends. I shall write "what you say to my Governor and expect it to be "a good talk."

The Answer of the Chief Cornstalk Next Morning.

"*Old Brother the Big Knife:*

"We heard you would be glad to see your broth- "ers the Shawanoes and Delawares and talk with "them. We are a little surprised that you sent no "message before you, but came quite near us, and "then through the woods and grass, a hard way "without our knowledge, till you appeared among "us quite unexpected. But you are now standing "among your brothers who think well of you and "what you have said to us. We have considered "your talk carefully and we are pleased to find "nothing bad in it, or no ill meaning, but what "seems pleasing, kind, and friendly. You have "mentioned to us your directions for settling of "people over the river on the opposite side to us, "and it is not the meaning of your King and Gov- "ernor to deprive us of the hunting of the country "as usual, but that your directions are to take "proper care that we shall not be disturbed in our "hunting for which we stand in need of, to buy our "clothing, all of which is very agreeable to your "young brothers. Your young men we desire will "be strong in the discharge of your directions to- "ward us, as we are determined to be strong in ad- "vising our young men to be friendly, kind and "peaceable to you. This spring we saw some "wrong by our young men in disturbing your peo- "ple by taking their horses, but we have advised "them to the contrary and have cleansed their "hearts of bad intentions, and expect it will be "harkened to by them as they are pleased with what "has been said."

LETTER OF RICHARD BUTLER.

"Chillicothe, June 10th, 1773.

"Gentlemen: I have been present as a witness "and interpreter between Captain Bullitt and the "Shawanoes and a part of the Delawares. I be- "lieve (and not without some surprise that I ac- "quaint you) that his progress in treating with "these people has exceeded the expectation of most "people, as they claim an absolute rite to all that "country you are about to settle. That it does not "lie in the power of those who sold it to give this "land;—and as I am a well-wisher to your under- "taking I can do no less in justice to Capt. Bullitt "than to acquaint you that it is my opinion that it "lies in your power to fulfil every engagement he "has made in your behalf, by endeavoring to make "good order among you, and a friendly counte- "nance to your present neighbors the Shawanoes, I "do assure you it lies in your power to have good "neighbors or bad, as they are a people very capable "of discerning between good treatment and ill; they "expect you will be friendly with them, and en- "deavor to restrain the hunters from destroying "the game, and that the young men who are in- "clined to hunt will be regulated by the law of the "colony in the case, and as I dare say it is not to "hunt the land but to cultivate it, that you are

"about to settle it, it will be an easy matter to re-
"strain those that would hunt, and cause your in-
"fant settlement to be disturbed, although I am at
"present a stranger to you all, I beg leave to sub-
"scribe myself your well wisher and humble ser-
"vant "RICHARD BUTLER.

"To the Gentlemen Settlers Below the Mouth of
"Sciota."

NOTES ON THE McAFEE JOURNALS.

BY REV. NEANDER M. WOODS.

1.—The famous Salt Spring, on the bank of the Great Kanawha River, at the mouth of Campbell's Creek, at which point we believe the McAfee Company embarked in canoes they had constructed there, was about 60 miles, by water, from the mouth of the river. And as the party reached the Ohio, a little after day-break, on the morning of Saturday, the 29th of May, it is safe to assume they took leave of the Salt Spring some time during Thursday, May 27.

2.—Captain Thomas Bullitt was an experienced and gallant soldier, whom Lord Dunmore, Governor of Virginia, had commissioned to visit the headquarters or capital of the Shawnee Nation, at Chillicothe, situated about 100 miles to the northwest of the mouth of the Great Kanawha. His name,will, for all time, be associated with the Falls of the Ohio and the city of Louisville, where now lives his great-grand-nephew, the Hon. Thomas Walker Bullitt, one of the most distinguished lawyers of Kentucky.

3.—West Virginia's principal river, like all streams which are afflicted with different names for their several parts, has long been the innocent cause of much confusion. This river, from the point at which the Gauley River enters it, is properly called the Great Kanawha: above that point it is the New River clear to its source in the North Carolina Mountains. Robert McAfee, in his entry of this date (May 29) affords an example of the confusion referred to, in that he first calls this stream the "Kenhawa," and then, a few lines farther on, he calls it "New River." On some of the older maps we find it marked "Wood's River," which Dr. Hale (Trans-Allegheny Pioneers, pages 20-22), says was in honor of that early explorer, Col. Abraham Wood, its first (white) discoverer. Col. Wood seems to have crossed the Blue Ridge, in 1654, at the gap known as Wood's Gap, and to have struck the river, which took his own name, at the mouth of Little River, about 12 miles southwest of Christiansburg, Va., and about twice that distance to the north of the gap referred to. That gap was also named for him. It is situated on the boundary line of Patrick and Floyd counties, Va., and close to the North Carolina line.

4.—We find both James and Robert, in these Journals, when referring to their movements along the shores of the Ohio, often using the phrases "this side," and "our side," which meant the south side. Only once or twice, in all the nearly 40 days they were on the Ohio, do we find them even setting foot on the northern shore; and they did no surveying whatever on that side, so far as appears from their Journals. This may have a two-fold explanation: The danger of attempting to settle on the north bank would have been very considerably greater than on the southern shore, because the chief town of the Shawnees was only about 100 miles from the Ohio, and they were a vicious and most warlike tribe; and, then, the McAfees, no doubt, felt that, as yet, the whites had no lawfully established claim to the lands to the north of the Ohio. Captain Bullitt, in his speech to the Shawnees, at Chillicothe, June 10, 1773 (see his speech on page 439), seems to concede as much. The McAfees were God-fearing, honorable men, who seem never to have even desired to wrong the ignorant savages. The Treaty of Fort Stanwix, November 5, 1768, had, as nearly everyone then supposed, completely extinguished the Indian title to the whole of Kentucky as far down the Ohio as to the mouth of the Tennessee River; and the McAfees, no doubt, felt sure they had a right to lay in entries and make settlement on the south side of the Ohio, but none on the other side.

5.—No doubt, to men who had probably no clear recollection of ever having seen so considerable a stream as the Ohio, the name "Big River" seemed appropriate. Here we find one of the few instances, if not the only one, of their venturing to explore the northern shore of the Ohio. They were then skirting the edge of what is now West Virginia, near the mouth of Guyandotte River, and

just above the Big Sandy, at whose mouth the party camped the night of June 10.

6.—James estimated their "sail" at 45 miles, from the Big Sandy to the Scioto, on June 11, which is 6 miles too much. Yet, even 39 miles a day in canoes is fine speed. Robert's description of the course of the Ohio on this day, and his estimates of distances, are very inaccurate. James was the more experienced man of the two.

7.—Robert's Journal for May 29 stated there were five canoes of Delaware Indians then with the white companies, but James here mentions nine canoes. No doubt, as the party had moved so very leisurely down the Ohio for the first ten days, additional canoes had overtaken them. What puzzles us is that the whites knew how to distinguish friendly Indians from hostiles far enough off to prevent any clash occurring as the result of misapprehension.

8.—This was an ominous incident, and well calculated to afford matter for serious thought. Where were the former occupants of those empty saddles? Where had those Shawnee bucks been to find those horses? The number of the riderless animals is given by James at 17, but it is likely that the figure 1 did not belong there—the true number was probably 7. Four Indians would hardly have been equal to vanquishing more than their own number of the kind of white men then in the country. No shots seem to have been exchanged, and no attempt made to intercept the Red Skins, who had evidently been up to grave mischief.

9.—Robert here refers to the well-known Indian remains on both sides of the Ohio at the mouth of the Scioto. They are known as "The Portsmouth Group." Collins (Vol. 2, pages 301-3) gives an account of them with illustrations. Here and at one place on the Cumberland River, as Collins thinks, were the only real homes Indians ever had in Kentucky.

10.—This town, built by the French and Indians at least 20 years before the McAfees saw them, is also referred to by many historians. Collins (Vol. 2, pages 300-1) gives a brief account, drawn partly from these journals. The last vestiges of it disappeared more than a century ago, the buildings being of wood.

11.—James seems to have been deeply interested in Captain Bullitt's mission to Chillicothe, and took copies of the most important parts of the proceedings, which will be found in full at pages 439 to 440. The truth was, all settlers south of the Ohio had need to be concerned with the plans and temper of the Shawnees, as was amply demonstrated by the fearful experiences of the Kentuckians in after years.

12.—This was Kinniconnick Creek at whose mouth is now located the village of Quincy, Lewis Co., Ky.

13.—This was Salt Lick Creek, Lewis Co., at whose mouth stands Vanceburg. Less than a mile up it is the salt spring which gives the creek its name.

14.—This brief remark, and the further statement in the next sentence as to the distance (30 miles) travelled up and down that creek, convey no adequate notion of the real significance of that three days' walking. It meant that James separated from the rest of the party, and made a lengthy detour through the forest alone (while the rest of the men were busy surveying claims), and was out there by himself for at least two nights and three days, and at one time was at least 15 miles from his companions. This, too, when he was liable at any moment to fall in with a band of Indians, to say nothing of all the other possible dangers to which he would be exposed. It is hardly practicable for us, in this day, fully to take in the situation, or to understand the mettle of such a man.

15.—From the 17th till about noon of the 21st of June, the whole party lay at the mouth of Salt Lick Creek (Vanceburg), which is just $21\frac{1}{2}$ miles below the mouth of the Scioto, and went 15 or 16 miles farther on the 21st. The Journal of Robert, as we have it, gives the distance of Salt Lick Creek below the Scioto as 15 miles, but it seems almost certain that what he really meant to guess was 25, and the larger figures given are no doubt the unintentional mistake of some copyist.

16.—This refers to the point at which the party camped the night of Monday, June 21—the mouth of a creek which Robert supposed was 16 miles below where Vanceburg now stands. James says it was 15 miles.

17.—These two entries, of 400 acres each, on Salt Lick Creek, eight miles from its mouth, made by James, were the first ever made by any of the McAfee Company proper in Kentucky. Indeed, it is a fact that, with the exception of some surveys which some have alleged (without any clear evidence) to have been made in 1770 by George Washington a little farther up the river, the surveys at

this place by the McAfees and Bullitt were the very first by any men, in Kentucky.

18.—These figures, taken together with other data furnished by these Journals, enable us to form some idea of the size of the little army or fleet now moving down the Ohio. Capt. Bullitt had left a surveyor and 12 men at the mouth of Salt Lick Creek to lay off a town, and then next day he takes with himself 20 men down the river to make entries farther below. This means that the Bullitt Company alone consisted of at least 34 men. If to these we add the companies of McAfee, Harrod, Douglass and Taylor we have probably an aggregate of about 50 or 60 able-bodied men, not one of whom was a "tender-foot." For this assemblage of men, and their considerable outfit and provisions, not fewer than 25 boats would be requisite. The sight of such a fleet as that moving down the river was one well calculated to strike terror to the hearts of any savages who might chance to get a view of it.

19.—June 22 James makes a record, the first part of which narrates the doings of June 21; and one thing he states is that "We campt in 15 miles one night." The only intelligible interpretation of this statement is that it tells us of the journey made in the afternoon of Monday, June 21. Robert tells us, June 21, that they went down the river 16 miles to a creek, and camped that night. The guesses of the two brothers must both refer to the distance travelled the afternoon of Monday, the 21st.

20.—If the distance travelled this day (June 22) was really 20 miles, as our copy of Robert's record has it, then the McAfee Company went to the mouth of Lawrence Creek, about 5 miles below Maysville, before going into camp, and this agrees with the latter part of the record James made on June 22, which will be considered in Note 21. Collins (Vol. 2, page 549) asserts that the McAfees reached the mouth of Limestone Creek June 22, and remained there two days, but this is clearly incorrect. The truth is, from the reading of the two Journals, it seems nearly certain they did not stop at Limestone at all, but passed it June 22, and did not make camp till they reached the mouth of Lawrence Creek, some five miles below. Gen. R. B. McAfee goes still wider of the mark, and says they reached the mouth of Limestone on the 24th of June. Collins has them leaving Limestone on that day, after a two days' stay there. From Maysville to Covington is 61 miles, by the river, and it would have occupied about two whole days to have compassed that distance, not stopping on the way to look at land. But James's record shows that they did stop, making only 8 miles June 23, and 6 miles on June 24. On the 25th they travelled about 40 miles, making no stops, reaching the mouth of Licking River that night.

21.—This item about the fine cedar trees James saw across the Ohio from their camping place evidently relates to the doings of June 22. The previous part of the record, under date of the 22d, related to what occurred on the day before. James nowhere states how far they travelled on the 22nd of June, but he states that the party camped that night at the mouth of Lawrence Creek. This stream is just about the distance from Salt Lick Creek (35 miles) which both Journals show the party to have come on the two days, June 21 and 22. This creek is five miles below Limestone Creek at whose mouth Maysville was afterwards built. There is no reason for supposing this party made any stop at the mouth of Limestone. It had probably not been named at this early day (1773), and no settlement was made there till after years.

22.—James says they travelled 8 miles on June 23, and camped at the mouth of a creek which he calls "Bracken's." Be it noted that Matt Bracken was with this party, and it is evident the aim of the party was to honor him by naming the stream for him. It probably had never before had any name. It is certain, however, that in some way Bracken's name was afterwards given to the creek, which enters the Ohio at Augusta, Kentucky, about 7 or 8 miles farther down. The one which James calls "Bracken's" is now known as Lee's Creek, and it was there the party lay the night of June 23. Such a transposition of names is easily accounted for when we reflect that creeks in an unsettled region must often have looked much alike; and, in the absence of maps or distinct marks of some sort, subsequent travellers might confound one with another. The Bracken Creek of to-day, which comes into the Ohio at Augusta, is 13 miles below Lawrence Creek, whereas the creek where they camped June 23 is scarcely 8 miles below it.

23.—To the stream six or eight miles below Lee's Creek, which is the true Bracken Creek, and which is at the town of Augusta, James here gives the name of an old soldier in the party by the name of

Wilper. But his name did not stick where the party put it any more than Bracken's did. Wilper's name gave place to Bracken's, and later on fastened itself to a creek in Boone County, Kentucky, on which "Old Wilper" laid in some lands, as noted in James's Journal on June 30. The night of June 24 was evidently spent at the mouth of the true Bracken Creek where Augusta now stands.

24.—At the mouth of Bracken Creek, where the town of Augusta now stands, Robert took leave of his companions to make a long detour through the interior to the southward, Thursday, June 24. The party had, no doubt, gotten there before noon that day. He seems to have gone entirely unattended. He ascended Bracken Creek to its source, 10 miles to the south of the Ohio; and then, within one mile farther on, he came upon the head spring of a small stream now called Willow Creek, which he descended to its mouth at the North Fork of Licking River, a distance of nearly 8 miles. Following the downward course of the Licking for about 25 miles he reached a point probably not more than a mile or two below the site of the present town of Falmouth. Somewhere up there he laid in several surveys. Here he turned away from the Licking towards the Ohio, and a trip of 13 miles across the hills brought him back to that stream. He probably regained the Ohio about where the railway station called Bradford now stands, or possibly near Foster, not more than 10 or 15 miles below the point at which he had left his companions. Reaching the river, he discovered that the Company had all gone on down the Ohio. Nothing daunted, he constructed, with his tomahawk and knife, a canoe out of the bark of a tree, and embarked. Pulling at his oars till the setting of the moon that night, he lay by till day-break. Then resuming his journey, he paddled his little boat on down the river, and at 10 o'clock that morning, Sunday, the 27th day of June, he reached the mouth of the Licking, and was rejoiced to find his companions there awaiting his coming. They had gotten there two days before he arrived. Some of the party—and almost certainly his brother James with them—had gone up the Licking about 20 miles to inspect the land, but found it undesirable. If Robert was really alone on his long tour to the interior he must have been something of a surveyor, for James states in his Journal that Robert laid in several entries 40 miles up the Licking.

25.—According to James the Company—from whom Robert had separated himself on the 24th of June, to make his exploring tour of 2 or 3 days into the interior—spent the whole day (June 25) pulling at their oars. He makes the party to have covered a distance of 44 miles on this day. That the starting point on this morning was the mouth of the creek where now the town of Augusta stands seems beyond all serious doubt; and this point, by actual survey of the U. S. engineers, is just $42\frac{1}{2}$ miles above the month of Licking River, which they reached in the evening. Their guess at the distance and their speed in covering it in canoes were both alike excellent. From Augusta to the Little Miami River is $35\frac{3}{4}$ miles, and James makes it 36 miles.

26.—The only way in which James could know the character of the land on Licking River 20 miles above its mouth was by the personal inspection of it by himself or others in the Company. It is clear that some of the men—and most probably James among them—made an exploring trip up that stream on Saturday the 26th of June, while Robert was separated from his companions and exploring 30 to 50 miles still farther up its course.

27.—James says Robert was 40 miles up the Licking, and also that some entries were made 40 miles up it—by whom he does not state. Robert says he himself made one entry of land on "that creek"; but whether he did this while far up that stream on his lonely tour (June 24-26), or near its mouth after he had rejoined his companions, he does not affirm. It seems probable, however, that Robert made at least two or three entries of land on the Licking while out on his tour, and that he estimated those surveys to have been 40 miles above its mouth. This was only a wild guess, and he probably did not get within 30 miles of the mouth. In Note No. 24 the guess was made by the present writer that Robert descended the Licking, when out on his tour, to a point very near where Falmouth now stands; and that town, we know, is 51 miles from the mouth of the Licking. The following conclusions seem to be well established, to wit: 1, Robert came down the Licking on June 24-26 to a point about 50 miles from its mouth; 2, that he laid in at least two or three surveys of land up there; 3, that Robert was either something of a surveyor (as his son, General R. B. McAfee, seems to have thought), or else had a surveyor along with him,

and hence was not without at least one companion on that tour; 4, that some of the rest of the Company (James McAfee being almost certainly among them) made a trip of at least 20 miles up the Licking June 26, starting from its mouth at the Ohio, and found the land poor and uninviting; and, 5, that these explorations of the Licking River by the McAfees were the first ever made by any white man as much as even a mile or two above its mouth.

28.—This was the third so-called town which was laid off, the first being where Vanceburg is, and the second about the site of the town of Augusta; but nothing seems ever to have come of these efforts. It is not exactly clear whether the McAfees had any personal interest in these attempts at town-building. The exact site of this third town was in what is now Boone County, Kentucky, about four miles above the mouth of the Big Miami River. Close by its site there is now a village called Bullittsville, in Boone Co., Ky., and this was probably named in honor of Capt. Thomas Bullitt.

29.—How accurately the bends of the Ohio are described in these Journals may be seen at this point by studying them with a good map at hand. After passing Lawrenceburg, Ind., it turns to the southeast, and then below Rising Sun, Ind., it runs almost due east till near the mouth of Big Bone Creek, in Boone County, Kentucky.

30.—Once again "Old Wilper" bobs up. He was probably an eccentric old soldier who had served the colony of Virginia as a commissioned officer in the war against the French and Indians, and was now laying in "officers' rights." Just here, in Boone Co., is a creek, which still bears his name, "Woolper," which may compensate him for the failure of his name to stick long to that creek at Augusta, Ky., which his companions seem to have intended should bear it. See James's Journal, entry of June 24.

31.—The record of Robert is the only one we have for this stage of the journey, James having no record after June 30 till the 8th of July, and the one we have is not clear as to the distances travelled. It seems that the town laid off on the 28th June was four miles above the mouth of the Big Miami River, and on July 1 the party only went 8 miles, camping 4 miles below the mouth of that river in the bend of the Ohio, about 2 miles below the site of the present town of Lawrenceburg, Indiana. When Robert says the Ohio there begins to run for 18 miles to the southeast, "where we lay all night," he means that their place of camping the night of July 1 was where that 18 mile stretch of the river begins, and not where it ends.

32.—This journey of 25 miles, on the 2d of July, carried them 10 miles past the mouth of the Big Bone Creek, into which it had been their purpose to turn, as Captain Bullitt desired there to make a station, and survey land. All of the party had information beforehand in regard to the wonderful Salt Lick, which was located a few miles up that creek, but the whole party unwittingly passed by its mouth on Friday, July 2, and went into camp 10 miles below, right at the well-known bend of the Ohio which begins at the village of Sugar Creek, in Gallatin County, Ky. Warsaw, the county seat, is only about 4 miles below the point where the party camped this night.

33.—The party, for some unexplained reason, spent all of Saturday, July 3, in camp at the point they reached the night before. While here two of their party, Matthew Bracken and Jacob Drennon, stealthily took leave of the McAfees for a season, in order to carry out a little scheme of their own. The party had resolved to go back up the river 10 miles in order to visit the famous Lick, called the Big Bone, where some days were to be spent; and Bracken and Drennon knew they could readily execute their scheme in time to rejoin the main party at the Big Bone and so be ready to start with them when they should resume their journey down the Ohio. James McAfee, in his record of July 9, lets this Bracken-Drennon cat "out of the bag." It seems that Bracken was one of the three white men who had accompanied Captain Bullitt to the Shawnee capital, on the Scioto, early in June, as recorded on a previous page. While on that mission Bracken learned from an Indian that there was a lick near the Kentucky River, not far above its mouth, which was, in its way, almost as remarkable as the Big Bone; and, for the promise of a rifle gun, the Indian had told Bracken exactly how to find it, as he should be passing not far from it. He made known his secret to Drennon, and the two agreed to take an unfair advantage of their companions, in violation of the well established rules which explorers associated together are wont to regard, by going a few days in advance to select the best lands, and lay in their surveys. There was an old trail, made, no doubt, centuries ago, by the buffaloes, one stretch of which ran from the Big

Bone down to the lick these men had their eyes on, and the camping place of the McAfees, July 3, was only a very short distance from that trail. This was the trail Gen. George Rogers Clark followed to the mouth of Licking River on his expedition against the Indians on the Miami and Scioto Rivers, in September, 1782; and it came in after years to be known as "Gen. Clark's War Road," and is so designated by Filson on his map, published in 1784. It was along this road the gallant, but ill-fated, Captain William McAfee (younger brother of James and Robert) went with Gen. Clark on that expedition, and along it he was carried back, not long after, in a dying condition, he having received a mortal wound in the battle Clark had with the Indians in Ohio. Bracken and Drennon only needed to cut across through the woods from the camp of the party at the Ohio a few miles to the south, when they would come into this trail, and less than a day's travel would bring them to the coveted lick. They carried out their purpose, and got to the Big Bone before the McAfees left there, July 7.

34.—The larger part of Sunday, the 4th of July, 1773, was spent by this party of perhaps 50 white men at the Big Bone Lick. There were no firecrackers exploded, however, and "Old Glory" was not floating above them, and no patriotic speeches were made. This was several years before the "Immortal Declaration" was published, and every mother's son of the party was a loyal subject of King George III, against whom, in a very few years, nearly all of them, it is probable, took up arms.

35.—The amazing spectacle which those men then and there beheld has been described hundreds of times by travellers, and by learned scientists; and all who care to look into the matter fully will find ample accounts in the various works to be found in all the large libraries of the world. This lick was frequented, in former ages, by immense creatures like the mastodon, long since extinct, which became imbedded in the soft mud, and there perished. Skeletons have been shipped from this place to scientific museums in America and elsewhere. In Collins (Vol. 2, page 52), a brief account of this "graveyard of the mammoth"—as he calls it—is given, which will interest the unprofessional reader.

36.—It was the intention of the McAfees to have left the Big Bone early in the day, Wednesday, July 7, but the arrival of some traders from up the river detained them for most of the day. The traders had seen the corpse of a man floating at the edge of the river above the mouth of the Kanawha, and this provoked some discussion. But that afternoon the McAfees bade a final farewell to Captain Bullitt and his men, and proceeded alone down the river. The mouth of the Kentucky River was only about 30 miles by water from the Big Bone, and into that stream they meant to turn, whilst Bullitt's objective point was the Falls of the Ohio, some 51 miles farther down.

37.—The "eight men" included the five men composing the McAfee Company proper; and the three surveyors, Taylor, Bracken and Drennon. The place at which the party rested the night of July 7 could not have been more than eight or ten miles above Carrollton. This entry in James's Journal is very confusing and unsatisfactory. The editor is decidedly of the opinion that a number of the pages of the original document of James got so badly defaced as to be almost wholly illegible. One whole week's record is entirely wanting (July 1-7), and this entry of July 8 can hardly be what James actually wrote. The record of Robert is clear and consistent, whilst this one of July 8, purporting to be the writing of James, is a mass of errors and contradictions. The distance travelled on Thursday, July 8, was, according to Robert, about 28 miles, only about 10 of which miles were on the Ohio, and were travelled before the break of day. We are compelled to conclude either that James's manuscript became almost hopelessly defaced, or that the copyists have made sad work of it. We must rely on the record of Robert mainly for this 8th day of July.

38.—This creek, at whose mouth they spent their first night as a party in Kentucky, was probably that known as Big Twin Creek, or the one entering the Kentucky River from the east, a mile below it, in Owen County. Gen. McAfee thinks it was Eagle Creek they stopped at, but it is not far enough from the Ohio, and not near enough to Drennon's Creek, to fit into his father's Journal records.

39.—This creek is the stream which bears the name of Jacob Drennon, one of the surveyor's assistants in this party; and the lick one mile above its mouth is named in honor of the same enterpris-

ing woodsman, who, in company with Bracken, had visited this spot nearly a week before. This "flank movement" on the part of these two men evidently made a painful impression on the mind of this upright Scotch-Irish Presbyterian, as one will discover on reading the whole of his record for this day. His nephew, Gen. R. B. McAfee, in his autobiography, supplements the account by stating that the conduct of these men so displeased the McAfees that they were not allowed to proceed farther with the Company. This, however, is a mistake, for these men were evidently with the Company till July 31, when they and Taylor took final leave of the McAfees to rejoin Bullitt at the Falls. See the Journals of James and Robert, under date of July 30 and 31.

40.—Both Journals mention surveys having been made by the party at Drennon's Lick, but neither states just how many. James says "several tracts," and we may safely assume this would mean at least 3 tracts of 400 acres each. This was, so far as can be gotten from these Journals, the fourth locality in which the McAfees made entries; the first, on Salt Lick Creek; the second, on upper Licking; the third, at the mouth of Licking; and this (the fourth), on Drennon's Creek. We do not know whether any of these claims were ever perfected, but it is very doubtful. They got all the land they could handle when they got to "Crooked Creek" (Salt River).

41.—James here speaks of the farthest point up the Kentucky River which he explored at this time as being about six miles above the mouth of Drennon's Creek, and about 26 miles from the Ohio. His estimate is almost exact. From the mouth of Drennon to the Ohio by the Kentucky River is just 21 miles by the engineers' survey, and he went "about six miles" above that point on his excursion in a vain search for "conveniency for mills."

42.—The remains of this old "Buffalo Trace" were seen by the present writer in June of the year 1903. It comes up Drennon's Creek from the Lick towards Newcastle for some distance, and then diverges a little to the east of due south towards Six-Mile Creek and Frankfort. This same Trace is constantly alluded to in the old surveys, and was a historic route to and from the central part of Kentucky and the Ohio River. It was the most direct route the McAfees could have chosen to reach the locality on "Crooked Creek," which they had decided upon long in advance of their reaching it. There is a neat modern hotel now at Drennon Springs, and the same salt and sulphurous waters issue forth as of yore, only not in such abundance, perhaps, as once they did, owing, no doubt, to the thousands of wells which have been dug all over the land, and also to the stopping up of the springs by cultivation.

43.—These two surveys; one of 400 and one of 200 acres, included a large part of the area now occupied by the city of Frankfort. They were the very first surveys ever made by man on the banks of the Kentucky River. See a full account of them in Collins, Vol. 2, page 249.

44.—The spring in which these various articles were hidden is still there, and known as the McAfee Spring. In March of the year 1903 the present writer was in Frankfort, and had a talk with Judge Lysander Hoard, the present owner of the land on which the spring is. It is about one mile and a half northeast of the Court House, on the Franklin and Owen turnpike. It is a bold spring, and is about 50 yards from a cliff. One-half a mile above it is a much larger spring known as Cove Spring, with which some might confound it. This larger spring is the head of a large branch, and once turned a mill wheel, and supplied the city with water. It is the smaller spring, however, which the McAfees had to do with in July, 1773.

45.—This "path," be it noted, was that same old historic "Buffalo Trace," one branch of which went right up the ridge in a southeasterly direction to where Lexington now stands. It has been followed closely by the track of the railway between Frankfort and Lexington.

46.—James tells us that the party went up "that path" about 8 miles, and then turned to the southwest and within 6 miles came again to the Kentucky River. In other words, they traversed the two sides of an irregular triangle. Robert takes no account of the 8 miles they travelled up the ridge along the Buffalo Trace towards the southeast, nor of the 6 miles to the southwest towards the "Levisa" (Kentucky River). He simply states that they crossed the river about 7 miles from his survey (the bottom at Frankfort). Both state what is true. They went up the ridge along the "Trace" to about where Ducker's Station now stands; but whilst the soil and timber were excellent, water was too scarce for their wants, and they wheeled to the "right oblique," and the point at

which they regained the river was a little less than 7 miles from where they had started that morning.

47.—In this tramp across the woods for twelve miles they must have passed very close to the site of Lawrenceburg, going southwesterly to within a few miles of Salt River, and then turning to the southeast, as water was still scarce.

48.—This was the Sabbath, and James says nothing of any travelling, but they did journey about 8 miles. This brought them to a spring, which is one of the heads of Gilbert's Creek, then proceeded up towards the west. On reaching the spring they seem to have concluded that they were not far from the place which was to prove their goal. This spring is, by James (in his record of Wednesday, July 21), designated "Cove Spring." The spelling may possibly have been Cave instead of Cove, but after careful inspection of the spring itself and its surroundings, by the present writer within the year 1903, the conclusion was that, unless the natural features of the spot have been completely transformed, there was nothing there like a cave. On the other hand, there is much in the topography of the land thereabout to warrant one in calling the spot a cove. It is between Lawrenceburg and Salvisa (3½ miles from Salvisa), only about 75 yards to the east of the turnpike. For a long time it was called Lillard's Spring, but in recent years has been known as McCall's. It is a bold spring of clear, cool water; and in the fall of 1862, a large part of the Confederate forces under the command of Gen. Kirby Smith camped by it and found it equal to supplying their needs.

49.—These men had no reason for supposing there were any white explorers in all central Kentucky besides themselves, and the report of a gun must have made them feel that Indians were near by. No explanation of this incident seems ever to have been given.

50.—Where he got the name of "Crooked Creek" for this stream (Salt River) we can only surmise. Its remarkably tortuous windings may have suggested the name to him. Possibly Daniel Boone, while in Kentucky a year or two before, had wandered along its banks and noted its unusual crookedness, and when he got back to the New River settlements in Virginia, on his way back to his home on the Yadkin, had spoken of its peculiarity in connection with the very inviting character of the land thereabout, so that the McAfees understood something of the region before they started on this tour. It is said that Boone spent some months in a cave on the bank of Kentucky River only a few miles east of the part of this stream at which the McAfees finally settled.

50½.—When these men left Cove Spring, July 21, they travelled "two miles," according to James; or "about 3 miles," according to Robert; and then they came to the stream which we know, beyond a shadow of doubt, to have been Salt River. We may reasonably "split the difference" between the estimates of the two chroniclers, and put the distance as 2½ miles. As we know exactly the location of the Cove Spring, and also the bends of Salt River to the westward of it, we can locate almost the very spot at which they came first to the bank of Salt River. That stream makes a bend to the eastward right on the line of the present counties of Anderson and Mercer, and just there it is a little closer to the Spring than at any other point—about 2½ miles. From McBrayer Station, on the Southern Railway, that bend is 2 miles, due southwest. Now, James narrates that the party went down the river from that point "four miles," and made surveys for the McConns. Robert says they went "a little down that creek," *i. e.*, Salt River, and made the McConn surveys. Four miles is rather too great a distance to be designated as "a little down that creek" in the connection in which this phrase is used. Hence, we must again "split the difference" between the two statements, and we will say the distance was about 3 miles. One writer may have had in mind the direct distance, regardless of the tortuous course of the stream; and the other may have kept the actual windings of the stream in view. So, we may safely conclude that the surveys of July 21 were about 3 miles below the point at which the party first struck Salt River. But in so deciding we have to question the accuracy of the narrative of Gen. R. B. McAfee, written probably 60 to 70 years after the two Journals were. The General positively asserts that the surveys for McConn, made July 21, were at the month of Hammond Creek, which is from 8 to 12 miles below the point at which we have decided the party first came to the bank of Salt River. Hammond Creek rises to the northeast and southeast of Lawrenceburg, and flows southwesterly to Salt River; and Mr. Will C. Woods, of Lawrenceburg, who has hunted up and down both Salt River and Hammond Creek frequently, is confident that the site of the surveys of July 21 was several miles above

the mouth of Hammond, at the point where Hickory Nut Creek puts in on the west side of the river. Where Gen. McAfee got his data for his opinion, we know not; but Hammond Creek is several miles too far down to meet the requirements of the case. Hence, we consider it extremely probable that the first surveys on Salt River by these men were near the mouth of Hickory Nut Creek.

51.—This reads as if James meant to say that he had his two tracts of land (on which he resided from the fall of 1779, till his death in 1811) surveyed on Friday, July 23, but his language does not necessarily demand this meaning. He mentions 14 separate tracts of 400 acres each in his record, dated July 23, but, of course, no such quantity of land could have been laid off by that party of men in a single day. When we reflect as to the very unfavorable circumstances under which these men had to make entries in their Journals, at times, we can readily understand how the date at the heading of a record might be ambiguous to their posterity generations later. If we examine Robert's record from July 21 to 31, and Gen. R. B. McAfee's comments in his autobiography, we shall be able to discover the probable order of the various surveys.

52.—It seems impossible to ascertain from the two Journals, even with the aid of the explanatory comments found in the autobiography of Gen. R. B. McAfee, the exact amount of land the surveyors laid off for the McAfee Company, or the precise individuals for whom all of the several tracts were surveyed. Two surveys were certainly made on Salt Lick Creek, about June 18; at least 3 were probably made on the Licking River about 50 or 60 miles above its mouth; one was made June 27 at the mouth of the Licking; at least 3 were made at Drennon's Lick July 9 to 14; 2 were made (July 16) on the meadow now covered by the city of Frankfort; and 2 more July 19 at the Cove Spring, the whole aggregating about 5,000 acres, before the party reached the banks of Salt River. On Salt River ("Crooked Creek") surveys were made at five or six separate localities scattered along that stream from a point 3 or 4 miles below where they first struck it to the point one mile southwest of Harrodsburg, where the turnpike to Perryville crosses it by a bridge. The distance by land between these two points is about 20 miles. The great majority of the surveys, however, were located at, or within a few miles of, the survey of James McAfee, Jr., on which he built his fort in 1779, and his stone house in 1790. As far as can be made out from all the records at command, lands were entered at this time on some part of "Crooked Creek," within the limits named, for each of the five men composing the McAfee Company proper; for the two McAfee brothers (William and Samuel), who were not then with the Company; for James McAfee, Sr., the father of the five brothers of that name; and for Jeremiah Telford, and James and John Curry. There must have been, in all, about 25 separate tracts of land taken up at this time on Salt River, aggregating 10,000 acres. These surveys, being added to those laid in before reaching that stream, make a grand total of 15,000 acres of choice Kentucky land, which this Company laid claim to in June and July, 1773. Inasmuch as the entry of each 400-acre tract gave the individual making it an additional claim to 1,000 acres adjoining it, in case he should perfect his title and pay the government price for the land, we have above 52,000 acres of land, (more than 80 square miles) to which these men laid claim. Much of this land, however, never actually became their property, as they did not care to perfect all their claims after they made their final settlement. The three town-sites which they took part in laying off, namely, at Vanceburg, Augusta and Boone County, seem never to have been further developed. It is not entirely clear from these Journals whether the McAfees were personally concerned in the proprietorship of all of these town-sites, or only had a kindly interest in Captain Bullitt's plans in regard thereto. In any event, all these attempts to found cities seemed to have come to naught. As to the surveys on Salt River, however,—especially those on which the McAfees and their relatives and neighbors actually took up permanent residence in the fall of 1779—we know that these were carefully and conspicuously marked, before these men started back home, by cutting and piling up brush, and by deadening trees on the same. Thus the fact is established, beyond all dispute, that nearly one year before Harrod struck the first blow with his axe to found Harrodsburg—the first town founded in Kentucky—the McAfees had selected, surveyed and marked a settlement on Salt River on which all of them afterwards lived, and where most of them died and were buried, and which abides to this day.

53.—These entries make several points very

clear, to wit: 1, the three men, Taylor, Bracken and Drennon, continued with the McAfees until all of their surveying had been finished; 2, that Hancock Taylor was the head surveyor of that trio, and Bracken and Drennon were merely his assistants; and, 3, that the McAfees had evidently intended to rejoin Captain Bullitt on their homeward journey, but, after duly weighing all the circumstances after concluding their surveys, had resolved to attempt to ascend Kentucky River to its head streams far up in the mountains. From thence they could make their way over into Powell's Valley, and to Clinch River, where they would be on somewhat familiar ground, and where a frontier cabin could here and there be seen.

54.—This day's journey took them across lands now constituting the northern end of the town of Harrodsburg. The distance they travelled that rainy afternoon, through the cane-brakes of what is now "The Cane Run Neighborhood," was quite 9 miles instead of 7. They must have passed just to the south, and in sight of, the place where Harrodsburg Junction is located, and struck Dick's River at the most westerly point of the big bend 2¼ miles southeast of the Junction, where the rocky cliffs and the cedars are still to be found, and which, no doubt, look very much as they did 130 years ago.

55.—They camped this evening (Sunday, August 1), on the east bank of Sugar Creek, in what is now Garrard County, having passed just to the south of where Bryantsville now stands.

56.—It would seem that the lick was probably within sight of the high hill which is now in the southern end of Richmond—perhaps Irvine's Lick.

57.—When on some of the bold hills as they were approaching Drowning Creek, in what is now the eastern end of Madison County, they saw looming up about 8 miles in the distance, to the east of them, the mountains just back of, and around the site of, what is now the town of Irvine. Here the mountains and also their sorest hardships began.

58.—There are clauses in the Journal of James this day which, in the form we have them in the copy at hand, defy all attempts at rational explanation. "The little pine mountain 16 miles into the level woods" is an insoluble puzzle, but the place of their camp the night of August 3 was, beyond all doubt, only a very few miles east of where Irvine now stands. The records of the succeeding days make this certain. It is evident that the aim of the party at first was to strike across the country to the southeast, regardless of the windings of the Kentucky River, but a few hours spent in climbing those mountains convinced them that this would be next to impossible. Hence, the very next morning they came back to the river.

59.—This salt spring is there to this day, as the writer has learned by correspondence with persons in that part of the country who are familiar with it. Some persons living near by obtain salt from it in our day by boiling down its waters. Its exact location, being so certainly identified, furnishes a fixed point by means of which we can easily solve several otherwise puzzling questions relating to the journey of these men.

60.—There are several palpable errors in the entries of both Journals this day. James and Robert both make the distance between the mouths of the South and Middle Forks (near Beattyville) to be 15 miles, when, in fact, it is less than 5. This mistake was either due to the carelessness of copyists, or to the fact that the record of this day's journeying was not made for a day or two after, when some of the details had faded from their minds. Possibly the party had to ascend the two considerable creeks (Crystal and Silver Creeks) which come into the river just there, in order to avoid rafting, and in this way travelled 2 or 3 times as far in between the mouths of the two forks of the river as they would have had to do if ascending the stream close to its bank. If we deduct 10 miles from this part of their day's journey we help to clear up a second palpable error, namely, the statement of James to the effect that the party went 40 miles this day. That would be hardly practicable, even now, with existing roads; in that day, when there were no roads, it was impossible. Deducting 10 miles we have 5 miles left for the distance between the 2 forks, and 30 miles for the whole day's journey. Even 30 miles is remarkable for men pulling their way through the bushes and along the steep, rocky banks of the river. That this much was accomplished seems certain, however, for their camping place at evening (August 5) was on the North Fork, 12 miles above the mouth of the South Fork, and that is just about 30 miles from where they camped the previous night.

61.—This "big creek" was Holly Creek, which enters the river in the extreme southern end of Wolfe County, close to the edge of Breathitt.

62.—This "fork," as both James and Robert regarded it, was Frozen Creek, in Breathitt County. James says "we took the left," which, of course,

is an error. Robert says, correctly, "we took the right hand." It could not possibly have been other than as Robert gives it.

63.—This day the party were in "Bloody Breathitt," and walked right along over the ground on which the now famous Jackson is built. They went on past that point about 3 miles to the mouth of Quicksand Creek, where they camped for the night of August 7.

64.—This was the Sabbath day, August 8, and a day of fearful hardship. At this day greenbrier and laurel bushes are abundant there. The hills were steep, the bushes were thick and thorny, and the river very crooked; and, besides all these trying conditions, the steep mountains came down so close to the river's edge as to allow no foothold for a man to walk on dry land, and the water was deep. Nearly 20 times this day they had to cross the river, and very often they were up to their waists in water. For some reason neither of these chroniclers remark on a large fork of the river they passed this morning a few miles from the camp of the previous night. That fork bears an appropriate name—Troublesome. They had camped on Quicksand; they had to ford Troublesome, and when evening drew on they were probably exhausted.

65.—But at the evening of this Sabbath of trial there was one important and cheering incident—James saw and brought down, with his rifle, a buck elk, whose flesh was the life of the party for the ensuing four days. But for this merciful interposition of Providence the probability is the whole party would have died of starvation. Not another particle of food did they get till late in the afternoon of August 12. For days in succession no game of any kind was even seen. The killing of this animal determined them to go into camp just there where he fell. James himself does not make the remotest allusion to this incident anywhere in his narrative, and Robert simply states: "We killed a buck elk," not deeming it worth noting who did the killing. This Sabbath evening feast occurred on the boundary line between Breathitt and Perry Counties, about 30 to 35 miles below where the town of Hazard now stands, and about 25 miles above Jackson.

66.—The travelling this day (Monday, August 9), was extremely trying for most of the time, and the river had to be crossed frequently in order to get round the bends. A more painful and wearisome journey than this can hardly be conceived of.

67.—This day, after going for a few hours by creeping along under the high, steep, rocky banks, amidst briars and underbrush, until they felt they could endure it no longer, they essayed to abandon the river and strike across the ridges towards Virginia. This was probably at the big bend about 7 miles below Hazard. They knew they were getting well on towards Powell's Valley, and no doubt hoped to be able to find a more endurable way than the river banks afforded. But this was a vain hope. A brief experience with the greenbrier and other brush and the steep mountains drove them back to the river banks again, and for 20 miles they pulled themselves along, though they knew they dare not follow the river much longer, as it was leading them too far to the north, and they needed to turn southeast.

68.—It was out of the question for them to cling longer to the river's course, for that meant carrying them far out of their desired direction, and they were still over 250 miles from home. So, coming to a creek putting in from the south—which could scarcely be anything but Leatherwood Creek (or Macie's), in Perry County—they resolved to follow its course, and they here bade a final farewell to the river, at 2:00 p. m., Wednesday, August 11, and marched up the banks of this creek towards the south. The considerations which constrain the present writer to the conviction that it was at the mouth of Leatherwood Creek (or Macie's), and nowhere else, that the party left the North Fork of the Kentucky River, in an attempt to reach Powell's Valley, will here be presented. He feels that the requirements of the Journals and also of the topographical and geographical conditions of the case are such as can not be met nearly so well, if at all, by any other point on the river. In the first place, when we note the distance these men had travelled (according to the Journals) since they began the ascent of the river near Irvine, Ky., August 4, and compare their estimates with the actual measurements of the river we find them to agree most strikingly. During the 8 days, or parts of days, they were ascending the river the Journals show them to have travelled (after deducting 10 miles for the palpable over-estimate of August 5) a distance of 164 miles. No doubt they were here and there able to save a mile or so by cutting across a bend over a ridge; but as they would also lose distance by having to go around the mouths of creeks some distance in order to find accessible fording places a little above, we may allow the gains on the one side to

counterbalance the losses on the other. When we measure the actual distances on the large-scale maps of the U. S. Geological Survey (2 miles to one inch) we find that from the point at which the party began the ascent of the river near Irvine to the mouth of Leatherwood Creek in Perry County it is not far from the same number of miles as the Journals call for—the difference is only about eight miles. The Journal of James makes the distance 164 miles; the actual distance is about 156 miles. If we fix upon any other creek which would answer even a majority of the requirements of the Journals in other respects (except Macie's), we raise difficulties which are practically insuperable by widening greatly the difference between the distance as given in the Journals and that actually shown by the maps. Secondly, James says the point at which they left the river was marked by a "short bend" of the river turning to the northwest. The river actually does make a decided bend to the northwest right where the creek in question comes in. The bend is not at this day a strikingly abrupt one, but it is an unmistakable bend to the northwest, and it may have made much more of an acute angle there 130 years ago than it does to-day, as the tendency in rivers is to wash out the bank at abrupt bends as the freshets act upon them year by year, thereby producing a wider and more regular curve in the banks. Thirdly, James says the creek up which they went came in from the south, and headed up in a high hill about six miles from its mouth. This requirement is met by the smaller fork of Leatherwood Creek with absolute completeness. Its head is just six miles from its mouth, and it issues from the base of a "high hill" whose top is 2,200 feet above sea level. Fourthly, the Journal demands that the six miles going up this creek, and the other six miles travelled after reaching its head that evening, should be through high laurel hills of the worst character for men on foot. This is precisely the character of that region to-day. A reliable citizen of that very neighborhood, Mr. R. N. Cornett, informed the writer that the region fixed upon as the one answering these conditions is exactly such as the Journals describe, and that there are now patches of laurel to be seen just there which would almost entirely baffle any attempt of a man to push his way through them. Fifthly, the Journals demand that a journey of six miles, on August 12, from the camping place which they reached August 11 after going up the creek six miles, and then as much farther through laurel hills, shall bring us to a certain large creek just where there is a fall in its course, and where a fork of it comes in from the south. The Poor Fork of Cumberland River, just where Clover Lick Creek enters it in Harlan County, Ky., answers every requirement most minutely. The Poor Fork is marked just there by a fall produced by a ledge of rocks running entirely across the stream to the southern bank, and right there Clover Lick Creek enters from the south. Sixthly, the Journal of James calls for a salt spring on the creek two miles above the falls of the larger stream into which it there empties. There were, when those men passed up that creek, on the 12th day of August, many well beaten paths made by Elk and other wild animals which frequented those licks. The same gentleman to whom reference was made a moment ago (Mr. Cornett) informs the writer (as other persons besides him have done) that those salt springs or licks are still just there, 2 miles up the Clover Lick Creek from the Poor Fork falls referred to, and that it has always been the tradition in the vicinity that the wild beasts in former times resorted to the spot to lick the salt. Seventhly, the narrative of James states that the licks he saw were situated right at the northern base of a mountain, which mountain was so much loftier than any they had yet seen in their travels that he characterizes it as "an exceeding high mountain." The fact is, that right at the salt springs now, on Clover Lick Creek, 2 miles above its mouth, begins the steep ascent of the highest mountain range in the State of Kentucky, which has an altitude of 3,800 feet, just overlooking the salt springs, and reaches an altitude of 4,100 feet a little to the east of that point. These peaks are not only from 1,000 to 1,800 feet higher than any these men had yet seen in Kentucky, but they are marked by that overwhelming barrenness and craggy grandeur which, as Gen'l R. B. McAfee learned from his uncle James in after years, so terrified the starving men of his party as, weak and fainting, they slowly dragged themselves up its steep face under a blazing August sun. Eighthly, great as was the altitude of the mountain James describes as looking down upon the elk licks at its northern base, those men managed to climb over it and reach its southern or southeastern base by a journey of about four miles. The actual distance from the salt springs now on Clover Lick Creek, before described, up and over the Big Black Mountain to the south of them is only about 5 or 6 miles by actual measurement. Finally, the Journals require that the distance from the camping place of

August 12, at the southern base of the "exceeding high mountain" across the head of Powell's Valley to Powell's River shall be about 8 miles. As a matter of actual measurement on the excellent U. S. Survey maps the distance from the point at which the writer believes the party camped the night of August 12 to the place where they camped on Powell's River the night following is only about 10 miles. Yet other requirements of the Journals are fully met by the route which the writer alleges was the one actually followed by these men, but enough has been said. When we look at all the requirements of the two Journals, and study the topography of the region traversed by the McAfees, the conclusion seems irresistible that the route contended for by this writer was substantially the very one which these men followed in 1773. Every attempt to fix upon any other route from the Kentucky River to Powell River raises various difficulties, some of which are absolutely insuperable.

69.—This spot on the Poor Fork in Harlan County, Ky., having been identified by the writer after long and patient research, he employed a lady at Harlan Court House, who does excellent work as a photographer (Mrs. Bailey), to go to the place, some 30 miles distant, and procure a good photograph of it for this book. And the reader will find a beautiful engraving made from the photograph at page 438.

70.—A modest hero was Robert. This is all he has to say of an act of his which revealed fortitude and calmness in the face of death. That unerring shot which he fired at a buck deer saved himself and four other men from death; and yet he does not even say he was the man who pulled the trigger. His brother, James, under somewhat less tragic circumstances, had done a like deed just four days previously.

71.—The head of any river's valley is always a rather indefinite sort of region, but it is certain that Powell's River has nothing worth calling a valley above the Big Stone Gap; and from that point on down to the village of Dryden, twelve miles below, there is a valley which we may confidently call "the head of Powell's Valley." The writer has visited the spot, and intelligent persons at Big Stone Gap told him that it was common in that section to speak of the area between the Gap and Dryden as the head of Powell's Valley. This settles it that the McAfees came to Powell's River August 13 somewhere within these limits. In this vicinity, beyond all reasonable doubt, occurred the sad disaster which overtook Boone and his company only 7 weeks later (October 10, 1773), when his eldest son and several other men were slain by a band of Indians who waylaid them.

72.—James and Robert do not seem to have agreed exactly as to the precise place at which either the head of Powell's Valley or the Long Hunter's Road was reached. Intelligent men differ everywhere as to boundaries and a thousand other details. It is of no moment to us. Their camp for the night of August 13 was probably on the bank of Powell's River about where Mud Creek comes in on the eastern side, at the upper end of Stocker's Knob. If their camp was on the west side of the river they were perhaps within a stone's throw of the Long Hunter's Road, which passed down the eastern bank. James might consider they were at or on that road before they crossed over the river the evening of August 13; Robert may have thought that as that road was not literally trodden by them till they started next morning it was not proper to say they reached it till the 14th. Why they seem to differ one day as to when they got into and crossed the valley is not quite clear. But the reference made by both James and Robert to those two mountains which were crossed by the party August 14 proves they both had the same locality in mind. Those mountains were, beyond all doubt, Wallen Ridge and Powell Mountain. They are quite lofty, but are quickly crossed, because not wide. Like two capital AAs set side by side, their feet touch; and as soon as the McAfees reached the eastern foot of Wallen Ridge, they had only to step across a narrow creek to begin the ascent of Powell Mountain. So James calls them "two little mountains," for they are little in width, though big in height. Robert simply says "two mountains" which were crossed "on a small path."

73.—James, who, whilst never prolix in his Journal, is fond of giving exact details (thereby furnishing to those who come after him the sure means of identifying many of the localities visited), tells us that on this day the party kept that trail for 25 miles, and then for 15 miles additional the day following, reaching "the ford of Clinch at Castlewood's, twelve miles below James Smith's," some time during the day. The records he made on these two days—August 14 and 15—furnish us with the only absolutely clear and certain identification of the Long Hunter's Road to be found in any historical document known to the writer, and throw light upon a number of allusions in the early traditions

of that region which had otherwise remained utterly obscure. It is here settled, beyond all peradventure, that the trail which the Long Hunters travelled on their way to Kentucky, in 1769-70, ran at least forty miles from Clinch River at Castlewood to Powell's River to the west. The information which the author has been able to gather in regard to that road or trail will be found embodied in Appendix B of this work, and the map accompanying the same. The point at which the party crossed over to the south or left bank of Clinch River is not stated by either James or Robert, but it is reasonably certain it was where they first struck that stream on Saturday evening, August 14, fifteen miles below Castlewood, and about at the present village of Dungannon, in Scott County, Virginia.

74.—The identification of the point on Clinch River reached on Sunday morning, August 15, after a journey of 15 miles up stream from where they camped the night before is very complete. First, it was the ancient ford situated at a place which since the year 1771, has been known as Castle's Woods, now abbreviated to Castlewood. There was a fine growth of timber in a fertile, grassy and beautiful valley at that point, and that section is still one of the best farming regions in Virginia. A man by the name of Castle settled there in 1768 to 1770, and it was long known as Bush's Fort, near what is now called the Mud Store. The first settlers thereabout were Castle, Dickenson, Bickley, Oesher, William Russell, David Guest, and James Smith. The present railway station of Castlewood is at this ford. The old home of James Smith was just about twelve miles above, on the north side of Clinch River. The location of the cabin of David Guest was near by. The records of Washington County, Virginia, show that in the spring of the next year (1774) he located a farm just a few miles below the ford of Castlewood, nearly opposite the mouth of the stream called Guest River, which doubtless was named for him. At this date, however, (Aug. 15, 1773), his place was 8 miles from Castlewood ford, most probably up the river. To his house the McAfee party went this day before putting up for the night. From his house to Captain Russell's, which the party reached the next day, was only about 5 miles. It is, indeed, possible that David Guest was at this time living at the farm which we know he got surveyed the next spring, which was 8 miles below, instead of above, Castlewood; and that the McAfees, when they reached Castlewood found that, for some reason, it was best not to spend the night there, and that they then travelled down the river to where Guests's cabin stood, thus almost retracing their steps; but this is not at all likely. It is extremely probable that in August, 1773, Guest was living at a ford 8 miles above Castlewood, and that there the McAfees spent the night, August 15. It was at this identical cabin that Boone and Family found shelter in the fall of 1773—only a few weeks after the McAfees were there—after the terrible disaster he met with on Powell's River, 40 miles to the west, October 10, 1773. Here Boone's family remained from October, 1773, till March, 1775. The information given above was obtained in part from a little volume by Charles B. Coale, published in 1878, by Gary & Co., Richmond, Virginia, entitled Life and Adventures of Wilburn Waters, Embracing the Early History of Southwest Virginia, pages 166-170; and partly from Summers's History of Southwest Virginia, Hill Printing Co., Richmond, Va., 1903, pages 143 and 814. For a full consideration of these matters see Appendix B, of this volume.

75.—The exact site of the cabin in which Capt. Russell was living at this time can not be now given with any certainty. All we know is that it was about 5 miles from David Guest's ford, but in what direction from that ford is uncertain. We know that William Russell then resided somewhere in that vicinity. The McAfees evidently knew him as an old acquaintance, for so Gen. R. B. McAfee positively declares. The house he was then inhabiting may have been abandoned a few years later for one not far away at a more suitable location. We know that these early houses were nothing but very small cabins of the rudest character, and that for years after the first settlement of that region the owners spent only the summer months there to make a crop, and as soon as the corn was gathered retired a considerable distance up the Clinch or Holston to spend the winter, where there were more comforts and less exposure to Indian attacks.

The party lingered at Russell's till their lacerated and swollen feet and limbs had healed—perhaps for four or five days—and then resumed their journey. They still had nearly a week's travel before they could greet the anxious loved ones at home, and savages were liable to attack them at any stage of the journey. After reaching Russell's on August 16, the Journals were discontinued. We know they all got home about August 25.

APPENDIX B.

THREE ANCIENT PIONEER ROADS OF INTEREST TO BOTH WOODSES AND McAFEES.

THREE FAMOUS PIONEER ROADS.

The history of the Woodsos and McAfees in Virginia and Kentucky, during the last three-quarters of the eighteenth century can not be properly appreciated unless something more than a mere passing allusion be made to several of the famous old highways on, or near to, which many of them resided, and over which hundreds of them travelled. The history of these roads is, in some degree, the history of the families named, as well as of Kentucky and Virginia, as we believe the reader will concede after giving this Appendix a careful perusal.

There are three of these historic highways which deserve special notice. The first is "The Wilderness Road," say, from where it crossed the Potomac River at "The Pack-Horse Ford" (otherwise known as Wadkins Ferry); up the Great Valley to the James River at Buchanan (Pattonsburg); to New River at Ingles' Ferry; down the Holston Valley, and across Clinch and Powell's Rivers to Cumberland Gap; and on across Kentucky to the Falls of the Ohio (Louisville)—a distance of about six hundred and sixty-four miles. The second is "The Long Hunters' Road," which, we may say, began at Pepper's Ferry, New River; ran down that stream a short distance, and then turned towards the West; ascended the valleys of a number of creeks till it reached the summit of the divide near the site of Tazewell Court House; descended Clinch Valley to below Castle's Woods; left the Clinch, and passed nearly due west across Powell's Mountain and Wallen's Ridge to Powell's Valley; ran down that Valley to a point two miles east of the site of Jonesville, where it joined the Wilderness Road and Boone's Trace; then on through Cumberland Gap into Kentucky; and was finally lost in the Wilderness about where Skeggs's Creek enters Rockcastle River, a distance of more than three hundred miles. The third of these historic old highways was that known as "Boone's Trace," or "Boone's Road." This road began in East Tennessee, on the Watauga River; ran in a north-westerly direction by the famous Long Island (in what is now Sullivan county, Tennessee) and across the South and North Forks of the Holston River to Moccasin Gap, near the site of Gate City, Virginia; across the Clinch and Powell's Rivers to a point a few miles west of the latter stream, where it came into the Long Hunters' Road; passed through Cumberland Gap, and on north-west to the Hazel Patch, near Rockcastle River, where the Wilderness Road diverged towards the north-west; and went on nearly due north through Boone's Gap to Boonesboro, on the Kentucky River, a distance, altogether, of about two hundred and thirty-three miles. These three roads we will consider in the order named.

SIGNIFICANCE OF ROADS.

That highways play a most vital part in the economy of human life is one of those perfectly obvious truths which everybody freely concedes, but which hardly anyone fully appreciates. For all creatures whose modes of locomotion require them to travel along the earth's surface, roads, as all will agree, are absolutely indispensable. In fact, even the fowls of the air and the fishes of the sea have their "beaten tracks," so to speak. So closely are the roads of a country related to all the social and commercial activities of the people who make and use them that a complete history of the highways of a state would be, in no small degree, a history of its inhabitants. Hence, if we would understand aright the development of national life we are bound to know much of the origin and growth of its principal roads.

It would simply be impossible to give a complete account of roads like those now to be considered, which had their beginnings in the frontier settlements of Virginia and Tennessee from one hundred and twenty-five to one hundred and fifty years ago, and were gradually extended into Kentucky to localities several hundred miles from their respective starting points.

This is the case mainly because roads of this character are rarely the outcome of some one definite and consistent plan, much less of actual surveys. They are, as a rule, the resultant of pre-existing natural conditions and the exigencies of

individual adventure; and the earlier portions of them are apt to become well established, and material changes in their courses are apt to occur, long before any serious attempt is made to record their actual history. This has been the case with not a few of the principal streets of great cities, so that about the only certain thing one can affirm in regard to them is that they are narrow enough and crooked enough to have been laid out by cows and pigs. Another explanation of the haziness and uncertainty which mark the allusions we find in the books to the origin of nearly all the older highways is the fact that nearly all of them had their beginnings in pre-historic times. On this subject a great deal of misconception exists in the minds of the masses of the people. Most persons, if they think at all on this point, seem to imagine that all of the old pioneer roads of Virginia, Tennessee and Kentucky, for example, were the work of a few bold and sagacious white men who, generations ago, came into the wilderness and blazed paths for themselves, independently of any antecedent agency of man or beast. For instance, it is probably the notion of many educated Kentuckians today that what is known as "Boone's Trace," leading from East Tennessee and South-western Virginia through Cumberland Gap into Central Kentucky, was, throughout its entire course, the original work of Daniel Boone. They seem to think that that shrewd and fearless old hunter, with a sort of superhuman intuition, came into a perfectly pathless wilderness, and, without a suggestion from either savage men or wild animals, divined exactly where a road could and should be constructed; and, inside of thirty days, created a brand-new road two hundred and thirty three miles long. The simple truth is, however, that, for perhaps two-thirds, if not three-fourths, of the way, Boone almost certainly did nothing more than to make a sagacious choice of already existing trails, which Indians and wild beasts had been using continually for a thousand years before he was born. That he did a good deal of original work all will admit. Professor Shaler (see his Kentucky, pages 46-48), who is an acknowledged authority on such subjects, is of the opinion that Indians were living in what is now Kentucky perhaps as far back as two thousand years ago, and that the buffalo roamed over its plains and mountains from five to ten centuries before the coming of the Whites. When Boone marked his famous "Trace" for Colonel Henderson in 1775, the Indians, whilst not then actual residents of Kentucky or Virginia, were constantly passing back and forth as they had been doing for ages; and the buffalo, the elk and other animals were roving over the country, as was their wont, in search of salt springs and pasturage. The idea that these wild children of the forest and plain—human and beastly—could have lived in this region for centuries, and yet not have formed any well-defined trails or highways suited to their needs and habits, is simply absurd. We may rest assured that every mountain pass, every grassy valley, and every considerable salt lick in the country was perfectly well known to them, and that paths leading to and from them intersected each other all over the land. Hence we must see that the making of highways was not exclusively the invention and occupation of civilized man. This is not said in order to detract in the least from the just fame of Daniel Boone. He can be universally conceded to have been a grand character and a man of most unique personality, without ascribing to him anything he did not do. That he possessed marvelous courage, fortitude, sagacity and resource no one can deny. For the particular work he was called to do he perhaps had no equal. What we are saying is that he was not so much a road-builder as a path-finder.

But, after giving full weight to all such explanations of the origin of our roads as those just presented, we are still far from having told the whole truth. We must go back of the pioneer, back of the buffalo, and back of the Red Man, even to that Almighty Creator who built the worlds. We must think of Him who set in motion the forces of nature, who decreed all those changes which determined the topography of the earth's surface, and who produced those elevations and depressions of the land which, far in advance of historic times, fixed the natural barriers to the movements of man and beast. If God himself did not actually construct highways on the earth, He at least, in large measure, made it certain where they would, or would not, be made by the creatures of His hand. In order to see the force of this observation, one has but to examine with care the existing highways of our country today, and he will soon discover that the trend of the mountain ranges and the courses of the streams have, in the majority of cases, given the cue to the surveyor and road-builder. Those awful contractions of the slowly cooling globe which, millenniums ago, caused the earth's crust to crumple and pile upon itself, thereby creating the mountains; and

the erosive action of the glaciers, the rain and the frosts, which concurred to create the channels of the rivers—these stupendous operations, in which no creature had any hand, reveal to us the real genesis of most of the highways now in existence. The full force of these reflections can not be appreciated without a careful examination of the better class of maps showing the wagon roads and steam railways of the Virginias, Tennessee and Kentucky. If anyone will first locate exactly the three pioneer trails of 1750-75, he will find that graded wagon roads and railway lines now cover nearly every mile of them. The cars of the Norfolk & Western, the Southern, and the Louisville & Nashville Railways can to-day convey one at the rate of thirty miles an hour over almost the identical routes of all those ancient trails. The once narrow foot-paths along which the Indians stealthily marched, single file; where the stately buffalo and elk once travelled through virgin forests in solemn silence; and over which once creaked and jolted the slow-moving wagon of the emigrant, now run macadamized turnpikes or the lightning express trains of modern civilization. Slight digressions from the original routes we shall find, and here and there a change of several miles, but the general features of the land which determined the trails of the Indians and wild beasts will be seen to have controlled the modern engineers in their work. The old pioneers of a century and a quarter ago, if recalled to our earth, would no doubt stand aghast at some of the momentous changes which the twentieth century would present to their wondering eyes; but as they should be whirled in the cars along down the Clinch Valley, or the Holston, from New River to Cumberland Gap, and then up through Central Kentucky, they would doubtless be led to recognize familiar natural features and exclaim: "You moderns have simply followed the trails we walked generations ago."

Thus it will be seen that our existing highways are, after all, not so very recent as we may have supposed—they have an exceedingly long history, and they are so clearly connected with the development of our beloved country that we may well afford to pause for a moment and study their origin and growth.

(a) THE WILDERNESS ROAD.

This highway, like nearly every other with which we are acquainted, did not spring into being all at once; it was a gradual growth. There was a time—say about the beginning of the eighteenth century—when such a name as "Wilderness Road" (as applied to the highway we have in mind) was not known. Michael Woods settled in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, in 1724; and had he then been asked to say where the Wilderness Road was, he would probably have thought of the trail then leading from Lancaster, Penn., south-west towards the Potomac River. In 1734—the year he migrated to Piedmont, Virginia, with his family—he would, no doubt, have included the northern end of the Valley of Virginia in that appellation, having only the most vague notion of what there was farther to the south and south-west. By 1760 the title had no doubt already begun to be applied to the old Indian trail down past New River into South-western Virginia. By 1775 it had come to be used to designate the trail all the way from Philadelphia to South-west Virginia as far as to the Holston River and Big Moccasin Gap. It is extremely unlikely that by this time (1775) any one thought of the "Wilderness Road" as extending farther than that gap. Of course the old Indian trail had, for generations, continued on to the north-west, and the hunters, explorers and traders had travelled that way, but the particular title "Wilderness Road" was not then applied, as we feel sure, to the trail west or north-west of Holston River at Big Moccasin Gap. Later on, however, the Long Hunters' Road and Boone's Trace, which, for such a great distance coincided with the Wilderness Road, were swallowed up, as it were, in that more general appellation, and at length it came to pass that the Wilderness Road extended, without a break, from Philadelphia to the Ohio Falls—eight hundred and twenty-six miles; the name "Boone's Trace" or "Boone's Road" came to be limited to that part of the trail which extends from Rockcastle River on to Boonesboro; and the name "Long Hunters' Road" dropped out of use, and the greater part of that highway came gradually to be known as "The Tazewell Road," leading along the Clinch Valley. One result of this gradual obliteration of the title "Long Hunters' Road," was that, no matter what particular route a man travelled from New River to Cumberland Gap, he was said to have come by the "Wilderness Road," when, as a matter of fact, he may have travelled more than a hundred miles by way of the Long Hunters' Road, as did William Calk in the spring of 1775, whose itinerary is given in Speed's Wilderness Road, pages 33-38. That

document shows that Calk turned out of the Wilderness Road about the site of Marion, Virginia, on the 24th of March, and did not see it again till April 3, when he came into it in Powell's Valley —about ten days later. This matter will again be considered when we come to treat of the Long Hunters' Road in the following section.

The descendants of both Michael Woods of Blair Park, and James McAfee, Sr., must forever feel an interest in the Wilderness Road, for, from 1724 to the close of the pioneer period of Kentucky, those men, or their children, or children's children, either lived directly on that highway, or were frequently travelling along its course, during the days when Indians and wild beasts violently disputed the rights of the settlers. As already noted, Michael Woods arrived in the colony of Pennsylvania from Ireland in 1724, and made his home in Lancaster County for about ten years; and his place of residence was either directly on, or very close to, that famous highway, which ran out of Philadelphia almost due west to York, passing through Lancaster County, only that the "Wilderness" in those days was, for the most part, conceived of as being in the western ends of Pennsylvania and Maryland. About 1732 a settlement was made where Winchester, Virginia, now stands, and thus the "Wilderness Road" was considerably projected up the Great Valley. The old Indian trail had been there, of course, time out of mind, but now and henceforth it was the "Wilderness Road." In 1734 Michael Woods and family and the Wallaces, we feel entirely certain, passed along that trail, or road, on their way to their new home at the eastern foot of the Blue Ridge, in what is now Albemarle County. That road came up the Valley from Wadkin's Ford at the Potomac, thirteen miles north of Martinsburg, and passed through Winchester and Staunton. At or near Staunton an old Indian War-Path struck across to the south-eastward, ascended the Blue Ridge to the gap which came to be known as Woods's Gap, and passed down close by the spot where Michael lived for twenty-eight years. Several of his daughters and one of his sons, not long after, settled in what is now Rockbridge County, immediately on the Wilderness Road, and there lived out their days. That highway crossed the James River at the place where Buchanan now stands, and only five miles east of that place was the home of Michael Woods, Jr., and only nine miles south, lived Andrew Woods, another son of Michael of Blair Park, directly on the Great Road. A little further south, on Catawba Creek, in what is now Roanoke County, lived James McAfee, Sr., and sons, and, a little later, Archibald Woods, another son of Michael Woods and brother to Andrew and Michael, Jr. The place was the property of James McAfee from 1748 to 1771, when he sold it to Archibald Woods, and moved just two miles down the road, and there lived till 1785. The Wilderness Road ran by the front doors of Woods and McAfee; and John Filson, in his itinerary of 1784, mentions the Woods home on Catawba Creek as one of the stations of that road, twenty-one miles south-west of Fincastle, and twenty-nine miles north-east of Ingles' Ferry at New River. No doubt both the Woods and McAfee families on Catawba had seen and entertained scores and hundreds of the most noted explorers, hunters and emigrants in the thirty-five years following the year 1748.

In the years 1774-1778 the McAfees made annual or semi-annual trips to their lands on Salt River, Kentucky, and the Wilderness Road was probably their principal route to and from their new home in the West. And when in the fall of 1779 they at last moved their families and effects to Kentucky, they went by this old road, or that called "Long Hunters' Road," through Cumberland Gap. By this route, or the Long Hunters' Road, went Samuel Woods, Sr., and other Woodses—a large company—in the year 1782. In 1794 or 1795, Nathan Dedman most probably travelled this road on his way to Versailles, Kentucky, where he settled. In Mercer County, Kentucky, this highway passed only a few miles to the west of the McAfee settlement as it led on to the Falls of the Ohio. Hence, it is not too much to say that there has never, perhaps, lived in either Virginia or Kentucky any two families who had a closer connection with the Wilderness Road throughout nearly its entire course than the Woodses and McAfees.

For all coming time this historic highway will be associated with the name of that genial, scholarly gentleman, the late Captain Thomas Speed, of Louisville. He brought into his debt all who love the story of Kentucky and South-western Virginia by giving to the world, in 1886, his most interesting monograph on The Wilderness Road, published as Number Two of the Filson Club Series. The author of this work is proud to have claimed Captain Speed as his friend. From him he derived

valuable assistance in the preparation of this volume. He was one of the original subscribers to this publication, and the reader will find a brief sketch of him, and also his portrait, in Part III of the same, Sketch No. 3.

The Wilderness Road, as already intimated, was, for generations prior to the advent of the Anglo-Saxon, an Indian and buffalo trail, along whose course travelled the Indians between the North and South. In the earlier Colonial days, before the Indians became hostile to the Whites, it was a favorite route for the Cherokees, Catawbas, etc., of the South in going to Philadelphia to purchase needed goods, for traders going to the Southern Indians, and as a war-path when the Northern and Southern tribes were engaged in bloody contests with each other. The earliest instance the writer has been able to discover of white men using this trail prior to the commencement of white immigration to South-western Virginia is that of a Mr. Vaughn, of Amelia County, Virginia, who, in the year 1740, was employed by certain traders to go with them as a pack-man to the Cherokees to what is known as The Long Island of Holston River, in what is now Sullivan County, Tennessee. Mr. Vaughn made many trips along that trail until 1754. He stated that it was an old trail when he first saw it in 1740. (See Ramsey's Tennessee, page 64; and Summers' South-west Virginia, page 40.) The trail then crossed New River where Ingles located his famous ferry in 1754, though this ferry was not established by law till 1762. (See Hale's Trans-Alleghany Pioneers, pages 252 and 258.) This highway had several things in its favor. For one thing, it was about the best route available, because it had, as a rule, but few very difficult passages for pack-horses. The mountains and streams, whilst very troublesome here and there, did not in any place present insuperable difficulties. In the next place, game was abundant along most of its course, which was a matter of the first importance. Again, to the Whites it offered fewer disadvantages than the Long Hunters' Road (The Clinch Valley Route), in the way of hostile Indians. Most of the time the danger was greatest from the northerly side of the route, as the Shawnees and Delawares were beyond the Ohio, and the Wilderness Road was not as easily reached by their raiding parties as was the more northerly route—The Long Hunters' Road. But, finally, the early settlement of the fertile valleys of the Watauga and Lower Holston in East Tennessee, beginning in 1769, and the rapid development of that section as a civilized community, with well-manned forts, made this highway a great public necessity and convenience. It was these various favoring conditions which rendered the Wilderness Road popular, as far down as Big Moccasin Gap and the Long Island of Holston, before Kentucky had a single permanent white settlement, and gained for it the distinctive title of "The Great Road."

The following table gives a list of the stations of this road from Philadelphia to Louisville, based mainly upon Filson's itinerary to be found in Col. Durrett's Life of John Filson (pages 66 and 67), elucidated with explanations to enable any one not very familiar with the subject to understand readily the location of the several stations. It should be borne in mind that in the various old journals now accessible to us, giving the stopping places passed on this road, we do not find all travellers to have gone exactly the same track all the way. Here and there, it is apparent, there were alternative routes for short distances, some travellers going one, and some another. Moreover, no two of the old journals give the same names to stations, and some mention stations which others who passed them fail to refer to. In the list given in Speed's Wilderness Road (page 17), one omission occurs, namely; the stage of the road from the North Fork of James River (near Lexington), to the James River, proper—a distance of eighteen to twenty-five miles—is not given at all. Filson gives it, and makes the distance eighteen miles, but if the James was crossed at Buchanan, and the North Fork about Lexington, it is nearer twenty-five miles than eighteen. But we have to remember that nearly all the distances noted in those days were mere guesses, and sometimes very wild ones at that.

STATIONS OF THE WILDERNESS ROAD, PHILADELPHIA TO FALLS OF OHIO, via CUMBERLAND GAP.

	MILES.
Philadelphia to Lancaster	66
Lancaster to York	22
York to Wadkins Ferry—(at the Potomac)	74
Wadkins Ferry to Martinsburg, Va.	13
Martinsburg to Winchester	13
Winchester to Shenandoah River (Main Br.)	45
Shenandoah River to Staunton	44
Staunton to North Fork of James—(Lexington)	37
North Fork to James River.	25
James River to Botetourt C. H.—(Fincastle)	12

	MILES.
Botetourt C. H. to Woods's on Catawba	21
Woods's to Paterson's on Roanoke	9
Patersons to Alleghany Mountain—(Blacksburg)	8
Alleghany Mountain to New River	12
New River to Forks of the Road	16
Forks of Road to Fort Chiswell	12
Fort Chiswell to Stone Mill	11
Stone Mill to Boyd's	8
Boyd's to Head of Holston—(Middle Fork)	5
Head of Holston to Washington C. H.—(Abingdon)	15
Washington C. H. to Block-house	35
Block-house to North Fork of Holston	3
North Fork of Holston to Moccasin Gap	6
Moccasin Gap to Clinch River (Ford)	12
Clinch River (Ford) to Ford of Stock Creek	2
Ford of Stock Creek to North Fork of Clinch	7
North Fork of Clinch to Powell's Mountain	3
Powell's Mountain to Wallen's Ridge	3
Wallen's Ridge to Valley Station	4
Valley Station to Powell's River	2
Powell's River to Junction of Long Hunters' Road	4
Junction of L. H. Road to Martin's Cabins	19
Martin's Cabins to Cumberland Gap	20
Cumberland Gap to Cumberland River (Ford)	13
Cumberland River to Flat Lick—(where Warriors' Road turned due north)	9
Flat Lick to Stinking Creek	2
Stinking Creek to Richland Creek	7
From Point on Richland Creek, first reached, to a point farther up its course	8
From Upper Point on Richland Creek to Raccoon Spring	6
From Raccoon Spring to Laurel River	2
From Laurel River to Hazel Patch (where Boone's Trace diverged from Wilderness Road, the former going nearly due north, and the latter bearing to the north-west)	15
From the Hazel Patch to Rockcastle River	10
From Rockcastle River to English's Station	25
From English's Station to Col. Edwards's—(Crab Orchard)	3
From Col. Edwards's to Whitley's Station	5
From Whitley's Station to Logan's Station	5
From Logan's Station to Clark's Station	7
From Clark's Station to Crow's Station	4
From Crow's Station to Harrod's Station	3
From Harrod's Station to Harlan's Station	4
From Harlan's Station to Harbison's Station	10
From Harbison's Station to Bardstown	25
From Bardstown to (Bullitt's) Salt Works	25
From Salt Works to Falls of Ohio (Louisville)	20
Total	826

SUMMARY.

	MILES.
From Philadelphia to the Potomac	162
From the Potomac to New River	239
From New River to Big Moccasin Gap	141
From Big Moccasin Gap to Cumberland Gap	76
From Cumberland Gap to Hazel Patch	62
From Hazel Patch to Ohio Falls	146
Total	826

(b) THE LONG HUNTERS' ROAD.

The path which we designate by the above title and which extended from New River up the courses of a number of streams to the elevated divide near the site of the present town of Tazewell, and from thence down the Clinch Valley to Castle's Woods and beyond, was, without doubt, an Indian trail centuries old when the Whites entered the country. Bickley, in his History of Tazewell County, as quoted by Summers (page 28), says, "The principal Indian trails through Tazewell County led through [up and down] Clinch Valley; but after the Whites began to settle, these trails all led from the Ohio River." That is to say, the paths paralleling the Clinch were abandoned by them, and they now used others which came into them at an angle from the north-west or north, so as to avoid travelling roads on which they were likely to meet their white enemies. One of these newly adopted trails came up the Big Sandy branch, known as Tug Fork, and led over into Abb's Valley, twenty miles north-east of Tazewell Court House. Another of these trails came up the Lonisa Fork of Sandy River, and came into the white settlements on Clinch River near Castle's Woods. Hence we may safely assume that the old trail which went down Clinch Valley and became the Long Hunters' Road in 1769-72 was not blazed by white hunters—they simply discovered it, and adopted it for their own purposes. Prior to 1769 many small parties of daring frontiersmen had travelled this trail down into the howling wilderness in search of big game, and it seems to have gradually taken the name "Hunters' Path"; but after the famous trip of the "Long Hunters" into Kentucky (in 1769-72), it got to be known as "The Long Hunters' Road." (See the two McAfee Journals of 1773, Appendix A, records of August 13, 14, and 15.)

In later times, however, this trail lost its former titles to a large extent, and different portions of it came to have separate distinctive names. A large section of it took the name of "The Tazewell Road," and retains it to this day. The Long Hunters' Road does not seem ever to have had any one exclusive point of departure on New River, but we

know of several crossings which were used by different persons. From the mouth of Poplar Camp Creek in Wythe County, to the south, on to the mouth of the Bluestone River, in what is now Summers County, West Virginia, there were doubtless a number of fords and ferries which hunters from the east side of New River in both Carolina and Virginia, made use of in getting across into the wilderness. But it is extremely likely that Pepper's Ferry was the principal crossing place for those who were bound for Clinch Valley. In moderate stages of water the New River was fordable at Ingles' Ferry, a short distance above, as we learn from the Journal of William Brown (1782), which is in the possession of his grandson, Mr. George G. Brown, of Louisville, and which we have had the privilege of perusing; and the same was probably true of Pepper's Ferry. Some of the hunters, whose homes were a considerable distance to the north or south of this ferry, no doubt found it desirable to reach the divide near Tazewell by going directly up some of the numerous streams which head in that vicinity, and there striking the trail leading down the Clinch Valley. Hence it is scarcely exact to say that this road began at some one point on New River, but at several, and that the main part began near the head branches of Clinch River, having several feeders, or contributing paths, leading up to it from a number of the fords or ferries of New River, as just stated.

It should be understood as we proceed that the claim of this road to consideration does not rest, except in very small measure, upon the mere fact that certain bands of hunters selected it as best suited to their purposes. Its importance arises from the fact that it was, for some years, a rival of the more southerly trail—the Holston Valley Route, better known as "The Wilderness Road," for emigrant travel to the Kentucky country; and that after it had been outstripped in popularity and usefulness by that road for purposes of interstate commerce, it became an important Virginia highway; and at this day, under the name of "The Tazewell Road," it is in constant use as the main thoroughfare of the Clinch Valley, not including railways.

The exact year in which this trail was, for the first time, used by explorers and hunters bound for the Clinch Valley, it would be impossible to determine at this late day, but there are some well-ascertained facts in connection with the earliest settlements close to and on both sides of New River which throw considerable light on this question. Dr. Hale in his Trans-Alleghany Pioneers (pages 13-17), treating of this subject, gives us some information of value. He says that it was a tradition in the New River region that Thomas Ingles and his son William made a tour of observation as far as that stream in the year 1744. It is known that in the year 1748 Dr. Thomas Walker led a company of explorers and hunters down into Southwestern Virginia, then an uninhabited wilderness, and the route he travelled, as Dr. Hale shows, was not the trail known in after days as the Wilderness Road, but, beyond reasonable doubt, one of the several paths which led from New River up to about where Tazewell Court House now stands. On this tour (which was made two years prior to the one on which he passed through Cumberland Gap into Kentucky) he went up the creek, and north of the mountain range, which for generations has borne his own name. Dr. Hale, in a letter to the present writer, dated May, 1901, speaking of this tour, says: "In the same year (1748), Dr. Thomas Walker and party made a land and exploring expedition to South-west Virginia. I have never seen the itinerary of Dr. Walker's first journey, but tradition says that he crossed New River at the Horse Shoe Bend [near Draper's Meadows, now Blacksburg], went down the river to Walker's Creek (so named by him), and up that creek and over to Clinch and Holston Rivers, etc". In his book Dr. Hale asserts that Walker's Creek and Little Walker's Creek, and Walker's Mountain and Little Walker's Mountain were all named by Dr. Walker on this tour of 1748. From New River, at Goodwin's Ferry—where the party probably turned to the westward, and within six miles of which place they struck Walker's Creek—to where the two head streams of Clinch River unite near Tazewell Court House, is about seventy-five miles, by the country road now in use. That road goes up Walker's Creek to its head, at Sharon Springs; crosses Brushy Mountain and Garden Mountain into Burke's Garden; passes across that historic garden to the north-west; crosses Rich Mountain; then, turning south-west, gets on to the South Fork of Clinch near its junction with the North Fork, and two miles south-west of that point comes to Tazewell C. H. How far Dr. Walker travelled down Clinch Valley we do not know, but he may have gone nearly to Powell's River. That Dr.

Walker and party did not blaze out an entirely new trail themselves, but followed one of the old Indian trails on this tour, seems reasonably certain. We know there is a regular county road from Goodwin's Ferry to Tazewell C. H., as just detailed, and Dr. Walker and party probably followed it in 1748. Now this tour certainly suggests to us that at that early day there was a practicable bridle-path to the Clinch Valley from New River.

It is well known that in this same year (1748) was made that famous settlement a few miles east of the Horse Shoe Bend of New River known in former times as Draper's Meadows, but now occupied by the town of Blacksburg. The founders were Thomas Ingles and his three sons, Mrs. Draper and her son and daughter, Adam Harmon, Henry Lenard, and James Burke. Let it here be noted in passing that Dr. Hale spells the name of the principal founder of Draper's Meadows "Ingles," not Engles, nor Inglis, nor English; and as he was a great-grandson of Thomas Ingles, and was born and reared at Draper's Meadows, it is safe to assume that he knew the proper spelling of this name which has been so badly handled by nearly all the writers whom we have had occasion to find using it. It was also in this same year that James McAfee, Sr., who is treated of at length in Part II of this work, purchased the old Indian Camp farm on Catawba Creek, only twenty miles north-east of Draper's Meadows. That the New River was at that date the extreme south-westerly frontier of Virginia, and that there was probably not a single family of Whites then living west of that stream, will hardly be questioned by any one. This, however, does not mean that no Indian traders or hunters or explorers had yet gone into the wilderness. The truth almost certainly is that individual adventurers, here and there, for some years before this date had been tempted by the prospect of gain, or the love of exciting sport, or a desire to acquire a knowledge of unexplored regions to journey far to the south-west of New River at the risk of their lives. We may be sure there was no lack of foot-paths and bridle-ways, and we feel confident that there were then in existence several of these roads having their starting places at points on New River, converging at some point near the head of Clinch River, and leading on down that stream towards Kentucky. See Haywood's account of a hunting party in 1762, who travelled down Clinch River (page 48).

The country lying between New River and Tazewell Court House is, for the most part, so extremely mountainous that no large proportion of it is, as a rule, adapted to agricultural purposes. This, no doubt, accounts for the fact that it was not settled as rapidly as the country farther to the west and south-west. There are rich valleys here and there, and the region is most picturesque, but the mountain ranges are lofty, and are set in close rank one behind another. But settlers began to take up choice lands soon after Dr. Walker's first tour (1748). The Doctor, himself, had excellent vision, and knew a prize when he saw it. For example, in March, 1750, he surveyed for himself a tract of 6,780 acres in that lovely "oasis," Burke's Garden (see Summers, page 15), only about ten or twelve miles east of Tazewell Court House, and three years later (1753), James Burke and his family settled in that place, which ever since has been called "Burke's Garden." The famous Dunkard Settlement on the west side of New River at Ingles' Ferry was made in 1749, and, in 1750, one Stalnaker erected his cabin to the north of the Wilderness Road (with Dr. Walker's assistance), west of Wytheville, and he was then the last settler on that route to the south-west. In 1768, Capt. Joseph Martin, a most adventurous woodsman, penetrated to within twenty miles of Cumberland Gap, and erected cabins with the aid of more than twenty companions. The Indians soon drove him back to the settlements on the Holston, but his cabins were re-occupied (possibly re-built) not long after, and his place was for many years a noted stopping-place for people going into Kentucky through Cumberland Gap. In 1766, a party of hunters visited the Clinch Valley, two of whom erected a cabin at Crab Orchard, three miles west of Tazewell Court House, and one of these hunters built him a house five miles east of that cabin. (See Summers, pages 46 and 84.) The place on Clinch River, which was at first called Castle's Woods (now known as Castlewood, a railway station), was founded in 1771, or possibly three years earlier, by a man named Castle. (See Summers, page 367.) This place is in Russell County, forty-five miles south-west of Tazewell, and twenty-two miles north-west of Abingdon (the distance given being air-line in each case). This place is one of special importance to this discussion, as we shall see presently. The records of Washington County, Virginia, show numerous surveys of land which were made on Clinch River in

1774 and 1775, some of them as far down as Fort Blackmore at the mouth of Stony Creek. (See Summers, pages 808-815.)

The settlements from the head branches of the Clinch River down to Powell's Valley rapidly increased, thereby augmenting continually the need of a great thoroughfare down that way. Such a thoroughfare was more and more fully established, and it was the Long Hunters' Road. In 1772, James Moore and James Poage settled in Abb's Valley (where Absalom Looney had settled the year before), situated eighteen miles north-east of Tazewell; two families on the North Fork of Clinch River; seven families near Tazewell; one at Maiden Spring, twelve or fourteen miles south-west of Tazewell; and doubtless many others in neighboring communities on or close to the Clinch River. We may not be able to ascertain the names, or even the number, of all the settlers who came to the Clinch Valley, but we can by various criteria, arrive at a pretty fair estimate of the density of the population throughout the extended region under review, and, consequently, of the need for such a highway as we contend the Long Hunters' Road actually was. One criterion was the official acts of the county in regard to the construction or management of roads to or in the Clinch Valley. In March, 1773, six citizens of the county (then Fincastle, later Washington) were ordered "to view the nighest and best way" for a road from a point on the Wilderness Road not far from where the present town of Marion stands, across Walker's and Clinch Mountains in a north-westerly direction to Elk Garden, on Clinch River; and in July of that year a report was made by the commissioners to the effect that they had attended to the business; and the road was partly established. The distance was about twenty-five miles. In November of that same year another road was ordered to be viewed from Maiden Spring, which is in Tazewell County, on the Long Hunters' Road, by the best way to the Great Road (Wilderness Road). That road was about twenty miles long, and probably came into the Wilderness Road not far from the same place as the one just mentioned. Both of these new roads, it should be noted, connected the Wilderness Road and the Long Hunters' Road, and the demand for them proved that both of the great trails or highways at which they terminated were of great importance. (See Summers, pages 132-134.)

We may also get some fair notion of the character of the settlements along the Clinch River for nearly a hundred miles of the course followed by the Long Hunters' Road by noting the character and extent of the military protection which the public authorities felt it was needful to provide for the settlers along Clinch River. From Summers' South-west Virginia (pages 156-7) we learn that from the mouth of Stony Creek, in what is now Scott County, all the way to the neighborhood in which Tazewell Court House now stands—a distance, by the Long Hunters' Road, of about ninety miles—there was in 1774 a string of forts or stations occupied by regular militia who were there to protect the settlers and travellers against the Indians, as follows: Fort Blackmore, at the mouth of Stony Creek, sixteen men, Sergeant Moore, commanding; at Fort Moore, twenty miles east, with twenty men, Lieutenant Daniel Boone, commanding; Fort Russell, four miles farther to the east, twenty men, Sergeant W. Poage, commanding; Fort Glade, twelve miles farther east, Sergeant John Duncan, commanding; Elk Garden, fourteen miles farther east, fifteen men, Sergeant John Kinkead, commanding; Maiden Spring, twenty-three miles farther east, five men, Sergeant John Crow, commanding; Whitlow's Crab Orchard, three men, Ensign John Campbell, commanding. How far east of Maiden Spring Whitlow's Crab Orchard was we can not say, but it only needed to be about twelve miles in order to be in the immediate vicinity of the spot on which Tazewell Court House now stands. That this string of forts marked the course of an important highway, and was maintained in large degree for the protection of all who resided or travelled on it, one can not doubt for a moment. What these forts meant to the people along that valley we may learn from the fact that in the fall of the year (1774), when all the available Fincastle men who could be spared had joined in the expedition to Point Pleasant to aid in defeating the army of savages there, a series of raids was begun by Indians (believed to have been Cherokees) and a number of the citizens of the Clinch Valley were slain. (See Summers, pages 156-7.)

We doubt not that the reader has, ere this, been wondering as to what may be our warrant for speaking so positively of a trail or highway called, indifferently, "The Hunters' Path," and "The Long Hunters' Road," as though it had actually existed, under one or both of these titles, for more than a

hundred years. This is a natural and proper inquiry; and we have purposely left it unanswered till now, believing that the facts we have been presenting would, if first considered, make our explanation more easily understood than would otherwise have been possible. It is not at all strange that even well informed students of the history of Virginia and Kentucky should have to confess that they have never heard of the path or road we are dealing with; for we have so far been unable to find, in any of the many volumes we have consulted, a single sentence in regard to its name, its origin, its development, or its uses. We do not profess to have consulted all of the histories of the three States traversed by this road, but we have studied the principal ones with a good deal of care; and all of them maintain an unaccountable silence on this subject. It is simply inexplicable that one can not find any allusion to "The Hunters' Path" or "The Long Hunters' Road" in the fullest and most popular histories of Kentucky, South-western Virginia, and Tennessee. And the anomaly is only aggravated by the fact that every one of the histories referred to does mention the famous company of "Long Hunters," of 1769-1772, whose choice and use of this trail caused it to be called in honor of them—"The Long Hunters' Road." Marshall, Butler, Collins, Smith and numberless other writers on Kentucky history; Haywood, Ramsey, Phelan and others, of Tennessee; and Summers, Preston and others, of South-western Virginia, all tell us about the "Long Hunters" themselves, but give no intelligible account of the trail they followed from New River to Cumberland Gap. As has been intimated on a previous page, this silence would not have been wholly excusable even if this road had ceased to exist the day after that famous company passed over it; but when we know that it was for many years an alternative route with settlers travelling from New River to Kentucky; that for several generations it has practically been the only east and west thoroughfare, north of the Wilderness Road, for people who live in the Clinch Valley; and that it is still constantly used and known as "The Tazewell Road" for a large part of its course—when we think of these incontrovertible facts—we are at a loss to comprehend why so many prominent and trustworthy historical writers had nothing to say on this point. If one will take the pains to examine all of the histories we mention, in order to note what they say of the "Long Hunters," he will probably be struck with the further fact that not one of them cites any original authorities for his statements concerning them, but all speak as though copying what some one early writer had said. Perhaps, if the real author of the account of the Long Hunters, which we find repeated in so many volumes, could be discovered, we might ascertain the source of his information, but the present writer has not had the time to make as thorough a search as he would have been glad to conduct if he had had more leisure. But we have in our possession copies of certain journals of the most unimpeachable kind, written by two well-known pioneers of high character in the summer of 1773, which not only mention this road by name, but which inform us where at least forty miles of its course can be found. Besides the testimony of these two journals we have reliable and convincing corroborative evidence from the journal of another pioneer, and several other sources which enable us to speak with reasonable certainty of the course that trail pursued for a distance of at least two hundred miles. To these matters the reader's kind attention will presently be invited.

The numerous histories we have mentioned, in their notices of the "Long Hunters" of 1769-1772 are not exactly at one in all their statements. Some accept the year 1769 as the date of this tour, whilst others mention the year 1770; some speak as if there were only about twenty men in the party, and others claim there were as many as forty; some seem to incline to the notion that this company travelled down the Holston Valley for at least the first few days of their journey from New River, whilst others are either silent on this point entirely, or leave on the reader's mind the somewhat vague impression that they went down the Clinch Valley. In the main particulars, however, there is almost exact agreement as to the following points, to wit: That the company was made up of some men from Rockbridge County, Virginia, of others from the New River neighborhood, and of still others from North Carolina; that the party entered Kentucky by way of Cumberland Gap; that some of these men left the main body, and embarked on the Cumberland River for New Orleans, and returned to Virginia by sea; that some of them hunted as far as Dick's River to the Northward, and to Green, Barren and Hart Counties to the westward; and that some of them did not return to their homes for two or three years, whence the name of "Long

Hunters," by which they have ever since been known. The names of only a part of the company are given by any of the writers referred to. Dr. Hale, alone, of all the writers, positively states (see page 102 of his Trans-Allegheny Pioneers) that the place of rendezvous was, for some of the company, Draper's Meadows (now Blacksburg, Virginia), a few miles to the east of New River, and that others fell in with them at the Holston and Clinch settlements. As the settlements on both these rivers extended, at that date, from their head branches well down towards Powell's Valley —a distance of more than a hundred miles—this statement is rather vague. Dr. Hale and several others make Col. James Knox the commander of the party. As Draper's Meadows was less than a day's ride from the homes of the McAfees, whose Journals of their tour of 1773 constitute our main authorities for our present contention; and as the Rockbridge members of the party most likely had to pass their very doors in reaching Draper's Meadows; and as the McAfees were probably then contemplating their own tour to Kentucky, which they took a few years thereafter; and especially, as we learn from the two McAfee Journals, above mentioned, that the McAfees, on coming into the path or road which those hunters had travelled, at Powell's River, August 13, 1773, at once recognized it, and called it by its proper names, it is most reasonable to believe that some of the McAfees saw and conversed with some of the men of the famous hunting company and learned from them something of their plans. The McAfees were uncommonly intelligent frontiersmen, and masters of woodcraft; and in that early day no such an assemblage of adventurers bound for the Kentucky wilderness could rendezvous in their immediate vicinity, and at such a public place as the supply store at Draper's Meadows, without their being apprised of it in advance, and making sure of learning all about it. The speed with which gossip travelled from cabin to cabin and from station to station on the frontiers in those days puts our modern newspaper endeavors to the blush. We may most safely assume that when, in Powell's Valley, on the thirteenth of August, 1773, the McAfees stumbled on to the trail which the Long Hunters had followed on their way to Cumberland Gap, a few years before, they were like men meeting an old acquaintance, and needed no introduction—they instantly realized they were at the trail once called "The Hunters' Path," but after 1772 known as "The Long Hunters' Road," and needed only to follow it themselves in order to reach their homes.

The tour of the McAfee Company from Virginia to the Kentucky Wilderness in 1773 is recounted with tolerable fulness by all the larger histories of Kentucky, Collins being the fullest. (See Vol. 2, pages 605-610.) Having concluded their surveys on Salt River, they set out for home on the 31st day of July, striking across the country on foot. They struck Kentucky River in a few days, and August 4 they began to ascend the banks of that stream at a point about three miles above the site of the present town of Irvine, and stuck to it till noon of August 11. They set down, in writing, the estimated distance day by day. They averaged, according to their figures, about twenty-two miles a day for seven days and a half, aggregating about one hundred and sixty-five miles by noon of August 11, when they took final leave of the (North Fork of) Kentucky River. By actual measurement on the large scale U. S. maps in our possession—scale two miles to one inch—the distance from the point at which they began to ascend the river near Irvine to the mouth of Leatherwood Creek, in Perry County, Kentucky, is almost exactly one hundred and sixty-five miles, as any one can see who cares to look into the matter. Of course, they were not infallible in guessing the distances travelled, and we could not be so in measuring the river on the map. But the coincidence is striking. It is possible the creek at which they left the river August 11 was Macie's—we think it was Leatherwood, eight miles above Macie's. We are sure it was not any creek *above* Leatherwood, for none above it can possibly meet all the requirements of the case, due regard being had both to the known conditions of the river, and those of the adjacent country, as well as the records of the two Journals. Any attempt to bring them out on Powell's River above Stone Gap must end in confusion. They went up that creek (Leatherwood, or, possibly, Macie's) to its head, six miles, and then through the roughest and most difficult laurel-clad mountains six miles farther, and camped that evening. Next day, August 12, they went on six miles farther through terrible laurel hills and came to "a large creek at a big fork at the falls of it." This, we confidently believe, was Poor Fork of Cumberland River, just where Clover Lick Creek enters it from the south; and just there is a falls,

exactly answering to the Journal of James McAfee. A picture of the spot is given in Appendix A. Up that creek, two miles, they came to some salt springs with numerous wide elk paths leading from them up the northern front of "an exceeding high mountain." There are now such springs and the traces of elk paths on Clover Lick Creek, just two miles above its mouth at Poor Fork; and at those springs there rises, on the south side, the rocky front of Big Black Mountain, reaching an altitude of about four thousand feet above the sea, and twenty-three hundred feet above the creek at the licks mentioned. Up and over that "exceeding high mountain" they climbed, going nearly due south; and after incredible hardships, and acute suffering due to hunger, thirst, lacerated arms and legs and scalded feet, they camped that evening at the south-easterly base of that mountain, not far north of Clover Fork. Friday, August 13, they crossed Clover Fork, the Little Black Mountains, Stone Mountain, and then, finally, to the head of Powell's Valley, where they reached "The Hunters' Path," as James McAfee states in his Journal. That day they made only eight miles, owing partly to their exhausted condition, partly to the exceedingly rough, laurel-clad mountains they had to cross, and partly to the blinding rain which fell on them as they dragged their weary limbs along. At the risk of wearying the reader with details already presented in the preceding Appendix (A), we have given this summary of the journeyings of the three days prior to the arrival of the company at Powell's River, because upon our conclusions concerning the exact point on that stream at which they camped the night of the 13th must depend the location of the "Hunters' Path," as James McAfee calls it, or the "Long Hunters' Road," as Robert designates it in his Journal. We can not determine just where that trail ran unless we know about what point the McAfees camped Friday night, August 13. After the most painstaking study of the whole case, and the most thorough examination of the excellent maps in our possession, and after considering every other possible route the McAfees could have travelled from the Kentucky to Powell's River, we feel fully convinced that they could not have struck Powell's River, August 13, anywhere along its course except at some point above Dryden and below Big Stone Gap. The writer has been on the ground as far up as the town of Big Stone Gap, and then up the South Fork of Powell's River for some miles above that town, expressly to study this problem; and any theory which does not make the camp of the McAfees on the night of August 13 on the bank of Powell's River at a point several miles below Big Stone Gap and at least one or two miles above Dryden introduces confusion into the problem and raises difficulties absolutely irreconcilable with several of the known facts and conditions of the case. These two Journals are unimpeachable documents, written by men of large experience in woodcraft, and we must credit them as reliable.

Let us now sum up the points made entirely clear by the records in the two McAfee Journals. For convenience we will quote the exact words of both, bearing on this one question as to the existence, location and topographical features of the particular trail we have under review. First from James McAfee: "August 13th, Friday. We left that camp and travelled 8 miles across the head of Powell's Valley to the hunters' path. August 14th, Saturday. We took that path, crossed two little mountains over to Clinch water; travelled 25 miles that day. August 15th, Sunday. We travelled that path about 15 miles and struck the ford of Clinch at Castlewood's, 12 miles below James Smith's; we came eight miles that night to the ford of David Guest. August 16th, Monday. We came but five miles to Captain Russell's. Our feet were much scalded and so lame that we could not travel."

Robert, in his Journal, covering the same period, says: "The 13th we travelled about 8 miles in exceeding bad laurel mountains, which seemed to be hard to get out of—and it rained very hard. The 14th we got in the head of Powell's Valley on the Long Hunters' Road, and we had two mountains to cross on a small path, and the 15th we got to a house in the morning, which was a glad sight to us."

One thing made clear by these records is that there was then a narrow trail road in existence, leading from Powell's Valley to Clinch River (25 miles), and then up that stream fifteen miles to a ford known as Castlewood's; and that somehow the McAfees were able to recognize and identify that trail as the "Hunters' Path," according to James, and the "Long Hunters' Road," according to Robert. And a necessary inference is that those experienced and intelligent woodsmen had had a very definite knowledge of that trail prior to Au-

gust, 1773, so that the moment they came into it they knew what it was.

Another thing made clear by these records is that in going from Powell's River to Clinch River by that trail—a distance of about twenty-five miles there are two separate and distinct mountain ranges to be crossed along a narrow path. This means that the trail, as travelled by them August 14, could not have gone either up or down the Powell's River very far without seriously increasing the distance they would need to travel in order to reach Clinch River within twenty-five miles. If they really struck Powell's River a few miles above Dryden—say, at the mouth of Mud Creek—then they did not go up the river more than two miles before they came to Buck Creek (which puts in from the east) and there turned sharply to the right (the east) and began the ascent of Wallen's Ridge; and having gotten to its eastern base, at once began the ascent of Powell's Mountain, at whose eastern foot they came to Stock Creek in what is called "Hunters' Valley," not quite half way to the point at which they struck the Clinch River. Thus forty miles of the Long Hunters' Road are identified, and we are also furnished with data for extending it in both directions for a great distance when other known facts come to be considered.

Mr. W. J. Dickinson, of Castlewood, to whose kindness the author is much indebted for valuable information used herein, thinks that by the phrase, "head of Powell's Valley," which is employed in both of the McAfee Journals to designate the locality in which Powell's River and the Long Hunters' Road (or Hunters' Path) were reached, we are bound to understand a region considerably above Big Stone Gap; but in order to confirm this theory Mr. Dickinson is obliged to adopt a route for the McAfees from August 10th to the 15th which can not possibly conform to the plain requirements of the records in the two Journals. For one thing, from the lower end of the pass called Big Stone Gap clear to the remotest headsprings of Powell's River on the divide north-west of Gladeville—a distance of at least twenty miles—the country is so exceedingly mountainous, and the river so closely hemmed in on both sides by lofty ranges and peaks that it is doubtful if at a dozen places throughout that entire distance there could be found, near the river, spaces fit for a game of golf, much less anything that we could call a real valley. A more interminable network of closely connected ranges of mountains from two thousand to thirty-five hundred feet high could scarcely be found in America. In all that region, from Big Stone Gap to the north-west, the north and the north-east, not a village of a hundred souls can be found within a distance of twenty miles, with the single exception of Gladeville; and that village (of two hundred souls) is not on Powell's River at all. It is idle to talk of that little river having anything worthy of being designated as a valley above Big Stone Gap of sufficient width to speak of as the Journals do—it is simply a rushing, roaring, tumbling mountain stream, with high mountains on both sides, descending nearly five hundred feet in ten miles of its course between Little and Big Stone Gaps. What sort of speed this indicates may be inferred from the fact that the Falls of the Ohio, at Louisville, which cover a distance of three miles, and render boating impracticable, show a descent of less than 9 feet to the mile, about one-fifth that of Powell's River at the place named. Nothing of a valley, deserving even to be called the "head" of one, can be seen till Big Stone Gap is passed, and that "head" is at least ten miles long—it is but a narrow valley even there, and till we pass Stocker's Knob and reach Dryden. There the real valley of that stream begins, and the region above Dryden for ten miles is but its head. The present writer personally inspected that beautiful region a few years ago for the purpose of getting at the truth in regard to this point, going from Cumberland Gap to Big Stone Gap on the cars, and then on horseback up the South Fork of Powell's River some miles into what is called the Cracker Neck, and all that he there saw and learned only helped to confirm the theory he has adopted, and which he has sought to illustrate in two of the maps contained in this volume. He put the question to a citizen of the town of Big Stone Gap, at the time of the visit just referred to, as to where the head of Powell's River was thought to be, and he replied, in substance: "Below this town." About five years ago he wrote to the Rev. R. G. Matheson, who was then the pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Big Stone Gap, and asked him for his opinion, and his reply was in these words: "Big Stone Gap is properly spoken of as at the head of Powell's Valley." That is the verdict of men who live on the ground.

A strong confirmation of our views on this particular point, as well as of the general position we

have sought to maintain in regard to the Long Hunters' Road, is to be found in the journal of a William Calk, who travelled from New River to Central Kentucky in the spring of 1775, less than two years after the homeward trip of the McAfee Company. It is a singular fact that Calk's Journal is published in that delightful and valuable monograph of the late Captain Thomas Speed, devoted to the Wilderness Road (see pages 33-38), when, as a matter of fact, Calk's journey was an illustration of the importance of the Long Hunters' Road. Calk crossed New River at Pepper's Ferry (the crossing place more particularly connected with the Long Hunters' Road) March 21, and after travelling two days (about sixty miles) along the Wilderness Road he turned out of it near where Marion now is and set his face to the north-west, towards Clinch River. At the evening of the second day after leaving that highway he got to one Daniel Smith's, on Clinch River, and he did not even see the Wilderness Road again till he got down into Powell's Valley near where the town of Jonesville now is. He got to Elk Garden March 30, passed Castle's Woods the next day, and late in the night of April 1 he reached Cove Creek, which is just eleven miles east of Powell's River at the mouth of Buck Creek, where the McAfees passed, going homeward on the fourteenth of August. Calk's brief record of April 2, the day after he reached Cove Creek, is as follows: "This morning is a very hard frost and we start early, travel over Powell's Mountain and camp in the head of Powell's Valley, where there is very good food." Now we contend that this Journal proves several things: first, that there was at that day a practicable horse-back trail down the Clinch Valley to Cumberland Gap suited to emigrants going to Kentucky; secondly, that Calk travelled, for many miles, the very road the McAfees had passed over in 1773; thirdly, that he could not possibly have gone by Big Stone Gap without needlessly increasing the length of his journey; and fourthly, that he considered the region below Big Stone Gap as the "head of Powell's Valley." His Journal shows that he covered in one day the distance from the place where he struck the head of that valley to where the Wilderness Road and the Long Hunters' Road came together near the site of Jonesville; and as we know, from other sources, that it is just about twenty-three miles from the mouth of Buck Creek down the valley to the junction with the Wilderness Road and Boone's Trace—a comfortable day's journey with heavily laden pack-horses, "over very bad hills," as Calk says—the conclusion is irresistible that Calk came from the upper Clinch Valley by the Long Hunters' Road, and that he got into Powell's Valley at the very place where the McAfees left it August 14, 1773, as they were going back home to Botetourt County, Virginia.

Additional light is thrown upon this question by the records we find in various works concerning the painful disaster Daniel Boone suffered in Powell's Valley October 10, 1773, as he and a large company of people were on their way to make a settlement in Kentucky. In all the fuller histories we find some account of it. (See Summers's South-western Virginia, pages 142-3; and Collins's Kentucky, Vol. 2, page 711.) Not long after Boone's return from his sojourn of 1769-71 in the Wilderness of Kentucky to his home on the Yadkin, in North Carolina, he made up his mind to sell out his interests there and move to Kentucky for the purpose of making his permanent home in that beautiful country. Accordingly, he left the Yadkin September 25, 1773, taking along all of his family, his household effects, and his cattle and horses. A number of other families and a goodly company of armed men joined him, so that by the time he reached Powell's Valley his party was the most formidable one that had ever ventured that far. The question before us is this: Did Boone and his associates travel the Long Hunters' Road on that journey? We do not hesitate to give it as our confident judgment that he did travel that road, and especially that the part of that road which was followed by the McAfees August 14 and 15 was, beyond all reasonable doubt, the precise route of Boone in October, 1773. In the light of the facts before us, we do not see how it would be possible to make even a plausible argument in favor of any other route. Whether he came that road all the way from New River by way of Walker's Creek and the site of Tazewell Court House, or whether he, like Calk (already considered), got into the Long Hunters' Road on the Upper Clinch some miles below that place, we can not positively assert; but we believe that the Long Hunters' Road, at least from where Calk got into it, was the one he chose, and we think it can be proven.

One reason which constrains us to judge thus is that, according to the concurrent assertions of all

the histories mentioning the matter at all, so far as we have been able to examine, the disaster which overtook Boone and party October 10, 1773, occurred in Powell's Valley, and at a point forty miles from a certain settlement on Clinch River, whither they retired, and at which Boone made his home for the next eighteen months. Some writers go so far as to say that this sorrowful event occurred right under the shadow of Cumberland Mountain, proper, and only about two miles east of Cumberland Gap. We understand there is a spot just there to which citizens of that vicinity are in the habit of pointing in our day as the scene of the tragedy referred to, and the place where the six murdered white men were buried—Boone's own son, James, being one of them. We do not believe that any spot within less than fifty miles to the north-east of Cumberland Gap can possibly be the place. Let any man take a reliable map and try to find some place on Clinch River which is only about forty miles from that Gap, and at which there was, at that date, a settlement offering shelter for families of women and children, and he will soon discover the utter hopelessness of the task. Even the crossing of Clinch River reached by the Wilderness Road is more than sixty miles from Cumberland Gap, and there are other reasons for rejecting the supposition that Boone and party went that way. There is every reason for assuming that the discouraged company would retreat over the very path they had just come in safety up to the moment the savages waylaid them, and not attempt some untried trail in the wilderness. There were but two roads back to the settlements, namely: the Wilderness Road on the south, and the Long Hunters' Road to the north. That there was a settlement on Clinch River which did offer shelter to families at that very date is absolutely certain; and that place was Castle's Woods, which is just forty miles from Powell's River, and which the McAfees reached, to their great joy, August 15, 1773. That forty miles, we need not stay to prove, was but one stage of the Long Hunters' Road. There were, in later years, several bloody scenes enacted close to Cumberland Gap, along the road in question, and, we doubt not, numbers of scalped and murdered white men were buried there; but we insist that those mournful events came after the one we are considering now.

A small volume published in 1868 by the Appletons, of New York, as one of "The Young American Series," written by the author of Uncle Philip's Conversations, gives some details of this sad affair in Powell's Valley which we have never met with elsewhere. It is therein related (page 54) that in about a fortnight after Boone and party left their old home on the Yadkin they reached Powell's Mountain; and having passed that ridge and climbed Wallen's Ridge, they began the descent of this last named mountain. While quietly going down the same, passing through a dark and narrow gap, they were suddenly greeted with the yells of savages, rushing down from their rear, and a shower of arrows. Six of the company fell dead in their tracks, one of the slain being James Boone, the eighteen-year-old son of Daniel. The Indians either killed or frightened away into the forest all the cattle belonging to the party. The slaughtered men, as we know from other sources, constituted a small rear guard, charged with the care of the stock, and the rest of the company were some distance in advance—some of them several miles ahead. By the time the main body of armed men reached the scene, the savages had finished their deadly work and taken flight. The shock to the main body of the party was so overwhelming, as they gazed upon the six ghastly corpses, that, despite the courageous protests of Boone—who was for going on to Kentucky—the sentiment was almost unanimous in favor of retreating back to the nearest white settlement on Clinch River, forty miles distant. To this sentiment Boone was compelled to yield, and after sorrowfully burying the six dead comrades and loved ones, they began the tedious journey back over the mountain to Clinch River. If any one will again consult a good map, and, selecting a point anywhere he may choose at the western base of Wallen's Ridge, and seek for a settlement on Clinch River (then existing), just about forty miles towards the region whence Boone had come, he will find that, by the Wilderness Road, he would land at what was then the Blockhouse at least twenty miles south of Clinch River. If he will try the other road, he will find he reaches Castle's Woods, which is on the Long Hunters' Road. It should be added that the little volume from which we have gathered these facts expressly states that the trail they followed over Powell's Mountain was one the Boones had blazed, from which we infer that it was this way Boone and party had travelled in 1769. The Long Hunters of 1769 certainly went that way, and so, probably, did Boone

on his tour of that same year. In fact, Boone, while not with Col. Knox's party in 1769, went into Kentucky that same year and remained nearly as long as Knox, and was, in the common estimate of the public, himself, one of the "Long Hunters." The bearing of all this on our contention is that Boone not only chose this route for the large company composed, in part, of women, children and cattle, in 1773, but almost certainly had gone that way in 1769, showing that the Long Hunters' Road, in the judgment of the most noted and capable woodsman of the eighteenth century, was not only a route to Kentucky, but the best one of which he had knowledge for the use of families. Let it be noted that if we take two figures shaped like the first letter of the alphabet, one taller than the other, and set them side by side with their bases touching (thus AA) we will have a good representation of Powell's Mountain and Wallen's Ridge, the former being the taller of the two at the point where the trail in question crossed. On reaching the foot of Powell's Mountain coming west one begins, probably in the course of a few hundred yards, to ascend Wallen's Ridge. This physical fact, which obtains just at that point, does not obtain at any point to the south-west of it; and the language employed in the narrative above quoted from is just such as we would expect where the two mountains were thus related to each other —there is no valley between them, but the one begins where the other ends.

Summers tells us that when Boone reached Castle's Woods after the disaster at the western base of Wallen's Ridge in Powell's Valley he found the cabin of David Guest vacant. The truth is, many of the settlers (as is stated by Coale, above quoted) did not remain all the year, in that early day, in that place. Their custom was to spend the summer so as to raise a crop at Castle's Woods, a level, fertile, easily cultivated section of the valley, and in the fall move back to the settlements to the eastward. There Boone made his home till March, 1775, when he moved into Kentucky, blazing his "trace" for Henderson to the Kentucky River. From June to August, 1774, he was in Kentucky with one, Michael Stoner, at Gov. Dunmore's request, to warn and conduct out of the country the surveyors then there, as the Indians were planning an extensive campaign, which culminated in the battle of Point Pleasant in October of that year. The records of Washington County (which county after 1776 for many years embraced the whole of what is now south-western Virginia, and much of what is now West Virginia) show that in 1774 Daniel Boone was a citizen of the Clinch Valley and in command of Fort Moore and the twenty men who constituted the garrison. That fort was either at Castle's Woods or very near it. (See Summers, pages 156-7.) Boone started to Kentucky in June, 1774, at Gov. Dunmore's request, and got back in August, 1774; and finding that the Clinch Valley men had all gone to meet the Indians at Point Pleasant, he set out for that place with a body of men. He was ordered back, however, to protect the settlers on Clinch, and there he seems to have remained (at Castle's Woods) till about February, 1775, when he went over onto the Watauga to assist Col. Henderson in his treaty with the Indians, preparatory to his final move to Kentucky. (See Summers, pages 156-157.) The significance of all these facts, so far as concerns our contention, is that Boone used the same trail to and from Powell's Valley as the McAfees did in 1773, and Calk in 1775. The Long Hunters' Road passed that way, and we have good reason for supposing that Boone and family had used it in the fall of 1773 all the way from New River to Powell's Valley.

Of course, it is not to be thought for a moment that there was but a single trail in the Clinch Valley leading to the wilderness beyond. It is undoubtedly true that there were many different trails crossing the mountains to the west and north-west of Castle's Woods. One went up Guest River and crossed to where the railroad station, Norton, now is and went on towards Pound Gap or the Big Sandy River. One went nearly due north-west over Powell Mountain from the Hunters' Valley into what is called the "Cracker Neck," on to Big Stone Gap, and then north towards Pound Gap, etc. And it is nearly certain that these trails were so often used by hunters that the name "Hunters' Path" may have been applied to them. Our contention is, simply, that there was one trail which, by pre-eminence, was called "The Long Hunters' Road," after the return of the Long Hunters from Kentucky in 1772; and that this particular road was continuous from New River to Kentucky by way of the Clinch Valley; that it was from about 1760 onward the *only* east and west thoroughfare in that whole section of the country excepting its more southerly rival, the Wilderness Road; and

that it was, to some extent, a rival of that other road for emigrants bound for Kentucky.

The Long Hunters' Road did indeed have its peculiar drawbacks and disadvantages, which easily account for the larger popularity of the Holston Valley route. One was the exceedingly rugged character of the country it passed through from New River up to the divide at the site of Tazewell Court House, a distance of about seventy-five miles, or more. It was fearfully rugged a century and a third ago, and it is that now. Here the Holston Valley Route had a decided advantage. Then, again, the character of the country farther down Clinch Valley, and especially for the last fifteen miles before reaching Powell's Valley was much the same. The ascent of Powell's Mountain, and then of Wallen's Ridge, right next to it on the west, was very trying. A man on foot found it steep, indeed; but the pack-horse, loaded down, found it more disagreeable. As for wagons, it is doubtful if one ever has crossed Powell's Mountain from Stock Creek down into the narrow defile at its westerly base, along which the railway now passes. This need surprise no one, for Indians preferred crossing ridges rather than rivers, and this road was no doubt made by them. By diverging to the left at the crossing of Stock Creek at the western end of Hunters' Valley and going through Lovelady Gap and on to Powell's Valley at Dryden, the use of wheeled vehicles is practicable, and there is a wagon road that way, at this day called the Tazewell Road. But these topographical difficulties served to dwarf the usefulness of this great thoroughfare, especially for purposes of interstate commerce. Then there was another objection to this road: It was closer than the Great Road was to the side from which Indian attacks were most likely to come, down almost to the close of the eighteenth century. Near Tazewell there were Indian trails coming up the several branches of the Big Sandy River, along which numerous murdering and plundering bands were wont to come. The same was true of the country from Castle's Woods down to Powell's Valley: There were several gaps to the north-west through which ran Indian trails which the Northern Indians often made use of, and by means of which the travellers on the Long Hunters' Road could be more easily put in peril than was likely along the other highway to the south. True, these two roads—the Clinch Valley and the Holston Valley Routes—were not so very far apart—not more than fifteen to twenty miles, as a rule—but between them ran ranges of lofty mountains, and numerous streams which were natural barriers to the movements of hostile intruders. Of course, this particular drawback ceased to have any importance after the Indians were driven far to the west and troubled Virginia and Kentucky no more; but it had its effect in fixing the conditions of life in the Clinch Valley. The main trouble with the Clinch Valley, however, was one which no civilizing agencies can ever entirely remove; and that was the small proportion of arable land. In this regard it compares unfavorably, on the whole, with the route down the Holston. Whilst there are here and there some splendid valleys and meadow lands of greater or less extent along the Clinch, some of which are equal to the choicest in the world, the fact remains that the mountains hold sway as a general rule, and, after all the progress of a century and a half, Clinch Valley has nothing like the population of the other route. Mines may affect the wealth of that section, but they can hardly add to the arable lands.

But after all is said that truthfully can be said on the subject, our contention, as we believe, stands fast, that from the middle of the eighteenth century unto this day there has been a notable highway from Pepper's Ferry on New River up to Tazewell, then down the Clinch to Castle's Woods, then across Stony Cove and Stock Creeks to Powell's Valley, then through Cumberland Gap into Kentucky, which highway has played a very considerable part in the early settlement of south-western Virginia and Kentucky, and whose history deserves to be rescued from the oblivion in which it has so long been allowed to lie. The testimony of two living authorities of high character will conclude what we have to say on this subject.

One of these is William J. Dickinson, Esq., of Castlewood, Russell County, Virginia. This gentleman's great-grandfather was one of the first of the early settlers of that region; and there is probably not a man in the Clinch Valley who is more thoroughly informed in regard to the early settlement of that particular section of Virginia than he. The place at which he lives is historic. The name "Castlewood" now applies only to a small village, one of the stations of the Clinch Valley Division of the Norfolk & Western Railway, but in the olden days the name was Castle's Woods, and was meant to signify a magnificent piece of forest largely

owned by a man named Castle. That man Castle settled there about 1768-1771, and the large wooded tract he took up became famous, mainly because the land was so extremely fertile and so well adapted to cultivation. The timber has been about all cut down, but the land is noted for its luxuriant grass and fine crops. Hence this name "Castle's Woods" attached not to one farm or a village, or a ford, but to a region which extended along the bank of the Clinch for some distance. The earliest settlers in that vicinity were, besides Castle, Henry Dickinson, Charles Bickley and Simon Oesher. Near by is a village called for Dickinson, and another called Bickley's Mill. In 1770 a fort was erected there called Bush's Fort, at a place now known as Mud Store. In 1771 this fort was attacked by seventeen Indians, who were repulsed by the Whites, and that region was visited by the savages again and again nearly to the close of the eighteenth century. (See Life and Adventures of Milburn Waters, by C. B. Coale, printed by Gary & Co., Richmond, Va., 1878.) As previously shown, the McAfee Company passed there going east in August, 1773, and Boone and party going west in October following, only to return a few weeks later and occupy the vacant cabin of David Guest, which was Boone's home till early in 1775. This place is now the home of Mr. Wm. J. Dickinson, who has given the present writer the benefit of his extensive knowledge of matters relating to the early history of that region. Mr. Dickinson says that the Long Hunters' Road led from Pepper's Ferry down the Clinch, then over to Powell's Valley, and down that Valley to Cumberland Gap, and he gives it as his opinion that this was the route which the McAfees travelled going home in August, 1773. Mr. Dickinson does not think, however, that the Long Hunters' Road ran directly west from Clinch River at Dungannon across Stony, Cove, and Stock Creeks, direct to Powell's River, as we have it, but made a long detour to the north-west and got into Powell's River up west of the site of Norton, about twelve miles above Big Stone Gap. To that view he seems to have been inclined mainly because he feels that the phrase "head of Powell's Valley," previously discussed, compels him to go considerably above said Gap. This view, however, as any one can readily see who studies the records in the two McAfee Journals, renders it absolutely impossible to make any consistent interpretation of said Journals—it throws the whole of the records from August 10 to August 15 into a hopeless, unintelligible jumble. It would do the same for the Journal of Calk, 1775, with this exception, however, that his views as to the course of the Long Hunters' Road agree in all essentials with that adopted by the author of this volume. This discussion, it is needless to remark, can be intelligible—not to say endurable—only to those who are willing to make constant use of good maps as they proceed.

The last authority we shall quote is the Hon. David E. Johnston, attorney at law, Bluefield, West Virginia. This gentleman kindly wrote down his views for the author in January, 1904, and we feel sure that he is an uncommonly well informed person, and every way trustworthy. Judge Johnston says there are several well known roads from New River up to Tazewell Court House, but he names two that were used during the latter part of the eighteenth century as feeders to the Clinch Valley road (Long Hunters' Road), going down to Powell's Valley and Cumberland Gap. He holds that this road actually existed in those early days, and was used by persons passing from New River to Kentucky. He speaks of it not as a mere trail for hunters, but as a highway from east to west. One of the feeders of the main road—we consider the main part of the Long Hunters' Road to have begun on Clinch River, near Tazewell Court House—was a continuation of a road from the Greenbrier and Monroe County section of country. It crossed New River just above the month of Rich Creek, went down the New about three miles to the mouth of East River, thence up the latter and over onto Bluestone River, and up that stream to its source, and then over onto the head of Clinch River. This trail, Judge Johnston positively states, was used as far back as 1779, and how much earlier he knows not. After the Revolution, a considerable time, this trail was made a regular wagon-road, and is now in constant use.

The most ancient road, however, of which he knows, which started at New River, came up to Tazewell, and went on down the Clinch to Cumberland Gap, was one which left New River at Pepper's Ferry, went along down the bank of that stream a few miles to the northern side of Cloyd's Mountain, then turned to the westward and went up to Walker's Creek, up that Creek to the mouth of Kimberling Creek, up Kimberling to the wilderness section through Rocky Gap to Clear Fork, thence up Clear Fork to the head of Clinch, and down Clinch

to Castle's Woods, Powell's Valley, Cumberland Gap and Kentucky. This trail, like that up East and Bluestone Rivers, was made a wagon-road long after the Revolution. Both led into, and were feeders of, the Long Hunters' Road. If any one feeder, however, must be called the Long Hunters' Road, that from Pepper's Ferry is the one.

That such an ancient, extensive and important highway, as we think we have proved the Long Hunters' Road to have been, should have received no mention in any of the fullest and most popular histories of the two great States it traversed is one of the most unaccountable of anomalies. It is a fact, which can hardly be questioned, that thousands of emigrants and travellers from Virginia and Carolina must have followed this road on their way to Kentucky during the last quarter of the eighteenth century; and it would scarcely be possible, at this day, to find a single intelligent citizen of mature years in the entire region through which this road passed, who was reared in that country and is possessed of even a small measure of antiquarian taste, that has not some knowledge of its origin and location. And yet one may search the most highly valued of those histories from cover to cover without being able to find a single sentence on this subject. There is but one explanation of this omission, and that is one which we consider not at all adequate, namely, that the larger popularity and usefulness of the Holston Valley Route (The Wilderness Road, or Great Road) simply overshadowed that of the Long Hunters' Road. One result of this was that there gradually, and almost unconsciously to the people, grew up a habit of using the phrase "came through the wilderness" as synonymous with "came by the Wilderness Road." In other words, the journey from New River through South-western Virginia to Kentucky got to be understood as a journey by the one road which led down the Holston Valley; or at least the distinction between the Clinch Valley and the Holston Valley was dropped out of mind. The only very clear and definite conception of the matter which the most of the people had was that the journey was from Virginia to Kentucky through the Great Wilderness. In this way a man like Calk (see his Journal in Speed's Wilderness Road) could come down the Long Hunters' Road in the spring of 1775, and not even see the Wilderness Road for more than a hundred miles of his journey, and yet his Journal could appear in a monograph devoted to the Wilderness Road, and thousands could peruse it without suspecting that it had almost wholly to do with an entirely different highway—the rival of the other.

In order to see this point fully, we should remember that of all the tens of thousands of settlers and travellers who came "through the Great Wilderness" to Kentucky from 1775 to 1800, perhaps not one in a thousand kept a written journal of the trip, no matter which of the two possible roads he travelled; and that of the few journals kept probably not one in a hundred is now extant and accessible to the public. Think of it—there are now extant, so far as we know, but three journals of trips over the Wilderness Road, proper; and there is but one of a trip by the Long Hunters' Road! If we may make a rough guess we may say we have one extant journal for each thirty thousand persons who passed either up or down the Holston Route, and one for the ten thousand who went by the other road. For one hundred thousand pilgrims, four journals. Of course we have here and there numberless brief references to the trips of persons coming and going, but these furnish scarcely any definite information bearing on the problem we are dealing with. Is it any great wonder, then, that within a few decades after these old pioneer roads had ceased to have much importance for the uses they had served in pioneer times, people completely lost sight of the difference between the two rival routes we have under review, and contented themselves with the loose, indefinite notion that a journey through the Great Wilderness was simply a journey from New River through Cumberland Gap into Kentucky, regardless of the particular route through South-western Virginia.

A single other fact it may not be amiss to mention in closing this discussion. It should be borne in mind that probably no wheeled vehicle ever passed over Cumberland Gap into Kentucky before the dawn of the nineteenth century. Fairly good wagon-roads did, indeed, exist along the Holston Valley Route from New River all the way down to Abingdon long before the close of the eighteenth century. We know that Col. Richard Henderson, when on his way into Kentucky in April, 1775, brought his wagons, with great difficulty, as far as Martin's Cabins, only twenty miles east of Cumberland Gap, but he had to leave them there, and the rest of the trip to Boonesboro he went on horseback. Hence, down to the nineteenth century, these

two rival roads were about on a par so far as concerned modes of conveyance for movers going into Kentucky; for, although it was practicable to use wagons on the Wilderness Road all the way from Ingles' Ferry to Abingdon long before that was possible from Pepper's Ferry down Clinch River, and getting over Powell's Mountain where Calk crossed it on horse-back in 1775 was no doubt very tedious, owing to the steepness of the way, yet no man would care to come half the way in wagons, and then have to resort to pack-horses—it was one mode or the other the whole way. The ugly place at Powell's Mountain and Wallen's Ridge between Stock Creek on the one side and Buck Creek on the other was, in after years—we know not how soon—avoided by cutting a good road around to the southwest from the crossing of Stock Creek by the site of Duffield, ascending the North Fork of the Clinch a few miles to Ward's Mill, and then going through Lovelady Gap, due west to Powell's River, near Dryden. That road is now a fairly good wagon road for a rough country. It was made before emigrant travel to Kentucky had ceased; it did away with a serious objection to the Clinch Valley Route. Calk, in 1775, avoided the main difficulties of the road from Pepper's Ferry to the head of Clinch River by taking the Wilderness Road as far as to Marion (site) and then crossing over to Clinch River.

The truth probably is that this northerly route was used by perhaps one-fifth of the whole number of travellers—certainly by many—and the failure of the historians to take any notice of it is a remarkable fact which demands fuller explanation than we have offered. At all events, the writer believes that in matters of this kind the whole truth ought to be told if we are to understand the real history of communities, and he has felt it worth while to give much thought and labor to ascertaining what was true and setting it down for the benefit of posterity.

STATIONS ON LONG HUNTERS' ROAD, NEW RIVER, VA., TO ROCKCASTLE RIVER, KY.

	MILES.
Pepper's Ferry to Cloyd's Mountain	10
Cloyd's Mountain to Walker's Creek	10
Walker's Creek to Mouth of Kimberling Creek	12
Mouth of Kimberling to Wolf Creek, at the Mouth of Clear Fork	16
Mouth of Clear Fork to its Source	21
Source of Clear Fork to Tazewell C. H.	8
Tazewell C. H. to Maiden Spring	15
Maiden Spring to Elk Garden	25
Elk Garden to Castle's Woods	23
Castle's Woods to Stanton Creek	18
Stanton Creek by Hunters' Valley, to stock Creek	14
Stock Creek to Buck Creek at Powell's River	10
Mouth Buck Creek to Junction of Three Roads	23
Junction of Roads to Martin's Cabins	19
Martin's Cabins to Cumberland Gap	20
Cumberland Gap to Flat Lick	22
Flat Lick to Rockcastle River	50
Grand total	316

Of course, it is not pretended that the above exhibit is accurate in all respects—we do claim that it is substantially correct as to all essential details.

(c) BOONE'S TRACE, OR ROAD.

There is perhaps no other road in existence in which Kentuckians feel the peculiar sentimental interest which they have in Boone's Trace. The very mention of its name carries them back to the pioneer period of their native State, and awakens visions of Indians, and tomahawks, and long barrelled, flint-lock rifles, and hunting shirts, and coon-skin caps. It makes them think of those old days, a century and a third ago, when there were no human habitations in their State, and when the buffalo, the elk, the deer, the bear, and the panther were in full possession of the land. By it they are reminded of magnificent virgin forests, of vast areas of land, untouched as yet by plow or hoe and covered with luxuriant grass, and of even the larger streams as being as limpid as the clearest mountain brooks one can find to-day. The Wilderness Road and the Long Hunters' Road do, indeed, remind us of all these things, but they had mostly to do with Virginia. Boone's Trace is preeminently of Kentucky.

This road, however, can never be entirely dissociated, in our minds, from the other two great highways we have been considering. The three are indissolubly connected, and we must know something of all of them in order to know much of either. The manner in which they overlap and coincide is quite peculiar—there is nothing just like it in any other highways with which we are familiar. Their origin and history are not the same, and yet they so blend and harmonize and run together, that we are compelled to think of them as a trio whose several tones can not be considered apart—each one contributes its share to the production of effects which owe their sweetness to all.

And the three great States which were traversed by one or all of these old pioneer thoroughfares—Virginia, Kentucky and Tennessee—have all of these roads bound up with their own history and development, and through all the coming years men who love the story of any one of these splendid Commonwealths must find a certain pleasure in reading about this trio of roads. How eminently fitting it is, then, that the one locality of greatest notoriety and distinction, which is common to all of these historic thoroughfares is also the point at which the three States concerned come together—on the crest of that magnificent pass, Cumberland Gap, at which one may stand with his feet touching each of these States at once, and, at the same time, their three greatest pioneer roads. The stone which marks this happy conjunction of States and roads can be seen there at this day.

Boone's Trace began on the Watauga River in what is now Carter County, Tennessee, at a place known as Sycamore Shoals; ran mainly in a northerly direction till it reached the Big Moccasin Gap, at the site of the town of Gate City, Virginia; then across the Clinch and Powell's Rivers to Cumberland Gap; and then more than half way across Kentucky to the Kentucky River, in what is now Madison County—a distance of about two hundred and thirty-three miles.

In one important particular this road differed greatly from the other two; it was not gradually developed and extended through a long course of years, but was determined upon and laid out, from beginning to end, within three weeks' time. Of course, like the other two roads, it was for the most part an old Indian or buffalo trail, which had been used more or less by savages or wild beasts, one or both, for centuries; but there was a certain time—the month of March, 1775—when this route into Kentucky ceased to be merely what it had been for generations before, and took on a totally new character, and began to have a new and most important use which it had never known before. From the day Boone and his assistants decided upon the exact location of his "Trace" it assumed a distinctive character as a highway by which white men of the then colonies of Virginia, and the two Carolinas in the South, and others far to the North, were guaranteed access to, and egress from, Kentucky on horse-back.

When Boone marked out his road through Cumberland Gap to the Kentucky River, he marked also the point at which we may say the real settlement of Kentucky began. And we can not justly overlook the important part played in this drama by another man of force and ability who stood back of Daniel Boone and employed him to act for him in this undertaking. We refer, of course, to Col. Richard Henderson, of North Carolina, the father of the short-lived "Transylvania Colony." He it was that took the lead in planning and executing the purchase from the Cherokee Indians of the best part of what we now know as Kentucky—about seventeen million acres—for the sum of ten thousand pounds, sterling. With him were associated a number of gentlemen—Haywood (page 30), mentions nine, including Col. Henderson—and one of the most prominent of the company was Nathaniel Hart. The negotiations were begun in the fall of 1774, and finally concluded by the Treaty of Watauga, March 17, 1775, at the Sycamore Shoals. This place is in the present County of Carter, near the town of Elizabethton. When Col. Henderson and Col. Hart visited the Cherokee towns to arrange for the council to be held at Sycamore Shoals they took Daniel Boone with them. Boone had by this time been relieved of his duties as commander of the three forts on Clinch River near Castle's Woods. Monette, quoted by Ramsey (page 117), states that there were twelve hundred Indians actually present on the treaty grounds. The eloquent and pathetic address of the Cherokee chief and orator, Oconostota, so often referred to in the histories, was made at this great council, in which he pictured with great power and feeling the gradual decline of the Red Man, and foretold, with prophetic accuracy, the final extinction of his race. He, in his speech, solemnly protested against the cession of their lands to the Whites, but his name was, after all, signed to the treaty—he saw he was in a hopeless minority. Though Boone, doubtless, put no money into the undertaking he did invest what was quite as essential to success; his knowledge of the savages to be dealt with, and his unequalled acquaintance with the region transferred by the Cherokees to the Henderson Company. It is not easy to see how Boone's services could have been dispensed with either in bringing about the purchase in a peaceable and satisfactory manner, or in opening up a suitable thoroughfare to the heart of Kentucky which would invite settlers from the various sections of country on which Henderson expected to rely for purchasers and settlers. By

some writers it is asserted—with good reason, as we believe—that the visit Boone had made to Kentucky in 1769 was at the suggestion of Col. Henderson, and for the express purpose of preparing the way for the Watauga Treaty of 1775.

It should be remembered, as has been intimated, that the real settlement of Kentucky had not been begun when Boone started, about March 10, 1775, with his company of men from the Watauga Settlement to mark out his famous "Trace" to the Kentucky River. True, the McAfees had located and surveyed their settlement on Salt River, in what is now Mercer County, in July, 1773, and had visited their lands to improve and look after them in 1774, and several weeks prior to Boone's leaving Watauga, in March, 1775, they were in Kentucky planting crops. It is also true that Capt. James Harrod had made an attempt to effect a settlement at Harrodsburg in 1774, but he had been compelled to abandon his cabins a few weeks after their erection, and not till the spring of 1775 did the permanent possession of them begin. Hence, we may truthfully say that Boone's road-making journey to the interior of Kentucky in March, 1775, was epochal, marking the dawn of a new day for that fair portion of Virginia which lay to the west of the Cumberland Mountains. From that day onward Kentucky had something she had never boasted before—a highway, at least in embryo, which was in some real sense, the work of men of the all-conquering Saxon race. Indian trails and buffalo paths without number she had had for ages —now, for the first time, she possessed the semblance of at least one road, partly due to the efforts of civilized man.

The region from which Boone's Trace took its departure was that lovely valley on the Watauga River in which the Beans, and Robertsons, and Carters, and Seviers, and Womacks, etc., had, prior to 1772, created the famous Watauga Association, and made a start in the settlement of East Tennessee, which ante-dated that of Kentucky by several years. In that part of the country several forts had been erected, and a few homes established as far north as the Long Island of Holston River; and about Abingdon, some forty miles to the northeast of that place, a very considerable population had grown up, with churches and the other marks of a civilized community, several years before Boone began his road-making tour to Kentucky. But the frontier of civilization was then at the North Fork of Holston River, or at Big Moccasin Gap, a couple of miles north of it. That daring adventurer, Captain Joseph Martin, as before noted, had, indeed, gone right up into the very shadow of Cumberland Mountain, twenty miles east of Cumberland Gap, and built his cabin, in 1768, but the Indians had forced him back a very few months after he got there, compelling the abandonment of his outpost for a time. The title "Wilderness Road" could have had no very definite meaning, as we believe, in March, 1775, as applied to the mere Indian trail going west from that Gap, over which there was practically no traffic—a path which was not only in the wilderness at Big Moccasin Gap but whose remotest termini touched nothing else but the wilderness. In other words, for all the purposes of civilization there was as yet nothing in the way of a road west or north of that Gap, but only a path for savages and wild beasts. The name "Wilderness Road" did not signify a road that was wholly within a howling wilderness, but a highway which led to a country at least partially settled, beyond which lay a wild and uninhabited region. After Kentucky had been partially occupied by white men, and inter-communication between it and the Mother State had been fairly established, the name "Wilderness Road" was more and more applied to the whole route to the Falls of the Ohio, and the names "Long Hunters' Road" and "Boone's Trace" dropped more and more out of popular usage.

The accounts of Boone's marking his Trace, as we find them in Haywood, Ramsey, Summers, Collins, etc., substantially agree as to the following particulars: First, the Trace began at Sycamore Shoals on the Watauga, though Boone and party had no marking or cutting to do till they got to Long Island, about twenty miles north-west of Sycamore Shoals. This, because there was already a road to that point. There was then a fort at the upper (or southern) end of that Island, and another about seven miles to the east; and though these were the out-posts of civilization then, we can understand that fairly good bridle-paths extended that far. Secondly, Boone and party started for Kentucky on this road-making mission March 10, which was a week in advance of the actual conclusion of Col. Henderson's treaty with the Cherokees, and proceeded to Boonesboro (to be), where they arrived about the first of April, about three weeks in advance of Col. Henderson and

party. Thirdly, Boone's party consisted of thirty men, of whom twenty-two were his own, and eight were of Capt. Twetty's company. Fourthly, the only implements these men had for "road-making" were *hatchets and tomahawks*. Possibly they had axes also. They had no plows, scrapers, or even hoes, much less any appliances for blasting. This at once suggests that what they did was, for the most part, to cut away some of the smaller limbs and undergrowth along trails or paths already in existence. Fifthly, the most laborious work they performed, and the only work worthy of being designated as original road-making, occurred between Rockcastle River (where they crossed it) and the Kentucky River. For twenty miles north of Rockcastle River they cut their way through a region covered with dead brush, which must have extended nearly to the Gap in Big Hill which bears Boone's own name. The remainder of the way to Kentucky River, a distance of about thirty miles, was through thick cane and reeds. Lastly, Col. Henderson, who followed Boone about three weeks after he started, took wagons as far as Martin's Cabins, twenty miles east of Cumberland Gap, which point he reached only with much difficulty. The rest of the journey to Boonesboro was made on horse-back, occupying fifteen days. On reaching Boonesboro he found the Indians had already attacked Boone's company twice, killing Captain Twetty and three other men, and wounding a fifth man.

This Trace, after passing Big Moccasin Gap followed the same trail Dr. Walker had gone in 1750, and which in after years came to be called the Wilderness Road. About four miles west of Powell's River, and two miles east of the site of the present town of Jonesville, this Trace came into the trail which the Long Hunters of 1769 had traveled on their way down Clinch and Powell's Rivers to Cumberland Gap and Kentucky. There are numberless places on the present wagon-road along the course of this old Trace which can be identified beyond question as having been trodden by Boone and party, and by Henderson and party, in March-April, 1775, and by thousands of immigrants to Kentucky. The author of this volume, after considerable effort, procured good photographs of Cumberland Gap, Wasioto Gap (Pineville), and a view of Boone's Trace on Cumberland River in Wasioto Gap, all of which have been reproduced in half-tone engravings for this work. They can be readily found in this volume by referring to the index.

The interest which the descendants of both the Woodses and McAfees naturally have in the Wilderness Road is largely the same as to Boone's Trace, since the two are one and the same from Big Moccasin Gap to the Hazel Patch, a distance of nearly one hundred and forty miles. At the Hazel Patch, a few miles south of Rockcastle River, the Wilderness Road diverged to the north-west, and Boone's Trace went on in a northerly direction. The Wilderness Road seems to have turned directly westward from the Hazel Patch and to have crossed Rockcastle River about the mouth of Skeggs's Creek, and then proceeded on towards Crab Orchard and the Ohio Falls. It was that way nearly all the older Woodses came in migrating to Kentucky in 1780-1795. That way went the McAfees, again and again, both going and returning, and just there at the Hazel Patch occurred one of the most impressive little incidents in the history of the McAfees. As Col. Henderson and his company were following Boone's wake on their way to Boonesboro, about three weeks behind him, he met here and there along the Trace, numbers of settlers hurriedly coming back on their way to their old homes in Virginia or the Carolinas. Most of them were leaving Kentucky in great alarm because of the bitter hostility of the savages. When Col. Henderson reached the Hazel Patch Sunday, April 16, at noon, he met a considerable company of men who had come from the Wilderness Road and were returning to Virginia. Among them were James McAfee, and his three brothers, George, Robert and William. (See Col. Henderson's Journal, as given by Collins, Vol. 2, page 499.) General R. B. McAfee, in his autobiography, says this meeting occurred "at the crossing of Skeggs's Creek (a branch of Rockcastle River"), but he must have meant to say it was "just after the crossing" of said creek, for it is almost certain that Boone's Trace did not cross Rockcastle at the mouth of Skeggs's Creek, which is two miles to the west of Hazel Patch, but nearly five to ten miles north or north-east of Hazel Patch. In this case, as Col. Henderson was going north by Boone's Trace, the two parties could not have met at all except at, or south of, Hazel Patch, where the two trails separated. The McAfees, of course, had come *via* Crab Orchard on the Wilderness Road. But, be that as it may, there is no sort of doubt that the McAfees and Col. Henderson met then and there on that Sabbath day, April 16,

1775, and that the Colonel, seeing that he was dealing with intelligent, serious men of the better class—men who were not leaving Kentucky in a panicky state of mind because of the savages, but simply because they had visited their lands on Salt River, put in their crops, and concluded all the business for which they had visited Kentucky, and were returning to their families in Virginia. Shrewd a man as Col. Henderson was, it probably did not take him but a few moments to see that these McAfees were the very kind of people it would be advisable to enlist in his venture at Boonesboro. So he invited them to listen to him while he unfolded to them his plans. He recounted to them the Treaty of Watauga, whereby he thought he had secured a sure title to about two-thirds of Kentucky, and pictured to them the advantages they would secure in going with him to Boonesboro and there casting in their lots with the Transylvania Colony. The shrewd Colonel's logic won the favorable attention of George, Robert and William McAfee, and they agreed to go with him. But James, who was the elder brother, and a man of about forty, shook his head, and declined the proposal. He told the Colonel, and his own brothers, that the Treaty of Watauga lacked the sanction of the Colony of Virginia, and hence could not be valid. His three younger brothers listened to Col. Henderson, but James refused to yield his judgment. The result was the three younger McAfees went on to Boonesboro with Col. Henderson, and James pursued his journey home without them. It took those three younger brothers only about two months to learn that the advice of their brother James was sound—Virginia and North Carolina repudiated the Treaty of Watauga, and the Transylvania Colony bubble suddenly burst, and the whole scheme proved a failure. That conference at the Hazel Patch that April day a century and a third ago has made Boone's Trace an object of interest to every McAfee for all time to come. What a scene that would have been for an artist to transfer to the canvas!

The route Boone's Trace followed, going north from Rockcastle River, led up Roundstone Creek, a considerable stream, which heads up in the Big Hill near Boone's Gap, and close to the present Madison County line. Here was the stretch of twenty miles which lay through "dead brush." From that gap on to the Kentucky River—about thirty miles distant—Boone's party had to use their hatchets almost constantly to clear a bridle-path through the rich cane. This looks as if there was no old trail up Roundstone. (See Speed's Wilderness Road, page 26.) The fifty miles from Rockcastle River to the Kentucky (at Boonesboro), as it seems to us, represented almost the whole of Boone's real road-making. (See Collins, Vol. 2, page 197.) He could have chosen to get onto Station Camp Creek, about twenty miles northeast of the place at which he crossed the Rockcastle, where he would have gotten into the old Indian trail, leading to the Kentucky River at the site of the present town of Irvine—the same trail Dr. Thomas Walker struck May 19, 1750—(see Johnston's First Explorations of Kentucky, Page 61)—but he evidently preferred to locate the proposed "Capital of Transylvania" right in the "Bluegrass," and so was willing to cut his own road, if need be, that last fifty miles. The picture of a "Typical Pioneer Fort," to be found in this work, is regarded as a fair reproduction of the one Boone constructed at Boonesboro in 1775.

That this so-called road which Boone marked out in 1775 was an exceedingly superficial sort of thoroughfare is apparent from the estimate which the Virginia Legislature seems to have had of it only a few years after it was constructed. Captain Speed says of it, in his Wilderness Road (page 29): "The road marked out was at best but a trace. No vehicle of any sort passed over it before it was made a wagon-road by action of the State Legislature in 1795." The action of Virginia, however, just referred to, reads as if Boone's Trace was not even a foot-path—almost as if it had never been heard of at all. In October, 1779, a little more than four years after Boone did his work for Henderson, we find the Virginia Legislature passing an act, entitled "An act for marking and opening a road over the Cumberland Mountain into the County of Kentucky." By said act Evan Shelby and Richard Callaway were appointed commissioners to explore the country adjacent to, and on both sides of, the Cumberland Mountains, and to trace out and mark the most convenient road from the settlements on the east side of said mountains over the same into the open country in the said county of Kentucky, and to cause such road, with all convenient dispatch, to be opened and cleared in such manner as to give passage to travellers with pack-horses, etc., etc. The act provided an armed guard of fifty men to be subject to the

call of the commissioners. If we could personify the three great pioneer roads of which we have been treating, and could think them capable of such undignified English, as is some of the handy slang of our day, we could readily imagine them as confronting the Virginia Road Commisssioners as they climbed the steep grade at Cumberland Gap on their mission to "trace out and mark a road such as would give passage for travellers with packhorses" with the rather vigorous inquiry: "We would be pleased to know, gentlemen, where *we* come in." They might even have ventured to remark: "We like your nerve." But certain it is, those commissioners obeyed the order of Virginia, and on December 1, 1781, they reported to the Legislature that they had completed their task, and asked for the compensation due them. (See Hening's Statutes at Large, Vol. X., page 143; and Summers' South-west Virginia, page 280.) There is certainly in these transactions a pretty clear indication that Boone's Trace and the Long Hunters' Road and the Wilderness Road, all combined, were regarded by the Virginia Legislature as almost equivalent to no road at all; as certainly not equal to "the passage of travellers with packhorses." But it is beyond all question that before the above mentioned act was carried into effect thousands of settlers, with women and children and cattle and household effects, had come into Kentucky by one or another of the three old roads we have been discussing. For instance, the McAfees and their associates, in the fall of 1779, travelled either the Long Hunters' Road or the Wilderness Road from New River through Cumberland Gap to Rockcastle River, and then by the Wilderness Road on to Salt River. The road was no doubt rough and steep in places—it is not all a smooth, dead-level highway to-day—but it was a practicable trail for "travellers with pack-horses." Let us hope it was a most delightfully pleasant thoroughfare when those Virginia Road commissioners of 1779-1781 got through with their task from the foot of Cumberland Mountain on the east to the level lands in the interior of the "County of Kentucky."

STATIONS OF BOONE'S TRACE.

	MILES.
From Sycamore Shoals to Long Island of Holston	25
From Long Island to Big Moccasin Gap	10
From Big Moccasin Gap to Junction of Three Roads	37
From Junction of Roads to Cumberland Gap	39
From Cumberland Gap to Flat Lick	22
From Flat Lick to the Hazel Patch	40
From Hazel Patch to Crossing of Rockcastle River	10
From Rockcastle River to Boone's Gap	20
From Boone's Gap to Boonesboro	30
Total	233

From Big Moccasin Gap to Hazel Patch this road coincides with the Wilderness Road. From the junction of the three roads in Powell's Valley to the Hazel Patch it coincides also with the Long Hunters' Path. It is separate and distinct from either only from the Watauga to Big Moccasin Gap, and from the Hazel Patch to Boonesboro.

APPENDIX C.

SOME ANCIENT DOCUMENTS OF SPECIAL INTEREST TO THE WOODSES.

We have repeatedly had occasion, in the preceding pages of this work, to make reference to certain old papers belonging to Mr. J. Watson Woods, of Mississippi, and some of them are believed to be of sufficient importance to warrant our quoting or summarizing them in such manner as to preserve for posterity their principal parts, in case the originals should be lost or destroyed. We have taken great care to make a perfectly reliable exhibit, believing that in coming years some of the descendants of the Woodses might find it extremely desirable to use this record in proving portions of the history of their ancestors. Mr. J. Watson Woods is a son of the late William Moffett Woods, who was born in 1808, and died in 1862; and the said William Moffett Woods was a son of Michael Woods, Third, of Nelson County, Virginia, who was born about 1746, and died in 1825; and the said Michael Woods, Third, was a son of Col. John Woods, who was born in 1712, and died in 1791, and who was the main executor of his father's estate; and the said Col. John Woods was a favorite son of Michael Woods of Blair Park, who died in 1762, and was the main executor of his father's estate. The old papers in question consist partly of those which came into Col. John Woods's hands from his father; partly of the receipts Col. John Woods took as executor of his father's estate; and partly of those which Michael Woods, Third, took as executor of the estate of his father. These papers have been handed down from Col. John Woods to his great-grandson, J. Watson Woods, in a direct line. The genuineness and authenticity of the documents can not be questioned. The external and internal evidence in their favor is complete. A few of them have been reproduced in fac-simile expressly for this work, that coming generations may see the exact chirography of their remoter forbears as well as the subject matter of the papers referred to.

DOCUMENT No. 1.

June 10, 1737—Deed of Charles Hudson to Michael Woods, of Blair Park.

Michael Woods settled in Goochland County (now Albemarle), Virginia, in 1734. He may have bought land there that year, but the earliest purchase we have record of was made of one Charles Hudson June 10, 1737. He paid Hudson "ninety pounds current money" for a tract of "two thousand acres lying and being in the county of Goochland on the branches of Ivy Creek and on the side of the River Rivanna." The deed contains all of the then customary pompous redundancies and repetitions; and it begins in these words: "This Indenture made this tenth day of June in the Tenth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland King Defender of the faith &c Anno Domini one Thonsand seven hundred and thirty seven Between Charles Hudson of the County of Hanover Gent: of the one Part and Michael Woods of the County of Goochland of the other Part Witnesseth," etc., etc. The deed is signed by Charles Hudson, and on the twentieth day of September, 1737, it was duly recorded at the Goochland Court House.

DOCUMENT No. 2.

July 30, 1743—Deed of Michael Woods to His Son, John Woods.

In 1743, Michael of Blair Park, being then fifty-nine years old, and having a large number of children grown to maturity, deeded tracts of land to several of them. The original conveyance made to his son John is the only one of the lot made that year which is in the bundle of papers in the writer's possession. It conveys to John Woods three hundred and fifty acres of the tract Michael had purchased of Hudson about six years before, the same being and lying on both sides of Mechum's River. The consideration mentioned is "thirty pounds Current Money of Virginia." This sum was mentioned, we doubt not, merely to indicate the value of the gift, and probably no money passed. The signature of Michael, which occurs three times in the deed, is as clear and jet-black after one hundred and sixty-two years as it was the day it was written; but it presents some rather peculiar features. The grantor spells his Christian name "Micheal," and also "Michcall"; and after

that name he writes a small "m," apparently as the initial of a middle name. This small "m," in each of the three cases, looks as if it were an afterthought, the space between the "Micheall" and "Woods" is, in each case, too cramped to admit of the "m" being written full size. In one case the space is so narrow that the "m" is written below the rest of the name, as will be seen in the facsimile of it to be found in Part I of this work. Then, in two cases, he writes his Christian name "Micheall," and once "Micheal." Such marked variations in the spelling of one's own name in a single document are quite unusual, and would almost indicate that the signer was in his dotage, though such could hardly have been the case. We can scarcely say with certainty what his exact name was. Four men witnessed each one of the three signings, to wit: Chas. Lynch, Archibald Woods, Robert McNeley and William Wallace. If the small "m" in all three of the signatures stood for a middle name, we have no idea what that name was. It occurs nowhere else in any paper or record we have seen.

DOCUMENT No. 3.

Nov. 15, 1764—Receipts of John Woods's Pastors.

The Rev. Samuel Black, a Presbyterian minister, gives John Woods a receipt in 1764 for his "promised stipend," which amounted to fifteen shillings per annum. Several such receipts were given in subsequent years. Mr. Black was the pastor of the church at Rockfish which John Woods attended part of the time, his own church being that at Mountain Plains, quite near his home, which he and his father and near kin had founded. Mr. Black calls him "Captain" John Woods in 1764 and 1765, but in 1767 it is "Major" John Woods, for in 1766 he had been commissioned Major of the Albemarle Militia by Gov. Fauquier. After 1770 he was called "Colonel" John Woods, as in that year he had been made Lieutenant Colonel. The pastor of Cove, Rockfish and Mountain Plains churches along about 1772-1782 was the Rev. William Irvin; and he also gives several receipts to "Col. John Woods," for twenty shillings each year, towards his "stipend." Both Mr. Black and Mr. Irvin invariably append to their names the mystic letters "V. D. M." (*Verbi Domini Ministerium*—Minister of the Word of God). Col. Woods was a Scotch-Irish Presbyterian, and he paid his pastors according to promise. There were unhappy dissensions in the churches named during both of the pastorates just referred to, and in each case the minister was bitterly opposed by some of his people, but it seems Col. Woods stood by the preachers in both instances by paying them their "stipends."

DOCUMENT No. 4.

May 13, 1762—Bill of Sale for a Slave.

Our Old Virginia ancestors were slave-holders, and this document shows that Col. John Woods, in May, 1762, purchased a boy about thirteen years old, named Allen, not from a Southerner, but from a citizen of that section of our country in which the traffic in negroes was most vigorously denounced—mainly after their slaves had been converted into good hard cash. The writing shows that the gentleman from whom he bought "Allen" was a certain John Kidd, of the city of Philadelphia, and the consideration paid was "Sixty-five pounds current money of the Province of Pennsylvania." The bill of sale was executed "at Coopers Ferry in the New Jerseys," and was witnessed to by Robert Anderson and William Dallas. The writing is perfectly clear and legible after one hundred and forty-three years, and it may serve to remind posterity of an institution whose departure we can all be glad of, whatever our views as to the ethical character of the means by which the South was forced to accept its abrogation.

DOCUMENTS 5-6-7.

Nov. 27, 1766—June 9, 1770—Dec. 10, 1770.

Colonial Commissions Issued to John Woods.

Prior to 1766 John Woods, son of Michael, of Blair Park, was called "Captain John Woods," and there is good reason for believing that he had earned that title by actual service in the French and Indian Wars (1754-1763), and that the experience he gained during that contest, together with his known high character, accounted for the honors conferred upon him by three of the Colonial governors of Virginia in giving him commissions in the militia. (a) The first was from "Francis Fauquier, Esqr., his Majesty's Lieutenant-Governor, and Commander in Chief of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia," appointing him "to be Major of the Militia of the County of Albemarle." This commission is dated at Williamsburg the twenty-seventh day of November, in the seventh

Rec.d of Mr. John Woods Ext.r Elevin
pounds Sixteen Shillings and
Sixpence farthing which was left
me by My Grand Father Michal
Woods Deceas.d which is my full
part of the Said Estate I Say
Rec.d pr. me July the tenth 1767
Will.m Wallace
Test
David Lewis Jr.
Mary Woods
Jas. Woods

RECEIPT TO JOHN WOODS, EXECUTOR.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 8.

Rec.d the Ballance of three
pound Sixteen Shilling and
five pence farthing which is
in full of all my Exspines
and trouble Concerning the
Estate of Michal Woods Deceas.d
July the 10th 1767 John Woods
Test
David Lewis Jr.
Michael Woods Jr.

RECEIPT OF JOHN WOODS, EXECUTOR.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 9.

July 10th 1767
Received of Majore John Woods Executor
three Pounds fourteen Shillins and
Eight Pence it being in full, my
Acount against him for Expence
Concerning ye Estate of Michael Wood
Deceas'd — I Say Recev'd by
me Hannah Wallace
David Lewis Jr.
Jas. Woods
Mary Woods

HANNAH WALLACE'S RECEIPT.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 10

year of his Majesty's Reign, *Annoque Domini*, 1766. Governor Fauquier's signature is quite distinct still. (b) The second Colonial commission he received made him Lieutenant Colonel of the Albemarle Militia—"whereof Thomas Jefferson, Esqr., is Lieutenant and Chief Commander." It is dated at Williamsburg the ninth day of June, and in the tenth year of his Majesty's Reign, *Annoque Domini* 1770. It has appended in large and distinct characters the simple name, "Botetourt," though the printed heading of the commission reads thus: "Norborne *Baron de* Botetourt, his Majesty's Lieutenant and Governour General of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia, and Vice Admiral of the same." (c) The third and last commission is dated December 10, 1770, and is signed by "William Nelson," who was then President of his Majesty's Council and Commander in Chief of the Colony and Dominion of Virginia. Like the other two it is given at Williamsburg. The position to which Col. Woods is hereby assigned is that of "Lieutenant Colonel of the Militia of the County of Albemarle, whereof Thomas Jefferson is Lieutenant and Chief Commander—the same position given him some months previously by Lord Botetourt. Col. Woods was fifty-eight years old when this commission was issued, but he lived twenty-one years after receiving it. When the Revolution began he was about sixty-four, and it is hardly likely he rendered service in the field during that great contest. His active years were given to the Colony and not the State of Virginia.

DOCUMENT No. 8—see page 481.

July 10, 1767—Receipt to John Woods, Executor.

The husband of Hannah Woods, daughter of Michael of Blair Park, was William Wallace, Sr., and this couple had a son, William Wallace, Jr. This son gave John Woods, executor, a receipt for his portion as the grandson of Michael Woods of Blair Park, July 10, 1767. See fac-simile of Document 8, page 481. The Mary Woods and James Woods, who sign as witnesses, were children of Col. John Woods. The signature of William Wallace, Sr., father of William Wallace, Jr., can be seen in the fac-simile of part of a deed Michael Woods made in 1743, which appears on next page.

DOCUMENT No. 9—see page 481.

July 10, 1767—Receipt of John Woods, Executor.

This paper is a receipt which Col. John Woods gave as a legatee of Michael of Blair Park to himself as executor in full of his expenses and trouble in winding up his father's estate. The same day he gave a like receipt for the legacies of his two daughters, Sarah and Anna Woods. His signatures to the two receipts, respectively, are almost identical, the peculiar form of the J. and the W. being found the same in both. The witnesses to both are the same, one being David Lewis, Jr., and the other his son, Michael Woods, Jr.

DOCUMENT No. 10—see page 481.

July 10, 1767—Hannah Wallace's Receipt.

This lady was a daughter of Michael Woods of Blair Park, and the wife of William Wallace. It seems she had rendered personal services or incurred expenses in connection with the settlement of her father's estate for which she received three pounds, fourteen shillings and eight pence. The James and Mary Woods who sign this receipt were, beyond all doubt, the children of Col. John Woods, of whom an account will be found in Part I of this volume.

DOCUMENT No. 11—see page 483.

July 15, 1767—William Woods's Receipt.

The eldest son (and second child) of Michael of Blair Park and Mary *nee* Campbell, was William. He gave two receipts to his brother John, executor of their father's estate, July 15, 1767; one, as shown in the accompanying fac-simile, for his legacy; and the other, for certain other claims. The latter is a quaint document, and runs thus:—"Then received of Brother John Woods the sum of twenty shillings in full of all debts, Dues and Demands from the beginning of the world till the day of date hereof. I say received by me all errors excepted." One of the witnesses in each of these receipts was James Woods, the son of his brother John.

DOCUMENT No. 12—see page 483.

Nov. 16, 1767—Receipt of Robert Poage.

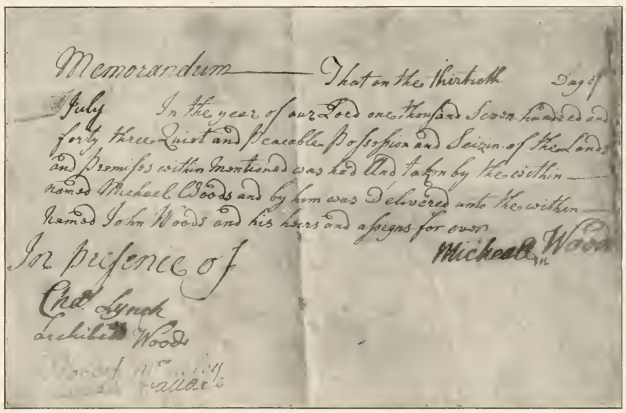
The wife of Robert Poage was Jean, *nee* Wallace, a daughter of William Wallace, by his wife Hannah, *nee* Woods, and a grand-daughter of old Michael of Blair Park. Attention is called to a deceased son of Archibald Woods. That son was probably alive when Michael's will was made in 1761, but died before Michael himself did; and as Michael had said in his will his "living" grandchildren should inherit under the will, it was a question whether that grandson had any claim.

July ye 15th 1767
than Rec^d of Mr. John Woods
one pound which was Left me
by my father michael woods
Deceas^d which is my full Share
of the S^d Estate I Say Rec^d
18 me Willm Woods
Test
Jno^s Anderson
Mary Woods

Receiv^d of may^r John Woods
Ex^r Eleven Pounds Sixteen
Shillings & Six Pence which
was Left my wife Jean by her
Grandfather michael Woods
Deceasd which is my full
Part of S^d Estate & if Arch^d
Woods son deceasd has a Right
to his Part I am to Restore
my Part of his Share Back
A gain I Say Rec^d by me
this 16th of Novemb^r
1767 Robert Poage
Test
James Woods
Mary Woods

WILLIAM WOODS'S RECEIPT.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 11.

RECEIPT OF ROBERT POAGE.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 12.



Memorandum — That on the thirtieth Day of
July In the year of our Lord one thousand Seven hundred and
forty three Quiet and Peacable Possession and Seizin of the Lands
and Premises within mentioned was had And taken by the within —
named Michael Woods and by him was Delivered unto the within —
named John Woods and his heirs and assigns for ever
Michael Woods
In presence of
Chas Lynch
Archibald Woods
[illegible]

PART OF DEED OF MICHAEL WOODS, OF BLAIR PARK, 1743.

DOCUMENT No. 13—see page 485.

July 2, 1768—Receipt of John Woods, of South Carolina, for a Brother and Sister.

This John Woods was, as seems almost certain, a son of Archibald Woods, the son of Michael of Blair Park. That he was a grandson of Michael is absolutely certain, as appears in a receipt which he gave John Woods, executor, on receiving the legacies of William Woods and Isabella Woods who, we know, were children of Archibald Woods, grandchildren of Michael, and citizens of South Carolina. The South Carolina John Woods is fully discussed in Part I of this work, in connection with his father, Archibald Woods. The records show that he lived in Granville County, South Carolina, and in July, 1768, he collected six legacies—five besides his own—for as many grandchildren of Michael of Blair Park.

DOCUMENT No. 14—see page 485.

July 18, 1768—Receipt of John Woods, of South Carolina, for Three Married Sisters.

The John Woods already referred to above gave receipts for three ladies whom we regard as his sisters, Mrs. Brazeal, Mrs. Cowan and Mrs. Trimble. It is deemed most probable that six of Archibald Woods's children were living in Carolina in 1768, and that the John Woods mentioned in this document came to Virginia to collect the six legacies, Archibald, his father, being still a citizen of Albemarle County, Virginia. The William Woods who is one of the witnesses to this receipt is old Michael's son, and the Susannah Woods who also witnessed to it was the widow of Col. John Woods.

DOCUMENT No. 15—see page 486.

July 2, 1768—Bond of Andrew Wallace, of Albemarle, and John Woods, of South Carolina.

The John Woods whose name is signed to the two last named documents, and whose home was, in 1768, in South Carolina, is a puzzle to all who study the lists of Michael Woods's children and grandchildren. This question is fully discussed in Part I in dealing with Archibald Woods, son of Michael. When he collected from his uncle John Woods the legacies coming to his brother William Woods and his sister Isabella Woods he was required to give the executor an indemnifying bond, and Andrew Wallace, a brother of William Wallace, husband of Margaret Woods, and ancestor of General Lew Wallace, recently deceased, joined John in this bond. The bond recites that said John Woods was then a citizen of Granville County, South Carolina, and that the William Woods and Isabella Woods whose legacies he had collected for them from his uncle John were children of Archibald Woods, and then (July, 1768) living in South Carolina. It is strange that six of Archibald Woods's children should have migrated to the low, swamp lands of the extreme southern sea-coast part of South Carolina, leaving their father in Albemarle. But we know that Archibald, a few years after this bond was executed, left Albemarle and settled on Catawba Creek, in what is now Roanoke County, and there spent the rest of his days; and we feel it not entirely improbable that his son John died soon after executing this bond; and that Archibald had a son borne to him in 1768 to whom this same name (John) was given. This bond was witnessed to by William Wallace and Michael Wallace, who, as we believe, were brothers, and the sons of William Wallace and Hannah, *nee* Woods. The concluding portion of this bond is herewith presented in fac-simile.

DOCUMENT No. 16—see page 486.

Nov. 26, 1793—Receipt of Susannah Woods.

Susannah was the youngest child of Col. John Woods. It is not unlikely that she wrote her name Susannah Woods for the last time when she signed this receipt, for she was married a day or two afterwards to Daniel Miller. She, a few years later, removed with her husband to Madison County, Kentucky, and there became the ancestress of a numerous posterity. She was a favorite child of her father. Her brothers, James and Michael, were the executors of her father's estate, though James migrated to Kentucky before the estate was settled up.

DOCUMENT No. 17—see page 486.

October 5, 1797—Receipt of Dan'l Miller.

This is the man who married Susannah Woods, as mentioned in connection with the preceding document. The William Woods who appears herein as one of the witnesses, was not William, the son of Michael, nor the son of that William ("Beaver Creek William Woods"), but probably William, the son of "Beaver Creek William," who came to be known in Albemarle as "Beaver Creek William, the Second." We reason herein almost entirely from the signatures to be found in the old papers we have been dealing with.

July ye 2nd 1768

Then Received of Maj^r John Woods Esqr twenty three pounds thirteen Shillings it being the full part of william woods & Isabella woods of their grandfather woodes Estate I Say Received per me

Michael Wallace
William Wallace
John Woods

N B and if Arch^d Woodes Son, deceased hath a Right to his part I am to Restore ~~it~~ my part of it back Again

RECEIPT OF JOHN WOODS, OF SOUTH CAROLINA, FOR A BROTHER AND SISTER.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 13.

July ye 18th 1768

Received of Maj^r John woods in Albemarle County in Virginia Executor the full Legacys of Willis Braze^al James Cowan and John Trimble which was Left to their wives by their grandfather Mich^l wood

I Say Received by Vertue of their Letters of Attorney per me

John woods

Willm Woods
Susannah Woods

RECEIPT OF JOHN WOODS, OF SOUTH CAROLINA, FOR THREE MARRIED SISTERS.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 14.

Given Under our hands and Seals this Second Day
Fully Anno Domn. one thousand seven Hundred and
Sixty Eight.—

Andrew Wallace

Sealed and Delivied
in the Presence of — John Woods

William Wallace

Michael Wallace

BOND OF ANDREW WALLACE OF ALBEMARLE AND JOHN WOODS OF SOUTH CAROLINA.
FAC-SIMILE OF PART OF DOCUMENT No. 15.

November ye 26 1793
Then Recd of James & Michael
Woods Executors one Negro
Boy Named Tom & one Garl
Named Morning & Seven pound
Cash Being ~~Being~~ My full
Part of the Negroes Left to me
By my father John Woods
Decd Recd hr me
Test

Susanna Woods

Wm Shelton

John Reid

RECEIPT OF SUSANNAH WOODS.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 16.

October 5th 1777
received of Michael Woods
thirty eight pounds Sixteen
Shillings Which he I am to
pay to James Woods
it being the balance of
money for John Reid left
him by John Woods Dec
Test

Dan. Miller

Jas Bell

William Woods

RECEIPT OF DANIEL MILLER.
FAC-SIMILE OF DOCUMENT No. 17.

INDEX.

PAGE

Abell, Dr. C. S. ... 274
Abell, Dr. Russell ... 274
Abell, Mary ... 274
Adams, Anna ... 118
Adams, Samuel ... 118-164
Adams, Thomas ... 57
Adams, William ... 118
Adamses, The ... 181
Adventurers, and Hunters ... 213
Aiken, Maria ... 355
Alamance, Battle of ... 115
Alderson, George ... 217
Alderson, Rev. John ... 180
Alderson, West Virginia ... 180
Alexander, Anita ... 204
Alexander, Betty ... 38
Alexander, Emma ... 275
Alexander, Fanny ... 275
Alexander, Gabriel ... 81
Alexander, James ... 275
Alexander, Jinger ... 275
Alexander, Major John ... 49
Alexander, Mildred ... 275
Alexander, Rev. Archibald ... 44
Alexander, Richard ... 275
Alexander, William ... 275
Allen, Ann ... 5
Allen, James ... 45
Allison, Jennie ... 137
Allison, Joseph ... 133
Anderson, Archer ... 273
Anderson, Jean Hamilton ... 273
Anderson, Rebekah ... 7
Anderson, Rev. James ... 99
Anderson, Susannah ... 99
Andrews, John ... 46
Appendices, The ... 423-486
Armagh County, Ireland ... 156
Armstrong, J. M. ... 276
Armstrong, J. M., Jr. ... 277
Armstrong, Joseph ... 276
Armstrong, Joseph Lapsley ... 277
Armstrong, Lotta H. ... 277
Armstrong, Martha A. ... 277
Armstrong, Priscilla ... 210-249
Armstrong, Richard T. ... 277
Armstrong, Robert ... 276
Armstrong, Rufus V. ... 277
Armstrong, William ... 190-196
Armstrong, William ... 276
Arnold, Major John ... 146
Arnoux, Anthony ... 308
Attack by Indians on McAfee's Station ... 187
Atcherson, Thomas ... 272
Augusta Academy, Va. ... 128
Aylett, Rebecca ... 130

B.

Bagnell, Anne ... 2
Bailey, Anna W. ... 249
Bailey, Margaret ... 275
Baker, Esther ... 5
Baker, James ... 320
Baker, Maria C. ... 124-320
Baker, Samuel ... 320
Balcony Falls, Va. ... 19-43-52-64
Baldridge, Susannah ... 136
Ball, Amanda ... 48
Ballard, Bland ... 47
Banks, Anita Moore ... 260
Banks, Clinton S. ... 260
Banks, Jennie Moore ... 260

PAGE

Banks, Laura Alice ... 260
Banks, Marvin R. ... 260
Banks, Mary Robert ... 260
Banks, William Rochester ... 260
Barclay, Hugh ... 106
Barclay, John W. ... 106
Barclay, Michael W., M. D. ... 106
Barclay, Mike ... 108
Barnett, Arthur ... 264
Barnett, Carl Price ... 264-266
Barnett, Robert McAfee ... 246, 264
Barnett, Susan J. ... 109
Barrett, Mrs. Elizabeth, of Ireland ... 3-141
Bates, Mary ... 108
Beard, Alice Woods ... 116
Behre, Daniel Henderson ... 413
Behre, Florence Gustavia ... 412
Behre, Frederick Gustavus ... 412
Behre, Gen. Christian ... 412
Behre, Joanna W. ... 413
Behre, Sallie Henderson ... 411
Behre, Susan Webb ... 413
Bell, Elizabeth ... 419
Bell, Henderson ... 45
Bell, John ... 419
Ben Hur ... 359
Ben Hur Beech ... 357
Bennett, Genevieve Davis ... 255
Bennett, Joel D. ... 204-255
Bennett, Joseph ... 256
Bennett, Mary McClung, nee McAfee ... 256
Benton, Hon. Thomas H. ... 51
Berry, Daniel, M. D. ... 307
Berry, Susan ... 120-307
Beverly, Manar ... 42-53
Big Black Mountains ... 173-207
Big Bone Lick ... 167
Birkhead, Alice, and Family ... 410
Birney, James G. ... 47
Black, Judge Gideon B. ... 85-86-147
Black, Rev. Samuel ... 22
Black, Thomas ... 86
Blackburn, Mrs. James ... 374
Blair Park, Va. ... 20
Bohon, George—married Anne Woods ... 89
Bond, Annie Boyle ... 397
Bond, William Franklin ... 397
Boone, Daniel—Estimates of his achievements ... 212
Boone, Letitia ... 410
Boonesboro, Ky. ... 179
Boone's Road, or Trace ... 177-473
Borden, Ben, Jr. ... 47-54-144
Borden, Ben, Sr. ... 42-54
Borden, Hannah ... 55
Borden, John ... 54
Borden, Joseph ... 54
Borden, Martha ... 47-54
Borden's Grant ... 42-53-54
Boston, Addie Woods ... 116
Bowyer, Col. John ... 55, 56-145
Boyce, Sarah Ann ... 60
Boyce, Susan Jane ... 60
Boyne, Battle of the ... 156
Brashear, Dennis ... 46
Brazeal, Mrs. Willis ... 114
Breckinridge, Rev. Dr. R. J. ... 51-161
Brevard, Albert ... 338
Brevard, Lizzie A. ... 338
Briscoe, William ... 7
Brison, Mary ... 123-320
Brison, Rebecca ... 123
Brown, Charles ... 88

PAGE

Brown, Charles Hamilton 263
Brown, Elizabeth 320
Brown, Elizabeth E. 136
Brown, Eugenia 282
Brown, Hattie L. 250
Brown, James McAfee 263
Brown, Joseph 263
Brown, J. Shannon 263
Brown, Lillie 354
Brown, Mary Ann 263
Brown, Mrs. Mandy 261
Brown, Professor W. G. 143-289
Brown, Robert McKarney 263
Brown, William 263
Bruce, Elizabeth Barbour 289
Bruce, Helm 288
Bruce, Hon. H. W. 289
Bruce, Helm, Jr. 289
Bruce, James White 289
Bruce, Louise Reid 289
Bruce, Mrs. Helm 144-288
Bryan, Mary 316
Buchanan, Alexander 201, 209
Buchanan, Alexander H. 239
Buchanan, Anna Maria 239-244
Buchanan, Annie 209
Buchanan, Caleb 245
Buchanan, Charles Allen 246
Buchanan, Claiborne 244
Buchanan, Dorcas 209
Buchanan, Floro Alma 386
Buchanan, George, the Pioneer 163-190-196-209-235
Buchanan, child of George, the Pioneer 209
Buchanan, George McAfee 239-242
Buchanan, George McAfee, Jr. 240
Buchanan, George Watkins 246
Buchanan, George William 245
Buchanan, Henry Rives 246
Buchanan, James, child of George and Margaret 190-209
Buchanan, James, child of James M. and America 239
Buchanan, James McAfee 246
Buchanan, James Milton 236
Buchanan, James S. 240
Buchanan Jane 209
Buchanan, John, who married Margaret Grant 204
Buchanan, John, child of George, the Pioneer 209-236
Buchanan, John W., child of J. M. and America 239-244
Buchanan, Lee 236
Buchanan, Lizzie 236
Buchanan, Margaret, child of George, the Pioneer 209
Buchanan, Mary, who married Peter Dunn 236
Buchanan, Mary Yoder 239-243
Buchanan, Mary Louise 386
Buchanan, Mary, child of George, the Pioneer 209
Buchanan, Mildred 244
Buchanan, Nancy McAfee, child of George, the Pioneer, 209
Buchanan, Nancy McAfee, child of J. M. 239-243
Buchanan, Nellie 386
Buchanan, Nora 236
Buchanan, Queen 239
Buchanan, Sarah E. 239
Buchanan, Thomas, child of J. M. and America 239
Buchanan, Thomas S., child of James and Rebecca 240
Buchanan, Victoria N. 240
Buchanan, Warren 244
Buchanan, William, child of Alexander and Nancy 245
Buchanan, William, child of J. M. and America 239
Buchanan, William, child of John 236
Buchanan, William Terry 246
Buchanan, Wood H. 236
Buckner, Hon. Richard A. 147
Buckner, Catherine 387
Buford, Charles S. 50
Buford, Col. Abraham 50
Buford, Mary 50
Buford, William S. 50
Bullitt, Captain Thomas 167-212-437
Bullitt, Hon. Thomas Walker 440
Burnham, Edmund H. 108
Burnham, Eugenia 108
Burkes, General Armory 141
Bush, Anne 47

PAGE

Buster, John 70
Butler's Kentucky (History of) 147
Butler, Mann 376
Butler, Mary Malvina 379
Butler, Richard 439-440
Burrows, Mary Jane 418
Burrows, Rev. Reuben, D. D. 419
Burton, Beulah 325
Butts, Mary 105

C.

Cabell, Elizabeth 49
Cabell, Nicholas (Colonel) 49
Caldwell, Abraham I. 48
Caldwells, The, in Virginia 42
Campbell, Given 120-307
Campbell, Given, Jr. 303
Campbell, James (Judge) 308
Campbell, John Poage (Doctor) 46
Campbell, Magdalen 31-92-96
Campbell, Susan E. 307
Campbell, Susan Woods 308
Campbell, Mary, of Ireland 9-23
Campbell, William 67-91-93-96
Campbell, William (Colonel) 51
Campbells, The, in Virginia 42
Canfield, Carrie Imogene 250
Canfield, Elizabeth 240
Caperton, Andrew 60
Caperton, Archibald 60
Caperton, Doctor A. C. 60
Caperton, Green 60
Caperton, Hugh 60
Caperton, Huldah 60
Caperton James W. (Colonel) 309
Caperton, John 60
Caperton, Katherine Phelps 313
Caperton, Mary James 313
Caperton, Mary P. 312
Caperton, Milton T. 60
Caperton, Sallie G. 60
Caperton, Susan 60
Caperton, Thomas Shelton 60
Caperton, William (Colonel) 59-309
Caperton, William H. 60
Caperton, William, Sr. 309
Cardwell, John R. 275
Cardwell, Mary 209-275
Carroll, Nora 325
Carrington, Hannah 49
Carson, John (Captain) 52
Carson, Samuel P. (Hon.) 52
Carthrac, Miss 47
Caruthers, Esther 105
Caruthers, Margaret 105
Castleman, Laura 389
Castle's Woods, Virginia 174
Casualties in Kentucky due to the Indians 189
Catapas (or Catawba) Creek, Virginia 159
Chandon, Gaston de 60
Chapline, Mary 338
Chauvin, Lise 244
Chenault, Elviree 366
Chenault, Mattie McDonald 403
Chenault, Susan 108
Chenault, William O. 403
Cherokee Indians 179-180
Chrisman, Betsy 45
Chrisman, Joseph, Jr. 52
Chrisman, Polly 46
Christian, Mary 51
Christian, William (Colonel) 180
Clack (Clok-Clock), Moses 375
Claiborne, Nathalie 244
Claiborne, Nathaniel C. (Colonel) 244
Clark, Agnes, who married James McAfee, Jr. 89, 194, 195
Clark, Bennett 256
Clark, Genevieve Bennett (See Preface) 201-204-255-257, 260
Clark, Genevieve B., child of Champ and Genevieve B. 259
Clark, Hon. Champ, M. C. 256-257
Clark, George Rogers (General) 186-211-271
Clark, James M. 336

PAGE

Clark, James W. 105
Clark, Martha W. 336
Clark, Susan B. 58
Clarke, Judge, of Alabama 47
Clay, Annette 47
Clay, Henry (Lt. Colonel) 47
Cleaver, Louise 328
Cleland, Charlotte 131
Cleland, Thomas, Rev. Dr. 193-368
Cleland, Thomas, Rev., of Missouri 42
Clinch River Valley 174
Clover Lick Creek, Harlan County, Ky. 173
Cloyd, David 121
Cloyd, Elizabeth 50
Cloyd, James 129
Clunendike, with the McAfees in 1781 187
Coates, Arthur Edward 360
Coat of Arms of one branch of the McAfees 152-155
Coat of Arms of one branch of the Woodses ..... xvi, 3
Cochran, George M. 52
Cochran, H. P. 32-34
Cochran, James 52
Cockrell, Martha Shannon 360
Cockrill, Benjamin F. 313
Cockrill, Susan 313
Coleman, William Oscar 243
Collins, Barhee J. (Colonel) 58-60
Collins, Thomas 7
Collins, History of Kentucky by 188-202-212
Cook, Lizzie 268
Cooper, Rachel 58
Cornett, Robert N. 451
Cornstalk, Chief of the Shawnees 171-175-439
Council of the McAfees and Col. Henderson, April, 1775 179
Coudert, Catharine 60
Coudert, Frederick R. 60
Cowan, James (Mrs.) 117
Cowan, John 70
Cox, Elizabeth Dillwyn 325
Craig, George E. 387
Craig, Margaret A. 387
Craig, Elijah 211
Craig, W. M. 60
Crawford, Alex. W. (Rev.) 387
Crawford, Adne Mitchell 387
Crawford, Irvine Craig 387
Crawford, Lawrence 387
Crawford, Margaret 387
Crawford, Robert Irvine 387
Crawford, Robert Taylor 387
Crawford, William H. 95
Crawford, William Harris 309
Creel, Eliza 392
Creel, Henry E. 404
Creel, Mary Miller 406
Creigh, Sabina L. S. 348
Crocket, Anna E. 277
Crocket, Anthony (Colonel) 146, 277
Crocket, Samuel 277
Crozet, Virginia 314
Crumpacker, Mary Ellen 337
Crumpacker, Richard 337
Cumberland, Duke of 154
Cumberland Gap 74-75
Cumberland Mountain, Rock Wall of 181-182
Cummings, Magdalen Campbell Wallace 31
Cunningham, Mary 275
Curry, Rebecca 210
Curry, Susan 202
Currys, The 181

D.

Dabney, Louisa Elizabeth 106
Daingerfield, Joseph F., M. D. 270
Daingerfield, Joseph F., Major 271
Daingerfield, LeRoy 271
Daingerfield, Miss Sallie 201-270
Daingerfield, William, Col. 271
Dalaney, Robert 277
Danville, Kentucky 46-183
Darnall, Elizabeth S. 360
Davenport, Sarah Harris 94
Davenport, William 94
Davenport, William 201
Davidson, George 57-62
Davidson, History of Presbyterianism in Ky., by 147
Davies, Samuel, Rev. 22
Daviess, Annie T. 210-273
Daviess, Hannah 273
Daviess, name properly spelt "Daviess" 273
Daviess, Jean Hamilton 274
Daviess, John Burton Thompson 274
Daviess, Joseph 274
Daviess, Joseph Hamilton, Colonel 273
Daviess, Maria Thompson 274
Daviess, Mortimer Hamilton 274
Daviess, Nannie 274
Daviess, Samuel, Captain or Judge 210
Daviess, Samuel, (Jr.) 274
Daviess, William (Major) 273
Daviess, William J. 274
Davis, John W. 236
Dawn of New Era for Kentucky 167
Dean, Susie T. 240
Dean, Grace L. 254
Dedman, Anderson 377
Dedman, Anna Daviess 379
Dedman, Bartolett S. 379
Dedman, "Birdie" (M. A.) 379
Dedman, Charles McBrayer 231-379
Dedman, Dixon, of Albemarle 374
Dedman, Dickson Gooch, M. D. 4-377
Dedman, Old Homestead of Dr. Dickson G. 378
Dedman, Eliza (Eloisa) 379
Dedman-Gooch Marriage Bond—Fac-simile 370
Dedman, Henry 379
Dedman, James Gustavus, Captain in the C. S. A. 379
Dedman, John 376
Dedman, Julia Anderson 379
Dedman, Lucy (or Lucinda) 377
Dedman, Martha 376
Dedman, Mary 377
Dedman, Nathan 368-372
Dedman, Richmond, who married Mary W. Woods 406
Dedman, Samuel, of Albemarle 27-371
Dedman, Sarah Everett 89-368
Dedman, Susanna 379
Dedman, William 379
Dedman, William, son of Gus and Josephine 379
Dedmans, The, in Virginia and Kentucky 371-375
Democratic Ideas, the Rise of, in Virginia, Due to the Scotch-Irish 10
Description of Kentucky in Pioneer Period, by Col. Durrett 194
Destitutions, Spiritual, of Kentucky, in 1783 189
Dickey, Julia Ann 275
Disaster to Boone in Powell's Valley, Oct. 1773 468
Dickinson, W. J. 466-470
Dissenters, Persecuted by English Bigots 1
District of Kentucky 78-190
Documents, Ancient, of Interest to Woodses 479-486
Dodd, John L. 131
Dodd, Joseph C. 131
Donegal Presbytery 22-99
Donegby, Susan, wife of N. D. Woods, Sr. 380
Doom's Station, Virginia 12
Doosing, William 116
Dorsey, Dr., of Fleming Co., Ky. 46
Drake, Elizabeth 360
Draper's Meadows, Virginia 19-77-161
Dreaming Creek, Ky. 59
Drennon's Lick, Ky. 167-217
Drowning Creek, Kentucky 107
Dubsith, Gaelic for McAfee 153
Du Bois (or Dubose) French form of Woods name 1
Duke of Argyle 9
Duke, Basil, M. D. 50
Duke, Lucy 50
Dulaney, Frances 58
Duncan, Blanch 244
Duncan, B. F. (Professor) 244
Duncan, Emily 315
Duncan, James B. 244
Duncan, Mary Eva 244

PAGE
Dunn, George ... 236
Dunn, John ... 237
Dunn, Nancy ... 236
Dunn, Peter R. ... 236-264
Dunn, Susan ... 236
Durrett, R. T., A. M., LL. D. ... 220-221
Durrett's (R. T.) Centenary of Kentucky ... 147-194-212
Dyzart, John, who married Martha Woods ... 85

E.

Edmunds, Edwin Short ... 270
Edmonds, John Thomas ... 271
Edmunds, Mec ... 270
Edmunds, Sallie, Mrs. ... 252-271
Edington, Sarah Jane ... 116
Elderslie, King George Co., Va. ... 4-142
Elkin, Anice ... 109
Ellis, Thomas S. ... 108
Ellison, Julia Grayson ... 314
Ellison, James Monroe ... 314
Ellison, John ... 315
Elston, Isaac C. ... 355
Elston, Susan Arnold ... 355
Embry, Allen, Rev. ... 108
Embry, John H. ... 108
Eno River, North Carolina ... 133
Eras of Kentucky History ... 169
Estill, Abigail ... 57
Estill, Eliza ... 309
Estill, Eliza H. ... 60
Estill, Elizabeth ... 60
Estill, Florence ... 60
Estill, James, the Pioneer ... 58-309
Estill, James M. ... 60
Estill, Josephine ... 60
Estill, Martha ... 60
Estill, Martha Woods ... 60
Estill, Maud ... 60
Estill, Rodes ... 60
Eulogy of Adam Wallace ... 9
Eustis, Mary Tyler ... 404
Eustis, Joseph Tracy ... 404
Eustis, William Tracy ... 404
Everett, John ... 374
Everett, John, Jr. ... 374
Everett, Nathan ... 374
Everett, Peter ... 374
Everett, Richmond ... 374
Everett, Sally ... 374
Everett, Samuel Dedman ... 374
Everett, Sarah ... 374
Eves, who married Sallie Wallace ... 360
Ewing, Mary ... 360
Ewing, Margaret ... 200
Ewing, Samuel, Sr. ... 204
Ewing, Samuel, Jr. ... 200
Ewing, William ... 204
Exploration and Settlement of Kentucky ... 167-212

F.

Fac-simile of J. M. Buchanan's Signature ... 242
Fac-simile of Mrs. J. M. Buchanan's Signature ... 242
Fac-simile of Dedman-Gooch Marriage Bond ... 370
Fac-similes of Eleven Ancient Documents ... 479
Fac-simile of McAfee Coat of Arms ... 152
Fac-simile of Wallace Chart ... 487
Fac-simile of Woods Coat of Arms ... xviii
Fac-simile of Will of Michael Woods, Jr. ... 65
Falling River Church, Virginia ... 49
Falling Spring Church, Virginia ... 67
Farwell, Lynn ... 325
Fauquier, Governor ... 98
Fauntelroy, Apphia ... 271
Faust, Cornelia J. ... 354
Ferguson, Edwin ... 269
Field Family, The Kentucky Branch of ... 298
Filson's Map of 1784 ... 185
Filson's Stations of Wilderness Road ... 112
Fiske, Prof. John, on the Settlement of Virginia ... 11-141-155
Fleming, Anna ... 316
Foote's Account of Woodses and Wallaces ... 4-15
Foote's Sketches of North Carolina ... 150
Foote's Sketches of Virginia ... 10-15-44-141-159
Forsyth, Andrew ... 204-268
Forsyth, Ben Travis ... 270
Forsyth, James Fulton ... 270
Forsyth, Mary Julia ... 270
Forsyth, William Stockwell ... 204-269
Forsythe, Anne E. ... 269
Forsythe, George McAfee ... 268
Forsythe, Joseph H. ... 269
Forsythe, M. L. ... 269
Forsythe, Mary J. Lee ... 269
Forsythe, Matthew ... 268
Forsythe, Robert B. ... 269
Forsythe, W. Etta ... 269
Fort Pitt ... 71
Fort, or Station, Pioneer, View of a Typical ... 184
Forwood, Lilly ... 316
Foster, Edward West ... 313
Foster, Ellen C. ... 313
Foster, Frances ... 120
Foster, R. C. ... 120
Foster, Robert C. ... 313
Foster, Robert Coleman, M. D. ... 313
Founding of Kentucky, Part of McAfees in the ... 215
Frankfort, Ky., Site of Visited by McAfees ... 205
Fraser, Charlotte M. ... 415
Fraser, R. Ludlow ... 415
Fremont, Gen. John C. ... 51
Frohman, Abraham ... 88
Frohman, Jacob ... 78-88
Fuller, Mildred ... 360
Fulton, Anna Maria ... 269
Fulton, John Milton ... 269

G.

Gachet, Capt. Charles ... 420
Gachet, Dr. Charles ... 421
Gachet, Tallulah ... 420
Gaines, Frank Pendleton ... 364
Gaines, Lucy Briscoe ... 360
Galey, Benjamin ... 88-93
Garland, James ... 102
Garland, Mary ... 102
Garnet, George ... 92
Garrison, Commodore ... 60
Garrison, Estill ... 60
Garrison, Minnie ... 60
Garrison, William, Jr. ... 60
Garrison, William R. ... 60
Garth, James ... 95
Germans Led to Settle in Virginia ... 10
Gilmore, Lucretia D. ... 320
Gilmore, Col. John ... 7
Gilmore, Capt. John ... 81
Given, Mary ... 308
Glasgow, Ann ... 360
Glaskow, Elizabeth ... 360
Glenn, Mourning ... 309
Goldsby, J. W. W. ... 289
Gooch, Sir William (Governor) ... 10-53-158
Gooch, William, and Children ... 375
Gooches, The, in Virginia and Kentucky ... 371-380
Good, John A. ... 338
Good, Sarah ... 338
Goodall, Mrs. Julia Grayson ... 61-62-145-314
Goodall, McChesney ... 315
Goodloe, David ... 108
Goodloe, David ... 316
Goodloe, Elizabeth ... 108
Goodloe, Elizabeth ... 315
Goodloe, Emma ... 316
Goodloe, George White ... 315
Goodloe, Harvey ... 315
Goodloe, Henry ... 316
Goodloe, John Duncan ... 304-315
Goodloe, Lucy ... 315
Goodloe, Margaret F. ... 315
Goodloe, Mourning Shelton ... 316
Goodloe, Paul Miller ... 315
Goodloe, William ... 60
Goodloe, William ... 315
Goodwin, Brower G. ... 254

PAGE.

Goodwin, Grover Cleveland 354
Goodwin, James Dennis 354
Goodwin, Mrs. James Dennis 138
Goodwin, Wesley 351
Gordon, Lucy 92
Gordon, William 81
Gough, Nellie 315
Grant (Gaunt), Margaret 204
Grant (Gaunt), Thomas 162-189-204
Granville County, South Carolina 112-113
Grave of Michael Woods of Blair Park 24
Grave of "Mother McAfee" 218
Graves of James and Agnes McAfee 199
Gray, David 97
Gray, Elizabeth C. O. 97
Gray, John Courts 97
Gray, Peyton 95
Gray, Sam Marshall 97
Gray, Theresa D. 97
Gray, Versailles 97
Gray, William 97
Grays and Woodses 149
Greathouse Family, The 238
Greathouse, Nancy 201
Greaver, Elizabeth 348
Green, Col. Thomas M. 41-51-55-144
Greene, Eliza 402
Greenlee, Grace, or Grizelle 57
Greenlee, Mrs. James (Mary) 41-42-143
Greenwood, Va. 4-5-12
Griffin, Bettie 269
Grimsley, William 379
Gross, Doctor, the Famous Surgeon 48
Guilford C. H., N. C. 7-71
Guthrie, Margaret D. 201-261-263
Guthrie, D. 360

H.

Haggin, J. B. 268
Haggin, Mrs. Lena 268
Hale, Dr. John P. 165, 216, 217, 231
Hall, John 129
Halliburton, Agnes 326
Halliburton, Eulalie 326
Halliburton, John M. 326
Halliburton, Margaret 326
Halliburton, Mary 326
Halliburton, Orlando 325
Halliburton, Orlando, Jr. 326
Halliburton, Walker 326
Hamilton, Ann 204
Hamilton, Jean 274
Hamilton, Leonora 274
Hamilton, Ninian 274
Hamilton, Robt. 274
Hamilton, Vess 272
Hamilton, William 274
Hankins, George 88
Hanks, Susan M. 397
Hann, Robert 108
Hanover Presbytery 22
Harbison, Agnes 379
Harbison, Albert 379
Harbison, Rev. J. B. 379
Hardin, Judge M. R. 315
Hardisty, Thomas 377
Hardrick, Fannie 275
Hardy, Charles B. 245
Hardy, Charles B., Jr. 245
Hardy, John B. 245
Hardy, J. Warren 245
Hardy, Oscar 245
Hardy, Wm. 106
Hare, Sarah Elizabeth 49
Hare, Dr. William Bordley 49
Harris, Mrs. Angeline B. 108
Harris, Benjamin 82
Harris, Elizabeth 103
Harris, Isabel 806
Harris, Frances 108
Harris, Francis Bond 305
Harris, James 104

PAGE

Harris, Jane Woods 305
Harris, John Woods 103, 104, 301
Harris, Martha Maupin 305
Harris, Martha Overton 306
Harris, Martha Ryland 104
Harris, Mary 60
Harris, Mary Elizabeth 306
Harris, Mary Frances 306
Harris, Mary Frances 104
Harris, Judge Overton 302
Harris, Overton 103
Harris, Overton Michael 104
Harris, Overton Thomas 306
Harris, Robert 309
Harris, Sarah Elizabeth 104
Harris, Sallie Tyre 306
Harris, Susan 306
Harris, Tabitha 108
Harris, Thomas Berry 306
Harris, Tyre 306
Harris, Tyre Crawford 306
Harris, Virgil McClure 305
Harris, William Anderson 104
Harris, Wm. B. 82
Harris, William Christopher 306
Harrison, Charles B. 343
Harrison, Jennie Clyde 343
Harrison, Margaretta Ross 274
Harrod, Capt. James 169-206
Harrodsburg, Ky. 78, 183, 187, 190
Harrodsburg Presbyterian Church 191
Hart, David P. 349
Hart, Nathaniel 349
Harvey, Maria Hawkins 47
Harvey, Matthew 55
Harvey, Robt. 55
Hatfield, Mary Woods 116
Haupt, Anna 47
Haw River, N. C. 133
Hawkins, Ben 47-55
Hawkins, Magdalena 55
Hawkins, Martha 48
Hawkins, Miss, Daughter of Ben and Martha 55
Hayden's Virginia Genealogies 142
Hazel Patch, Meeting at, of the McAfees and Hendersons in 1775 179
Head, Elizabeth 402
Head, Rev. Jesse 402
Henderson, Alexander 7
Henderson, Col. Campbell G. 414
Henderson, Caroline W. 412
Henderson, Charlotte M. 415
Henderson, Daniel S. 414
Henderson, Hon. Daniel S., Jr. 415
Henderson, Dorcas 59
Henderson, Edward P. 415
Henderson, Franklin E. 415
Henderson, Col. Richard 169-179
Henderson, Sarah Webb 415
Henderson, Sophie 415
Henninger, Charity E. 342-343
Henninger, Christopher G. 343
Henninger, Conrad 342-343
Henninger, Henry 342
Henninger, Henry Harrison 343
Henninger, Jacob 342
Henninger, Jane (Hines) 343
Henninger, John 342-343
Henninger, Katharine 343
Henninger, Mary (Dougherty) 343
Henninger, Samuel 343
Henninger, William 343
Henry, Gov. Patrick 59-86
Henton, William 108
Herron, John 84
Hibler, Mrs. 105
Hickman, Catharine 50
Hickman, John L. 50
Hickman, Josephine 379
High Bridge Church, Va. 67
Hillsboro, N. C. 133-150
Hindman, Lucy H. 250

PAGE
Hindman, Rev. John 21-99
History of Kentucky, True Place of McAfees in 211-215
Hocker, Mary Jane 108
Hoden, Leo 108
Hoge, Nellie 297
Hoge, Rev. James 122
Holman, Richard 89
Holmes, John 86
Holmes, Margaret 85
Houser, Anna Sophia 394
Houser, Anthony 394
Houser, John 394
Houston, Matthew 120
Houston, Matthew Hale 121
Hudson, Sallie 336
Huffman, Eliza Woods 116
Hughes, Laura 239
Hume, Stanton 108
Hume, Thomas R. 109
Humphreys, Capt. John 95
Hunters' Path 181-459
Hurricane Gap, Ky. 173
Hycotee River 133

I.

Ian's Costumes of Clans 216
Indian Attack on Boone's Company 468
Indians Attack McAfee's Fort May, 1781 187
Indian Camp Farm 89-111-159
Indian Depredations in Kentucky, 1794 189
Indian Rock, Va. 64
Irvine, Abraham 204
Irvine, Abram 47
Irvine, Anna 47
Irvine, Anna 297
Irvine, Major David C. 49
Irvine, Ky. 173
Irvine, Margaret 41
Irvine, Mary E. 269
Irvine, Sarah 47
Irvine, Rev. William 103
Ivy Depot, Va. 6, 94

J.

Jackson, John 402
Jackson, Mary Ann 401
Jackson, Thomas 402
Jackson, Thomas Cleland 402
Jackson, Thomas C., Jr. 402
Jacob, Col. Richard T. 51
James, John 360
James, Thomas R. 362
James River 64, 89, 181
Janny, Mary 393
Jarman, Mary 62
Jarman, Thomas 62
Jarman, William 62
Jarman's Gap (formerly Woods's Gap) 12
Jefferson, Thomas 94
Jenkins, Margaret Jane 288
Jennings, Ann 91
Jennings Creek 64
Jennings, Jonathan 91
Johnson, Benjamin F. 274
Johnson, Dr. James 48
Johnson, Samuel D. 274
Johnson, William McAfee 275
Johnston, Judge David E. 471
Johnston, Col. J. Stoddard 214, 224
Johnston, Col. Richard M. 209
Jones, Dana 60
Jones, Eleanor 355
Jones, Elizabeth Everett 385
Jones, James M. 92, 385
Jones, John Paul 6, 355
Jones, John S. 92
Jones, La Grand 83
Jones, Mildred 62, 314
Jones, Nancy 62
Jones, Sarah Ellen 62
Jones, Thompson 211
Jones, Capt. William R. 62

PAGE
Jouett, John 73
Journals of James and Robert McAfee, 1773 425-453
Joyes, Judge John 277
Joyes, Stella 277

K.

Kavenaugh, Anna 57
Kavenaugh, Joel 57
Kavenaugh, John M. 60
Kavenaugh, William 63
Kay, Elizabeth 307
Kay, Elizabeth A. 120
Kay, Reuben 120
Keene, Mary 108
Keene, Oliver 46
Keeth, Julian C. 282
Keith, Mary Randolph 50
Kelley, Abner O. 360
Kelly, Isaac 121
Kelties, Highland Clans and Regiments 216
Kentucky 164, 165, 188, 194
Kentucky Court of Appeals 49
Kentucky, Founders of 215
Kentucky History, Place of McAfees in 211, 215
Kentucky Land Law 59
Kentucky River, Course of McAfees on 173-214
Kentucky River at Mouth 167
Kentucky River at Mouth of Drennon's Creek 178
Kentucky River, Three Forks of 78
Kevil, Mattie 348
King, Thomas 210
King's Mountain 52
Kinnard, Mary P. 352
Kirk, Capt. Robert 52
Kirkwood, Mrs. Jessie 414

L.

Lambert, Charles 67, 97
Lambert, Gen. 68
Lampkin, Tallulah 420
Lancaster, Pa. 15, 158
Land Laws of Virginia, in Kentucky 148, 149
Land Office at Frankfort 73, 78
Landrum, Gen. W. J. 131
Lang, Shelburn 420
Lang, Susan 419
Langsford, Mrs. N. B. 105
Lapsley, David Nelson 121, 288
Lapsley, Isabel 282
Lapsley, James 129, 132
Lapsley, James 282
Lapsley, James Woods 278, 282
Lapsley, Jean 129
Lapsley, John 129
Lapsley, John A. 130
Lapsley, Col. John P. 284, 286
Lapsley, Joseph 7-27, 37, 82, 126-132
Lapsley, Joseph, Jr. 129
Lapsley, Joseph B. 130
Lapsley, Judge J. W. 120, 126
Lapsley, Dr. J. Y. 282, 288
Lapsley, Mary 129
Lapsley, Mary Alberti 282
Lapsley, Mary C. 131
Lapsley, Mary Elizabeth 288
Lapsley, Norvell 282
Lapsley, Priscilla Catherine 130
Lapsley, Robert Armstrong 131
Lapsley, Robert Alberti 282
Lapsley, Dr. Robert McKee 131
Lapsley, Rutherford 282
Lapsley, Dr. R. M. 288
Lapsley, Samuel Norvell 282
Lapsley, Sarah 31
Lapsley, Dr. William J. 284
Lapsley, Zaidee 282
Larned's English in America 150
Laughery, Capt. 74
Leatherwood Creek, Ky. 173
Lee, Willis A. 211
Leftwich, Mildred 337
Le Grand, Lucy 45

PAGE

Leonard, Leila 344
Letcher, Hon. Robert P. 147
Lewis, Gen. Andrew 175
Lewis, George W. 116
Lewis, John 11, 42, 53
Lexington, Va. 54, 57
Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation 256
Lipscomb, Thomas C. 260
Lisle, Sarah Catherine 390
Lisle, ——— ——— 45
Little River, N. C. 133
Little River Presbyterian Church, N. C. 134
Livingston County, Ky. 94
Locke, Martha Jones 419
Loftus, Sir Adam and Jane Vaughn 2
Loftus, Adam and Jane Purden 2
Loftus, Sir Dudley and Annie Bagnell 2
Loftus, Rev. Edward 2
Loftus, Letitia and Richard Parsons 2
Logan, Elizabeth J. Lee 390
London Medico-Chirurgical Review 48
Long Hunter's Road 459
Lord, Eliza Selden 47
Lowery, Mrs., married William McAfee 210
Luke, Jane 50
Lupton, Alice May 393
Lupton, Thomas Neill 393
Lusk, Jane Kavenaugh 294
Lyell, ——— ——— 45
Lyle, Capt. John 45
Lyle, Mary Paxton 45
Lyles, The, in Virginia 42, 45
Lyon, Joseph 190

M.

McAden, Rev. Hugh 55, 127, 133
McAfee, Agnes, nee Clark 194-199
McAfee, America 201
McAfee, Anna Helen 250
McAfee, Anna Ruth 250
McAfee, Anne, child of William and Rebecca 211
McAfee, Annie 277
McAfee, Annie, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, Blanch, child of William L. and Cornelia 272
McAfee Brothers meeting with Col. Henderson 179
McAfee, Captain Samuel 12
McAfee, Cornelia Lawson 204
McAfee, Catherine Agnes 250
McAfee, Clarke William, child of Thomas C. and Martha 268
McAfee, Cleland Boyd 250
McAfee Colony, The, Removal to Kentucky in 1779 175
McAfee Company, The 163
McAfee, Cora 272
McAfee, Cornelia 268
McAfee, Dwight A. 275
McAfee, Edwin 262-268
McAfee, Elizabeth, child of R. L. and Jane 204
McAfee, Elizabeth, child of James and Agnes 201
McAfee, Elizabeth R., child of T. C. and Nancy 201
McAfee, Emile Wadsworth 254
McAfee, Esther Lucille 250
McAfee, General Robert B. 47-90-156-180-193-196-207-216
McAfee, George, child of Col. George and Ann 204
McAfee, George, Jr., child of George, Sr., and Susan 204
McAfee, George, M. D. 269
McAfee, George, child of James and Agnes 201
McAfee, George, child of James and Nancy 268
McAfee, George, child of James, Sr..162-190-193-202-203-259-276
McAfee, George G., child of T. Clark and Nancy 201
McAfee, Grace Deane 254
McAfee, Hannah, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, Hannah, who married Judge Daviess 273
McAfee, Harriet Lanier 277
McAfee, Helen Bailey 253
McAfee, Helma Louise 250
McAfee, Howard Bailey 250
McAfee, Hugh Bailey 250
McAfee, Isaac, child of T. Clark and Nancy 201
McAfee, James Alexander 277
McAfee, James Ben Ali Haggin 268
McAfee, James—"Big Jim." 203-204-260
McAfee, James, Jr. 86-89-154-162-180-183-187-190-193-195

PAGE

McAfee, James Philip 204-264-268
McAfee, James, Sr. 156-157-159-161-162
McAfee, James, child of James, Jr., and Agnes 201
McAfee, Jane, child of L. L. and Jane 204
McAfee, Jane, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, Joseph Ernest 250
McAfee, Joseph, child of John and Elizabeth 247-248-251
McAfee, John Armstrong 250
McAfee, John Clark 247-251
McAfee, John B. 268
McAfee, John, Jr., of Ireland 155-156
McAfee, John, child of John, Jr. 156
McAfee, John, Sr., of Scotland 154-156
McAfee, John, child of Col. George and Anne 204-269
McAfee, John, child of James and Agnes 200
McAfee, John, child of James, Sr. 161-162-202
McAfee, John, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, John, child of George, Sr., and Susan 203
McAfee, J. J., of McAfee, Ky. 210
McAfee, Kenneth Bailey 250
McAfee Knob, Virginia 159-160
McAfee, The Village of 214
McAfee, Lapsley Armstrong 250
McAfee, Lapsley Ray 250
McAfee, Laura, child of R. L. and Jane 204
McAfee, Laura 268
McAfee, Leal 277
McAfee, Lewis Carroll 268
McAfee, Lou Marie 250
McAfee, Lowell Mason 250
McAfee, Malcolm, head of McAfee Clan 153
McAfee, Malcolm, who died at sea 157-202
McAfee, Malcolm, child of John, Jr. 156
McAfee, Margaret, child of Col. George and Anne..... 204-269
McAfee, Margaret, child of George, Sr., and Susan..... 204
McAfee, Margaret, child of James, Jr., and Agnes 201
McAfee, Margaret, child of James, Sr. 163-209
McAfee, Margaret, child of William and Rebecca 211
McAfee, Mary B., child of Col. George and Anne 269
McAfee, Mary E., child of T. C. and Nancy 201
McAfee, Mary McClung, child of Col. George and Anne. 204
McAfee, Mary Rochester, child of R. L. and Jane 260
McAfee, Mary, child of George, Sr., and Susan 204-276
McAfee, Mary, child of James, Sr. 163-204
McAfee, Mary, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, Mary, child of William L. and Cornelia 272
McAfee, Mary, child of William and Rebecca 211
McAfee, Mary, child of James, Jr., and Agnes 86-181
McAfee, Mary, who married Banks 268
McAfee, Mary, who married Hon. T. P. Moore 273
McAfee, M. E., who married Geo. M. Forsythe 268
McAfee, Mrs. James, Sr., her grave 162-189-218
McAfee, Mrs. William L. 272
McAfee, Nancy, child of James, Jr., and Agnes 201
McAfee, Nancy Clark, child of T. C. and Nancy 201
McAfee, Narcissa W., child of Col. George and Anne...204-268
McAfee, Paul Hindman 250
McAfee, Philip, child of James and Nancy 268
McAfee, Priscilla, who married McDowell 47
McAfee, Ralph Canfield 250
McAfee, Rev. Dr. John A. 249
McAfee, Rev. Dr. Samuel L. 253
McAfee, Robert Livingstone 203-268
McAfee, Robert W. 251-254
McAfee, Robert W., Jr. 254
McAfee, Robert, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAfee, Robert, child of James, Sr...163-186-187-190-193-205-207
McAfee, Ruth Myrtle 250
McAfee, Ruth Winchell 254
McAfee, Samuel, child of James, Sr. 163-166-180-187-190-193-209
..... 246
McAfee, Samuel, child of John and Elizabeth 247, 251
McAfee, Samuel, Jr., child of Samuel, Sr., and Hannah. 210
McAfee, Sarah Jane, child of T. C. and Nancy 201
McAfee Stone House of 1790 ..... 194, 197, 198
McAfee, Susan, child of George, Sr., and Susan 203
McAfee Family, The—Their true place in Kentucky History 211-215
McAfee, Thomas Clark, child of James, Jr., and Agnes. 201, 271
McAfee, Thomas Cleland, child of Thomas Clark and Nancy 201, 268
McAfee, Wallace Taylor 250

PAGE
McAfee, William A. 277
McAfee, William H., child of Col. George and Anne....204, 269
McAfee, William Lewis, child of T. C. and Nancy 201, 272
McAfee, William, child of James, Sr.....163, 166, 186, 193, 210
McAfee, William, child of John, Jr. 156
McAfee, William, child of Samuel and Hannah 210
McAden, Rev. Hugh 55 127, 133
McAlpine, Sarah 45
McAnulty, David W. 350
McAnulty, Joseph S. 350
McAnulty, Robert A. 350
McBrayer, Mrs. Mary Lea 379
McBride, Albina 290
McBride, Judge Ebenezer 293
McBride, Albina, portrait 292
McCarney, Margaret 210
McCauslands, The, in Virginia 42
McClung, Mary 45, 50
McClungs, The, in Virginia 42
McClung, Mary 45-50
McCormick, Hannah 210
McCown, James, Sr. 186, 190 196
McCown, James, Sr. 187
McCown, James, Jr. 164, 190
McCown, John 165, 179
McCown, Joseph 186
McCown, Phoebe Ann 245
McCoy, Pitt Y. 297
McCue, Rev. John 52
McCue, Sarah Allen 52
McCues, The, in Virginia 42
McCullough, Mary W. 122
McCutcheon, Mary J. 269
McDonald, Adam 264
McDonalds, of Islay 154
McDowell, Abram Irvine 47
McDowell, Alexander K. M. 47
McDowell, Alex. K. M. 295
McDowell, Anna, married Caldwell 48
McDowell, Betsey 45
McDowell, Betsey, child of John and Lucy 45
McDowell, Betty, married Dr. Welch 47
McDowell, Caleb Wallace 48
McDowell, Caleb W., son of Samuel and Mary 49
McDowell, Celia 52
McDowell, Gen. Charles 51
McDowell, Charles, son of John and Lucy 45
McDowell, Clarissa 52
McDowell, Edward Irvine 47
McDowell, Elizabeth 49
McDowell, Elizabeth, daughter of James and Elizabeth.. 50
McDowell, Elizabeth, married Hon. Thomas H. Benton. 51
McDowell, Ephraim, of Ireland 41-42
McDowell, Ephraim, world famous surgeon 47, 48, 49
McDowell, Ephraim, M. D., nephew of the famous physician 46
McDowell, Henry Clay 47
McDowell, Rev. Hervey 294
McDowell, Maj. Hervey 46
McDowell, Hetty 46
McDowell, Hugh Harvey 52
McDowell, Isabella 46
McDowell, Gov. James 9
McDowell, James, son of Ephraim and Margaret 42
McDowell, James, who married Susan Shelby 45
McDowell, James, child of John and Magdalen 50
McDowell, Col. James 45, 46
McDowell, James, son of James and Elizabeth 50
McDowell, James, son of Col. James and Sarah 51
McDowell, Col. James, of Yancey County 52
McDowell, James 78, 81
McDowell, Col. Joe, of North Carolina 49
McDowell, John, first husband of Magdalin Woods, 15, 19, 40, 42, 43, 53
McDowell, John, son of Samuel and Mary 45
McDowell, John, married Sarah McAlpine 45
McDowell, John, of Rutherford county 52
McDowell, John Adair 47
McDowell, John Lyle 46, 295
McDowell, (Hunting) John 51
McDowell, Col. Joseph 47

PAGE
McDowell, Joseph, Sr. 51
McDowell, Joseph 47
McDowell, Joseph J. 52
McDowell, Joseph Nashe 45
McDowell, Juliet 46
McDowell, Louise Irvine 294
McDowell, Lucy 45
McDowell, Magdelen, married Caleb Wallace 48
McDowell, Magdalen, married Andrew Reid 49
McDowell, Margaret 52
McDowell, Margaret Irvine 48
McDowell, Margaretta 42
McDowell, Martha 50
McDowell, Mary, married Thomas H. Sheldon 45
McDowell, Mary 47
McDowell, Mary, married Judge Clarke 47
McDowell, Mary, married Mr. Young 49
McDowell, Mary, child of Samuel and Mary 50
McDowell, Mary E., daughter of Ephraim and Margaret. 42
McDowell, Mrs. Mary Moffett 52
McDowell, Sallie 45, 46, 47
McDowell, Samuel 32
McDowell, Samuel, married Mary McClung 44, 50
McDowell, Samuel, married Betsey Christman 45
McDowell, Samuel, son of James and Mary P. 46
McDowell, Samuel, of Mercer county 47
McDowell, Samuel, son of Col. Joseph 48
McDowell, Sarah, married John McDowell 45
McDowell, Sarah, married Michael Sullivant 48
McDowell, Sarah, married Judge Caleb Wallace 49
McDowell, Sarah, daughter of James and Elizabeth ... 50
McDowell, Sarah, daughter of John and Magdalin.... 51
McDowell, Sarah 52
McDowell, Sarah Shelby 47
McDowell, Susan 51
McDowell, Judge William 46, 47
McDowell, William Adair 47
McDowell, William Preston 47
McElroys, The, in Virginia 42
McGary, Col. Hugh 187
McGavock, David 50
McGee, John 190, 206
McKamey, James I., portrait, first view 261
McKamey, James I., portrait, second view 265
McKamey, James I. 263, 264
McKamey, John 201
McKamey, Nancy 203
McKamey, Robert 204
McKee, James 131
McKee, Joseph 328
McKee, Margaret 328
McKee, Margaret 274
McKee, Mary Charlotte 131
McKee, Mary (Polly) Wear 130
McKee, Mary 328
McKee, Robert A. 328
McKee, Samuel 78, 81
McKee, Samuel 328
McKee, Thomas 328
McKee, William 130
McKnine, Zilpha E. 138
McLarty, Annie E. 350
McLarty, Lillie 350
McLarty, Willie 350
McLaryo, Miss. 86
McLaughlin, Judge Wm. 32
McLure, Ann Mary 104
McMichael, Jane 156, 161
McNair, J. 360
McPheeters, Wm. 45
McPheeters, The, in Virginia 42
McRoberts, Thomas 108
Macfarlane, Charles Roy 301
Mcfarlane, George B. 300
Macfarlane, Mrs. George B. 104, 106, 299
Macfarlane, George Locke 301
Macfarlane, Wm. L. 301
Macgowan, Basil Finis 418
Macgowan, Birkhead 417
Macgowan, Carrick Bell 418

PAGE
Macgowan, David 419
Macgowan, David Bell 417
Macgowan, Ebenezer 418
Macgowan, Mrs. Emma B. 417
Macgowan, Evander L. 418
Macgowan, Everett 417
Macgowan, John 418
Macgowan, Mary Locke 417
Macgowan, Thomas 418
Madison County, Ky. 58, 59
Madison, Gabriel 73
Madison, John, brother of President Madison 46
Madison, Margaretta 46
Magoffin, Beriah 210
Magoffin, Gov. Beriah 273
Magoffin, Beriah III. 273
Magoffin, Ebenezer 273
Magoffin, Gertrude 273
Magoffin, Sue 273
Malone, Johnson 377
Map of Albemarle County, Va. ..... at end of book
Map of Central Kentucky ..... at end of book
Map of Kentucky at site of Irvine ..... at end of book
Map of Mercer County, Ky. ..... at end of book
Map of Parting of the Ways, New River, Va. ..... at end of book
Map of S. W. Virginia and S. E. Kentucky ..... at end of book
Map of Three Pioneer Roads ..... at end of book
Marble, Mrs. Mary A. 349, 95
Marriage Bond of Nathan Dedman and Elizabeth Gooch. 370
Marshall, Alexander Keith 50
Marshall, who married Burch Woods 92
Marshall, Charles Thomas 50
Marshall, Charlotte 50
Marshall, Humphrey 175, 205
Marshall, James K. 50
Marshall, Jane 50
Marshall, Jennie M. 201
Marshall, John 50
Marshall, Lucy 50
Marshall, Maria 50
Marshall, Mary McAfee 260
Marshall, Neal B. 260
Marshall, Capt. Thomas 50
Martin, George 82
Martin, Margaretta H. 274
Martin, Wm. H. 274
Mason, Alfred D. 325
Mason, Mrs. Alfred D. 120, 324
Mason, Alfred D., Jr. 324, 325
Massie, Esther 106
Massie, James W. 106
Massie, Mary 106
Massie, Nathan 106
Massie, Nathaniel H. 106
Matthews, John 338, 52
Matthews, Leonora 338
May, Charlotte 276
Mebane, Ann Loney 135
Mercer County, Ky., in 1787 46
Merriwether, Francis 73
Methodist Cemetery, Lexington, Va. 96
Miles, Richard 95
Milford, Ky. 59
Miller, Appeline 60
Miller, Christopher I. 108
Miller, Daniel 102, 107, 150
Miller, Elizabeth 108
Miller, Garland 60
Miller, Hannah 52
Miller, James 108, 52
Miller, John, of Augusta 161
Miller, Gen. John 104
Miller, John, and his ten children 108
Miller, John M. 60
Miller, Malinda 108
Miller, Mamie Patterson 402
Miller, Margaret 108
Miller, Polly 107
Miller, Robert 107
Miller, Susan 106
Miller, Susannan 108
Miller, Thomas H. 60

PAGE
Miller Thomas W. 108
Miller, Judge Wm. C. 402
Miller, W. H. 101, 107, 150
Minter, Jeremiah 47
Mitchell, Ariadne B. 385
Mitchell, Basil B. 385
Mitchell, James 42
Mitchell, Louisa 42
Mitchell, Thomas 42
Mitchell, Virginia W. 385
Moffett, Elizabeth 52
Moffett, Col. George 51
Moffett, George, Jr. 52
Moffett, James 52
Moffett, Capt. John 51
Moffett, Magdalin 52
Moffett, Margaret 49
Moffett, Margaretta 51
Moffett, Martha 52
Monk, Rebecca W. 354
Montgomery County, Va. 71
Montgomery, Elizabeth 155
Montgomery, Eliza A. M. 283
Montgomery, Col. James 283
Montgomery, Rev. Dr. John 368
Montgomery, Joseph 82
Montgomery Presbytery, The Woods Legacy to 118
Moon, J. Bailey 106
Moore, Hannah Ellen 274
Moore, James J. 274
Moore, Jane M. R. 204
Moore, Jane Rochester 268
Moore, Hon. Laban 374
Moore, Lawson 268
Moore, Mrs. Mary Eliza 385
Moore, Mary Lock 274
Moore, Thomas 96
Moore, Hon. T. P. 147, 210, 275
Morgan, C. America 90
Morris, Matilda M. 347
Morrow, Florrie 282
Mosby, Nancy 92
Mount Zion Church, Kentucky 108
Mountain Plains 29, 57, 140
Mountain Plains Church 20, 98
Moyes, Wm. P. 269
Mud Meeting House 204
Mulberry Hill, Homestead of Andrew Reid 49
Mullins, Col., married Susan Woods 58
Munday, Elizabeth 92
Munday, George 92
Munday, Harry, married Nancy Woods 92, 93
Munday, Harvey 92
Munday, James 92
Munday, Katharine 92
Munday, Mary 92
Munday, Patty 92
Munday, Woodson 92
Murray, Jane 203

N.

Nall, Rev. Dr. James H. 122
Nall, Rev. Dr. Robert H. 122
Nall, Rev. Robert 122
Nash, Hon. Francis 134, 150
Natchez, Miss. 88
Natural Bridge, Va. 64
Navigation Laws 86
Neal, Sallie 95
Nelson, Eliza 106
Nelson, Governor of Virginia 98
Netherlands, Richard 82
Nevins, Rev. Henry Van Dyke 271
New Castle, Del. 157
New Providence Cemetery 89, 172-193, 369
New Providence Church, Ky. 190-196, 368
New Providence Church, Mo. 247
New River 77, 202
Noble, Margaret 355
Noel, Bernard 91
North Carolina, what it included in early days 113

	PAGE
Notes by the Editor on McAfee Journals	440, 453
Nunnally, Victoria	240
Nutty, Gale Richard	297
Nutty, Gale Richard, Jr.	297
Nutty, Mrs. Jessie	297
Nutty, Pitt McCoy	297

O.

O'Bryan, Barsha	121
O'Bryan, G. G.	121
O'Bryan, Susan	121
O'Coillte, Irish for Woods	1
Octoraro Creek, Pa.	202
O'Hart, John	141
Old and New Style of Reckoning	144
O'Neil, Margaret	51
O'Rear, Alice F.	299
O'Rear, Allen B.	301
O'Rear, Aroma	301
O'Rear, Charley Wayman	301
O'Rear, Daniel	299
O'Rear, Louella	301
O'Rear, Mattie	301
O'Rear, Mary Varina	301
O'Rear, Robert	301
O'Rear, Susan Allie	301
O'Rear, William Alexander	301
O'Rear, William T.	299
O'Rear, Woods Slavin	301
Orange County, N. C.	132
Orange County, Virginia, Records	41
Orange Presbytery, Manual of, by D. I. Craig	150
Oronsay, Isleaf	154
Ould, Mrs. Elizabeth Wallace	21
Ovariotomy, by Ephraim McDowell	48
Owsley, John Samuel	108
Owsley, Gov. William	309

P.

Page, Thomas Nelson	347
Painter, Harriet	116
Painter, William	275
Paint Lick Presbyterian Church, Ky.	104
Pantops Academy, Va.	321
Paris Treaty of, 1783	72
Park College, Mo.	249
Park, Junius B.	109
Parker, Elizabeth	271
Parks, Catherine, and Andrew Wallace	5
Parsons, Elizabeth, and Thomas Worsop	2
Parsons, Richard, and Letitia Loftus	2
Partman, Kate	108
Path of Buffalo Elk	455
Path Hunters	459
Patrick, Col. Wm.	106
Patrons, Descended from Woodses	278, 366
Patrons, Descended from McAfee	234
Patrons, Sketches of	219
Patterson, Sallie D.	274
Pawling, Col. Henry	5
Pawling, James	165
Paxton, Isabella	45
Paxton, James Alexander	59
Paxtons, The, in Virginia	42
Peaks of Otter	64
Penn, William	10
Pension Laws, 1818-20	146
Pension to Samuel Woods, Sr.	71
Perkins, Bertha	97
Perkins, Campbell	97
Perkins, China	97
Perkins, Fanny	97
Perkins, Rev. George K.	97
Perkins, Havana E.	97
Perkins, John	97
Perkins, Mollie	97
Pepper's Ferry, New River	166, 472
Permanent Settlement of Kentucky begun	167, 212
Perry, J. M., of Staunton	322
Persecutions of Scotch-Irish	141
Pettus, Gen. E. W.	138
Pettus, Gertrude	108
Pettus, Dr. William	108
Peyton,	10, 12, 53
Phelps, Katherine Cobb	313
Phelps, Thomas	313
Phillips, Ariadne	389
Phillips, Everett De Hart	389
Phillips, James G.	389
Phillips, Laura Castleman	389
Phillips, Mary	389
Phillips, Robert	275
Phillips, Wm. Castleman	389
Phillips, Mrs. Will	388
Picture of Early Kentucky, by Col. Durrett	185
Piedmont, Va.	10, 11
Pillson, Mary, married Wm. Wallace	5
Pinckney, Family, The	416
Pine Mountain at Wasioto Gap	183
Pineville, Ky., at Wasioto Gap	77
Pioneer Forts	184
Pioneer Graveyard	194
Pioneer Roads	454-472
Piqua, Ohio	211
Pittman, Asa	274
Pittman, Cora	274
Pittman, Marie	274
Pittman, Marie D.	274
Pittman, Nannie Trabue	273
Pittman, Trabue	274
Pittman, William Daviess	274
Pittman, William D., Jr.	274
Pittman, William H.	273
Pittman, William H., Jr.	274
Pittman, Volona	274
Pitzer, William W.	256
Place of McAfees in Kentucky History	211, 215
Pleasant Garden, N. C.	51
Pleasants, Martha B.	315
Poage, James and Mary, their children	327
Poage, Rev. Josiah B.	254
Poage, Margaret	326
Poage, Martha	119
Poage, Mary Esther	254
Poage, Robert	73, 159
Poage, Robert, married Jane Wallace	5
Poem, Cumming's, on Sword of Adam Wallace	8
Point Pleasant, Battle of	171
Polhemus, James S.	320
Poor Fork, of Cumberland, McAfee Crossing in 1773	438
Porter, who married Patsy Woods	92
Porter, Jimmie	92
Portrait of, Barnett, Carl Price	266
Portrait of, Barnett, Robt. McAfee	266
Portrait of, Bennett, Joel D.	258
Portrait of, Bennett, Mrs. Joel D.	258
Portrait of, Bennett, Mrs. Joel D.	257
Portrait of, Bennett, John McAfee	258
Portrait of, Bennett, Sadocia B.	250
Portrait of, Brown, Edwin McAfee	262
Portrait of, Brown, Mrs. Mandy	261
Portrait of, Buchanan, Geo. M. and family	242
Portrait of, Buchanan, James	241
Portrait of, Buchanan, Mrs. James	241
Portrait of, Buchanan, James M.	242
Portrait of, Buchanan, Mrs. James M.	242
Portrait of, Buchanan, James S.	241
Portrait of, Buchanan, John W.	241
Portrait of, Caperton, James W.	310
Portrait of, Caperton, William H.	310
Portrait of, Caperton, Woods	310
Portrait of Clark, Bennett	257
Portrait of Clark, Hon. Champ	257
Portrait of, Clark, Mrs. Champ	257
Portrait of Clark, Genevieve	257
Portrait of, Durrett, Col. R. T.	220
Portrait of, Edmunds, Mrs. Sallie McAfee	252
Portrait of, Eustis, Mrs. Mary T.	405
Portrait of, Goodloe, Hon. J. D.	304
Portrait of, Goodwin, Grover C.	353
Portrait of, Goodwin, James D.	353
Portrait of, Goodwin, Mrs. Jas. D.	353
Portrait of, Guthrie, Mrs. Margaret D.	261
Portrait of, Hale, Dr. John P.	230

PAGE

Portrait of, Harris, John Woods 303
Portrait of, Harris, Mrs. Mary Frances 303
Portrait of, Johnston, Col. J. Stoddard 229
Portrait of, Lapsley, Col. John 284
Portrait of, Lapsley, Rev. William J. 284
Portrait of, Lindsay, Mrs. Nancy H. 311
Portrait of, McAfee, Mrs. Anne Hamilton 267
Portrait of, McAfee, President John A. 251
Portrait of, McAfee, John Clarke 251
Portrait of, McAfee, Joseph 251
Portrait of, McAfee, Samuel 251
Portrait of, McAfee, Samuel Lanty 251
Portrait of, McAfee, Gen. R. B. 208
Portrait of, McAfee, Robert W. 251
Portrait of, McKamey, James I. 261
Portrait of McKamey, James I. 265
Portrait of, Mason, Mrs. Alfred D. 324
Portrait of, Mason, Alfred D., Jr. 324
Portrait of, Rickenbaugh, Jacob 265
Portrait of, Rickenbaugh, James McAfee 265
Portrait of, Rickenbaugh, Nancy Clarke 265
Portrait of, Royster, Mrs. Lily F. 317
Portrait of, Royster, Samuel B. 317
Portrait of, Royster, Samuel B., Jr. 317
Portrait of, Thompson, Mrs. Bettie R. 317
Portrait of, Tyler, John Tip 405
Portrait of, Tyler, Nancy T. 405
Portrait of, Walker, Creed T. 324
Portrait of, Walker, Mrs. Eulalie V. 323
Portrait of, Walker, Robt. W. 323
Portrait of, Wallace, Gen. Lew 361
Portrait of, Wallace, Hon. Oliver T. 304
Portrait of, Wallace, Thomas B. 362
Portrait of, Wallace, Thomas J. 362
Portrait of, Wallace, Judge W. C. 361
Portrait of, Williamson, J. P. 317
Portrait of Williamson, Rev. and Mrs. T. S. 311
Portrait of Woods, Alice B. 407
Portrait of, Woods, Anna Sophia 396
Portrait of, Woods, Catherine Lisle 396
Portrait of, Woods, Col. Chas. A. R. 331
Portrait of, Woods, Clarence E. 400
Portrait of, Woods, Cortlandt B. 395
Portrait of, Woods, Mrs. C. B. 395
Portrait of, Woods, Cortlandt B. 396
Portrait of, Woods, David 332
Portrait of, Woods, David, Sr. 331
Portrait of, Woods, David, Jr. 331
Portrait of, Woods, David S. 332
Portrait of, Woods, Elizabeth Lee 396
Portrait of, Woods, Frances Seraphica 396
Portrait of, Woods, Harry E. 331
Portrait of, Woods, James Harvey 407
Portrait of, Woods, James P. 304
Portrait of, Woods, John D. 400
Portrait of, Woods, Dr. John R. 345
Portrait of, Woods, John W. 304
Portrait of, Woods, Joseph Lisle 391
Portrait of, Woods, Mrs. Lizzie 391
Portrait of, Woods, Mary McAfee 396
Portrait of, Woods, Mary Miller 400
Portrait of, Woods, Maud Coleman 346
Portrait of, Woods, Hon. Micajah 345
Portrait of, Woods, Rev. Dr. Neander M. 408
Portrait of, Woods, Sallie H. 407
Portrait of, Woods, Sarah E. 407
Portrait of, Woods, Thomas C. 399
Portrait of, Woods, Thomas J. 332
Portrait of, Woods, Will C. 400
Portrait of, Woods, Rev. W. H. 391
Portrait of, Woods, Rev. Dr. W. H. 391
Portrait of, Woods, Dr. Wm. Stone 391
Portrait of, Woods, Mrs. Wm. Stone 392
Portrait of Yantis, Rev. Edward M. 284
Portrait of, Yantis, Rev. Dr. John L. 284
Portrait of Yates, Gretchen 266
Portrait of, Young, Col. B. H. 230
Portrait of, Young, Chalmers R. 267
Portwood, Dudley 108
Poulson, John 163, 204
Poulson, Margaret 204
Powell, Hattie 352

PAGE

Powell, Dr. John W. 236
Powell, Mary Ella 352
Powell's Valley 174
Pratt, Sarah E. 278
Prendergrasts Cromwellian Settlement 141
Presbyterian Church, Danville, Ky. 47
Presbyterian Church in Valley of Virginia 42
Presbyterianism in Kentucky 190
Presbytery of Transylvania 83
Preston, Gen. John S. 51
Preston, Lucy Waddell 289
Preston, Sarah 51
Preston, William 161
Preston, Col. William, Surveyor 51
Preston, Hon. William C. 51
Province, Ann 86
Prince of India, The 359
Proprietary Government of Pennsylvania 10
Pugh, John Barry 336

Q.

Quaker's Meadows, N. C. 51
Quakers in Pennsylvania 158

R.

Ramsey, Wm., married Margaret Wallace 7
Ray, Elvira Jane 138
Ray, Elvira Jane 354
Rayburn, Elizabeth S. 109
Rayburn, Nancy 120
Redd, Miss, married Charles McDowell 45
Red House, Va. 54
Reed Creek, Va. 202
Reese, Miss 86
Regulators, The, of North Carolina 115, 134, 135
Reid, Agnes 59
Reid, Agnes, married Rev. Dr. Beverly Tucker Lacy 49
Reid, Andrew, of Rockbridge County, Va. 49
Reid, Ann 62
Reid, Hannah 57
Reid, John 104
Reid, John N. 106
Reid, Mary Louisa, married Jas. J. White 50
Reid, Mary Louisa 288
Reid, Samuel 106
Reid, Samuel McDowell 49
Reid, Sarah, who married Andrew Moore 49
Religions Privileges in Kentucky in early days 189
Revolutionary Service of Saml. Woods, Sr. 45
Revolutionary Soldiers flock to Kentucky 189
Reynard, Andrew Woods 344
Reynard, Augustine E. 344
Reynard, Claude Faviot 344
Reynard, Wm. H. 344
Rhodes, Sarah 105
Rice, Rev. David 187, 190
Richardson, Mary 51
Richmond, Ky., Battle of 108
Rickenbaugh, Mlizabeth 264
Rickenbaugh, Jacob 264
Rickenbaugh, James McAfee 265
Rickenbaugh, John Thomas 264
Rickenbaugh, Laura Anna 264
Rickenbaugh, Margaret C. 264
Rickenbaugh, Maria Jane 264
Rickenbaugh, Martha Anne 264
Rickenbaugh, Mary McKamey 264
Rickenbaugh, Miss Sara 264
Rickenbaugh, Sara Frances 264
Rickenbaugh, Susan Harriet 264
Ricker, Mehetabel 420
Riggs, Catherine 394
Riggs, David 394
Rising Sun, Indiana 74
Road, Boone's 473
Road from Catawba Creek to Greenbrier River 217
Road, the Long Hunters' 459
Road, The Wilderness 456
Roads, Antiquity of 455
Roads, Significance of 454
Roads, Three Ancient Pioneer 454
Roanoke County, Va. 89

PAGE
Roanoke, Red Sulphur Springs 89, 101
Roanoke River, South Fork 71
Roble, Mary 236
Robertson, Hon. George 50
Robinson, James 138
Robinson, Martha 385
Robinson, Mary 138
Robinson, Mary 237
Robinson, Michael 138
Robinson, Starkey 64, 67
Rochester, Jane 268
Rochester, Nancy 46
Rochester, Nathaniel 47
Rockbridge County, Va. 3, 5
Rockcastle River 179
Rockfish Gap Church 22, 98
Rock Wall of Cumberland Mountains 181, 182
Rodman, David 402
Rodman, Nancy Rogers 402
Rogan, Edgar 264
Rogers, Mrs. Jane Harris 102, 301, 306
Rogers, John Johnson 301
Rogers, Martha Hendrick 305
Rogers, Mary 156
Rogers, Mary Evelyn 305
Rogers, Virgil Johnson 305
Rollins, Hon. James S. 309
Routes, to Kentucky from Virginia 74
Rowland, Sidney V. 108
Roy, Margaret 138
Roy, Mary 138
Royster, Bettie 316
Royster, Ella 321
Royster, Ellen 316
Royster, John Madison 316
Royster, Lavinia 316
Royster, Mitchell 316
Royster, Samuel Bryan 316
Royster, Samuel Bryan, Jr. 316
Royster, Wm. Goodloe 316
Russell, Col.—1776. 59

S.

Sale, J. W. 275
Salt River Settlement 184, 194
Salter, Susan 420
Salvisa, Ky. 183, 185, 202
Sampson, Alice Merle 321
Sampson, Anne Russell 321
Sampson, Edgar Woods 321
Sampson, Rev. F. R. 321
Sampson, Prof. John R. 321
Sampson, Mrs. John R. 321
Sampson, Marie Dudley 321
Sampson, Mary Baldwin 321
Sampson, Merle D'Aubigne 321
Sampson, Richard, Sr. 321
Sampson, Richard, Jr. 321
Sampson, Thornton Rodgers 321
Sandridge, William 375
Sawyers, The, in Virginia 42
Scotch Clan of Campbell 9
Scotch-Irish encouraged by Gov. Gooch 10
Scotch-Irish oppressed by Pennsylvania authorities 10
Scotch-Irish Race 1, 55
Scotch Tories in North Carolina 52
Scott, Martha J. 106
Scott, Nancy Vance 46
Scottish Clans and Tartans 216
Schuerman, Mrs. Robbie 260
Schuerman, Prof. William H. 260
Settlement and Exploration of Kentucky 167, 212
Settlement and Preemption 73
Shackelford, Edmund L. 108
Shackelford, Elizabeth 60
Shackelford, John H. 108
Shaker Fork of Shawnee Run 73
Shaker Town, Ky. 73, 86
Shaker Village 73, 86
Shaler's, Kentucky 72, 212
Shallcross, Ida 240
Shannon, Sally 366
Shawnee Indians 43
Shawnee Run 86
Shearer, Nancy E. 366
Shearer, William 366
Sheely, Mrs. John J. 90
Sheely, John, Jr. 88
Sheely, Van 90, 91
Shelby, David Hart 349
Shelby, Edmund Pendleton 349
Shelby, Edmund Pendleton, Jr. 349
Shelby, Evan 349
Shelby, Evan 175
Shelby, Gov. Isaac 46, 349
Shelby, Isaac Prather 349
Shelby, Lucy Goodloe 349
Shelby, Mary Bullock 350
Shelby, Sarah 48
Shelby, Susan 45
Shelby, Mrs. Susan G. 349
Shelby, Susan Hart 350
Shelby, Major Thomas Hart 45
Shelby, Thomas Hart 349
Shelby, Vily de la Fontine 349
Shelby, William Kinkead 349
Shelton, Mourning 57
Shenandoah River, South Fork 12
Shepherd, Dalertus 67, 93
Shepherd, Joanna 94
Shepherd, Magdalin 93
Shepherds Island Farm 64, 87, 93
Sherando River 53
Shirkey, Col. Nicholas 62
Shirkey, Mr. 57
Short, Martha 271
Shrodes, Martha Amelia 72
Shryock, Adaline 269
Silence of Histories as to Long Hunters' Road 472
Simms, John 375
Simrall, Col. 46
Singleton, Frank 273
Sinking Creek, Va. 126
Skeggs Creek 179
Sketches of Patrons 219
Slavin, Elizabeth 301
Slavin, Elvira F. 299
Slavin, James Rice Woods 301
Slavin, John 299
Slavin, John Addison 301
Slavin, Martha Rachel 301
Slavin, Mary Jane 301
Slavin, Sarah Margaret 301
Slavin, Susan Overton 301
Slavin, William 299
Slavin, William 104
Smelser, Dr. James W. 394, 411
Smelser, Leila 394
Smiley, Mattie 321
Smith, Delia 360
Smith, Rev. Dudley D. 320
Smith, Elizabeth 115
Smith, Frances A. 320
Smith, Rev. James P., D. D. 320
Smith, John 91
Smith, Rebecca G. 239
Smith, W. C. 282
Snidow, Mrs. 36
Snoddy, Dora Lee 336
Snoddy, John T. 336
Society for Suppression of Vice 254, 255
Somers, Ruth 419
Sommers, Edward 180
South Carolina, area in early days 114
Speculators not ranked with settlers 213
Speed, Thomas 228
Speed, Thomas, portrait of 229
Speed, William T. 355
Spessard, Major M. P. 116
Spring, McAfee's, at Frankfort 205
Spotswood, Governor 111
Stamp Act 86

PAGE

Stanford, Ky. 183
Starling, Lucy Todd 47
Starling, William 47
Stations, Boone's 478
Stations, Long Hunters' Road 473
Stations of James McAfee 183
Stations, Wilderness Road 458
Stephens, Charles 108
Stone, Martha Jane 103, 290
Stone, Matilda Caroline 293
Stone House of James McAfee 197, 198
Stuart, Elizabeth A. 110
Stuart, Col. John 110
Stuart, Miss, sister of Col. John 38
Stuarts, The, in Virginia 42
Suddarth, Napoleon B., M. D. 384
Suit by heirs of Sam Woods, Jr., to recover land 88
Sweeny, Lizzie 108
Sullivan, J. H. 342
Sullivant, Joseph 48
Sullivant, Michael 48
Sullivant, William S. 50
Surveyors under Col. William Preston 50
Surveys of McAfee's Company 171, 175
Switzler, Jane 360
Sword of Adam Wallace used at Waxhaw 7, 8

T.

Talbott, Leonidas B. 312
Talcott, W. Va. 180
Talmage, Ky. 185
Tanner, Isadore 380
Tanner, John 380
Tanner, Julia Butler 380
Tanner, Wm. 380
Tanner, Wm. Atticus 380
Tarlton's Troopers at Waxhaw, S. C. 7, 8
Taylor, Mrs. Adne 385
Taylor, Col. Aylett Buckner 386
Taylor, Basil Mitchell, M. D. 386
Taylor, Ella 250
Taylor, Elizabeth Winn 386
Taylor, Emalie V. 325
Taylor, John Young 387
Taylor, Richard 387
Taylor, Dr. Richard Aylett 387
Taylor, Sarah Francis 386
Taylor, Thomas Wallace 386
Taylor, Col. William 51
Taylor, William Woods 386
Taylor, Virginia Everett 386
Templin, John 129, 425
Terry, Emily R. 245
Test, Esther French 355
Thackeray, notice by, of effect of Braddock Defeat 19
Thames, Battle of the 209
Thomas, Charles 116
Thomas, John W. 116
Thomas, Susannah 402
Thompson, Agnes 121
Thompson, Calliavnie 121
Thompson, Charles 121
Thompson, Elizabeth 121
Thompson, Francis 121
Thompson, George 121
Thompson, Major George C. 46
Thompson, Jane 121
Thompson, Hon. John B. 273
Thompson, John Hill 121
Thompson, Malcolm 316
Thompson, Mariah 273
Thomson, Martha 121
Thorpe, Stanton H. 109
Timber Ridge, Va. 43
Timber Ridge Church 53, 55, 56
Timber Ridge Church Yard 56
Toleration, Act of 10
Tour of the McAfee Company to Kentucky 163
Trabue, Charles C. 121
Trabue, Martha 121
Trace, Boone's 473
Tragedy, First in Salt River Settlement 186
Trails, Indian, in Kentucky before advent of white men 186
Travis, Rev. Dr. J. M. 454
Trickery in the way Samuel Woods was deprived of land at Shakertown 270
Trimble, Allen, Gov. 88
Trimble, James 51, 52, 74
Trimble, John 51
Trimble, Mrs. John 51
Tryon, Governor, of North Carolina 117
Turner, Mary Vincent 115
Turpin, Eliza J. 276
Turpin, William 365
Twyman, Dr. Wm. 366
Tyler, Henry S. 379
Tyler, John Tip 404, 406
Tyler, Nancy Thompson 404
..... 404

U.

Ulster, men of, how treated by English 156
Underwood, Josephine 320

V.

Vance, Dr. Robert P. 52
Van Sant, Dr. J. A. 306
Varner, Major J. A. R. 30, 37, 142, 150, 321-327
View of "Ben Hur Beech." 357
View of Boone's Trace or Wilderness Road 177
View of Burial Ground of Michael Woods of Blair Park 25
View of Cumberland Gap from the Kentucky side 192
View of Cumberland Gap from the Tennessee side 75
View of Dr. Dickson G. Dedman's old home, Lawrenceburg, Ky. 378
View of "Elmwood," old homestead of R. W. Walker 323
View of "Ellerslie Farm" 361
View of Harrodsburg Presbyterian church 191
View of Home of W. C. Woods in Lawrenceburg, Ky. 399
View of James McAfee's Spring 170
View of James River at farm of Michael Woods, Jr. 65
View of Kentucky River at Mouth 168
View of Kentucky River at Month of Drennon's Creek 178
View of McAfee Knob 160
View of Nathan Dedman's old home 373
View of New Providence Cemetery looking north 172
View of New Providence Cemetery looking south 369
View of Rock Wall of the Cumberland Mountain 182
View of the McAfee Stone House of 1790 197
View of the Poor Fork (of Cumberland River) 438
View of Typical Pioneer Fort 184
View of Wasioto Gap, Pineville 79
View of Woods Gap 13
View of Woods Gap 17
Vivian, Willis 92

W.

Waddell, ... 10, 12, 38, 41, 53, 55, 74, 141, 147, 150
Wade, Miss Belle 420
Wade, Henry 419
Wade, Henry Harrison 419
Wade, Mrs. H. H. 419
Wade, Henry H., Jr. 419
Wade, Munson Lang 419
Wade, Nathaniel 419
Wade, Neander Woods 419
Wade, Susie L. 420
Wagnan, C. L. 106
Walden, Judge Austin 58
Walker, Beulah 326
Walker, Catherine E. H. 325
Walker, Catherine R. 131
Walker, Cornelia 326
Walker, Creed 120
Walker, Creed 326
Walker, Creed Taylor 324, 325
Walker, Elizabeth 360
Walker, Elizabeth R. 326
Walker, Eulalie 326
Walker, Henry 36, 125, 126
Walker, James Mosby 325
Walker, James Norvell 325
Walker, John M. 120, 325
Walker, Joseph W. 120

PAGE

Walker, Joseph Woods 325
Walker, Joseph Woods, Jr. 326
Walker, Lucy 94
Walker, Margaret Eulalie 325
Walker, Mary Agnes 325
Walker, Mary Eulalie 325
Walker, Mary Virginia 326
Walker, Mazie 274
Walker, Reuben Kay 325
Walker, Robert Burton 326
Walker, Robert Dillwyn 325
Walker, Robert Woods 325
Walker, Robert Woods, Jr. 325
Walker, Samuel Taylor 325
Walker, Sarah Epps 325
Walker, Dr. Thomas 56, 154, 212
Walkers, The, Early Settlers of Virginia 42
Wallace, Adam, son of Peter, Sr., and Elizabeth 7, 9
Wallace, Adam, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, Andrew, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 6, 7
Wallace, Andrew, son of Peter, Sr., and Elizabeth 6
Wallace, Andrew, son of Samuel and Esther 5
Wallace, Andrew, son of Peter, Sr. 109
Wallace, Andrew C. 360
Wallace, Andrew F. 360
Wallace, Anna Chenault 366
Wallace, Arthur Andrew 360
Wallace, Benjamin F. 360
Wallace, Judge Caleb 4
Wallace, Caleb, son of Samuel and Esther 5
Wallace, Caleb, of Danville 48
Wallace, Celia Ann 360
Wallace, Charles L. 363
Wallace, David 355
Wallace, Edgar Thomas 360
Wallace, Eliza Brown 4
Wallace, Elizabeth, daughter of Peter, Jr., and Martha. 7
Wallace, Elizabeth, daughter of Andrew and Margaret. 7
Wallace, Elizabeth, nee Woods, in Virginia..... 3
Wallace, Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel and Esther ... 5
Wallace, Elizabeth Brown 377
Wallace, Elizabeth W. 360
Wallace, Elveree Shearer 366
Wallace, Erasmus D. 360
Wallace, G. W. 116
Wallace, Hannah, daughter of Andrew and Margaret .. 7
Wallace, Hannah, daughter of William, Sr., and Hannah 5
Wallace, Henry Lane 355
Wallace, Henry N. 360
Wallace, Hugh Campbell 360
Wallace, James, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, Jane or Jean, daughter of William, Sr., and Hannah 5
Wallace, Janet, daughter of Peter, Jr., and Martha .. 7
Wallace, Jean, who married Wilson 7
Wallace, Jennie Turpin 366
Wallace, John, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, John, son of William, Sr., and Hannah 5
Wallace, John, Jr. 360
Wallace, John Chilton 360
Wallace, John G. 360
Wallace, John Walker 360
Wallace, Josiah, Sr. 360
Wallace, Josiah, Jr. 360
Wallace, Josiah, son of William, Sr., and Hannah..... 5
Wallace, Lee Ewing 360
Wallace, Major Gen. Lew 4, 6, 31, 110, 355
Wallace, Lew, Jr. 356
Wallace, Lewis T. 360
Wallace, Malcolm, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, Margaret, who married William Ramsey 7
Wallace, Maria H. 360
Wallace, Mary, daughter of Andrew and Margaret 7
Wallace, Mary, who married Archibald Woods 58
Wallace, Mary Belle 360
Wallace, Mary M. 360
Wallace, Mary S. 360
Wallace, M. B. 366
Wallace, Melville W. F. 360
Wallace, Mildred Fuller 360
Wallace, Michael, son of Andrew and Margaret 6
Wallace, Michael, son of William, Sr., and Hannah.... 5

PAGE

Wallace, Michael, M. D. 2, 4
Wallace, Michael W. 22
Wallace, Nettie Briscoe 360
Wallace, Newton 360
Wallace, Hon. Oliver Terrill 365
Wallace, Oliver T., Jr. 366
Wallace, Peter, Sr., and his descendants 3, 4, 82
Wallace, Peter, Jr. 7, 9
Wallace, Peter, Sr., and Jr. 30
Wallace, Rose Ann 360
Wallace, Salem 365
Wallace, Samuel, son of Andrew and Margaret 6
Wallace, Samuel, son of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, Samuel, son of Samuel and Esther 5
Wallace, Samuel, son of Peter, Sr., and Elizabeth 5
Wallace, Sarah, daughter of William, Sr., and Hannah.. 5
Wallace, Sarah Lapsley 321
Wallace, Shannon Phillips 366
Wallace, Sarah 62
Wallace, Susan 359
Wallace, Susan, who married Thomas Collins 7
Wallace, Susannah, who married Wm. Woods 56
Wallace, Susannah, daughter of Peter, Sr., and Elizabeth 5
Wallace, Susannah, daughter of Peter, Jr., and Martha 7
Wallace, Thomas Bates 359
Wallace, Thomas Bates (No. 2) 360
Wallace, Thomas Bates (No. 3) 360
Wallace, Thomas Josiah 359
Wallace, Thomas Josiah (No. 2) 360
Wallace, Wilbur B. 360
Wallace, Sir William 8
Wallace, Capt. William B. 377
Wallace, William, Sr., son of Peter, Sr., and Elizabeth.. 4
Wallace, William, Sr. 5
Wallace, William (the 2nd) 5
Wallace, William 19, 97
Wallace, William A. 360
Wallace, William Anderson 366
Wallace, William Brown 4
Wallace, William C., Jr. 360
Wallace, Judge William Cyrus 357
Wallace, William F. 363
Wallace, Miss, who married Josiah Wallace 5
Wallaces, How connected with the Woodses 3
Wallaces, The King George Co., Va. 142
Walter, Mrs David 92
Warren, Sallie Hare 289
Warfield, Ruth 108
Warren, Clara 244
Warren, James Buchanan 243
Warren, Jean Hamilton 274
Warren, Letitia Craig 274
Warren, Marie 274
Warren, Mary 243
Warren, Mollie A. 355
Warren, William 274
Warren, Dr. W. C. 243
Washington, Gen. 212, 355
Washington Academy 128
Washington College 128
Washington and Lee University 51, 128
Wasioto Gap 77, 79, 183
Watauga, Treaty of 179
Watkins, Henrietta R. 246
Waxhaw, S. C., where Peter Wallace, Jr., was killed.. 7
Wayt, Twymonia 62
Wear, Celia 360
Wear, Miriam 130
Webb, Caroline Rebecca 414
Webb, Charles 416
Webb, Family The 416
Welch, Doctor, of Galveston 47
Wheelers, North Carolina 134
White, Agnes Reid 289
White, Rev. Dr. Alexander 53
White, Isabelle 289
White, James Jones 50, 289
White, Jennie Faulkner 315
White, Reid 289
Whitefield, George 162
Whitsitt, Dr. W. H. 5, 49, 142

PAGE
Wilderness Road 12, 111, 161, 180, 456, 458
Wilkinson, Samuel F. 354
Will of James McAfee 198
Will of Michael Woods, Jr. 64
Williams, Henry 96
Williams, Martha Jane 354
Williamson, Prof. A. W. 36
Williamson, Andrew Woods 326, 327
Williamson County, Tennessee 59
Williamson, Elizabeth Poage 327
Williamson, James Gilliland 327
Williamson, Mary Poage 327
Williamson, Nancy Jane 327
Williamson, Smith Burgess 327
Williamson, Rev. Thomas S., M. D. 326
Williamson, William Blair 327
Wilson, General John 95
Wilson, Wallace T. 60
Wilson's Station 183, 206
Winchester, Va., settled 1732 11
Winn, Kittie Byrd 97
Winter of 1779-1780 in Kentucky 186
Witt, D. R. 342
Witzmann, E. 420
Witzmann, Mrs. E. 420
Wood, Cordelia 328
Wood, Eleanor 328
Wood, Henry Cleveland 118
Wood, Col. James 10, 71, 146
Wood, Mrs. John M. 130
Wood, Mrs. J. M. 328
Wood, Judge John McKee 328
Wood, Louise 328
Wood, Richard Julian 328
Wood, Sallie 245
Woodford County, Ky 52
"Woodlawn", home of Col. J. W. Caperton 313
Woods, Absalom, child of John and Elizabeth 116
Woods, Adam, child of William and Susannah 57
Woods, Agnes Grear, child of James and Nancy 121
Woods, Alice 338
Woods, Alice Behre 410
Woods, Anderson, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Andrew, child of Michael of Blair Park 34, 119, 126, 318
Woods, Andrew, child of William and Susannah 57-60
Woods, Andrew, child of Archibald and Isabella 118
Woods, Andrew, Jr., child of Andrew and Martha 122
Woods, Andrew Alford 337
Woods, Andrew Chevalier (No. 1.) 343
Woods, Andrew Chevalier (No. 2.) 344
Woods, Andrew Chevalier (No. 3.) 344
Woods, Andrew (and James), brothers of Michael and Elizabeth 2, 3
Woods, Ann, widow of Michael, Jr. 77
Woods, Ann, child of Archibald and Mourning 61
Woods, Ann Eliza 220
Woods, Ann Elizabeth 294
Woods, Anna, child of Archibald and Mourning 61
Woods, Anna, child of Col. John 106
Woods, Anna L., child of William and Sarah J. 116
Woods, Anna Sophia 394
Woods, Ann, wife of Michael, Jr. 63
Woods, Anne, child of Michael, Jr., and Ann 97
Woods, Ann, child of Samuel, Jr., and Mary 89
Woods, Ann, child of David by first wife 91
Woods, Archibald, child of Michael, 19, 35, 110, 118, 159, 320, 339, 342
Woods, Archibald, child of John and Elizabeth 116
Woods, Archibald, Jr., child of Archibald and Isabella.. 118
Woods, Archibald, child of James and Jane 118
Woods, Archibald, child of Andrew and Martha 122
Woods, Archibald, child of Andrew No. 2 337
Woods, Archibald, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, Archibald, child of William and Susannah.... 57-59
Woods, Archibald, child of Archibald and Mourning.. 60
Woods, Archibald, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Archibald, child of William and Harriet 116
Woods, Archibald Douglass 336
Woods, "Baptist Billy." 61, 94
Woods, Barbara, who married George Martin 82
Woods, Barbara A., child of S. R. and Zilpha 138, 351
Woods, "Beaver Creek Billy," first and second 315
Woods, Benjamin F. 137, 354
Woods, Bessie Devall 344
Woods, Burch, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Carrie Webb 410
Woods, Catharine Lisle 394
Woods, Charles A. R. (Colonel) 56, 58, 59, 61, 62, 145, 328, 337
Woods, Charles Edward 294
Woods, Charles Lewis 348
Woods, Charles Gachet, child of Neander M. and Tallulah 421
Woods, Charles Walker 381
Woods, Clarence Everett 402, 404
Woods, Cortlandt Barrett 393
Woods, Cortlandt B. 394
Woods, Daniel S., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, David, child of Michael, Jr., and Ann, 77, 86, 87, 91, 181, 200
Woods, David, child of John and Ann 135
Woods, David, child of William and Joanna 95
Woods, David, Jr. 335
Woods, David (No. 1.) 348
Woods, David (No. 2) 94, 348
Woods, David (No. 3.) 95, 97, 348
Woods, David Everett 348
Woods, David J., Rev. 123
Woods, David Sidney 138, 351
Woods, David, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Doak 133
Woods, Edgar 338
Woods, Edgar, Ph. D., Rev., 5, 10, 16, 37, 57, 61, 70, 119, 123, 145, 318
Woods, Edgar, Jr., M. D. 320
Woods, Edward Morris 347
Woods, Edward Orin 352
Woods, Edward Payson 383
Woods, Eliza, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Elizabeth, and the Wallaces 3
Woods, Elizabeth, child of David and Mary 89, 93
Woods, Elizabeth, child of Micajah and Lucy 95
Woods, Elizabeth, who married William B. Harris 82
Woods, Elizabeth, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Elizabeth, child of Andrew and Martha 121
Woods, Elizabeth, child of William of North Carolina.. 134
Woods, Elizabeth, who married Samuel Woods 137
Woods, Elizabeth, child of David and Mary 93
Woods, Elizabeth, child of Michael, Jr., and Ann..... 93
Woods, Elizabeth, child of Micajah by his first wife.... 95
Woods, Elizabeth A., who married Rickey 342
Woods, Elizabeth Ann 354
Woods, Elizabeth Hannah 380
Woods, Elizabeth Lee 394
Woods, Elizabeth Lisle 343
Woods, Ellis Jackson 398
Woods, Emma Birkhead 410
Woods, Everett Dedman 410
Woods Family, Brief Summary of 139, 140
Woods, Fannie Everett 384
Woods, Fannie L., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, Florence Boone 410
Woods, Frances, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Frances, Jr. 294
Woods, Frances J., M. D. 293
Woods, F. M., Rev., D. D. 123, 337
Woods, Frances S. 394
Woods, Frederick 338
Woods, Frederick Davis 352
Woods Gap 11, 13, 15, 16, 17, 21
Woods, Gertrude 354
Woods, Gladys Aubrey 336
Woods, Hannah, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, Hannah, child of Michael, of Blair Park 4, 97
Woods, Hannah, who married William Kavenaugh 63
Woods, Harry E. 335
Woods, Harvey, child of Joseph, of Mercer County, Ky. 118
Woods, Henry, child of Micajah and Lucy 95
Woods, Henry, child of Micajah by his first wife 95
Woods, Henry McKee, D. D. 320
Woods, Henry W., child of David and Sallie 95, 348
Woods, Henry, Rev. Dr. 337
Woods, H. K. 348
Woods, Hugh Phillips 354

PAGE
Woods, Hugh, child of Samuel and Elizabeth 138, 354
Woods, Ina 348
Woods, Isabella, wife of Archibald 111
Woods, Isabella, child of Archibald and Isabella 114
Woods, James, who lived in Albemarle in 1749 2
Woods, James, who married Mildred Jones 314
Woods, James, child of Andrew and Martha 120
Woods, James, child of Archibald and Isabella 117
Woods, James, son of John and Susannah 101-104
Woods, Child of "Beaver Creek Billy, the 2nd." 62
Woods, James, child of John and Elizabeth 116
Woods, James Baker, M. D. 320
Woods, James Brison, child of Andrew, Jr., and Mary .. 123
Woods, James Brison, Jr. 339
Woods, James Garland, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, James Goodloe, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, James Harris 290, 293
Woods, James Harvey, child of Samuel, Jr., and Mary. 73, 89, 200, 367
Woods, James, Jr., child of James and Nancy 120
Woods, James McAfee 410
Woods, James Michael, child of Michael and Esther .. 105
Woods, James Moses 293
Woods, James P., child of William and Sarah J. 16, 338
Woods, James and Samuel, probably related to Michael 28
Woods, J. Watson 106, 479
Woods, Jane, child of Michael and Ann 70
Woods, Jane, child of Michael and Esther 106
Woods, Jane, who married Joseph Montgomery 82
Woods, Jane, wife of James 117
Woods, Jane Creigh 348
Woods, Jane Lynn 348
Woods, Jennie M. 342
Woods, John, of Ireland—His children 2-9
Woods, John, of Ireland—Coat of arms 3
Woods, John, child of William and Susannah 57, 58
Woods, John, child of David and his first wife 77
Woods, John, child of William, of North Carolina 134
Woods, John, child of Col. John 107
Woods, John, child of Archibald and Isabella 114-117
Woods, John, child of Michael of Blair Park.... 22, 97-109, 141
Woods, John, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, John, child of David by his first wife 92, 95
Woods, John, child of David by his first wife 92
Woods, John B., child of Samuel, of Albemarle 82
Woods, John Caruthers, child of Michael and Esther .. 105
Woods, John Christopher, child of William and Mary.. 60
Woods, John D., Hon., of Tennessee 133, 138, 350
Woods, John G. 338
Woods, John H. McKee 320
Woods, John H., child of W. M. and Elizabeth 137
Woods, John Harvey 351
Woods, John, Jr., child of John and Ann 135
Woods, John M. 337
Woods, John Michael 352
Woods, John N., child of David and Sallie 95, 349
Woods, John Raiford, child of S. R. and Zilpha 138
Woods, John Rodes, of "Holkham" 95, 344, 348
Woods, John William, Judge 111, 116, 338
Woods, Johnson P., child of W. M. and Elizabeth 137, 352
Woods, Joseph, child of James and Jane 117
Woods, Joseph, child of Archibald and Isabella 118
Woods, Joseph, child of John and Elizabeth 116
Woods, Joseph Bond 397
Woods, Joseph Hammel 354
Woods, Joseph Lisle 394
Woods, Joseph R., child of William and Sarah J. 116
Woods, Julia H., who married Coleman 313
Woods, Kitty 348
Woods, Joseph, legacy of, to Montgomery Presbytery.. 119
Woods, Lena 348
Woods, Leo Bennett 381
Woods, Leon E. 335
Woods, Leonona 338
Woods, Leslie Neill 393
Woods, Lettie Page 347
Woods, Lillian E. 352
Woods, Lindsey, child of William and Nellie 135
Woods, Lucy, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Lucy, who married Caperton 309
Woods, Lucy, child of Archibald and Mourning 59
Woods, Luther Todd 337
PAGE
Woods, Lydia B. 320
Woods, Lynn Creigh 348
Woods, Madison D. 294
Woods, Magdalen, child of Michael of Blair Park.. 7, 31, 40, 53, 54, 56
Woods, Magdalen, who married William Campbell 96
Woods, Mary Miller 403
Woods, Margaret, child of Michael, Jr., and Ann..... 97
Woods, Margaret, who married Richard Netherland .. 82
Woods, Margaret, child of Michael of Blair Park 109
Woods, Margaret, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Margaret, who married Andrew Wallace..... 6
Woods, Margaret, wife of Samuel, Sr. 70
Woods, Margaret Holmes, who married Samuel, of Paint Lick 85, 86
Woods, Margaret Jane 354
Woods, Margaret Lynn 348
Woods, Mariah, child of David and Sallie 95
Woods, Martha ("Patsy"), child of Samuel, Jr., and Mary 90
Woods, Martha, who married Thomas Moore 96
Woods, Martha, child of Archibald and Elizabeth 60
Woods, Martha, child of Michael, of Blair Park 119
Woods, Martha 294
Woods, Martha, child of Micajah and Lucy 95
Woods, Martha, child of Andrew and Martha 125, 126
Woods, Mary, child of William and Joanna 96
Woods, Mary, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Mary, child of William and Susannah 62
Woods, Mary, child of Col. John and Susannah 104
Woods, Mary, child of Michael and Esther 106
Woods, Mary, child of William and Susannah 57
Woods, Mary 338
Woods, Mary, who married Benjamin Harris 82
Woods, Mary, child of Micajah by his first wife..... 95
Woods, Mary, who married a Mr. Campbell 96
Woods, Mary, child of Archibald and Mourning 60
Woods, Mary, child of Micajah and Lucy 95
Woods, Mary, child of Andrew and Martha 124, 125
Woods, Mary, child of William, of North Carolina 134
Woods, Mary Ann, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Mary E., child of Samuel and Zilpha 138
Woods, Mary C. 320, 342
Woods, Mary Ellen 354
Woods, Mary Ethel 352
Woods, Mary Lupton 393
Woods, Mary Louisa, child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, Mary McAfee 381, 394, 404
Woods, nee McAfee 77, 89
Woods, Mary Rice, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Mary Watts 347
Woods, Matilda 294
Woods, Maud Coleman 346
Woods, Micajah, Hon. 63, 68, 70, 96, 344
Woods, Micajah, child of William and Joanna 94, 95, 348
Woods, Michael, of Blair Park 9, 28, 83, 85
Woods, Michael, child of Col. John and Susannah 105
Woods, Michael, child of James and Mary..... 103
Woods, Michael, child of Michael and Esther 105
Woods, Michael, child of William and Susanna 57, 58
Woods, Michael, who married Hannah Wallace (and whom Collins, in his history of Kentucky, probably refers to on page 477 of volume 2) 5
Woods, Michael, Jr., child of Michael, of Blair Park, 28, 63, 65, 68, 70, 97
Woods, Miss, child of John and Nancy, who married Garnett 92
Woods, Minerva A. 294
Woods, Mourning, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Mourning, child of Archibald and Mourning.... 61
Woods, Nancy, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Nancy, child of David and Mary 89, 92
Woods, Nannie S., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, Nannie, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Nathaniel, child of James and Mary 103, 104
Woods, Nathaniel Dedman 380
Woods, Nathaniel Dedman, M. D. 381
Woods, Neander M., Rev., D. D. 89, 409
Woods, Neander M., Jr. 410, 420
Woods, Nellie 297
Woods, Oliver Brison 337

PAGE
Woods, Oscar W., child of William and Sarah J. 116
Woods, Owen S., child of W. M. and Elizabeth..... 137, 354
Woods, Patrick, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, Patsy, child of John and Nancy..... 92
Woods, Peter, child of John and Nancy 58
Woods, Peter, child of William and Susannah..... 57
Woods, Peter A., child of "Beaver Creek 2nd."..... 62
Woods, Rebecca, child of Andrew and Martha 121
Woods, Rebecca 338
Woods, Rhodes, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Rice, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Rice Garland, of Paint Lick, Ky. 103
Woods, Richard 82
Woods, Richard, child of Michael, of Blair Park 110
Woods, Richard, of Albemarle 38
Woods, Richard, son of Richard of Albemarle 39
Woods, Richard, why regarded son of Michael 37
Woods, Robert, child of Andrew and Martha 122
Woods, Robert, child of James and Nancy 120
Woods, Robert Emmet 342
Woods, Robert Emmet, Jr. 343
Woods, Robert F. 354
Woods, Robert H., child of Micajah and S. H. D. 95
Woods, Robert Harris, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Robert Harris, child of Micajah and his second wife 95, 348
Woods, Robert James 343
Woods, Robert Kay 307
Woods, Sallie 348
Woods, Sallie, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, Sallie Stuart 347
Woods, Sallie Rodes 348
Woods, Sally, supposed by some to have been the name of one of the children of Samuel, Jr., and Mary 89
Woods, Samuel, of Augusta county, Va. 82
Woods, Samuel, of Amherst County, Va. 82
Woods, Samuel, of Botetourt County, Va. 82-86
Woods, Samuel, of Rockbridge County, Va. 83
Woods, Samuel, of Paint Lick, Ky. 83, 147
Woods, Samuel, of Albemarle 82
Woods, Samuel, child of John and Anna L. 137
Woods, Samuel, Sr., child of Michael, Jr., and Ann, 70, 77, 78, 87, 102, 145, 149, 200
Woods, Samuel, Jr., child of Samuel, Sr.. 71, 73, 78, 86, 149, 200
Woods, Samuel Caruthers, child of Michael and Esther 105
Woods, Samuel, child of William of North Carolina ... 134
Woods, Samuel Baker 320
Woods, Samuel Dickson 380
Woods, Samuel M., child of David and Mary 138
Woods, Samuel R. F. 354
Woods, Samuel Ray, child of Samuel and Elizabeth... 138, 351
Woods, Sarah, who married Joseph Lapsley 7
Woods, Sarah, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Sarah, who married Charles Lambert 96
Woods, Sarah, child of Archibald and Mourning..... 60
Woods, Sarah, child of William and Susannah 57
Woods, Sarah, child of Col. John 106
Woods, Sarah, child of Michael of Blair Park 126-132
Woods, Sarah, child of William and Susannah 62
Woods, Sarah A., child of W. M. and Elizabeth 137
Woods, Sarah J., child of "Beaver Creek 2d." 62
Woods, Sarah M. 320
Woods, Semiramus S., child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Senoria D., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, Shelby Watkins 352
Woods, Sidney, child of John and Nancy 92
Woods, Stephen W., child of W. M. and Elizabeth 137, 351
Woods, Sue 381
Woods, Suita, child of Col. John and Susannah 106
Woods, Susan, child of William and Susannah 62
Woods, Susan, child of Michael and Esther 106
Woods, Susan, child of William and Susannah..... 57
Woods, Susan, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, Susan M., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, Susan McKay, child of Samuel and Zilpha 138
Woods, Susan McKuinc 351
Woods, Susannah, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, Susannah, child of Michael and Ann 70
PAGE
Woods, Susannah, child of William and Joanna 96
Woods, Susannah, who married Henry Williams 96
Woods, Susannah, child of Archibald and Mourning ... 60
Woods, "Surveyor William" 110
Woods, Tallulah Gachet, child of Neander M. and Tallulah 421
Woods, Tavner, child of David and Sallie 95
Woods, Theodore 320
Woods, Thomas 320
Woods, Thomas, child of John and Ann L. 136
Woods, Thomas, child of Archibald and Mourning 61
Woods, Thomas Cleland 380, 398
Woods, Thomas Creigh 348
Woods, Thomas Dabney, child of "Beaver Creek the 2d" 62
Woods, Thomas Harris, child of William and Mary 60
Woods, Thomas J., child of W. M. and Elizabeth 137
Woods, Thomas James, M. D. 332, 351
Woods, Thomas James LeGrand 342
Woods, William, of Ireland 2, 132-140
Woods, William, child of "Beaver Creek the 2d" 62
Woods, William, child of James and Mary 103
Woods, William, child of David and Mary 89, 93
Woods, William 82
Woods, William, who married Sarah J. Edington 338
Woods, William, child of Michael of Blair Park 35, 56, 63
Woods, William, child of William of North Carolina ... 134
Woods, William, child of John and Anna 135
Woods, William—"Beaver Creek Billy" 57, 61
Woods, William, child of Adam and Anna 58
Woods, William, child of Archibald and Mourning..... 60
Woods, William, child of Archibald and Isabella.....112, 114
Woods, William, child of John and Elizabeth..... 116
Woods, William, child of David and Mary 93
Woods, William, child of Michael, Jr., and Ann..... 61, 94
Woods, William A., child of W. M. and Elizabeth..... 137
Woods, William Benton, wife of Ellison 314
Woods, William Clarence 397
Woods, William Cleland 393
Woods, William C., child of William and Mary 60
Woods, William Doak 135
Woods, William Gayle 338
Woods, William Harvey 380, 389, 392
Woods, William Hervey, Rev., D. D. 392
Woods, William M., child of W. M. and L. E. 106
Woods, William Mitchell 352
Woods, William M., child of Thomas and Susannah 136
Woods, William Moffett, child of Michael and Esther.. 105
Woods, William Price, child of James and Mildred ...62, 314
Woods, William S., child of Micajah, by his second wife 95
Woods, William S., child of Samuel R. and Zilpha 138
Woods, William Shepherd 348
Woods, William Stone, M. D. 103, 290, 293
Woods, William—many of this name 61, 94
Woods, Woodford, child of Samuel, Jr., and Mary 90
Woodson, David M. 45
Woodson, Sallie 374
Worsop, Elizabeth and her husband, John Woods 2-9
Worsop, Thomas and Elizabeth Parsons 2
Wright, Kate 47

Y.

Yandes (Yantis) 130
Yantis, Rev. Edward 284, 285
Yantis, Col. John 130, 283
Yantis, Rev. John Lapsley 283, 284
Yates, Miss Gretchen 264, 266
Yates, Mrs. Randolph 264
Young, Mr., who married Mary McDowell 49
Young, Col. Bennett H. 226
Young, Col. Bennett H., portrait 230
Young, Chalmers B. 264, 266
Young, Robert 264

Z.

Zane, Cornelia 272
Zane, Elizabeth 272
Zane, Noah 272

RC 1.1.1

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 021 548 404 A